

A Thematic Study by the IPCC
on the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill
since June 2019 and the Police Actions in Response

Volume 1



Independent Police Complaints Council

**A Thematic Study by the IPCC
on the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill
since June 2019 and the Police Actions in Response**

FULL REPORT CONTENTS



VOLUME 1

- CHAPTER 1 Introduction
- CHAPTER 2 Legal Powers, Constraints and Implications
- CHAPTER 3 Methodology and Sources of Information
- CHAPTER 4 An Overview of the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill since June 2019



VOLUME 2

- CHAPTER 5 Synopsis of Complaints
- CHAPTER 6 Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing
- CHAPTER 7 Incident Day – Sunday 9 June 2019
- CHAPTER 8 Incident Day – Wednesday 12 June 2019
- CHAPTER 9 Incident Day – Monday 1 July 2019



VOLUME 3

- CHAPTER 10 Incident Day – Sunday 21 July 2019
Yuen Long
- CHAPTER 11 Incident Day – Sunday 11 August 2019
Kwai Fong Station and Tai Koo Station



VOLUME 4

- CHAPTER 12 Incident Day – Saturday 31 August 2019
- CHAPTER 13 Police Identification during the Public Order Events
- CHAPTER 14 Detention Arrangement at San Uk Ling Holding Centre
- CHAPTER 15 Perceptions of Police Officers, Protesters and General Public
- CHAPTER 16 Conclusion
Glossary

CONTENTS

VOLUME 1

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

1.1	Origins and Scope	2
1.17	Nature of the Thematic Study	5
1.19	Perspective of Complaints Received	6
1.20	Perspective of Principle	6
1.21	Perspective of Police Officers, the Protesters and the Public	6
1.22	Limitations of the Report	6
1.23	Adoption of the Report	7

CHAPTER 2

LEGAL POWERS, CONSTRAINTS AND IMPLICATIONS

2.2	Legal Basis to Conduct Study under the IPCC Ordinance	8
2.5	Legal Limitations and Their Implications	9

CHAPTER 3

METHODOLOGY AND SOURCES OF INFORMATION

3.6	Collection of Information	13
3.7	Hong Kong Police Force; and Other Organisations	13
3.10	Public Information from Relevant Organisations	15
3.11	Information from Social Media	15
3.12	Appeal for Information from the Public	15
3.13	Live Footage and Media Reports	16
3.14	Analysis of Information	17
3.17	Points to Note	18
	Annex 1, Appendix to Annex 1 & Annex 2	19

CHAPTER 4

AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

4.1	Introduction	30
4.5	Events Giving Rise to the Public Order Events (POEs)	34
4.8	The Role of the Police	35
4.10	The Scope of this Chapter	36
4.12	POEs from June 2019 to February 2020: A Statistical Overview	38
4.260	IPCC Observations	221
	Annex 1, 2 & 3	226

CHAPTER 1

INTRODUCTION

Origins and Scope

1.1 This is the first ever Thematic Study (Study) that the Independent Police Complaints Council (IPCC) has carried out on such an extensive scale and before full investigation of complaints under the Two-Tier System for dealing with complaints against the Police.¹ Under this System, the Complaints Against Police Office (CAPO) of the Hong Kong Police Force (HKPF) receives and investigates complaints; the IPCC monitors the investigations, reviews the findings and provides opinions to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) and where necessary, the Chief Executive of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region (HKSAR). Where appropriate, the IPCC will make recommendations for improvement on practices or procedures of the Police.

1.2 The IPCC statutory functions are set out inter alia in section 8(1)² of the IPCC Ordinance. Section 8 (2) further empowers the IPCC to “*do all such things that are reasonably necessary for, or incidental or conducive to, the performance of its functions under this Ordinance*”. This Study has been undertaken pursuant to these functions and powers.

1.3 In the past, the IPCC has carried out studies over discrete events and subjects, after the complaints have been investigated by CAPO. An example was the Report on the Visit of the then Vice Premier Li Keqiang due not only to complaints against police officers, but also the public concern over the Police handling of the security arrangements for the visit. That study aimed to inform the public of the IPCC review of the complaints received and to recommend improvement for future Police operations from the lessons learnt from the episode.

¹ A detailed explanation on how this “Two-Tier Complaints System” works is given in Chapter 5.

² The functions of the Council are—

- (a) to observe, monitor and review the handling and investigation of reportable complaints by the Commissioner, and to make recommendations (as the Council considers appropriate) to the Commissioner or the Chief Executive or both of them in respect of the handling or investigation of reportable complaints;
- (b) to monitor actions taken or to be taken in respect of any member of the police force by the Commissioner in connection with reportable complaints, and to advise (as the Council considers appropriate) the Commissioner or the Chief Executive or both of them of its opinion on such actions;
- (c) to identify any fault or deficiency in any practice or procedure adopted by the police force that has led to or might lead to reportable complaints, and to make recommendations (as the Council considers appropriate) to the Commissioner or the Chief Executive or both of them in respect of such practice or procedure;
- (d) to review anything submitted to it by the Commissioner pursuant to this Ordinance; and
- (e) to promote public awareness of the role of the Council; and
- (f) (without limiting the generality of the foregoing) any function conferred on it by or under this or any other Ordinance.

1.4 Each year, the IPCC, in the performance of its duties, makes recommendations to the Commissioner on improvement to Police procedures and practices which have led to or might lead to Reportable Complaints (RCs).³ Over the past five years, the number of recommendations made are as follows:

IPCC Annual Report	No. of Recommendations
2018/19	23
2017/18	26
2016/17	10
2015/16	17
2014/15	14

Table 1-1 No. of Recommendations to Police from 2014/15 to 2018/19

1.5 Since 9 June 2019, widespread protests have broken out and accompanied with violence not seen since 1967. As the primary agency for the maintenance of law and order, the Police has had the duty to respond to these protests and the accompanying violence. The protests were triggered by the Fugitive Offenders and Mutual Legal Assistance in Criminal Matters Legislation (Amendment) Bill (Fugitive Offenders Bill) which the HKSAR Government (Government) introduced into the Legislative Council (LegCo) on 29 March 2019. Despite the Government's announcement on 15 June 2019 to suspend the Bill and then in early September formally to withdraw the Bill, the protests did not cease but continued with increasing violence. This Study covers facts for six identified incident days and two selected topics during this period of protests with an Overview of the protests from June 2019 to March 2020 and the corresponding Police action in response.

1.6 This Study, covering the public order events (POEs) from 9 June 2019, has three objectives:

- (a) To enable the IPCC to gain a broad picture of the POEs so that it may more effectively perform its duty of reviewing the investigations by CAPO into the complaints received;
- (b) To identify lessons to be learnt and make recommendations to the Police, so that complaints from future operations may be prevented; and
- (c) To promote public awareness of the work of the IPCC.

1.7 The decision for this Study was taken at the IPCC Special Council Meeting on 5 July 2019 because by then there were already 53 RCs and 68 Notifiable Complaints (NCs) related to the POEs. The IPCC considered that such a study would provide the broad picture necessary

³ These recommendations may be found in the Annual Reports of the IPCC.

for it to effectively perform its duty to review the findings of CAPO investigations. It was intended to cover the POEs from 9 June to 2 July and the action of the Police. The decision for the Study was announced by press release on the day.

1.8 A Special Task Force was set up, headed by the Deputy Secretary-General (Operations) with Secretariat staff experienced in vetting CAPO investigations. They were supervised by a Task Force Steering Group comprising the Chairmen of the Serious Complaints Committee (SCC), the Operations Advisory Committee, the Legal Committee and the Publicity and Survey Committee.

1.9 The IPCC decision to undertake the Study was welcomed by both the Chief Executive and the Commissioner. Both pledged to give such support and provide such information as necessary. The IPCC further indicated its intention to publish a report of the Study (Report). As the Study was to cover only the period from 9 June to 2 July 2019, the Chief Executive expressed the wish to see the Report completed and published within six months, by early January 2020.

1.10 The IPCC called for information from the public via a dedicated email portal and a telephone hotline. By mid-August 2019, the IPCC had received more than 24 000 texts, photos, video clips and hyperlinks.

1.11 Meanwhile, all complaints arising from the POEs were viewed as serious complaints by the IPCC and would be overseen by the SCC with interviews or collection of evidence under observation by either a Member of the Council or an Observer from among the 120 Observers, appointed by the Secretary for Security, to assist the IPCC.

1.12 As the protests continued after 1 July 2019 with increasing frequency and ferocity, the complaints against the Police increased. On 21 July 2019, a major incident in Yuen Long sparked accusations of Police collusion with triads and a large number of complaints clustered. Then, on 11 August 2019, there were large-scale protests occasioning the firing of a tear gas canister in the MTR station at Kwai Fong, attracting much public concern. In this light, at another Special Council Meeting on 16 August 2019, the IPCC decided to extend the scope of the Study to include the incidents in Yuen Long and Kwai Fong Station.

1.13 The protests, however, continued and escalated. On 31 August 2019, after another day of city-wide protests, Police action in the Prince Edward Station injured a number of protesters. There was confusion over the number of injured protesters in the reports by the Fire Services Department (FSD) and the Police, giving rise to speculation that some deaths were not accounted for. The refusal of the MTR Corporation Limited (MTRC), for data privacy protection, to publish the closed circuit television (CCTV) recordings of the MTR station,

fuelled the speculation. As this was a matter of serious public concern, the IPCC brought this incident into the Study.

1.14 The protests continued to spread on a wider scale and with increasing ferocity of violence and even vandalism from the end of August going on to March 2020. This Study therefore comprises:

- (a) An overview of the POEs from 9 June 2019 to March 2020 (Chapter 4);
- (b) A study of the events of six identified incident days -
 - (i) 9 June 2019 (Chapter 7);
 - (ii) 12 June 2019 (Chapter 8);
 - (iii) 1 July 2019 (Chapter 9);
 - (iv) 21 July 2019 (Yuen Long Incident) (Chapter 10);
 - (v) 11 August 2019 (Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations Incident) (Chapter 11);
and
 - (vi) 31 August 2019 (Prince Edward Station Incident) (Chapter 12).

1.15 These six incident days were chosen because of complaints (both reportable and notifiable) clustering around them and because of the public concern expressed over those incidents. They also evidenced the change of protest action and tactics, followed by some revision of Police strategy.

1.16 In addition to the Overview (Chapter 4) offering a broad perspective and the Incident Days (Chapters 7-12) detailing the individual events, the Study includes two other topics of public interest:

- (a) Police Identification During the Public Order Events (Chapter 13); and
- (b) Detention Arrangements at San Uk Ling Holding Centre (Chapter 14).

These two topics have figured in complaints as well as in expressions of public concern as reported by the media.

Nature of the Thematic Study

1.17 The IPCC has no investigatory powers and this Study does not address the conduct of individual police officers. That is a matter for the Commissioner through CAPO and with disciplinary control over all police officers under the Police Force Ordinance (PFO). The public,

as with the IPCC, would expect him to act firmly with fairness, where action is needed in order to ensure the integrity of the Force and to maintain trust of the public.

1.18 Although the IPCC has no powers of compulsion, it has the support of the Commissioner and other public institutions and much information has also been provided by the public and sourced from public domains including the media. The IPCC also puts on record its appreciation for the advice and assistance of the panel of international experts in this Study.

Perspective of Complaints Received

1.19 The IPCC has yet to review the findings of the ongoing CAPO investigations into complaints received as at 29 February 2020, totalling 542 RCs. Nonetheless, Chapter 5: Synopsis of Complaints gives details of the nature and volume of these complaints to facilitate a better understanding of the POEs over the past months.

Perspective of Principle

1.20 The Police has a public duty to maintain law and order of course, to be discharged within the boundaries of the law. The Police Force has General Orders and Manuals for compliance inter alia on the use of force. Together with the law, they form an important part of the perspective against which to view the action of the Police in response to the POEs. The Report dedicates individual chapters for these different perspectives.

Perspective of Police Officers, the Protesters and the Public

1.21 For better understanding of the POEs and the Police action in response, the IPCC has commissioned independent academics to conduct two surveys, one on how police officers view themselves as officers of the law and the other on how protesters and the general public view the Police action. The results of these surveys are summarised in Chapter 15 of this Report. The full survey reports are available on the IPCC website.

Limitations of the Report

1.22 This Study seeks to provide the fullest view possible of the POEs and the Police action in response. From this view the IPCC distills the lessons to be learnt and makes recommendations to the Commissioner. The IPCC is conscious that this is a collection of the facts available to date and so there could be gaps in the Report.

Adoption of the Report

1.23 At the Special Council Meeting held on 24 April 2020, IPCC Members unanimously adopted this Report and approved it (1) be made to the Chief Executive pursuant to section 30 of the IPCC Ordinance, (2) be made to the Commissioner pursuant to section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance, and (3) be published for public information.

CHAPTER 2

LEGAL POWERS, CONSTRAINTS AND IMPLICATIONS

2.1 The Study is conducted pursuant to the IPCC's authority under sections 8(1)(a), 8(1)(c) and 8(2) of the IPCC Ordinance. The aim is to make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) and the Chief Executive on how police practices and procedures may be improved in the light of the Police handling of the Public Order Events (POEs) arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill since 9 June 2019 in Hong Kong.

Legal Basis to Conduct Study under the IPCC Ordinance

2.2 One of the statutory functions conferred by section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance to the IPCC is *“to identify any fault or deficiency in any practice or procedure adopted by the police force that has led to or might lead to reportable complaints, and to make recommendations (as the Council considers appropriate) to the Commissioner or the Chief Executive or both of them in respect of such practice or procedure”*. In accordance with this section, the purpose of the Study is to identify any fault or deficiency in the practice and procedure adopted by the Police in specific POEs covered by the Study; and to make recommendations to the Chief Executive and the Commissioner accordingly. The Study also enables the IPCC to effectively discharge its duty under section 8(1)(a) of monitoring the police investigation of individual complaints arising out of or in connection with those specific POEs, by providing the Council with an overall and more comprehensive picture of the POEs. In this regard, the Study aids the work of different IPCC committees, including the Serious Complaints Committee, Operations Advisory Committee, and Publicity and Survey Committee.

2.3 With regard to the actual operation of the Study, section 8(2) of the IPCC Ordinance empowers the IPCC, stipulating that *“[t]he Council may do all such things that are reasonably necessary for, or incidental or conducive to, the performance of its functions under this Ordinance”*. For this Study, the IPCC has proactively taken various steps, including in particular:

- (a) inviting the general public to provide information;
- (b) commissioning research on display of police insignia in POEs in other jurisdictions;
- (c) engaging academics and scholars to conduct two surveys, one on how police officers view themselves as officers of the law and the other on how protesters and the general public view the Police action in the POEs; and

- (d) inviting a panel of international experts to advise on the conduct of the Study.

2.4 This Report is made by the IPCC to the Chief Executive pursuant to section 30 of the IPCC Ordinance and to the Commissioner pursuant to section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance.

Legal Limitations and Their Implications

2.5 The IPCC has attempted to reconstruct all essential and important episodes on the six incident days. To this end, the IPCC has collated information from all possible sources, including the Police, the media, Government departments, public and corporate bodies, as well as the general public.

2.6 The IPCC does not, however, have legal powers to summon witnesses, seize records (e.g. video footage, police records), issue search warrants or compel the production of documents by the Police and other stakeholders. The IPCC also lacks statutory authority to require members of the public or the Police to answer specific questions.

2.7 In the absence of such powers, on the part of the IPCC, the basis for the Police's provision of information to the IPCC has been the Chief Executive's indication of full support for the Study and her pledge to the IPCC Chairman of her Administration's full co-operation, as well as Commissioner's indication to the IPCC Chairman that the Police would support and cooperate with the IPCC.¹

2.8 The IPCC considers that the Chief Executive and her Administration have used their best endeavours to cooperate and abide by their pledge.

2.9 Given the magnitude and rapidly evolving circumstances of POEs over the past months, the IPCC recognises that the Police has had to face unprecedented challenges and understandably did not have the manpower or resources to meet these challenges and respond to the IPCC within the time requested as well as carrying out normal duties. In most cases, the information requested was subsequently provided. In some instances, the Police has explained that some of the requested information was not available due to the fact that officers were unable to make detailed contemporaneous records as the circumstances were extremely chaotic and demanding.

2.10 Apart from the Police, the IPCC has also received assistance and cooperation from various stakeholders, including the Fire Services Department, the Hospital Authority, the MTR Corporation Limited and CITIC Limited, for which the IPCC wishes to express its gratitude.

¹ The IPCC's Press Release on 2 July 2019

Due to privacy or related concerns, some stakeholders could not fully meet the requests of the IPCC in their entirety regarding transfer of personal data. This was particularly with requests for release of CCTV footage capturing facial images. Meanwhile, the Secretariat of the Legislative Council (LegCo) to date has not been able to provide CCTV footage of the storming of the LegCo Complex on 1 July 2019 because the Legislative Council Commission (LCC) for the 2019-2020 legislative session has yet to be formed. Hence, the LegCo Secretariat cannot present IPCC's request for LCC's consideration.

2.11 As a result of the above challenges and the scale and evolving nature of the POEs, the Study has taken time to progress despite the efforts of the IPCC Members and Secretariat.

CHAPTER 3**METHODOLOGY AND SOURCES OF INFORMATION**

3.1 The purpose of this Study is to ascertain the facts pertaining to the six incident days and the two topics so as to:

- (a) facilitate the IPCC to examine at a later stage the Reportable Complaints arising from the six incident days and the two topics; and
- (b) identify any fault or deficiency in any police practices or procedures that might lead to complaints, and to make relevant recommendations to the Commissioner of Police in respect of such practices or procedures.

The IPCC has indicated to the Chief Executive that it intends to publish this Report for the information of the community. In this respect, the IPCC believes that it also has the effect of increasing the public's awareness of the role of the IPCC. The IPCC has also decided to submit this Report to the Chief Executive pursuant to section 30 of the IPCC Ordinance.

3.2 To achieve this purpose, this Study has been conducted in three stages, namely:

- (a) Fact Finding;
- (b) Assessment; and
- (c) Recommendations.

3.3 This is a Report on IPCC's findings as at 29 February 2020.

3.4 After collecting information from available sources on the six incident days and the facts relevant to the two topics including the circumstances under which the facts unfolded, the IPCC would duly assess all the materials and make recommendations in accordance with section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance. The objective is to improve Police operations from a macro perspective.

3.5 The fact finding exercise in this Study is undertaken by a Task Force set up within the IPCC Secretariat, under the supervision of a Task Force Steering Group comprising the Chairmen of the Serious Complaints Committee, Operations Advisory Committee, Legal Committee and Publicity and Survey Committee, and in consultation with the International Expert Panel (IEP) on the approach and methodology in data collection and analysis. The IPCC's engagement with the IEP on the progress of the Study is outlined at Annex 1. This

Chapter outlines the methodology of the fact finding process, which includes collection of information, examination of data, and use of the materials for the purpose of the Study.

Collection of Information

3.6 The IPCC has endeavoured to cast the net as wide as possible to reconstruct the facts relevant to the Study. The major sources of information are:

Hong Kong Police Force

3.7 Since 2 July 2019, the IPCC has been in liaison with the Police for access to information on their handling of the public order events (POEs) in the six incident days and on the two topics under study. Prior to publication of this Report, there have been regular meetings and rounds of letter/memo/email correspondence with the Police on the relevant arrangements. Information has been collected from the Police through the following:

- (a) documentary materials and statistical information concerning Police manpower, deployment plan, summary brief and incident log, use of force, Letter of No Objection (LoNO) applications, police injuries on the six incident days under study; police weapons and use of force guidelines; detention arrangements and records of San Uk Ling Holding Centre (SULHC); background and identification of Special Tactical Contingent; media handling, doxxing against police officers and handling of misinformation, furnished in six main batches and subsequent follow-ups since September 2019;
- (b) meetings with the Police between October and December 2019 on Police operations on 9 June, 12 June, 1 July and 21 July 2019, detention arrangements at SULHC, cyberbullying against police officers, and Police media handling policy; further responses by the Police in February 2020 in respect of the incidents on 21 July, 11 August and 31 August 2019, and the detention arrangements at SULHC, and clarifications pertaining to the six incident days and SULHC;
- (c) operational orders, videos recorded by the Police pertaining to the operations on 9 June, 12 June, 1 July, 11 August, and 31 August 2019 (comprising a total of 96 video clips of about 18 hours long), detention registers and occurrence books of SULHC, police beat radio and 999 calls recordings on 21 July 2019, examined by IPCC Secretariat at the Police Headquarters between September and November 2019 and in February 2020 respectively;
- (d) visits to Police Tactical Unit (PTU) Headquarters for demonstrations of the equipment and weapons used by the Police and different strategies in anti-riot

operation of PTU Company in August and September 2019; and

- (e) visits to police stations in Tsim Sha Tsui and Wong Tai Sin, and Wong Tai Sin Disciplined Services Quarters by representatives of TFSG and IEP in September 2019, and visit to detention facilities at SULHC and Sheung Shui Police Station in October 2019.

3.8 In addition to the above information, the Police has provided the IPCC with a Management Response on each of the incident days. This Management Response is included in all relevant Chapters.

3.9 Materials were also obtained from other sources (in no specific order) via information requests, meetings and site visits:

Fire Services Department

- Ambulance service logs and relevant information relating to the events on 31 August and SULHC at meetings in October 2019 and subsequent follow-ups.

MTR Corporation Limited

- CCTV records, damage reports, and voice communication records between MTR Operations Control Centre and the Police, Fire Services Department (FSD) / Ambulance personnel concerning various days under study, comprising a total of 259 video clips of about 458 hours long, 9 damage reports, and 126 audio clips of about 80 minutes, received in October 2019.
- Supplementary information relating to events at MTR stations on 21 July, 11 August, and 31 August 2019.
- Visits to Yuen Long Station, Prince Edward Station and Kwai Fong Station.

Legislative Council

- Information on damages provided by Legislative Council (LegCo) Secretariat at meeting and site visit to LegCo Complex in July 2019.

CITIC Limited

- CCTV records of 12 June and 1-2 July at Lung Wui Road and Tim Mei Avenue provided

by CITIC Limited in September and November 2019 respectively, comprising a total of 258 video clips of about 286 hours long.

- Visit to CITIC Tower and the vicinity.

Hospital Authority

- Statistical information on persons sustaining injuries during the POEs from 9 June to 24 November received from Hospital Authority in November 2019.

Public Information from Relevant Organisations

3.10 The IPCC has also made reference to the following sources of information:

- (a) Press releases and POEs-related information published by the Police (*police.gov.hk*) and information given at Police media briefings;
- (b) Press releases of the Government and news published through Information Services Department (*news.gov.hk* and *isd.gov.hk*);
- (c) Press statements and documents published by LegCo including records of LegCo Meetings and replies to LegCo Questions (*legco.gov.hk*);
- (d) Press releases of MTR Corporation Limited (MTRC) regarding the incidents on 21 July, 11 August and 31 August 2019 (archived at *www.mtr.com.hk*); and
- (e) Information given by FSD at press conference in September 2019 in relation to the Prince Edward Station Incident on 31 August.

Information from Social Media

3.11 The IPCC also looked for information on internet forums, social media and video-sharing platforms, such as LIHKG (*lihkg.com*), Hong Kong Discuss Forum commonly known as DISCUSS (*discuss.com.hk*), HKGolden (*hkgolden.com*), Facebook (*facebook.com*) and YouTube (*youtube.com*). However, some instant messaging Apps, such as Telegram, are not fully accessible to the public, and access to certain chat groups within the App is restricted to some account holders only.

Appeal for Information from the Public

3.12 The IPCC has set up a dedicated platform to appeal to the public for any information related to the POEs and incidents since 9 June 2019 through email (*taskforce@ipcc.gov.hk*),

WhatsApp (9781 9840), or telephone (2862 8200). As at 29 February 2020, information from the public was received via 12 217 emails (including 9 838 template emails supporting the police officer's firing of live round in Tsuen Wan on 1 October 2019), 658 WhatsApp users, 112 telephone calls, four letters and one digital video disc (DVD) by mail/by hand. A summary of the information and distribution of such is set out in Table 3-1 and Table 3-2 below. A sample of the IPCC "Call for Information" form and further analysis of the information received from the public are at Annex 2.

	Photo attachments	Video attachments/links
Email	2 562	3 347
WhatsApp	20 988	19 186
Total	23 550	22 533

Table 3-1 Information received from the public

Incident Day	Number of submissions from members of the public (Photo / Video)
Sunday 9 June 2019 (Chapter 7)	730 / 699
Wednesday 12 June 2019 (Chapter 8)	1 460 / 1 397
Monday 1 July 2019 (Chapter 9)	1 366 / 1 307
Sunday 21 July 2019 (Chapter 10)	1 295 / 1 239
Sunday 11 August 2019 (Chapter 11)	1 083 / 1 037
Saturday 31 August 2019 (Chapter 12)	1 319 / 1 262

Table 3-2 Distribution of information received from the public on the six incident days

Live Footage and Media Reports

3.13 Live news footages from ten local electronic media and their online webcast platforms covering POEs between June 2019 and February 2020, daily news clipping from 33 print local media (newspapers and magazines), as well as coverage from nearly 200 local, regional and international web outlets via monitoring services provided by Wisers Information Limited and the subscription to three overseas newspapers facilitate the IPCC Secretariat's research and corroboration of facts. In addition, the IPCC also took reference of reports and videos footage from other websites and local online forums to support or verify the reconstruction of

chronology of the incidents. A summary of the media reports examined in this Study is as follows:

Incident Day	Number of news articles	Number / Duration of news footage
Sunday 9 June 2019 (Chapter 7)	171	53 / around 48 hours
Wednesday 12 June 2019 (Chapter 8)	318	281 / around 163 hours
Monday 1 July 2019 (Chapter 9)	68	138 / around 120 hours
Sunday 21 July 2019 (Chapter 10)	294	70 / around 107 hours
Sunday 11 August 2019 (Chapter 11)	213	102 / around 101 hours
Saturday 31 August 2019 (Chapter 12)	252	112 / around 117 hours

Table 3-3 Media reports examined on the six incident days

Analysis of Information

3.14 Given the time constraint and the availability of information from different sources, the examination of material for reconstructing the chronology of each incident day proceeded in parallel with the information gathering process. In corroborating the facts, live footage and video clips sourced from the media were cross-referenced with maps, news reports, public information and subsequently verified against information from the Police, CITIC Limited, MTRC and FSD. The IPCC has made the best efforts possible to check information against different sources to establish the facts and chronology of the incidents.

3.15 Within the IPCC's powers and scope for conducting the Study, the TFSG has fully taken the IEP's advice to give a factual and impartial report on the incidents in a balanced, even-handed way with reference to the context, and structure the observations on what distilled from the facts in the chronology. In line with the approach as discussed with IEP during their visit to Hong Kong in November 2019, rigorous comparison, counter-checking and matching of various sources of information on particular episodes of an incident have been undertaken to ensure reasonable grounds to substantiate the findings and to support the analysis. Sources of information for reconstructing the chronology of specific incidents / topics are listed in the respective Chapters.

3.16 Along the fact finding process, graphics (e.g. maps and floor plans) and photos were found in the public domain. Selection of the graphics and photos for use in the Report was based on a number of factors, such as the information that the graphics and photos sufficiently covered the incidents / topics under study and whether the IPCC could get copyright consent.

Not all copyright owners were willing to give consent or the consent fees were pitched at prohibitively high levels. Notwithstanding these set-backs, the IPCC is satisfied that the graphics and photos with publication permission obtained did sufficiently substitute the information of the photos and graphics for which no permission was granted.

Points to Note

3.17 The Report is based on information available to the IPCC up to 29 February 2020. This information was collected on a voluntary basis. The IPCC has no investigatory powers to compel the disclosure of information.

3.18 Unless otherwise specified, the dates and times cited in this Report refer to the year of 2019 and local Hong Kong time (i.e. Coordinated Universal Time plus eight hours) in 24-hour clock format with hours and minutes in two digits (e.g. 21:00). Calendar dates in the general format of day, month and year (e.g. 9 June 2019) and in brief format of year-month-day (e.g. 2019-06-09) are used interchangeably in the Report. Details of time in the chronology of incidents are approximate having regard to certain slight variations between different sources. Similarly, quantifiable descriptions, such as number of participants or protesters present at particular junctures, were estimates based on media reports, Police information, or manual counting from photos or video snapshots. Whilst every effort has been made to ensure accuracy of the information, the contents may not be an absolute or complete account of the incidents.

**IPCC'S ENGAGEMENT WITH INTERNATIONAL EXPERT PANEL
FOR FORMULATION OF THE THEMATIC STUDY**

Date	Events
2019-08-16	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Invitation of scholars and specialists from oversight bodies in United Kingdom, Australia, Canada and New Zealand with extensive experience in researching crowd behaviour and public order and studying POEs and Police action to form an IEP to enhance the objectivity of the Study.
2019-09-04	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Announcement of the appointment of IEP comprising five persons (listed below) pursuant to section 6(3) of the IPCC Ordinance to give advice to the IPCC and to provide independent assessment of the progress of the Study. <p>Chairman : Sir Denis O'Connor, CBE, QPM 2012 Radzinowicz Fellow and Affiliated Lecturer at the Institute of Criminology, University of Cambridge; Formerly Chief Inspector of Her Majesty's Inspectorate of Constabulary (2008 – 2012) and Chief Constable of Surrey (2000 – 2004), United Kingdom</p> <p>Members : Judge Colin Doherty Chair of Independent Police Conduct Authority, New Zealand; District Court Judge of New Zealand</p> <p>The Hon Michael F. Adams QC Chief Commissioner of the Law Enforcement Conduct Commission, New South Wales, Australia</p> <p>Professor Clifford Stott Dean for Research, Faculty of Natural Sciences, Keele University, United Kingdom</p> <p>Mr. Gerry McNeilly Barrister and Solicitor, Ontario, Canada; Formerly Independent Police Review Director, Ontario, Canada (2008 – 2019) and President of Canadian Association for Civilian Oversight of Law Enforcement (2018 – 2019)</p>

Date	Events
2019-09-02 to 2019-09-06	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Visit to Hong Kong by Sir Denis O'Connor and Mr. Gerry McNeilly, Chairman and Member of IEP, who participated in (i) meetings with the IPCC Secretariat and Members on the methodology, scope and research of the Study; (ii) scene visit to LegCo Complex and areas in the vicinity; (iii) meeting with the Police; (iv) scene visits to police stations and disciplined service quarters; (v) visit to PTU Headquarters; and (vi) meeting with local scholars. • Media briefing by Chairman of IEP.
2019-09-20	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Meeting of Task Force with IEP Members via tele-conferencing.
2019-09-23	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Meeting of Task Force with IEP Members via tele-conferencing.
2019-11-03 to 2019-11-09	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • IEP Visit to Hong Kong, when the whole panel participated in (i) meetings with IPCC Members and Secretariat to discuss the POEs development, progress of the Study, and the IPCC capability; (ii) meeting with local scholars on POEs-related survey findings; and (iii) meeting and knowledge sharing session with the Police representatives. • Media briefing by IEP Chairman and Members. • IEP communicated to the IPCC Chairman via “Report of Progress (8 Nov 2019)” (Appendix) their views regarding the IPCC’s capability and powers as well as progress on the Study.
2019-11-13 and 2019-12-03	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Meetings of the IPCC to review progress of various aspects of the Study upon receipt of IEP’s views on the production of this Report.
2019-12-11	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • The IEP indicated that they had taken a decision to stand aside from its role of supporting the Study any further at this stage. • Press statement by the IPCC regarding the IEP’s standing aside from its role after the preliminary stage of Study. • The IPCC extended deep appreciation to the IEP for their participation in and contribution to the assessment of the progress of the Study and for their advice on data collection and analysis in the fact-finding process; the IPCC would take into account the IEP’s advice thoroughly in finalising the Report which is essentially a report on facts; the IPCC is pleased with IEP members’ desire to remain engaged. After publishing the Report, depending on the development of events and needs, the IPCC would decide the way forward and appropriate arrangement going forward.

APPENDIX TO ANNEX 1**INDEPENDENT EXPERT PANEL POSITION STATEMENT
REPORT OF PROGRESS (8 NOV 2019)**

The Independent Expert panel, has analysed IPCC capability to conduct a rigorous Inquiry of the policing of protest in Hong Kong, and indicated a shortfall in IPCC powers, capacity, and independent investigative capability necessary to match the scale of events and the standards required of an international police watchdog operating in a society that values freedoms and rights.

The Independent Expert Panel conducted a stock-take this week which reveals some advance by the IPCC Taskforce, but structural limitations in the scope and powers of the IPCC Inquiry remain, inhibiting its ability to establish a coherent and representative body of evidence.

The stock-take concludes that the IPCC needs to substantially enhance its capacity: to assemble a coherent account of the facts from police and other bodies; to access important documents and validate accounts supplied by police and others in a timely fashion; and to significantly improve its capability to identify and secure evidence from key witnesses from outside policing.

Given the scale of events in Hong Kong it remains to be seen whether a light touch, oversight body like the IPCC, can make sufficient progress to produce any decisive contribution to an account of developments, that might enable necessary policy changes in policing practice.

As a group we believe it may be possible to provide an interim report with limited, but sufficient facts to allow preliminary conclusions to be drawn on some of the drivers of protest, the handling of key events, and the evolution of the disturbances.

But for that to happen, the IPCC will have to revise its resources and processes. It remains to be seen by whether it can do this in short order. If it can, we believe it may provide a compelling case for the next steps including a deeper more comprehensive inquiry in a number of respects by an independent body with requisite powers, but also enable action to commence on improvements that can be made in the shorter term.

Ref. Number



獨立監察警方處理投訴委員會
Independent Police Complaints Council

呼籲提供資料

Call for Information

監警會現根據監警會條例第 8(1)(c)條呼籲公眾就自 2019 年 6 月 9 日之大型公眾活動向本會提供資料。

Pursuant to S. 8 (1)(c) of the Independent Police Complaints Council Ordinance, IPCC would like to call for information from members of the public regarding the public order events (POEs) since 9 June 2019.

本會收集資料的目的是為重組有關公眾活動的重要事實以及評估警方就事件的處理。
The purpose of collecting the information is to reconstruct the material facts of the events and to assess the police handling.

這份表格只用作提供資料給監警會，並不會用作舉報罪案或提出投訴。如閣下欲向警方作出投訴，請聯絡投訴警察課

(https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_tc/11_useful_info/cap.html)，或就罪案向警方舉報 (<https://www1.erc.police.gov.hk/cmisercc/CCC/PolicePublicPage?language=ch>)。This form is only used for providing information to IPCC. This is not for complaint or crime reporting purpose. If you wish to make a complaint against police, please contact Complaints Against Police Office

(https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_en/11_useful_info/cap.html), or report the crime to the Hong Kong Police Force

(<https://www1.erc.police.gov.hk/cmisercc/CCC/PolicePublicPage?language=en>).

你的個人資料不會在未得你同意的情況下轉交或披露予第三者。然而，若監警會認為適合或有必要，經此電郵所提供給監警會的錄影或相片有可能於日後公開。

While all your personal information will not be transferred or disclosed to any other party without your consent, the videos or photos provided via this email address may be later disclosed to public where IPCC considers appropriate or necessary in discharging its functions.

明白及同意
I understand and agree

個人資料 Personal Particulars

英文姓名 Name (English)*	姓氏 Surname	名字 Other names
中文姓名 Name (Chinese)*		

聯絡方法 Contact Means*

電話 Phone		傳真 Fax	
住址 Address			
年齡 Age	性別 Gender	請選擇 Please Select	國籍 Nationality
職業 Occupation	請選擇 Please Select		
是否代表機構提供資料 Are you a representative of an organization to submit the information?			
<input type="checkbox"/> 是 Yes.	機構名稱 Name of Organization:		<input type="checkbox"/> 否 No

資料提供乃自願性質。提供姓名和聯絡方法會有助本會於需要時與你聯絡。

*The provision of all above data is voluntary. Name and contact means are not mandatory, but it will help us to contact you if necessary.

Next Page

事件詳情 Incident Details

事件日期 Incident Date		事件時間(時:分) Incident Time(hh:mm)	
事件地點 Incident Location			
地區 District	請選擇 Please Select		▼
街道 Street	請選擇 Please Select		▼
大廈 Building	請選擇 Please Select		▼

事件詳細資訊* Incident Details*			
已向警方舉報? Crime Report to Police?	<input type="checkbox"/>	是, 警察檔案編號: Yes, Police reference no:	<input type="checkbox"/> 否 No
已向投訴警察課投訴? Complaint against Police made to Police?	<input type="checkbox"/>	是, 投訴警察課編號*: Yes, CAPO RN Number*:	<input type="checkbox"/> 否 No
資料來源 Source of information	請選擇 Please Select		
附件 Attachment	如欲就你所提供的資料提交任何補充附件 / 文件, 請於提交此表格時一併以電郵方式遞交。 If you would like to supplement any attachments / documents in relation to the information you provided, please submit along with this form via email.		
附件來源 Source of attachment	請選擇 Please Select		

*在陳述有關事實時, 你無需透露可能負法律責任的內容

#如閣下提供投訴編號, 在這表格上的相關資料可能會被用作處理該投訴。

*In giving a truthful account, you need not reveal facts which may incriminate yourself.

#If you provide the reference number of the complaint case, the relevant information given in this form may be used for the purpose of handling that complaint.

Next Page

免責聲明 (請在合適的方格內填上「√」號)

Disclaimer (Please tick the boxes where appropriate.)

- 本人明白現所提交的資料並不會用作提出投訴或舉報罪案的用途。
I understand that the submission of this information is NOT for complaint or crime report purpose.

本人明白本人的個人資料可能會被用作輯錄統計數據，但不會在未得本人同意的情況下轉交或披露予第三者。如本人欲更改個人資料，可以透過電郵聯絡 enq@ipcc.gov.hk

- I understand that my personal data may be used for compilation of statistics and will not be transferred or disclosed to any other party without my consent. If I wish to amend my personal data, I may contact IPCC at enq@ipcc.gov.hk.

- 我不希望監警會聯絡本人。
I do NOT wish IPCC to contact me.

Submit

SUMMARY OF INFORMATION PROVIDED BY THE PUBLIC

1. With regard to public response to the appeal for provision of information for this Study, the IPCC received 12 217 emails enclosing 2 562 photos and 3 347 videos (including 9 838 similar or template emails supporting the police officer's firing of live round at Tsuen Wan on 1 October), and a total of 20 988 photos and 19 186 videos from 658 WhatsApp users. It is observed that:

- (a) most photos and videos received are apparently snapshots of live news which are linked on open platforms e.g. YouTube and social media; and
- (b) over 75% of the photos/videos received are similar or duplicate copies sent by different members of the public.

2. A table showing the distribution of photos and videos received on major incident dates is appended below:

Date	Event	Photo	Video
2019-06-09	Clash outside the LegCo Complex, after a procession on Hong Kong Island	730	699
2019-06-12	Clash outside the LegCo Complex, after POEs in nearby area	1 460	1 397
2019-07-01	Storming of the LegCo Complex, after procession on Hong Kong Island	1 366	1 307
2019-07-07	Procession in Kowloon	895	856
2019-07-13	Procession in Sheung Shui	824	789
2019-07-14	Procession in Sha Tin, descending into clashes in New Town Plaza	1 060	1 014
2019-07-21	Protest in Sheung Wan, after a procession on Hong Kong Island ; Yuen Long Incident	1 295	1 239
2019-07-27	Rally and procession in Yuen Long	824	789
2019-07-28	Procession on Hong Kong Island	895	856
2019-07-30	Siege of Kwai Chung and Tin Shui Wai Police Stations	683	653
2019-08-03	Protests in Kowloon, after procession in Mong Kok	1 130	1 082
2019-08-04	Protests in various districts, after processions in Tseung Kwan O and Western District	918	879
2019-08-05	General strike and protests in seven districts	1 154	1 104

Date	Event	Photo	Video
2019-08-10	Procession without LoNO in Tai Po, followed by flash protests in various districts in New Territories and Kowloon, with rallies on Hong Kong Island	447	428
2019-08-11	Rally on Hong Kong Island and procession without LoNO in Sham Shui Po, followed by protests and clashes in Tsim Sha Tsui, Causeway Bay and other districts including Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations	1 083	1 037
2019-08-24	Public procession and meeting in Kwun Tong, leading to protests in various districts in Kowloon	801	766
2019-08-25	Public meetings and procession in Kwai Tsing, leading to protests in Tsuen Wan, Sham Shui Po and other districts	848	811
2019-08-31	Procession without LoNO on Hong Kong Island and protests in various locations on Hong Kong Island and in Kowloon including the incident at Prince Edward Station	1 319	1 262
2019-09-01	Protests at the Hong Kong International Airport and other districts	565	541
2019-09-14	Disputes in Amoy Garden, Ngau Tau Kok	683	653
2019-09-15	Procession without LoNO in Causeway Bay, leading to protests on Hong Kong Island	801	766
2019-10-01	Procession without LoNO on Hong Kong Island, along with protests in various districts including Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Yau Tsim Mong; a police officer firing a live round hitting a 18-year-old male on his chest	659	631
2019-10-04	Protests in various districts against the Anti-mask Law; a plainclothes police officer was attacked and set on fire briefly by a petrol bomb, the attack led to a live shot by the officer hitting a 14-year-old male's thigh	754	721
2019-10-13	Territory-wide protests at shopping malls	989	946
2019-11-04	A university student fell down from a storey in a carpark near police dispersal operation in Tseung Kwan O; the fall led to brain injury and death of the student on 8 November 2019	424	406

Date	Event	Photo	Video
2019-11-11	Protests leading to citywide traffic disruptions; a 21-year-old male was hit at right abdomen by a live round shot in Sai Wan Ho; a 57-year-old male was set on fire following an argument with a group of protesters in Ma On Shan	330	315
2019-11-12	Continuation of citywide protests aiming to paralyse transport network, day-long clash at CUHK with subsequent disruption to traffic to and from Tai Po on Tolo Highway till 16 November 2019	330	315
2019-11-17	Day-long clash in Hung Hom and Tsim Sha Tsui near PolyU campus; Police cordoned off PolyU campus from 17 November night till around noon of 29 November 2019	283	271
Total		23 550	22 533

CHAPTER 4**AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE
FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019****Introduction**

4.1 Since June 2019, Hong Kong has faced its most challenging public order situation in a generation. This Study aims to enable the IPCC to understand this situation, so that it may better perform its statutory duties under section 8 of the IPCC Ordinance.

4.2 A good starting point is the description of the situation from June to October 2019, made by the Court of Appeal (CA) in its Judgment handed down on 9 April 2020 on the Judicial Review brought by 26 current Members of the Legislative Council (LegCo) and one former Member.¹ The description, based on evidence placed before the CA and unchallenged by the Applicants in the Judicial Review, is as follows:

“1. Since June 2019, Hong Kong has experienced serious social unrests and public disorders marked by protests, escalating violence, vandalisms and arsons across the territory. It is a dire situation that has not been seen in the last 50 years.

2. The increasing violence has resulted in widespread property damage, assaults on persons, serious damage and interruptions to major public transport facilities and highways. The violence and damage are mostly caused by protestors wearing masks and dressed in black outfits. At the same time, it is a common phenomenon that many other protestors participating in public assemblies and processions who are not involved in violence are also wearing masks and dressed in black outfits.

...

14. Most pertinently, the uncontested evidence shows that the outbreaks of violence are escalated by the more radical and violent protestors employing the “black-bloc” tactics² to avoid identification and arrests, who are to a certain extent supported or at least condoned (and hence emboldened) by protestors who

¹ CACV 541, 542, 583/2019. Footnotes 2 to 7 are reproduced from the Judgment of the Court of Appeal handed down on 9 April 2020.

² “Black-bloc” tactics is where the protestors would often appear in groups and wear black clothing with little or not distinguishable feature, and cover the whole or a substantial part of their faces with sunglasses, goggles, masks, or respirators etc. See the Affirmation of Cheung Tin Lok at [8] - [9].

participate in initially peaceful public assemblies or processions. Such tactics is facilitated in light of the following³:

- (1) Public order events are highly fluid in nature. A public meeting or procession that is initially lawful and peaceful can quickly turn into an unauthorized or unlawful assembly.*
- (2) The most violent and radical protestors are those who have their faces covered and therefore their identities concealed. They are also often equipped with gas masks and refuse to disperse even when the police deploy tear gas.*
- (3) These radical and violent protestors with their faces covered often mix themselves into a larger group of protestors (taking part in a largely peaceful public meeting or procession) who are also wearing masks. This has rendered identification most difficult when the violent protestors with their faces concealed can easily slip away amidst the chaos they have aroused.*
- (4) The more radical and violent protestors are often supported by many less violent protestors (also wearing facial covers to avoid recognition) by, for example, the provision of resources (such as food and water), tools and even weapons, as well as free rides when the police are taking actions of dispersal and arrests.*
- (5) Moreover, the more radical and violent protestors committing criminal conducts are encouraged by and find it essential to regard that they have the support or back-up of those peaceful protestors who themselves are also wearing face covering masks and present at the public assemblies or processions.*
- (6) In this respect, as the expert evidence shows⁴, mask functions as a facilitator of anonymity. When anonymity joins with group function, participants' responsibilities become easily diffused or shared. Individuals tend to feel they are being supported by a lot of people. This is an emboldenment effect. If the dominant group value or purpose in the situation is anti-social, the individual will conform to that and more likely to act antisocially.⁵*

³ See, in particular, the Affirmation of Cheung Tin Lok at [20] - [24] and [31].

⁴ See the Affidavit of Dr Tsui, Pui Wan Ephraem at [17].

⁵ The word "anti-social" refers to acting against larger social norms which, within the group, can be their own emerging group norm. It implies that the person is not really losing his self in the group, but is just following the group norm.

15. *Large scale incidents of breach of peace in Hong Kong ensued. In blatant defiance of the law, the more radical and violent protestors have perpetrated widespread criminal conducts ranging from unlawful assembly to serious property damage, assault on persons, arsons and use of lethal weapons.*

16. *The unchallenged evidence shows that from 9 June to 4 October 2019, violent and radical protestors had:*⁶

- (1) *forcefully and repeatedly charged police cordon lines with the use of weapons whilst protected by body armour, and blocked roads and tunnels (including main thoroughfares) with various objects which had resulted in persons trapped with or in their vehicles and, on some occasions, attacked drivers who voiced displeasure at such blockages;*
- (2) *vandalised and wrecked serious damage to public facilities (such as pavements, roadside fences and barriers, signages, dust bins, lamp posts, traffic lights, street lights and CCTV cameras, etc) and Government buildings (such as the Legislative Council Complex, Police Headquarters, Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices, etc), set fire by burning public properties outside or at police stations and on the streets in multiple districts, and hurled inflammable liquid bombs at police vehicles, police stations and even police officers and at and within the MTR stations;*
- (3) *damaged private shopping malls, shops and restaurants, etc; there were also reports of looting and theft in some of the shops that were damaged;*
- (4) *damaged residential quarters and harassed residents of the same;*
- (5) *crippled the operations of critical transport infrastructure including the Hong Kong International Airport, a large number of the MTR stations and tracks (notwithstanding and in breach of relevant injunctive orders in place, and at the same time causing massive, serious and repeated destruction of facilities in the MTR stations resulting in the closure of multiple MTR stations due to safety concerns and the need for urgent repair as well as taking*

⁶ Moreover: (a) the use of inflammable liquid bombs has become more frequent and extensive, and even more so since late September 2019. On 29 September and 1 October 2019, the number of inflammable liquid bombs hurled by the protestors were respectively around 100 and over 100; (b) on 1 October 2019, a police officer was injured by protestors throwing corrosive liquid at him, causing a third degree burn; (c) on the same date, some police officers were seen viciously attacked by large groups of protestors by a range of objects and lethal weapons, and a few of them whose lives were under imminent threat had to defend themselves with firearms; (d) as at 4 October 2019, a total of 2 135 individuals have been arrested for taking part in public order events of an unlawful or criminal nature, or being involved in other unlawful or criminal activities. See the unchallenged evidence in the Affirmation of Cheung Tin Lok at [4] - [6], and the Affidavit of Chui Shih Yen, Joceline at [26] - [28].

- deliberate acts to stop or delay MTR trains from operating during morning rush), and the Cross-Harbour Tunnel, etc;*
- (6) *harassed and attacked ordinary citizens and police officers holding different political views by a range of objects and lethal weapons, such as high-powered laser pointers (which were sometimes shone directly into the eyes of the victim from a short distance), sling shots and catapults to launch a variety of projectiles, sharp or sharpened objects (including box cutters and sharpened bamboo poles), bricks and inflammable liquid bombs etc, causing numerous injuries of various degree; and*
- (7) *stopped vehicles and threatened drivers with damage to their vehicles to force them to yield up their mobile telephones for examination or to pay the protestors a sum of money.*

17. The evidence therefore has shown that by the beginning of October 2019, the above acts of radical and violent protesters had seriously breached public peace, and posed a grave and genuine danger to the police and other members of the public. Normal functions of the Hong Kong community had been severely disrupted. More importantly, there were signs of and even declared intent by violent protestors to procure further escalation in the degree of violence and vandalism in unlawful assemblies which might as a result turn into riots, pushing Hong Kong to a most perilous situation.⁷

4.3 This indeed was the situation the community suffered during the protests. However, the protests, the violence and the vandalism did not stop with October 2019. They continued with ferocity, easing off only when the community was stricken by COVID-19, and even then, sporadic violent protests still break out in the streets. Although there is no published estimate of the overall costs of the direct and indirect destruction wrought by the protests, some information offers an indication of the scope and scale of the damage caused directly or indirectly by the protests to private property, Government and public property, traffic infrastructure, MTR network, injury to civilians, the economy at large and the general crime situation during the protests in Hong Kong. A list of damage and impact available to the IPCC from the public and the Police is at Annex 1.

4.4 Such costs are significant with lasting consequences to the economy. Other less visible, intangible losses would be the departure of corporations from our city and the loss of companies intending to set up offices here. In sum, the detriment to our economy and to our

⁷ See the Affirmation of Cheung Tin Lok at [5] - [6] on the statistics and descriptions showing the significant increase and extensive use of inflammable liquid bombs by the protestors, attacks on police officers and individuals who held different views with the protestors, and the growing degree of violence and vandalism.

reputation worldwide is incalculable.

Events Giving Rise to the Public Order Events (POEs)

4.5 The event which triggered the incidents over the past months was the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The Fugitive Offenders Bill was proposed by the Government in February 2019 for the surrender arrangement of fugitives between the Mainland, Taiwan, Macau and the HKSAR. Although the Government did make various amendments to the Fugitive Offenders Bill to allay the concern of different sectors, there remained the fear among some that the Fugitive Offenders Bill might be used to transfer political dissidents to the Mainland. This gave rise to POEs, initially peaceful, against the Fugitive Offenders Bill. In addition to processions by certain members of the legal profession, the Civil Human Rights Front (CHRF) launched public processions on two Sundays, 31 March⁸ and 28 April 2019⁹ respectively. Both events were peaceful with estimated 12 000 and 130 000 participants, while the Police estimated 5 200 and 22 800 at the peak. These would pale into insignificance against those in the months to follow.

4.6 After the first reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill, there was such serious division of views within LegCo and prolonged filibustering in debates that it was impossible ever to set up a Bills Committee despite four meetings between mid-April and mid-May 2019.¹⁰ As a result, the Secretary for Security (S for S) announced on 20 May 2019 the Government's decision to take the Fugitive Offenders Bill directly to the Plenary Council Meeting on 12 June 2019 for a Second Reading debate, bypassing the Bills Committee stage.¹¹ Against the background of this extraordinary arrangement, CHRF organised a third procession in protest on the afternoon of Sunday 9 June 2019. This would start from Victoria Park and proceed to Central Government Complex (CGC) for a public meeting there that evening. The Police issued a Letter of No Objection (LoNO) for both the public procession and the public meeting on 9 June 2019 up to 23:59. The first clashes between the Police and some violent protesters took place that evening after the procession of 9 June 2019. Meanwhile, CHRF also called upon protesters to besiege

⁸ SCMP (2019-03-31). Thousands take to Hong Kong streets against proposal to extradite suspects to mainland China. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3004031/thousands-take-hong-kong-streets-against-proposal-extradite>

⁹ SCMP (2019-04-28). Estimated 130,000 protesters join march against proposed extradition law that will allow transfer of fugitives from Hong Kong to mainland China. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3007999/thousands-set-join-protest-march-against-proposed>

¹⁰ RTHK News (2019-04-03). 逃犯修訂條例草案首讀及二讀 民主派高叫「撤回惡法」。 Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1451120-20190403.htm>

¹¹ Secretary for Security's letter dated 20 May 2019. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/english/hc/papers/hccb2-1491-1-e.pdf>

News.gov.hk (2019-05-20). Fugitive bill reading requested. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/eng/2019/05/20190520/20190520_153733_565.html

the LegCo Complex on 12 June 2019, to frustrate the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill.



Image 4-1: An online post on 11 June 2019 calling for occupying the LegCo Complex to frustrate the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.7 The introduction of the Fugitive Offenders Bill was a decision on the part of the Government. Some in LegCo and in the community saw political implications and raised objection. It is open to the community to protest against it peacefully: it is a right protected by law.

The Role of the Police

4.8 The responsibility of the Police is for law enforcement, quite separate from any political considerations that may be attached to the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The role, and therefore the actions, of the Police in this instance are the same as for any other disturbance of law and order requiring their presence. The IPCC is well aware and has been reminded by the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) that the Police plays no part in politics. This is evidenced by the statement of the Deputy Commissioner of Police, Management at the United Nations (UN) Commission of Human Rights:

“These violent criminals preached to their followers that the end justifies the means; that breaking the law to achieve their goals was a noble cause. Police officers are not there to

judge whether their proclaimed cause is a just one, or if it even makes sense. We don't have to. We are police officers. Our one and only mission is to find out whether anyone has committed a crime. If someone breaks the law, it is our lawful duty to stop him and arrest him. Whether a cause is altruistic or in fact self-serving is completely irrelevant to us. The law demands that we arrest them. The basic premise of the rule of law is that. No one is above the law. This is why I and the other 30 000 members of the Hong Kong Police have all taken the solemn oath to serve as police officers, without fear of or favour to any person and with malice or ill-will towards none. This is the truth about Hong Kong.¹²"

4.9 The Police performs duties prescribed by the Police Force Ordinance (PFO). In relation to protests, the Police has a central role in law enforcement under the Public Order Ordinance (POO). In addition, the Police has the duty to arrest persons who, in the course of protests, have committed offences under the laws of the HKSAR and give assistance to the Department of Justice in bringing offenders to trial before the Courts of the HKSAR.

The Scope of this Chapter

4.10 While peaceful protest against Government policy and actions is protected by law, the violence the community has seen in the streets of Hong Kong is not lawful behaviour. The Police, as the law enforcement agent designated to maintain law and order in Hong Kong, has to discharge its police duty in law. In this connection, many complaints have been made against the actions of police officers. These have to be seen with the perspective and against the backdrop of the events of the past months, which have necessitated the Police exercising the powers conferred by law.

4.11 On the basis of the information available to the IPCC, this Chapter will look at the following facets, first in the form of a statistical overview and then, as a monthly analysis:

- (a) The events surrounding the Fugitive Offenders Bill that gave rise to the POEs;
- (b) Escalation of the POEs since 9 June 2019 with the progress of time (month by month), in terms of:
 - (i) The frequency of the POEs,
 - (ii) The scale of the POEs, and
 - (iii) The general level of violence;
- (c) Major protests and events widely covered by the media and circulated on the internet

¹² Statement by Deputy Commissioner of Police, Mr. Oscar Kwok, to the UN Human Rights Commission, 9 March 2020.

that propelled the unrest;

- (d) The violent acts of the protesters, including vandalising shopping malls, MTR station facilities, setting on fire shops and branches of Mainland companies and banks, attacking police officers, vigilantism on people with opposing views;
- (e) The weapons and tactics of the violent protesters;
- (f) Police use of force in response to the acts of the violent protesters; and
- (g) The messages and propaganda on the internet that continued to fuel the violent protests:
 - (i) Appealing and mobilising people to take part in protests and to resort to violence;
 - (ii) Sharing information to act in concert to assist the violent protesters clashes with the Police;
 - (iii) Teaching people to make weapons, such as petrol bombs;
 - (iv) Disseminating untrue or unverified information;
 - (v) Attacking Government Offices;
 - (vi) Vandalising pro-Government corporations;
 - (vii) Tracking the movements of police officers on duty;
 - (viii) Doxxing police officers and their family members; and
 - (ix) Inciting hatred against the Police.

POEs from June 2019 to February 2020: A Statistical Overview

4.12 The public of Hong Kong has the freedom of public assembly subject to regulation under the POO. Sections 7 to 9 and 13 to 14 of the POO require organisers to notify the Commissioner of intended public meetings and processions, and the Police is obliged to issue a LoNO with or without conditions, unless the Police for the reasons set out in the POO issues a Letter of Objection. The POO provides for appeal in the event of Police objection to an Appeal Board on Public Meetings and Processions of independent persons chaired by a retired Justice of the High Court of the HKSAR. An approved public meeting/ procession referred to in this Study would be a meeting/ procession with a LoNO. An unapproved public meeting/ procession would either be one not notified or one with Police objection either unappealed or upheld on appeal. Procedures for notification of public meeting/ procession are well known and the Police has a website catering to persons or organisations intending to organise public meetings/ procession.¹³

4.13 Between June 2019 and February 2020, there were 300 applications for LoNO, of which 252 were issued. 48 Letters of Objection with reasons were given, as Table 4-1 will show.

¹³ Public Order Events Support: https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_en/11_useful_info/licences/poess.html

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

	Jun 2019	Jul 2019	Aug 2019	Sep 2019	Oct 2019	Nov 2019	Dec 2019	Jan 2020	Feb 2020	Total
Public Meeting with LoNO	17	33	52	18	7	20	31	14	0	192
Public Procession with LoNO	3	19	23	3	0	5	5	2	0	60
Prohibited Public Meeting	1	3	10	5	4	2	0	1	0	26
Objected Public Procession	0	3	9	3	3	2	0	2	0	22
Total number of notification	21	58	94	29	14	29	36	19	0	300
Object rate (%)	5%	10%	20%	28%	50%	14%	0%	16%	---	16%

Table 4-1 Notifiable and Notified POEs in relation to Fugitive Offenders Bill
(from June 2019 to February 2020)
(Information provided by HKPF)

4.14 A list of reported POEs from June 2019 to February 2020 is given in the table at Annex 2.

4.15 As of February 2020, the violent protests against the Fugitive Offenders Bill since June 2019 have led to 7 613 arrests. Police action in response to the violent protests have given rise to 542 Reportable Complaints (RCs) and 1 099 Notifiable Complaints (NCs), making a total of 1 641 complaints. The breakdown of these figures by month is given in Tables 4-2 and 4-3 below.

	Jun 2019	Jul 2019	Aug 2019	Sep 2019	Oct 2019	Nov 2019	Dec 2019	Jan 2020	Feb 2020	Total
Number of Arrests	73	224	751	764	1 189	2 899	698	669	346	7 613

Table 4-2: Number of arrests by month
(Information provided by HKPF)

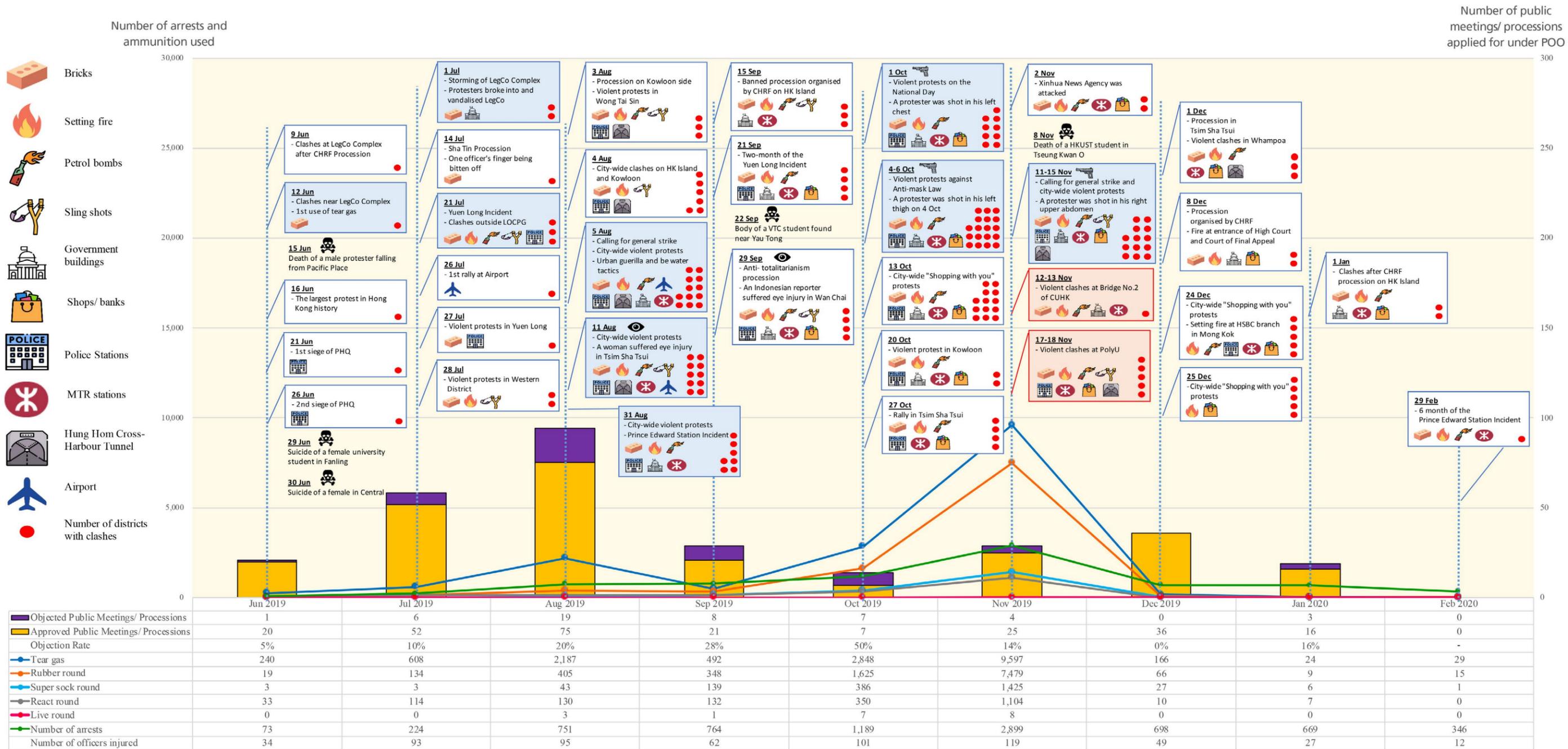
CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

	Jun 2019	Jul 2019	Aug 2019	Sep 2019	Oct 2019	Nov 2019	Dec 2019	Jan 2020	Feb 2020	Total
RC	57	78	93	66	88	120	30	10	0	542
NC	80	150	153	149	188	218	101	60	0	1 099
RC+NC	137	228	246	215	276	338	131	70	0	1 641

Table 4-3: Number of complaints by month

4.16 Major POEs together with information on the violence encountered and the use of weapons by the Police in response for the same period are given in Chart 4-1.

An Overview of the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill



Icons made by Darius Dan, Freepik, Kiranshastry, photo3idea_studio, Pixel perfect, smalllikeart, Smashicons, Vectors Market from www.flaticon.com

Note: indicates significant incidents. indicates the most violent clashes.

Disclaimer: The information contained in this chart is accurate to the best of the knowledge of the IPCC based on available information.

Chart 4-1: An Overview of the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill since June 2019

Protests in June 2019:

June 2019						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
						1
2	3	4	5	6	7	8
9 CHRF Procession (1.03 million) * Clashes at the LegCo Complex	10	11	12 Scheduled Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill Clashes near the LegCo Complex	13	14	15 Death of a male protester outside Pacific Place
16 CHRF Procession (2 million) *	17	18	19	20	21 First siege of PHQ	22
23	24	25	26 Second siege of PHQ	27	28	29
30						

* Figures according to organiser

Highlights of June 2019

- **The beginnings of violence, from pushing and shoving by a small number of protesters on 9 June 2019, extended to attacking police officers with umbrellas and metal poles, and hurling bricks and hard objects by a large number of violent protesters on 12 June 2019.**
- **Police Headquarters (PHQ) was besieged by protesters on 21 and 26 June 2019.**

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Sunday 9 June 2019 – Clashes at the LegCo Complex after CHRF Procession

4.17 The night of 9 June 2019 saw the beginnings of violence in the protests. Prior to 9 June 2019, there were messages on the internet inciting people to throw water bottles, bricks, stones and even petrol bombs during the protest that day. Tutorials online gave guidance on making petrol bombs.¹⁴ CHRF, and two political groups, namely Hong Kong Independence Union and Studentlocalism, called for protesters to stay behind at the CGC area to rehearse laying siege to the LegCo Complex. These two groups were established among younger people for political reform after the “Occupy Movement (OCM)” in 2014.



Image 4-2: An LIHKG post on 9 June 2019, with an image showing how to make petrol bombs
(Image source: LIHKG)

¹⁴ LIHKG (2019-06-09). [抗爭手冊] End game 前準備. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1193418/page/1>



Image 4-3: A propaganda on CHRF's Facebook promoting the public procession to be held on 9 June 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.18 The procession on 9 June 2019 was generally peaceful and orderly with 1.03 million people taking part according to CHRF, while the Police counted 240 000 at the peak. After the procession, hundreds of protesters remained outside the LegCo Complex while a few hundred gathered at Harcourt Road, outside Admiralty Centre. At 23:07, the Government issued a press release acknowledging the large turnout of the march and announcing the Second Reading debate on the Fugitive Offenders Bill to be held on 12 June 2019. This message changed the atmosphere outside the LegCo Complex.

4.19 Around midnight, hundreds of violent protesters charged on the Police cordon line at the designated demonstration area of the LegCo Complex. They threw iron rods, metal barriers, water bottles and other hard objects at the police officers. In response, the police officers used batons, oleoresin capsicum (OC) Foam (i.e. pepper spray) and pelargonic acid vanillylamide (PAVA) solution (i.e. pepper liquid) to hold back the violent protesters. Some of the protesters fled to Tim Mei Avenue, Lung Wui Road, Lung Wo Road and Gloucester Road, blocking those roads. Around 02:50, the Police concluded dispersal action with 358 protesters hemmed in outside old Wan Chai Police Station. They were allowed to leave after being searched and their personal particulars recorded by the Police.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-4: Clash scenes at the LegCo Complex “Drum” area on 9 June 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.20 The violence in the clashes on 9 June 2019 was of a much lower level than that in the clashes in subsequent protests. The gear worn or used by both the violent protesters and the police officers on 9 June 2019 was comparatively light. Only about half of the protesters had surgical masks and only a few were in black outfits with masks, goggles and helmets. The police officers at the cordon line were in standard uniform. Even the Special Tactical Contingent officers later deployed to the scene were not in full riot gear.

4.21 Chapter 7 contains a detailed study of the Incident on 9 June 2019.

Wednesday 12 June 2019 – Clashes near LegCo Complex

4.22 Calls for escalation of protest against the Fugitive Offenders Bill continued to circulate on the internet. On 10 June 2019, messages appeared on the internet calling for people to “picnic” at the Tamar Park and take part in a strike starting from 11 June 2019. CHRF also announced their plan to host public meetings against the Fugitive Offenders Bill¹⁵, starting from 10:00 of 12 June 2019 until the end of the Second Reading, which the LegCo President had scheduled to be held on 20 June 2019.¹⁶ There were also calls on the internet to escalate the

¹⁵ On 10 June 2019, CHRF announced that they planned to hold a public meeting against the Fugitive Offenders Bill at the LegCo Complex “Drum” area on 12 June. On 11 June, LegCo, after consultation with the Police on the security arrangement, closed the LegCo Complex “Drum” area until further notice. The CHRF assembly eventually took place on the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road on 12 June as per the LoNO of the Police.

¹⁶ According to LegCo’s press release on 11 June 2019, LegCo President announced that 61 hours were reserved for the Second Reading debate of the Fugitive Offenders Bill commencing on 12 June and the last time slot for the debate was on 20 June. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/chinese/press/pr20190611-2.html> (Chinese only)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

level of violence, including storming of the LegCo Complex on 12 June 2019, to oppose the Fugitive Offenders Bill.¹⁷



Image 4-5: LIHKG posts calling for “picnic” and a general strike on 11 and 12 June 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.23 Beginning in the early morning on 12 June 2019, the day scheduled for the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill, tens of thousands of protesters gathered in the Admiralty area around CGC and the LegCo Complex paralyzing the traffic network, impeding LegCo Members from entering CGC and the LegCo Complex. In that morning, some protesters pried up bricks from the pavement, took away iron bars from the nearby construction sites and dismantled iron rods from the pavement railings. At 10:50, the LegCo Secretariat announced that the meeting for the Second Reading scheduled for 11:00 would be postponed to a time to be determined by the President.

¹⁷ Bastillepost (2019-06-11). 激進份子計劃包圍立法會 網傳商討襲擊警方「速龍隊」. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4529691>



Image 4-6: CGC area at 10:10 of 12 June 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.24 On the internet, protesters had given an ultimatum for the Government to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill by 15:00; otherwise, protest action will be escalated. When the time reached 15:00, a few hundred protesters wearing helmets, masks, cling film and goggles began pushing the mills barriers¹⁸ at Police cordon lines outside CGC and throwing bricks, water bottles, umbrellas, helmets and other hard objects at the police officers holding these lines. The Police initially defended with batons, OC Foam, and PAVA solution, eventually in the face of the protesters' mounting violence, the Police fired tear gas and less-lethal projectiles (including rubber rounds, super sock rounds and react rounds) to disperse them. At 15:30, the Police declared the situation a riot. The turmoil continued until midnight. The Police had fired a total of 240 rounds of tear gas, 19 rubber rounds, three super sock rounds and 33 react rounds.

¹⁸ Mills barriers are metal barriers with 1 metre high and 2 metres long usually interlocked with one another to form a line for crowd control purposes.

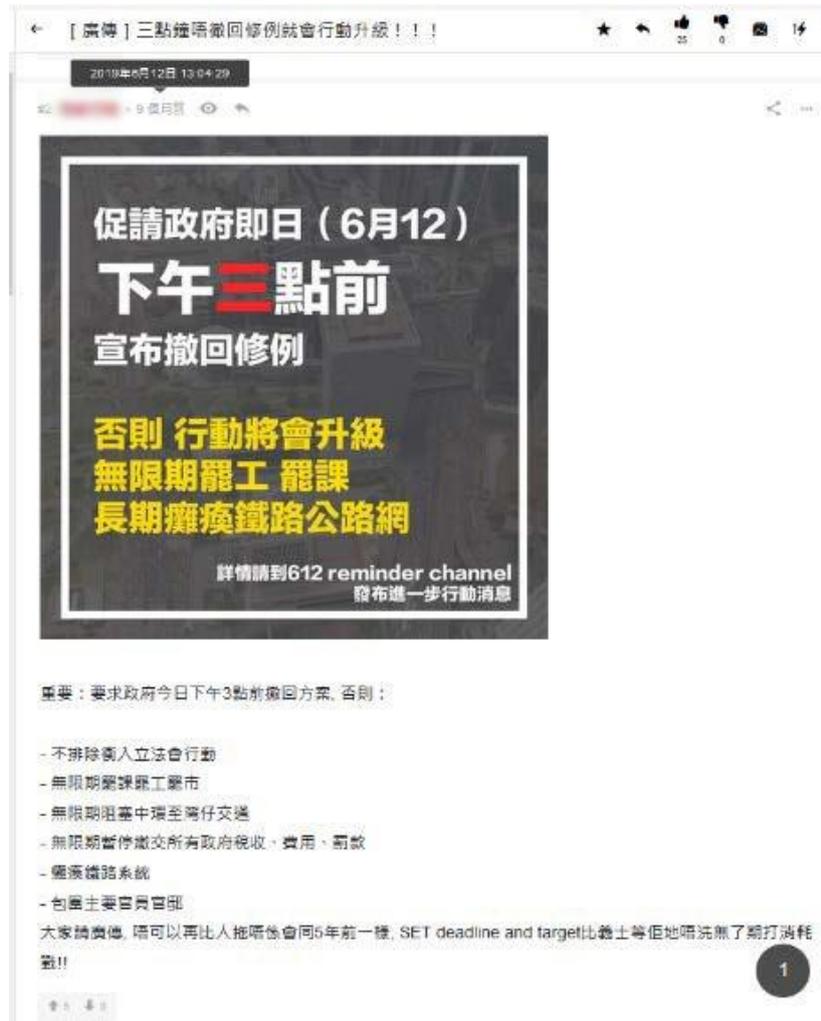


Image 4-7: Online ultimatum for the HKSAR to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill by 15:00 of 12 June 2019 (Image source: LIHKG)

4.25 A detailed study of the events of 12 June 2019 is at Chapter 8.

Protesters' Focus Evolved towards Allegations of Police Violence/ Brutality

4.26 After the event on 12 June 2019, the public / protesters' focus evolved. Public sentiment was directed not only towards the Government about the Fugitive Offenders Bill, but also towards the Police about alleged “police violence / brutality” on 12 June 2019. The next day, CHRF condemned the Police action on 12 June 2019 on its Facebook.¹⁹ On the same post, CHRF also announced that they had applied for LoNO to hold another procession 16 June

¹⁹ Facebook (2019-06-13). 民間人權陣線 Civil Human Rights Front. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/CivilHumanRightsFront/photos/a.517931904920872/2300277366686308/?type=3&theater>

2019 and a public meeting outside the LegCo Complex on 17 June 2019 and called for a General Strike. On 14 June 2019, CHRF further appealed to the public to join the events, with slogans such as “Let us be united. Say NO to police violence and China Extradition”.²⁰ Information was also circulated on the internet, such as hand signals, for communicating among protesters.²¹ Clear and comprehensive hand signals were noted during subsequent events.²²

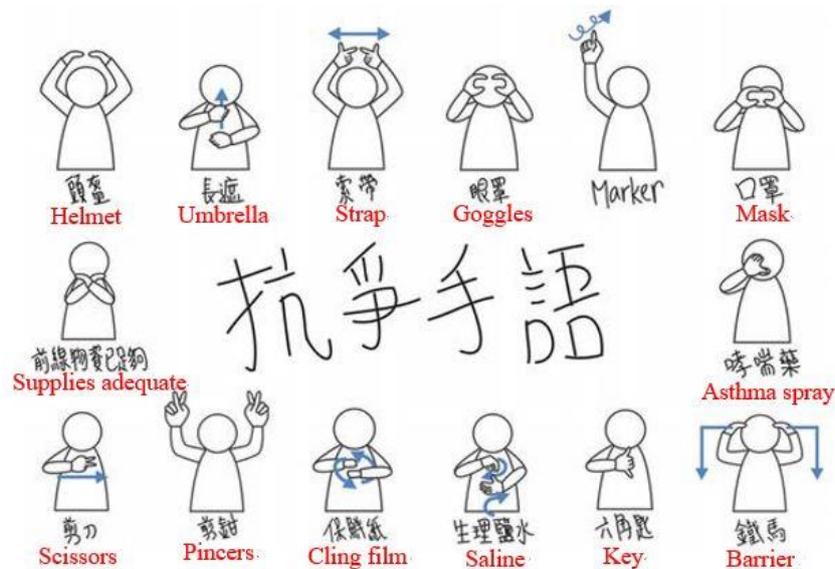


Image 4-8: Hand signals for protests shared on the internet on 14 June 2019
(English translation added)
(Image source: LIHKG)

²⁰ Facebook (2019-06-14). 民間人權陣線 Civil Human Rights Front. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/CivilHumanRightsFront/posts/we-want-withdrawal-only-tear-gas-bombs-did-not-disperse-us-bean-bag-shots-did-not-/2303776066336438/>

²¹ LIHKG (2019-06-14). 整左 set 常用《抗爭手語》請大家幫手傳播. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1220151/page/1>

²² SCMP (2019-07-05). How Hong Kong protesters used hand signals to communicate in July 1 anti-extradition bill demonstration. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/video/hong-kong/3017473/how-hong-kong-protesters-used-hand-signals-communicate-july-1-anti>

Saturday 15 June - Bill Suspension / A Protester Fell to His Death in Admiralty on 15 June

4.27 On 15 June 2019, the Government announced the suspension of the Fugitive Offenders Bill.²³ An hour and a half after the announcement, a protester in yellow raincoat climbed onto the podium of Pacific Place in Admiralty to hang a banner calling for complete withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill. Hours later, he climbed onto a scaffolding on the outer wall of Pacific Place. Before officers from Fire Services Department (FSD) could reach him, he fell to his death.²⁴ Very quickly, messages appeared on the internet holding the Government responsible for the death of a “烈士” (martyr).²⁵ His yellow raincoat soon became an icon for the subsequent protests.²⁶ Messages on the internet also called for people to go into the street and to join the procession to be launched by CHRF in memory of the deceased on the following day, 16 June 2019.²⁷

²³ SCMP (2019-09-04). Hong Kong leader Carrie Lam announces formal withdrawal of the extradition bill and sets up a platform to look into key causes of protest crisis. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3025641/hong-kong-leader-carrie-lam-announce-formal-withdrawal>

²⁴ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-15). Man protesting Hong Kong's extradition law dies after falling from mall in Admiralty. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/15/man-protesting-hong-kongs-extradition-law-unconscious-jumping-mall-admiralty/>

HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】反修例黃衣男太古廣場危站五小時墮地 送院不治. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/341018/逃犯條例-反修例黃衣男太古廣場危站五小時墮地-送院不治>

²⁵ The Storm Media (2019-06-16). 「全面撤回送中，我們不是暴動」香港反送中示威者墜樓身亡 網友「一人一花」悼祭烈士. Retrieved from <https://www.storm.mg/article/1392139>

Apple Daily.tw (2019-06-22). 「他是被政權推下去的」反送中烈士頭七 港人悼念：會完成他的理想. Retrieve from <https://tw.appledaily.com/headline/daily/20190622/38371660/>

²⁶ Young Post (2019-06-20). Hong Kong extradition law: Protest art from HK streets illustrate how people feel about fugitive bill. Retrieved from <https://yp.scmp.com/news/features/article/113369/hong-kong-extradition-law-protest-art-hk-streets-illustrate-how-people>

²⁷ Ibid

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-9: Online forum discussions holding the Government responsible for protester's death outside Pacific Place on 15 June 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-10: Protest art commemorating the deceased male protester, who was in yellow raincoat on the day of his death
(Image Source: LIHKG)

4.28 According to CHRF’s estimate, two million took part in the procession on 16 June 2019, while the Police counted 338 000 at the peak. The procession concluded peacefully at CGC. At the conclusion of the procession, CHRF commemorated the deceased protester, saying that “2 million and one” had taken part in the event.²⁸ The “Five Demands” first appeared for the first time in written form:²⁹

- complete withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill;
- accountability for Police decision to shoot on 12 June 2019;
- release of the arrested protesters and withdrawal of all charges;
- retraction of characterisation of the protest as “riot”;
- resignation of the Chief Executive.

²⁸ Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-16) 【逃犯條例】民陣宣佈遊行人數 200 萬零 1 人 警方指最高峰有 33.8 萬人. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1024348/即時-香港-逃犯條例-民陣宣佈遊行人數 200 萬零 1 人-警方指最高峰有 33-8 萬人>

²⁹ Facebook page of CHRF. Step down, Carrie Lam! Withdraw the extradition bill! Strike tomorrow! Statement from Civil Human Rights Front. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/CivilHumanRightsFront/posts/2306234469423931>

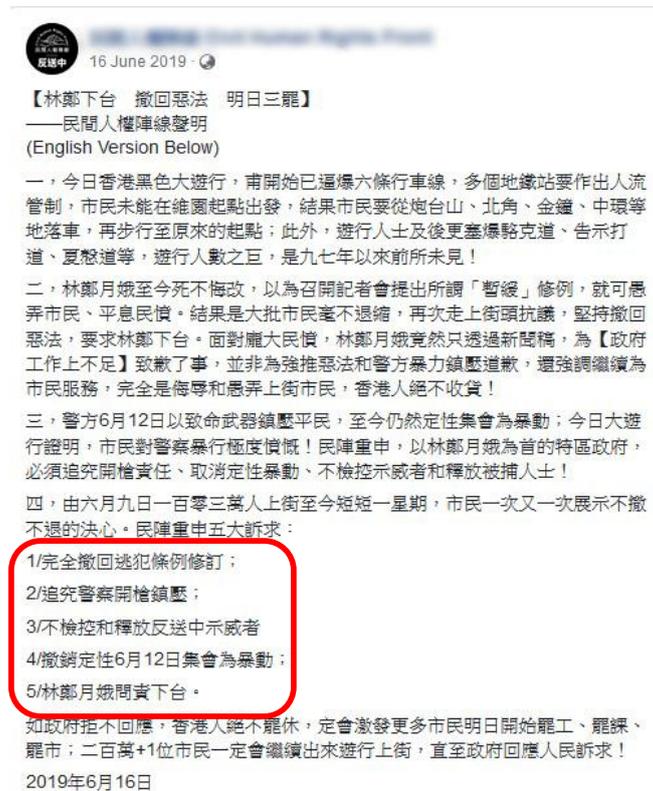


Image 4-11: The Five Demands on the Facebook page of CHRF on 16 June 2019
(Image source: CHRF's Facebook)

Friday 21 June & Wednesday 26 June 2019 – Besieging of Police Headquarters

4.29 On 18 and 19 June 2019, the Chief Executive and the S for S respectively apologised to the public for deficiencies in handling the Fugitive Offenders Bill. Despite their apologies, the protests did not abate. On the nights of 21 and 26 June 2019, hundreds to thousands of protesters laid siege to PHQ after taking part in rallies in Admiralty and Central respectively on those two days. The Police did not take any dispersal action although the exterior of PHQ was defaced with slogans. CCTV cameras were disabled or smashed laser beams were shone on police officers seen from the street. However, the Police only stood guard inside PHQ, and allowed the protesters to disperse in their own time.³⁰

³⁰ SCMP (2019-06-21). As it happened: How Hong Kong extradition bill protesters continued siege of police headquarters into Friday night. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015463/hong-kong-extradition-bill-protesters-occupy-road-leading>
SCMP (2019-06-26). Siege of Hong Kong police headquarters ends without clashes after 6-hour drama by extradition bill protesters. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3016238/hong-kong-police-under-siege-again-protesters-surround>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-12: Protesters laid sieges to PHQ on 21 and 26 June 2019
(Images source: SCMP)

4.30 On 29 and 30 June, two females, both in their twenties, committed suicide by jumping off from buildings. In their suicide notes, they expressed their dissatisfaction with the Fugitive Offenders Bill and encouraged other protesters in their cause.³¹ Some messages memorialising their death subsequently appeared on the internet.³²

4.31 In June 2019, the Police used tear gas and other less-lethal weapons on 12 June 2019 and arrested a total of 73. At the time, the clashes on 9 and 12 June were thought to be very violent. The storm had just begun. Those protests and clashes were mild in comparison with events in the months that followed.

³¹ On.cc (2019-06-29). 逃犯條例：牆身留反修例字句 教大女學生墮樓亡. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190629/bkn-20190629163435030-0629_00822_001.html

Apple Daily (2019-06-30). 【引渡惡法】29歲女子中環 ifc 墮樓亡 fb 留遺言：七一我去不了. Retrieved from https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190630/59773700?utm_campaign=hkad_article_share&utm_medium=social&utm_source=facebook&utm_content=share_link

³² LIHKG (2019-06-29). 粉嶺 21 歲女子墮樓亡. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1265749/page/6>
LIHKG (2019-06-30). 可靠消息指，今日在 IFC 墮樓的女子經搶救後不治. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1269178/page/2>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Protests in July 2019:

July 2019						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
	1 Storming of the LegCo Complex	2	3	4	5	6 Clashes in Tuen Mun
7 Clashes in Tsim Sha Tsui, West Kowloon, Mong Kok	8	9	10	11	12	13 Clashes in Sheung Shui
14 Clashes in Sha Tin A finger section of an officer bitten off by a protester	15	16	17	18	19	20
21 Clashes in Western District including LOCPG Protesters attacked in Yuen Long by people dressed in white	22	23	24	25	26 First Rally at the Airport	27 Reclaim Yuen Long
28 Clashes in Western District	29	30	31			

Highlights of July 2019

- **Violent protesters vandalising LegCo on 1 July 2019 with a subsequent cost of \$40 million for repairs.**
- **Violence spreading to different districts between 6 and 14 July 2019 and beginning to take root.**
- **Yuen Long Incident on 21 July 2019 and use of social media to incite and disseminate hatred for police officers.**
- **Violent protesters vandalising the exterior of the Liaison Office of the Central People's Government (LOCPG) office and clashing with the Police on 21 July 2019.**

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Monday 1 July 2019 - Storming of the LegCo Complex

4.32 Similar to previous years, CHRF launched the 1 July procession from Victoria Park to CGC that afternoon. Since 29 June 2019, there had been messages on the internet calling for people to disrupt the flag-raising ceremony in the morning of 1 July 2019, block the major thoroughfares near the Hong Kong Convention and Exhibition Centre (HKCEC) and attack the LegCo Complex to press for Government withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill.



Image 4-13: A post on LIHKG appealing for disrupting the flag-raising ceremony on 1 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.33 In the small hours of 1 July 2019, protesters started gathering outside the LegCo Complex. They later occupied the roads outside LegCo Complex and near the HKCEC. In the early morning, there were sporadic clashes between some protesters and the Police in these areas. At 10:44, the Police withdrew to avoid confrontations.

4.34 Around 13:17, some protesters used metal rods and a cart loaded with objects to smash the glass panels repeatedly at Members' Entrance 2 of the LegCo Complex.



Image 4-14: Around 13:17 of 1 July 2019, some protesters started charging the LegCo Complex, including using a metal cart
(Image source: HK01)

4.35 Around 17:00, protesters moved to Public Entrance 1 and smashed the glass panels there. Around 21:00, they broke into the LegCo Complex and threw at the police officers inside objects that emitted a billowing white powdery smoke believed to be acidic and poisonous. The police officers retreated to the adjacent Central Government Office, leaving the LegCo Complex unguarded. After entering the LegCo Complex, the violent protesters remained inside for about three hours, vandalising the main chamber, computer server rooms, offices and desks designated for Members. This resulted in a cost of about \$40 million for repairing. The restoration and repair of essential meeting facilities of the LegCo Complex were completed in early October 2019. However, the restoration of glass panels was still underway as at mid-March 2020.³³ The Police took dispersal action in the vicinity of the LegCo Complex around midnight, when most of the protesters had already left.

³³ Initial written reply by Secretary General, Legislative Council Secretariat to questions raised by Finance Committee Members in examining the Estimates of Expenditure 2020-21. Q4377. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr19-20/english/fc/fc/w_q/lc-e.pdf



Image 4-15: After 21:00 of 1 July 2019, violent protesters occupied the LegCo Complex and vandalised the premises
(Image source: HK01)

4.36 A detailed study of the events of 1 July 2019 is at Chapter 9.

4.37 On 4 July 2019, some posts on LIHKG called for netizens to use social media to persuade companies not to place advertisements with Television Broadcasts Limited (TVB), accusing TVB of reporting fake news or news in favour of the Government during the protests. As a result, some advertisers suspended placing advertisements with TVB.³⁴

³⁴ SCMP (2019-07-10). Pocari Sweat among big brand advertisers ditching Hong Kong broadcaster TVB over claims its extradition bill protest coverage was biased. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018074/pocari-sweat-among-big-brand-advertisers-reportedly-fleeing>

Hong Kong Free Press (2019-07-10). Hong Kong broadcaster TVB defends neutrality as clients suspend ads amid protester boycott campaign. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/07/10/hong-kong-broadcaster-tvb-defends-neutrality-clients-suspend-ads-amid-protester-boycott-campaign/>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

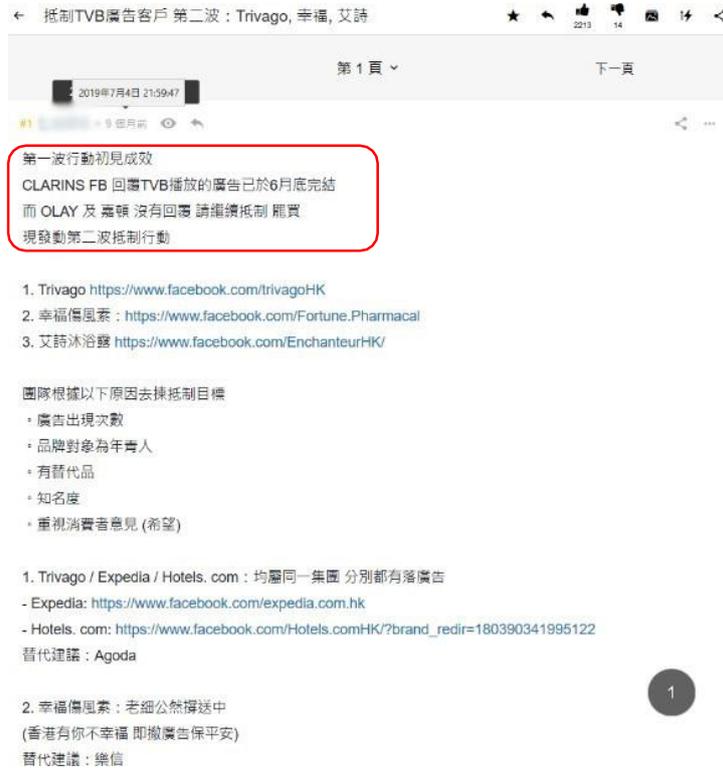


Image 4-16: Posts on LIHKG on 4 July 2019 regarding TVB's advertisers
(Image source: LIHKG)

Saturday 6 July to Sunday 14 July 2019 - Protests in Various Districts

4.38 The frequency and scale of protests escalated from 1 July 2019 onwards, with protests being staged in different districts. On Saturday 6 July 2019, a few thousand protesters covered by LoNO, marched in Tuen Mun with a theme “Reclaim Tuen Mun Park”. This was in protest against the nuisance from the singing and dancing performances of some middle-aged women commonly known as “dama” (大媽), which attracted many older men from the neighbourhood, and the lack of action by the authorities to stop these activities. In the evening, a few hundred protesters surrounded Tuen Mun Police Station and occupied the roads outside. The protesters left only after police officers formed a cordon line outside for dispersal action.³⁵

³⁵ SCMP (2019-07-06). Large crowd gathers in Hong Kong to protest against noisy middle-aged women ‘dama’ singers from mainland China shattering peace of Tuen Mun Park. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3017556/large-crowd-gathers-hong-kong-protest-against-noisy-middle>

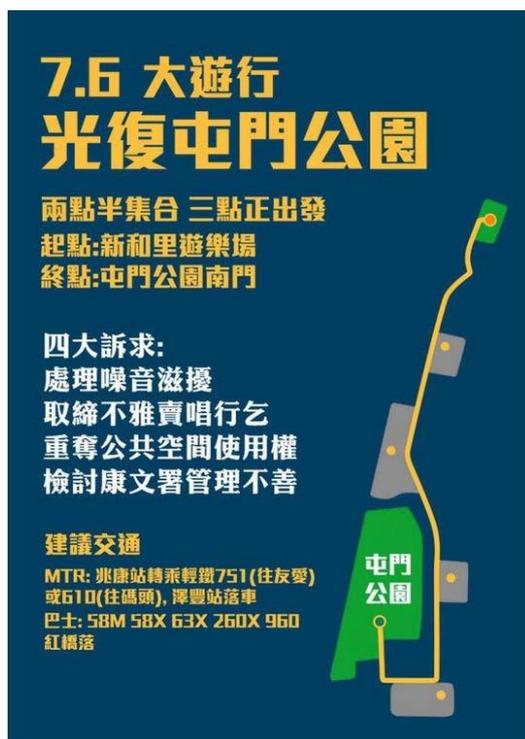


Image 4-17: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 6 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.39 On Sunday 7 July 2019, tens of thousands of protesters marched, with LoNO, from Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station, to promote their cause to Mainland visitors and to win their support.³⁶ One message on LIHKG wrote, “*I hope this march can tell Mainland people what we are fighting for and sow a seed against tyranny.*”³⁷ Upon conclusion of the peaceful procession at 19:30, thousands of protesters went “shopping” in Mong Kok where clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action. The Police arrested five persons.³⁸

³⁶ SCMP (2019-07-07). Mass protest draws tens of thousands to streets of Kowloon in march against Hong Kong extradition bill. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3017620/mass-rally-draws-tens-thousands-streets-kowloon-protest>

³⁷ RFI (2019-07-07). China station next target for Hong Kong protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.rfi.fr/en/contenu/20190707-china-station-next-target-hong-kong-protesters>

³⁸ SCMP (2019-07-08). Hong Kong police accused of provoking protesters and failing to wear ID during Mong Kok chaos after extradition bill march. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3017775/hong-kong-police-accused-provoking-protesters-and>

Ming Pao (2019-07-08). 【逃犯條例. 九龍大遊行. 短片】警驅散示威者拘 5 人譴責堵路 攝記協譴責警清場推撞記者 (07:40). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190708/s00001/1562516181559/> 【逃犯條例-九龍大遊行-短片】警驅散示威者拘 5 人譴責堵路-攝記協譴責警清場推撞記者



Image 4-18: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 7 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.40 The clashes on 7 July 2019 between the protesters and the Police in Yau Ma Tei continued in the early hours of 8 July 2019. During the Police operation in dispersing protesters, the Police formed a cordon line on Nathan Road. A large crowd of reporters stood in front of the cordon line. This created an impression that the police officers might not be able to advance. Some Legislative Councillors were among the reporters and negotiated with the Police with a loudhailer. One of the Legislative Councillors was later arrested and charged with two counts of “Assaulting a Police Officer” with the loudhailer.³⁹

³⁹ SCMP (2020-01-20). Hong Kong protests: ex-lawmaker Au Nok-hin accused of damaging police officer’s hearing during Yau Ma Tei stand-off. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3046886/hong-kong-protests-ex-lawmaker-au-nok-hin-accused>



Image 4-19: The presence of reporters in a POE in Mong Kok on 8 July 2019
(Image source: Cable TV)

4.41 On 9 July 2019, the Chief Executive announced that the Fugitive Offenders Bill was “dead”.⁴⁰ However, this did not reduce the momentum of the protests.

⁴⁰ HKSAR Government (2019-07-09). Transcript of remarks by CE at media session before ExCo meeting. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/09/P2019070900608.htm?fontSize=1>

4.42 On Saturday 13 July 2019, some protesters marched in Sheung Shui with LoNO, to “reclaim” Sheung Shui from the parallel trading activities which affected the daily lives of residents and caused overcrowding on-street. They also demanded the complete withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The organiser estimated a turnout of 30 000 while the Police counted 4 000 at the peak. Shortly after the march, clashes broke out between the protesters and some parallel tradesmen. When the Police took dispersal action, some protesters surrounded and attacked officers with umbrellas and metal poles. Some other protesters occupied roads. The crowd was eventually dispersed by night-time. At least ten police officers and 14 civilians were injured. The Police arrested four persons. The protesters were mostly young people, highly organised and well prepared to tackle police officers with weapons.⁴¹



Image 4-20: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 13 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.43 On Sunday 14 July 2019, the protesters launched the “Sha Tin Procession” with LoNO, when some protesters occupied the roads near East Rail Line Sha Tin Station. The organiser of the march estimated 115 000 participated while the Police counted 28 000 at the peak.

⁴¹ SCMP (2019-07-13). Hong Kong border town of Sheung Shui rocked by protest violence and chaos before police finally clear streets at night. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018473/sheung-shui-readies-itself-protests-hongkongers-take>

SCMP (2019-07-14). Pharmacies and cosmetics shops targeted as parallel trading protest takes ugly turn in Hong Kong border town. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018504/pharmacies-and-cosmetics-shops-targeted-parallel-trading>

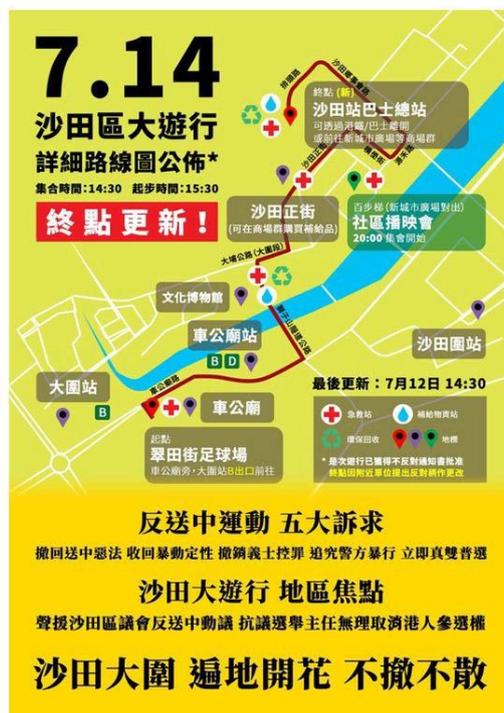


Image 4-21: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 14 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.44 Clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action. Many protesters ran into New Town Plaza where they had further violent clashes with the pursuing police officers. Outnumbered by the violent protesters, the police officers were violently attacked by the protesters with umbrellas and other objects. The officers were kicked and punched, and hard objects were hurled at them from all directions. Scenes in the shopping mall were chaotic and particularly violent. A video footage recorded a plainclothes officer being kicked from an escalator by a protester and then assaulted by others when he fell to the ground until a journalist came to his rescue. Another police officer had a section of a finger bitten off by a protester. A total of 11 police officers were injured. According to Hospital Authority (HA), 28 persons were treated at various hospitals in relation to the POEs that day. The Police arrested 47 persons. The clashes in the New Town Plaza were far more unruly and ferocious than the previous clashes. Yet, it was only the beginning of increasing violence that followed.⁴²

⁴² SCMP (2019-07-14). Hong Kong protesters in Sha Tin showered with support and supplies – even from 10 floors up. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018565/hong-kong-protesters-sha-tin-showered-support-and-supplies>

SCMP (2019-07-14). Pitched battles on Hong Kong streets and inside shopping malls as police move to clear extradition bill protesters after stand-off. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018531/thousands-gather-hong-kong-park-latest-rally-against>

SCMP (2019-07-15). Hong Kong police chief condemns ‘rioters’ after extradition bill clashes in Sha Tin leave 22 people in hospital with six in critical or serious condition. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3018579/hong-kong-police-chief-condemns-thug-protesters-after>

Sunday 21 July 2019 - Clashes outside LOCPG and the Yuen Long Incident

4.45 On 21 July 2019, CHRF launched a march with LoNO to walk from Victoria Park to Luard Road in Wan Chai. According to CHRF, 430 000 took part but the Police count was 138 000 at peak time. The protesters proclaimed their demands.

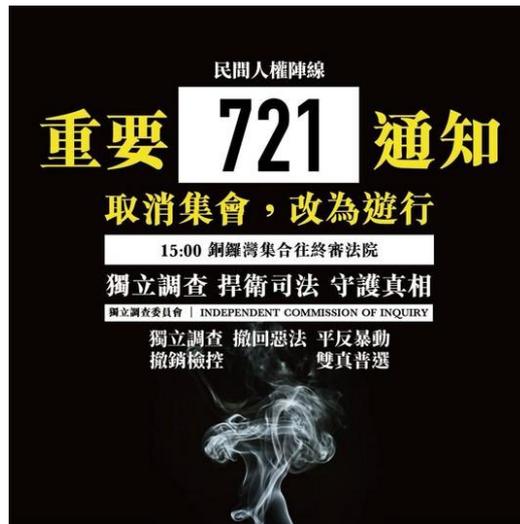


Image 4-22: Propaganda calling for participation of protest on 21 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.46 Many protesters did not stop at Luard Road but continued to walk in the direction of Sheung Wan. On arriving at LOCPG, they threw eggs and black ink or paint at the building and defaced the National Emblem on the building.⁴³ Violent clashes broke out with the Police. The protesters substantially escalated their violence in the disturbances: blocking roads, setting objects on fire and using different weapons including sling shots to cause injury. According to the Police, the violent protesters also used petrol bombs.⁴⁴ The turmoil continued until midnight. In the operation, the Police fired nine rubber rounds, 25 react rounds and 55 rounds of tear gas.⁴⁵

SCMP (2019-07-16). Head wounds, a severed finger, police and protesters in hospital: how a peaceful rally in Hong Kong descended into bloodshed and chaos in Sha Tin's New Town Plaza mall. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3018718/head-wounds-severed-finger-police-and-protesters>

⁴³ SCMP (2019-07-21). Central Hong Kong becomes battleground as riot police clash with protesters after third major march against extradition bill and siege of Beijing's liaison office. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3019483/tens-thousands-hong-kong-kick-third-major-protest-march>

⁴⁴ RTHK (2019-07-25). 警方稱過去周日中上環共發射 5 發橡膠子彈 24 枚海綿彈. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1470459-20190725.htm>

⁴⁵ RTHK (2019-07-25). 警方稱過去周日中上環共發射 5 發橡膠子彈 24 枚海綿彈. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1470459-20190725.htm>



Image 4-23: The protesters threw black paint at the National Emblem on the LOCPG façade
(Image source: *Ming Pao*)

4.47 As the Police attended to the disturbances in Western District, the situation in Yuen Long had been simmering since late afternoon with people dressed in white believed to be indigenous villagers gathering at Fung Yau Street North.⁴⁶ At 22:48, about 70 or so dressed in white, some carrying sticks and wooden poles, entered Yuen Long Station where they assaulted a group of about 100 people in black outfits, first in the paid area and later in the compartments of a train on the upper platform. Commuters on the train were also hurt. When the Police arrived at Yuen Long Station, some of those people dressed in white had left. The police officers, however, did not stop others in white who were then leaving. The Police also did not act in some subsequent assault incidents committed by the persons in white later at Yuen Long Station. Police failure to act or to respond promptly in the incidents gave rise to allegations of collusion between the Police and triads on the internet.⁴⁷ The inappropriate responses of two senior officers to media enquiries that night reinforced such allegations.

⁴⁶ SCMP (2019-07-30). Hong Kong police ‘under investigation’ by corruption watchdog over failure to protect public during Yuen Long attacks. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3020635/hong-kong-police-officers-call-citys-no-2-clarify-apology>

⁴⁷ SCMP (2019-07-21). As it happened: Hong Kong police fire rounds of tear gas in heart of city, while violence breaks out in Yuen Long. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3019484/protesters-spill-beyond-end-point-third-major-march-against>



Image 4-24: Around 23:05 of 21 July 2019, people dressed in white on the platform
(Image source: HK01)

4.48 The Yuen Long Incident did not take place without cause. On the evening of 16 July 2019, some protest supporters had a confrontation with a group dressed in white at a public screening of alleged police brutality held by the protest supporters at Fung Yau Street North. Soon after, there were online messages calling for people to “reclaim” Yuen Long and to take part in a public meeting to be held in Yuen Long on 21 July 2019. In response, the opponent vowed to beat up the protest supporters if they dared to go to Yuen Long. Prior to 21 July 2019, the Police was aware of these development. The protesters used the social media to coordinate their action and disseminate accusations against the Police. Details of the Yuen Long Incident are at Chapter 10.



Translation

Deserters

Wanted

Hong Kong Police

*21 July 2019 Around 23:00
After witnessing citizens under
terrorist attack, two uniformed
police turned around and left,
leaving the citizens to death.*

Image 4-25: Propaganda blaming police inaction in Yuen Long on 21 July 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

Friday 26 July 2019 – First Rally at Airport

4.49 The first rally at the Hong Kong International Airport (Airport) was held on 26 July 2019 with LoNO. Protesters distributed leaflets and displayed posters to inform travellers of their reasons for protest and to enlist support from the international community.⁴⁸

Saturday 27 July 2019 - Violent Protests in Yuen Long

4.50 On Saturday 27 July 2019, despite Police refusal to issue a LoNO, about 288 000 protesters (according to the event organiser), some wearing helmets and protective gears, marched on the roads in Yuen Long on a cause dubbed “Reclaim Yuen Long”, and blocked

⁴⁸ SCMP (2019-07-26). Protesters occupy part of Hong Kong International Airport to rally overseas support against extradition bill. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/transport/article/3020270/protesters-occupy-part-hong-kong-international-airport>

major roads in the district. When the Police turned up calling for dispersal, the protesters began attacking the Police with umbrellas, bricks, wooden shields and other objects. Violent protesters later surrounded Yuen Long Police Station, again throwing bricks and other objects, causing obstruction outside the station and the suspension of Police Report Room services.⁴⁹ On this day, the Police fired 118 rounds of tear gas and 30 rubber rounds,⁵⁰ and arrested ten persons.⁵¹

Sunday 28 July 2019 - Violent Protests in Western District

4.51 On 28 July 2019, there was another protest on Hong Kong Island when participants of an authorised sit-in at Chater Garden diverted to Causeway Bay and Western District in the late afternoon in defiance of the conditions set in the LoNO. Along the way, the protesters chanted “香港警察 知法犯法” (Translation: Hong Kong Police knowingly breaks the law) and “光復香港 時代革命” (Translation: Liberate Hong Kong; revolution of our times). A group of violent protesters who went to Causeway Bay blocked the road outside Sogo Department Store. Another group of about 200 violent protesters who went in the direction of LOCPG had violent clashes in Sheung Wan with police officers in full riot gear and full-length shields, batons and other less-lethal weapons. The violent protesters also wore helmets, gas masks, and were equipped with self-made shields. They hurled bricks and other hard objects at the police officers. They also charged a cart carrying objects on fire at the Police cordon line.⁵² The Police responded with 408 rounds of tear gas, 95 rubber rounds, two super sock rounds and 50 react rounds. The Police arrested 58 persons. What happened on 27 and 28 July was practically a replay of the incident took place on 21 July 2019, but with the violence considerably escalated.

⁴⁹ SCMP (2019-07-27). As it happened: bloody clashes and tear gas fired as Hong Kong protesters descend on Yuen Long. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3020340/knife-attack-yuen-long-tensions-mount-ahead-hong-kong>

⁵⁰ RTHK VNEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3>

⁵¹ <https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749>

⁵² SCMP (2019-07-28). As it happened: How a seemingly directionless Hong Kong march stretched for 6km and still ended in clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3020383/protesters-spill-out-chater-garden-another-march-against>



Image 4-26: Propaganda calling for participation of protests on 28 July 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.52 The frequency, the scale and the level of violence in the protests in July 2019 were markedly escalated in comparison with those in June 2019. In July 2019, 52 public meetings/processions were approved by the Police with six rejected. For June 2019, the figures were 20 approved with one rejected. In July 2019, the Police fired a total of 608 rounds of tear gas, 134 rubber rounds, three super sock rounds and 114 react rounds, and arrested 224.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Protests in August 2019:

August 2019						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
				1	2	3 Cross Harbour Tunnel barricaded
4 Launch of the real-time crowdsourced map tracking Police movements Cross Harbour Tunnel barricaded	5 Territory wide violent protests Cross Harbour Tunnel barricaded	6	7	8	9	10 Territory wide violent protests Cross Harbour Tunnel barricaded
11 Territory wide violent protests Tear Gas at Kwai Fong Pepper ball at Tai Koo Arrested persons sent to SULHC	12 Protest at the Airport	13 Protest at the Airport	14	15	16	17
18	19 Found a fake press reporter card	20	21 Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident	22	23	24 Targeted MTR after 24 August
25 Violent protest warning shot fired First use of SCMV	26	27	28	29	30	31 Territory wide violent protests Prince Edward Station Incident Found 12 fake press reporters cards

Highlights of August 2019

- Violent protesters launched city-wide protests (5, 10, 11 and 31 August 2019) and escalated their violent acts. Police stations were besieged.
- Violent protesters began using “Be Water” and urban guerrilla tactics, and an App tracking police movements appeared on the internet.
- Violent protesters targeted major transport infrastructures: Cross Harbour Tunnel (3, 4, 5, and 10 August 2019), Airport (12 and 13 August 2019) and MTR stations (after 24 August 2019).
- “An Eye for an Eye” and Yuen Long Incident were used in social media to call for participation in protests and escalation of violence.

- **The escalated violence by protesters led to the Police introducing Specialised Crowd Management Vehicles (SCMVs) on 25 August 2019 and firing a warning shot on the same night.**
- **The Prince Edward Station Incident on 31 August 2019 was taken as a reason to further escalate protests and violence. That night, two warning shots were fired by two plainclothes police officers while being attacked by violent protesters.**

4.53 Up till the end of July 2019, it became evident that violent clashes invariably followed peaceful and lawful public meetings or processions. The violent protesters would digress from lawful events to spark off disturbances elsewhere. From August onwards, as violent protesters resorted to urban guerrilla tactics, using the MTR lines to launch territory-wide disturbances without relying on any approved public meeting or procession. They also adopted “Be Water” tactics to evade arrest. Beginning in August 2019, the frequency, the scale and the level of violence in the protests intensified exponentially.

Thursday 1 to Sunday 4 August 2019 - Attacks on Police Stations

Saturday 3 August 2019 - Violent Protests in Wong Tai Sin

4.54 Following the siege of Yuen Long Police Station on 27 July 2019, siege and attacks of police stations, mostly near MTR stations, became commonplace. For three consecutive days on 1, 2 and 3 August 2019, protesters besieged Ma On Shan Police Station. On 1 August 2019, protesters also targeted Sha Tin Police Station.⁵³ On 3 August 2019, a number of protesters deviated from the designated route of an approved march in Tai Kok Tsui and went to Mong Kok and Tsim Sha Tsui where the protesters clashed with the Police. After the Police dispersal action, some of the protesters fled to Wong Tai Sin. Clashes broke out there after the Police arrested some protesters. Some local residents joined the violent protesters to hurl objects and umbrellas, and discharged a fire extinguisher at police officers.⁵⁴ They then besieged Wong Tai Sin Police Station and the Disciplined Services Quarters next to it, attacking both with numerous objects. Police officers fired multiple rounds of tear gas for dispersal.

4.55 That night, Mong Kok Police Station and Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station were also under siege with violent protesters throwing bricks and hard objects. Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station was in particular their target. Violent protesters set fire at various locations in its vicinity, damaged several vehicles inside the station with bamboo sticks, bricks and others hard objects hurled into the building. On 3 August 2019, the Police fired 107 rounds of tear gas and arrested 24 persons.

4.56 On the night of 4 August 2019, hundreds of violent protesters staged another stand-off outside Wong Tai Sin Police Station, occasionally attacking with bricks and miscellaneous

⁵³ RTHK (2019-08-02). 過百人到沙田警署聲援疑被警方帶走人士 有人擲雜物. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1471993-20190802.htm>

⁵⁴ Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-03). 【反修例】示威者發起包圍黃大仙警署 沿九龍城太子道東前進. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2418613/> 【反修例】示威者發起包圍黃大仙警署 沿九龍城太子道東前進

objects.⁵⁵ Police officers responded with multiple rounds of tear gas, rubber rounds and react rounds in attempts at dispersal. That night, the Police fired 109 rounds of tear gas, 29 rubber rounds and nine react rounds. 57 persons were arrested. In the two weeks leading to Sunday 11 August 2019, 18 police stations were attacked by protesters.⁵⁶

Toll Booths of Cross Harbour Tunnel Barricaded

4.57 The Cross Harbour Tunnel at Hung Hom was also a target. In the late afternoon of 3 August 2019, some violent protesters barricaded the toll booths at the entrance in Hung Hom, blocking the traffic into and out of the tunnel. On 3, 4, 5 and 10 August 2019,⁵⁷ protesters again placed various objects at the toll booths, paralysing the tunnel traffic.

Monday 5 August - Territory-wide Violent Protests

4.58 On 4 August 2019, there was a post at 21:23 on LIHKG introducing a real-time crowdsourced map – HKmap.live.⁵⁸ The map shows the whereabouts of police officers near the scenes of attack.⁵⁹ The post also encouraged the protesters to “Be Water” and use this map to plan their strategy. On Monday 5 August 2019, the protesters extended the scope and the scale of their action. The social media was awash with calls to launch a city-wide strike and uncooperative campaign on that day.⁶⁰ Many messages were posted on social media urging people to go on strike on 5 August 2019.

⁵⁵ Now TV (2019-08-04). 黃大仙警署及紀律部隊宿舍爆警民衝突 警施放催淚彈驅散. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357846>

⁵⁶ Information provided by HKPF.

⁵⁷ HK01 (2019-08-03). 【旺角遊行】示威者快閃紅隧 步行隧道屬違法 最高可判監 6 個月. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/359803/旺角遊行-示威者快閃紅隧-步行隧道屬違法-最高可判監 6 個月>

Now TV (2019-08-04). 示威者銅鑼灣遊行至灣仔 堵塞紅隧港島出入口. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357936>

Oriental Daily (2019-08-05). 示威反轉多區再堵紅隧. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190805/00174_001.html

Bastille Post (2019-08-10). 示威者指揮車輛免費過海 紅隧職員：會被扣薪金. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4883285-【堵塞紅隧】示威者指揮車輛通過收費亭-紅隧職員>

⁵⁸ <https://lihkg.com/thread/1406448/page/1>

⁵⁹ HKmap.live is a web mapping service which crowdsources and tracks the location of the Police in Hong Kong. The service was launched during the 2019 protests and gathers reports on Police patrols and tear gas deployment via Telegram.

⁶⁰ Ming Pao (2019-08-06). 八五罷工 多區集會 示威變遊擊. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/圖輯/photo3/album/s00014/1565084593516/八五罷工-多區集會-示威變遊擊>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

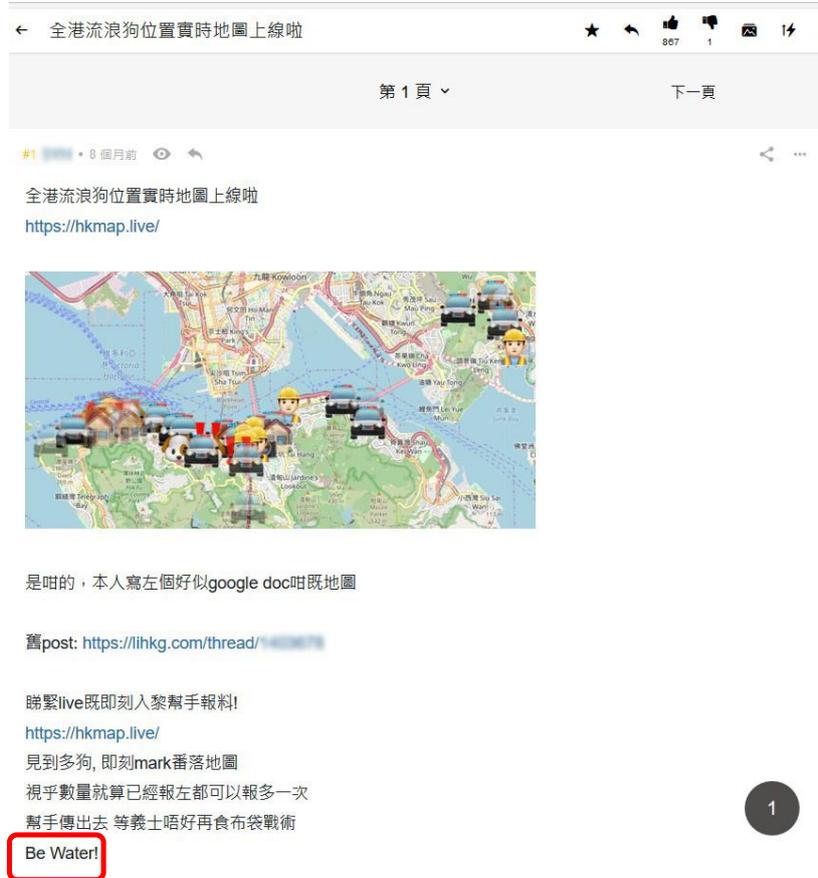


Image 4-27: A post on LIHKG introducing a mobile app – hkmap.live on 4 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-28: Posters calling for all citizens to go on General Strike on 5 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.59 An open letter was posted in the LIHKG link for the same purpose.⁶¹

⁶¹ Text of the open letter : <https://lihkg.com/thread/1379724/page/1>

“6月9日至今，全港氣氛凝重而壓抑，一場又一場的聯署、遊行、集會，非但沒令政府正視當前問題，7月21日發生的元朗恐襲事件更顯示政府無力保護市民。民間提出的五大訴求，政府置若罔聞，但幾十名年輕人及其他示威人士卻已犧牲了他們的大好前途，他們被拘捕被起訴，為的就是我們愛的香港，如今正正就是和理非回報他們的大好機會。”

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

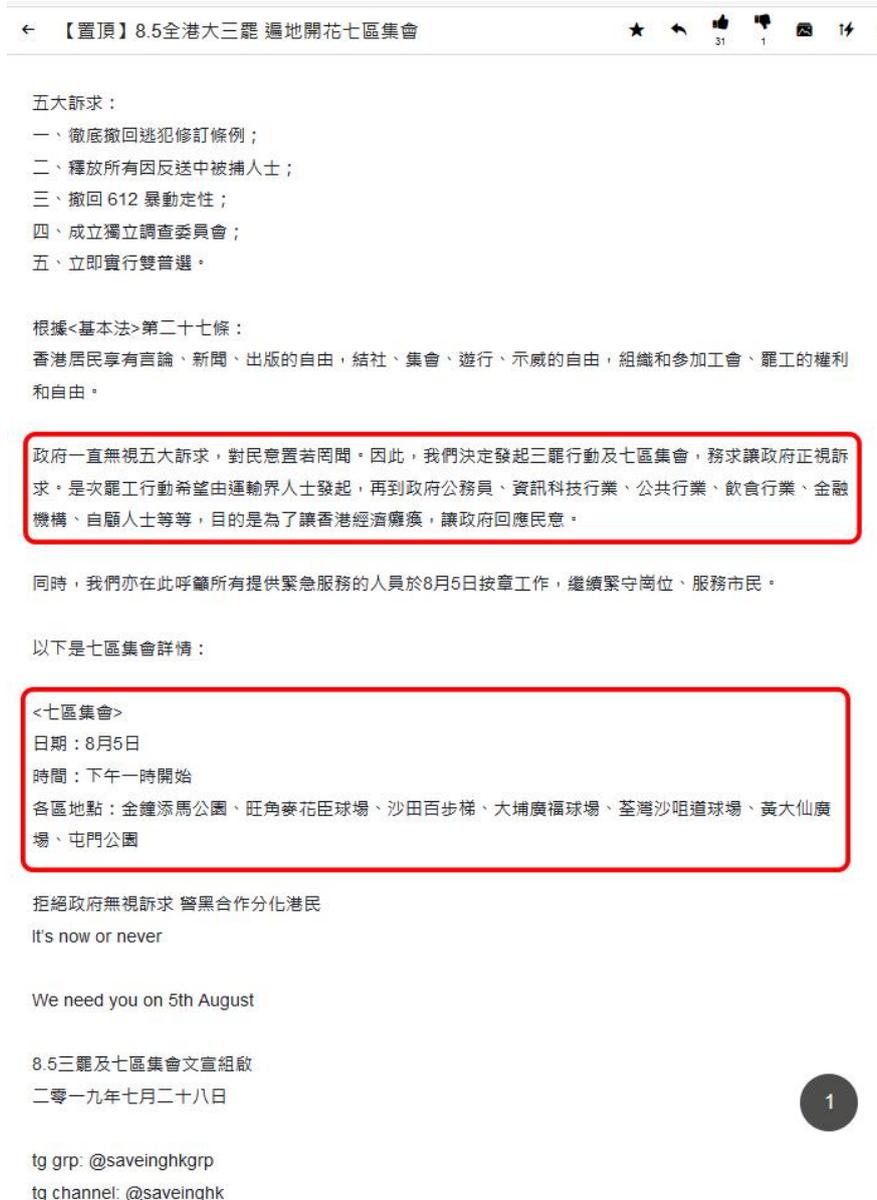


Image 4-29: A post calling for participating General Strike on 5 August 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

4.60 On 5 August 2019, protesters resorted to urban guerrilla tactics in multiple districts in Hong Kong Island, Kowloon and the New Territories, blocking roads at many busy thoroughfares: suddenly cropping up and barricading the roads before vanishing very quickly. The General Strikes brought chaos to the transport network of Hong Kong, including the air transport. Protesters blocked the MTR train doors using flash-mob-style tactics. Eight MTR lines were affected and more than 200 flights were cancelled.⁶²

⁶² Ming Pao (2019-08-06). 快閃堵三隧 15 幹道受阻. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%e8%a6%81%e8%81%9e/article/20190806/s00001/1565030065902/快閃堵三隧-15幹道受阻>

4.61 Violent protesters also moved on to a number of police stations including Kwai Chung Police Station, Sha Tin Police Station, Sham Shui Po Police Station and Tin Shui Wai Police Station, hurling hard objects, petrol bombs and setting fire outside the stations. That evening, some protesters had fights in North Point and Tsuen Wan with people dressed in white and holding wooden poles who, according to some media, were members of the Fujianese community.⁶³ On this day, the Police discharged about a thousand rounds of tear gas, 170 rubber rounds and 11 super sock rounds in 14 districts – a record high up to 11 August 2019. The Police also arrested 165 persons.

Tuesday 6 August to Saturday 10 August 2019 - Violent Protests

4.62 On the night of 6 August 2019, a few hundred protesters assembled outside Sham Shui Po Police Station, chanting “triad cops” and “triad society”. Some again shone laser beams, hurled bricks and glass bottles at the station.⁶⁴

4.63 On 7 August 2019, hundreds of protesters gathered at Hong Kong Space Museum and shone their laser pointers on the egg-shaped dome of the museum in protest against the arrest of the Student Union President of Hong Kong Baptist University (HKBU) for possession of offensive weapons (POOW), i.e. “laser gun”, the day before.⁶⁵

4.64 On 10 August 2019, there were protests in Tai Po, Tai Wai, Sha Tin, Kwun Tong, Wong Tai Sin, Tsuen Wan, Tsim Sha Tsui, and other districts.⁶⁶ Protesters set up barricades with railings and signs torn off the road, blocked a number of thoroughfares including the Kowloon entrances of the Cross Harbour Tunnel. Clashes occurred in at least seven districts with police officers firing tear gas in Tai Wai and Tsim Sha Tsui while some violent protesters threw petrol bombs and objects such as stones at police officers. Some protesters laid siege to Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station, setting fire outside it, shining laser pointers, and blocking the station with miscellaneous objects. To disperse the violent protesters, the Police fired 56 rounds of tear gas and nine rubber rounds. 13 persons were arrested.

⁶³ The Standard (2019-08-06) Attacks in North Point, Tsuen Wan. Retrieved from

<https://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news/section/11/210378/Attacks-in-North-Point.-Tsuen-Wan>

⁶⁴ SCMP (2019-08-06). Protesters shine light on arrest of Hong Kong student with new kind of laser rally. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3021875/hong-kong-protesters-shine-light-arrest-baptist>

⁶⁵ Sing Tao Daily News (2019-08-08). 千人響應號召 太空館外用雷射筆觀星. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2044955/日報-港聞-千人響應號召-太空館外用雷射筆觀星>

⁶⁶ Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例】示威者多區快閃堵路 稱要消耗警力免被捕 (01:23). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190811/s00001/1565457389190/【逃犯條例】示威者多區快閃堵路-稱要消耗警力免被捕>

Sunday 11 August 2019 - Violent Protests

4.65 For 11 August 2019, the protesters launched three large-scale public procession and meetings, at Victoria Park, Maple Street Playground in Sham Shui Po and the Airport respectively. The Airport rally had not notified to the Police fo LoNO. For safety reasons, the Police issued a LoNO only for the public meeting at Victoria Park, objecting the other public meetings and processions in Sham Shui Po and Hong Kong Island East. Beginning in August 2019, messages had appeared on the internet inciting people to adopt urban guerrilla tactics for extensive damage and blockage of thoroughfares. The real-time crowdsourced map tracking the locations of the Police was enhanced on 10 August 2019.

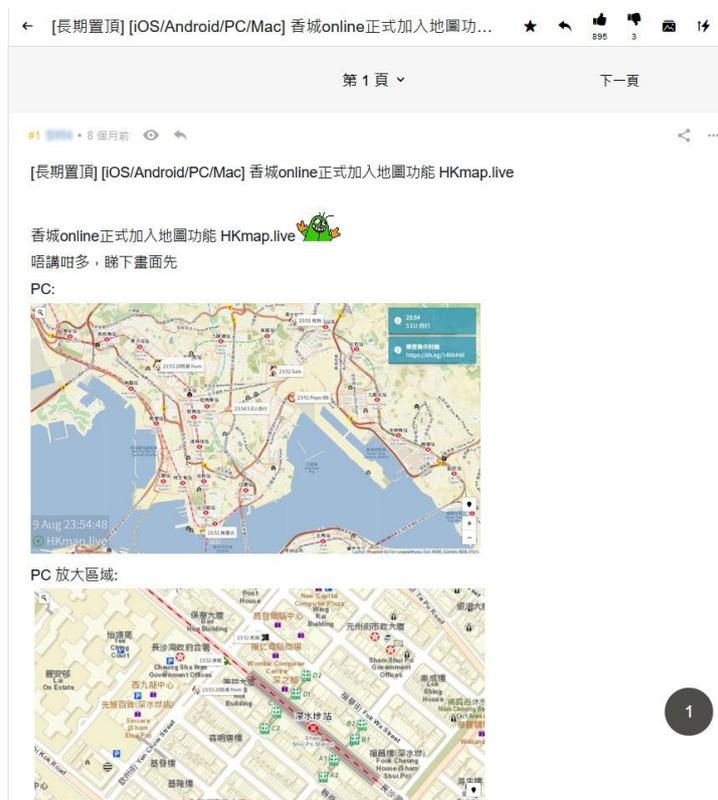


Image 4-30: The function of the real-time map was enhanced on 10 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

4.66 Calls for escalation of protest action and violence continued to circulate on the internet in August 2019.



Image 4-31: Social media message urging people to protest on 11 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.67 The Police anticipated that protesters would escalate action to paralyse city traffic and attack police officers with highly offensive weapons and great violence. Hence, the Police deployed some 3 850 officers for contingencies across various districts.

4.68 On 11 August 2019, protests took place in multiple locations. Protesters branched out from the originally scheduled public procession and public meetings to stage disturbances in various districts. On the Hong Kong Island side, some protesters sprayed graffiti on the base of the Golden Bauhinia sculpture, while others blocked the roads outside PHQ and set different objects on fire. From 17:00 till after midnight, protesters adopted urban guerrilla tactics, using the MTR to mobilise themselves swiftly to occupy roads at different locations in the vicinity and then moving on to other spots. On Hong Kong Island, they occupied roads in North Point, Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, Quarry Bay, Tai Koo Shing and Sai Wan Ho. Clashes broke out when the Police took action for dispersal. At Tai Koo Station, there was an incident of shooting pepper balls by the Police at close range.

4.69 In Kowloon, from 16:00 to after midnight, like those on Hong Kong Island, groups of protesters reportedly travelled by MTR to different districts to block roads including Tsim Sha Tsui, Mei Foo, Kowloon Tong, Kwai Fong, and Sha Tin. At Kwai Fong Station, there was an

incident of firing of tear gas inside the Station. They staged protests outside Cheung Sha Wan Police Station, Sham Shui Po Police Station, Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station, Kwai Chung Police Station and Sha Tin Police Station. Among these, Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station was under the most serious attack from bricks, hard objects and petrol bombs. Cross Harbour Tunnel was also blocked by protesters that day. The events on 11 August leading to the Police use of force in Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations are looked at in Chapter 11.

4.70 Clashes broke out between violent protesters and the Police in various districts and outside many police stations. The violent protesters hurled petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at the police officers who in response used tear gas and other less-lethal weapons. On that single day, the Police fired 361 rounds of tear gas, 27 rubber rounds, and 14 super sock rounds and arrested 101 persons. Among the arrested persons, 53 were sent to San Uk Ling Holding Centre (SULHC) directly for post-arrest processing. The use of SULHC by the Police as a temporary holding area is looked at in Chapter 14.

4.71 An incident on 11 August 2019 which achieved the most prominence in media reports and on the internet was the incident in which a female person sustained an injury to her eye outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station at night allegedly caused by the Police. Pictorial materials alleging “police brutality”, “eye for eye” after 11 August 2019 were posted on the social media.



Image 4-32: Social media message after 11 August 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.72 The female sustaining eye injury, however, refused to cooperate with the Police to investigate what had caused the injury and refused to let the Police see her medical report. As a result, the Police obtained the document by search warrant, which she then challenged by applying for Judicial Review. Following the court ruling in favour of the Police on 22 January 2020, the female filed an appeal. As at 29 February 2020, a hearing date has yet to be fixed. Nonetheless, this claim that she had been shot in the eye by the Police had been the cause for further protests.

Monday 12 August to Friday 30 August 2019 – Protests

4.73 On 12 August 2019, in response to the social media allegations of “police brutality”, thousands of protesters gathered at the Airport with signs proclaiming “Evil Police - An Eye for An Eye” accusing the Police of injuring the female’s eye.⁶⁷

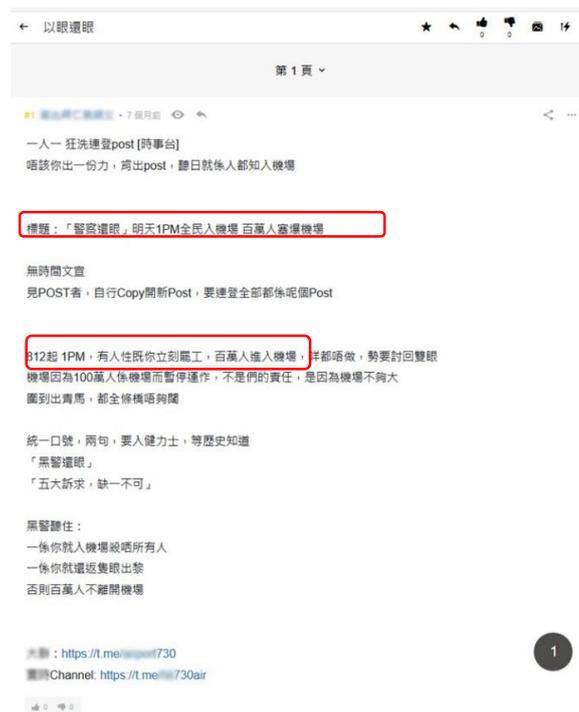


Image 4-33: Social media message on protests at Airport on 12 August 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

⁶⁷ HK01 (2019-08-12). 機管局與航空公司將視情況於明早 6 時重編航班. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362757/機場集會-直擊-機管局與航空公司將視情況於明早 6 時重編航班>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



(Image source: Facebook)



(Image source: Twitter)



(Image source: Twitter)



(Image source: Twitter)

Image 4-34: Posts and posters calling for protest at the Airport on 12 August 2019

4.74 Protesters swamped the Departure Hall, blocking access to the departure gates, resulting in cancellation of all remaining departing and arriving flights after 16:00 that day.

4.75 On the same day, about a hundred people gathered in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against police operations at the station on 11 August. They surrounded station staff and the control room demanding explanations for MTRC's handling of the incident during and after the event.



Image 4-35: Sit-in at the Airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.76 On 13 August 2019, some protesters again gathered at the Airport and blocked the passageways to the restricted area.⁶⁸ The Airport Authority suspended all check-in service for departure flights after 16:30. Disputes arose between some protesters and passengers in the Departure Hall. In the evening, some protesters tied up a male passenger whom they believed to be an undercover police officer. Around 23:00, the Police accompanied a number of ambulance officers to go inside the Airport to take the injured passenger to hospital. After the ambulance officers had rescued him, many protesters attacked the police officers guarding at the Airport entrance. The officers defended themselves with OC Foam and batons. One officer was fiercely assaulted and his baton was snatched. He pulled out his revolver to ward off the protesters attacking him.⁶⁹ Shortly after, a second man, later revealed to be a Global Times reporter, was beaten and tied up by the protesters. On the following day, the Airport Authority said it had been granted an interim injunction order from the High Court on 13 August 2019 for restraining protesters from attending or participating in any protests or public events in the Airport.⁷⁰

⁶⁸ Airport Authority Website (2019-08-13). Check-in Service for Departure Flights Suspended due to Public Assembly at HKIA, Retrieved from https://www.hongkongairport.com/en/media-centre/press-release/2019/pr_1348

⁶⁹ RTHK (2019-08-13). Police storm airport as protesters hold ‘suspects’. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1474483-20190813.htm>

⁷⁰ RTHK (2019-08-14). Airport Authority confirms injunction order. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1474538-20190814.htm>



Image 4-36: A male was tied up by protesters at the Airport on the night of 13 August 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-37: A police officer pulled out his revolver to ward off the protesters
attacking him on 13 August 2019
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

HK01 (2019-08-14). Continuation of the interim injunction order, as varied, was granted to Airport Authority on 23 August until trial or further order of the court. 與示威者爆衝突 警擊左輪佩槍解圍 首現致命武器. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/363494/機場集會-與示威者爆衝突-警擊左輪佩槍解圍-首現致命武器>

4.77 On 14 August 2019, protesters gathered outside police stations in Sham Shui Po, Tai Po and Tin Shui Wai to mark the Ghost Festival, burning joss paper (an offering to the dead) and shone laser pointers at these police stations. The protest in Sham Shui Po led to firing of tear gas for dispersal.

4.78 On 17 August 2019, a group of protesters took to the street to “Reclaim Hung Hom and To Kwa Wan”, where they deviated from the approved route and occupied roads along their way from Hung Hom to Mong Kok. Protesters blocked Nathan Road and laid siege to Mong Kok Police Station. Some protesters on a footbridge near Mong Kok Road hurled miscellaneous objects including a litterbin at police officers and a police vehicle underneath.

4.79 On Sunday 18 August 2019, CHRF organised a procession from Victoria Park. According to CHRF, 1.7 million took part but the Police had a count of 128 000 at peak time.

4.80 On 19 August 2019, the Hong Kong Journalists Association found a press card purportedly issued by a Macau media institution. Verification with the institution confirmed that it did not issue such press card to that person. The holder of the card was suspected to be a fake reporter.

4.81 On 20 August 2019, about a hundred people again gathered in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against the Police operation at the station on 11 August 2019. Similar to the event on 12 August 2019, they surrounded station staff and the control room to demand explanations for MTRC’s handling of the incident during and after the event.⁷¹

4.82 On 21 August 2019, about a thousand protesters assembled at Yuen Long Station in commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident on 21 July 2019.⁷² Some violent protesters set up barriers on the roads outside the station. When police officers took action to clear the barriers, these protesters retreated into Yuen Long Station. The Police formed a cordon line at a distance from the station, while protesters barricaded station entrances with objects including metal fences and rubbish bins and let down the rollers shutter to bar entrance. Inside Yuen Long Station, some of the protesters discharged foam from fire extinguishers, while others used a firehose and liquid soap to wet the floor to obstruct the Police’s entry to the station. They sprayed paint on the walls and on CCTV cameras inside the station. They removed the stands and bins and damaged amenities including an escalator, before they took

⁷¹ Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-08-21). 逾百市民太古站內聚集 促港鐵交代警方站內執法情況. Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2226091/逾百市民太古站內聚集+促港鐵交代警方站內執法情況>

⁷² Ming Pao (2019-08-21). 防暴警元朗站外佈防 西鐵安排特別車載乘客離開元朗站. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190821/s00001/1566388054020/【元朗襲擊-多圖-短片】防暴警元朗站外佈防-西鐵安排特別車載乘客離開元朗站>

special trains arranged by MTRC to leave Yuen Long Station while the Police were on guard outside.

4.83 On 23 August 2019, the MTRC announced that “*If fights, vandalism or other acts of violence occur, and under high risks or emergency situations, train service to and from the concerned stations may be stopped immediately, and /or the station may be closed, with little or no prior notice. The Police may need to enter stations to take suitable law enforcement action when necessary.*”⁷³ At around 22:00 on that day, MTRC announced that they had obtained an interim injunction order⁷⁴ to restrain people from obstructing or interfering with the operation of the railway, damaging any property at any station or using any threatening language or behaving in a riotous or disorderly manner at any station.⁷⁵ On the following day, protesters dubbed MTRC the “Communist Party’s railway” (黨鐵), accusing it of taking sides to help suppress protesters travelling on MTR on protest days. From then on, almost every protest saw violent protesters damaging facilities inside MTR stations and setting the entrances on fire.

4.84 On Saturday 24 August and Sunday 25 August 2019, public meetings and processions with LoNO were held in Kwun Tong District and Kwai Tsing District respectively.

⁷³ MTRC (2019-08-23). Condemnation of Vandalism at MTR Stations. Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PR-19-049-E.pdf

⁷⁴ Stand News (2019-08-23). 葵芳站今晚九時關閉 市民圍堵 港鐵獲禁制令. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/葵芳站今晚九時關閉-港鐵-針對有人損車站罵員工-考慮申禁制令/>

MTRC. Interim injunction order to restrain unlawful and wilful acts on the railway. Retrieved from <http://www.mtr.com.hk/en/customer/main/interim-injunction-order.html>

⁷⁵ Continuation of the interim injunction order, as varied, was granted to MTRC on 30 August until trial or further order of the court.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-38: Propagandas promoting the Kowloon East Rally on 24 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.85 On 24 August 2019, large numbers of protesters walked in Kowloon Bay area to protest against the installation of smart lampposts believed to be used for covert surveillance⁷⁶. A post on LIHKG protested against the breach of privacy.⁷⁷

4.86 Some protesters with an electric saw fell a smart lamppost as others proceeded to Ngau Tau Kok Police Station, outside which they clashed with some police officers.

⁷⁶ The HKSAR Government. "Multi-functional Smart Lampposts" Pilot Scheme. Retrieved from https://www.ogcio.gov.hk/en/our_work/strategies/initiatives/smart_lampposts/

⁷⁷ <https://t.me/s/kt824info>
<https://lihkg.com/thread/1495378/page/1>



Image 4-39: Protesters tore down the smart lamppost at Kowloon Bay on 24 August 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.87 On 25 August 2019, a large crowd of protesters took part in a march from Kwai Chung to Tsuen Wan⁷⁸, with some violent protesters setting up barricades with water-filled barriers and bamboo rods to block roads in Tsuen Wan.

⁷⁸ Epoch Times (2019-08-25). 荃葵青遊行 港人冒雨上街頭. Retrieved from <https://hk.epochtimes.com/news/2019-08-25/87025041>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-40: Propagandas promoting the Tseun Wan-Kwai Chung-Tsing Yi Rally on 25 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.88 Some protesters threw petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at police officers who responded with tear gas to disperse them. For the first time, the Police used the SCMV, but while it could temporarily disperse the crowd, the violent protests would continue. At nightfall, some violent protesters attacked shops and a mahjong house in Yi Pei Square, Tsuen Wan. Some attacked police officers with long metal poles and various self-made weapons. The police officers were in a precarious position as they were outnumbered by violent protesters who were relentless in their attack on the officers. To protect themselves, several police officers drew their revolvers and one of them fired a warning shot into the air, enabling himself and his colleagues to escape from the scene. That night, persistent violent protests spread to different locations including Kwun Tong, Sham Shui Po, Tsim Sha Tsui and Wong Tai Sin. On 25 August 2019, in addition to one warning shot fired in Tsuen Wan, the Police used 145 rounds of tear gas, 50 rubber rounds, six super sock rounds and 13 react rounds and arrested 57 persons.

4.89 Starting from 25 August 2019, hundreds of protesters surrounded Shum Shui Po Police Station for five consecutive days.

Violent protests on 31 August 2019

4.90 On 31 August 2014, the Standing Committee of the National People's Congress made a decision concerning the election of the Chief Executive and LegCo of the HKSAR.⁷⁹ The OCM in 2014 set off after this decision.

4.91 In commemoration of the OCM in 2014 against this decision, CHRF organised an assembly to be held at Chater Garden on the afternoon of 31 August 2019 and, after the assembly, a march to LOCPG. For public safety reasons, the Police refused the applications. Nonetheless, the Police noticed from the internet that the protesters would proceed despite the Police objection and there were suggestions of attack on police officers and damage to different government premises with a high level of violence. According to a news article⁸⁰, democratic LegCo Members asked citizens to 'Be Water' to avoid being arrested.

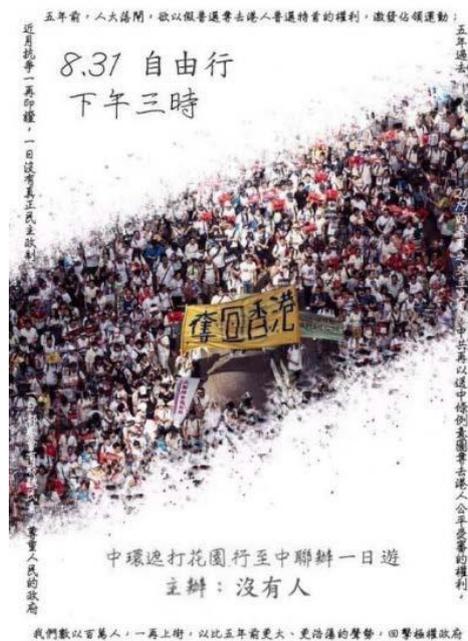


Image 4-41: Propaganda call for participation in protest on 31 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

⁷⁹ Hong Kong Legal Information Institute. Decision of the Standing Committee of the National People's Congress on Issues Relating to the Selection of the Chief Executive of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region by Universal Suffrage and on the Method for Forming the Legislative Council of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region in the Year 2016. Retrieved from <https://www.hklii.org/eng/hk/legis/instrument/A212/decision.html>

⁸⁰ Citizen News (2019-08-13). 「網民 831 自由行、祈禱遊行 警：按環境執法 泛民：Be Water」, Retrieved from <https://www.hkcnews.com/article/23223/831-泛民-反對通知書-23228/網民831自由、祈禱遊行-警：按環境執法-泛民：be-water>

4.92 On 31 August 2019, the Police deployed officers to defend CGC and to respond to contingencies at multiple locations. They put up water-filled barriers around CGC and closed the road network outside CGC. SCMV^s were prepared for deployment and a number of plainclothes officers were tasked for arrest action against violent protesters.

4.93 Violent protests surfaced in multiple locations on 31 August 2019. In the early afternoon, they occupied roads at different locations, Arsenal Street and Lockhart Road in Wan Chai, Hennessy Road in Wan Chai and Causeway Bay and Connaught Road in Admiralty and Central. Traffic cones, rubbish bins, mills barriers, dismantled railings and other large objects were used. At CGC, some violent protesters threw bricks and petrol bombs at the police officers and set off fires at the water-filled barriers outside CGC.⁸¹ The Police fired tear gas for crowd dispersal and deployed an SCMV to discharge water with blue dye from behind the water-filled barriers. The clashes in Admiralty were intense and violent. Such protests subsequently spread towards Causeway Bay and Tin Hau on Hong Kong Island and to Tsim Sha Tsui and Mong Kok in Kowloon. In the late evening, violent protesters set fire to objects they had heaped on Hennessy Road outside SOGO Department Store.⁸² Around 21:00, dozens of protesters confronted several plainclothes officers at Victoria Park and assaulted them with iron rods and umbrellas, even attempting to snatch their revolvers. As a result, two plainclothes officers fired two warning shots to stop the violent protesters.⁸³ Eight people were arrested in that incident.

⁸¹ RTHK (2019-08-31). 示威者多次投擲汽油彈 警方水馬陣內帳篷一度著火. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1477996-20190831.htm>

⁸² HK01 (2019-08-31). 【8.31 遊行·全日總覽】警方：港經歷浩劫 太子站行動屬適當武力. Retrieved from <http://www.hk01.com/政情/369452/8-31-遊行-全日總覽-警方-港經歷浩劫-太子站行動屬適當武力>

⁸³ Ming Pao Daily News (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例. 831 銅鑼灣. 短片】消息：警維園開兩槍實彈維園地面遺彈殼. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190831/special/1567232542076>



Image 4-42: Protesters threw petrol bombs and set off fires at the water-filled barriers outside CGC on 31 August 2019
(Image source: RTHK)



Image 4-43: The Police deployed an SCMV to discharge water with blue dye on 31 August 2019
(Image source: RTHK)

4.94 In Kowloon, the situation in Tsim Sha Tsui deteriorated from 21:00 onwards. Some violent protesters caused obstruction at Canton Road, set fire at different spots along Nathan Road and threw petrol bombs at the Police cordon line near Humphreys Road.⁸⁴ The Police responded with rounds of tear gas in attempts to drive the protesters off Nathan Road. Some

⁸⁴ Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例】速龍小隊廣東道推進 示威者擲燃燒彈. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1081064/即時-香港-逃犯條例-速龍小隊廣東道推進-示威者擲燃燒彈>

protesters fled to Yau Ma Tei and Mong Kok, continuing to cause obstruction along Nathan Road. Some of them entered Mong Kok Station to damage the facilities inside with iron bars and hammers. By the time the Police arrived, some of them had already left. Some of them went to Prince Edward Station where the Incident on 31 August 2019 subsequently took place.

4.95 That evening, police officers entered Prince Edward Station and arrested 52 persons. They closed the exits to prevent violent protesters from entering or leaving the MTR station in order to take law enforcement action. They arranged for a special train to take 45 of the arrested persons to Lai Chi Kok to be further taken to Kwai Chung Police Station and to hospitals for those who were injured. After the incidents, messages appeared on the internet accusing the Police of killing several persons inside the MTR station. Despite the absence of evidence to support this claim, many would still place flowers at one of the exits of Prince Edward Station on the last day of each month in memory of those alleged deceased. Up till Feb 2020, protesters used the incident as an excuse to launch protests.

4.96 During a search in a shop at Sai Ying Pun on 31 August 2019, 12 fake press cards were found among other items. The badges had photos of three persons whose occupations were actually businessman, bank staff and make-up artist.⁸⁵ Furthermore, the media agency did not exist at that time.

4.97 During the violent protests in August 2019, the Police fired a total of 2 187 rounds of tear gas, 405 rubber rounds, 43 super sock rounds, 130 react rounds and three live rounds. 751 persons were arrested.⁸⁶ Chapter 12 contains a detailed study of the Prince Edward Station Incident on 31 August 2019.

⁸⁵ Information provided by HKPF.

⁸⁶ Ibid.

Protests in September 2019:

September 2019						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
1 Traffic disruption at the Airport	2 Student & work strikes	3 Student & work strikes	4 The Chief Executive announced the Fugitive Offenders Bill be withdrawn	5	6	7 Traffic disruption at the Airport
8	9	10	11	12	13	14 Vigilantism in Kowloon Bay
15 Clashes on Hong Kong Island	16	17	18	19	20	21 Tuen Mun & Yuen Long protests “Yellow object” incident
22 The body of a female VTC student found Clashes in various districts	23	24	25	26	27	28 Violent protests commemorating the OCM in 2014
29 Banned march on Hong Kong Island with a warning live round fired at Wan Chai Indonesian reporter hurt her right eye	30					

Highlights of September

- Violent protesters paralysing all traffic to the Airport on 1 September causing flights cancelled.
- MTR stations, shops and bank branches that have links to the Mainland or alleged to be connected to Fujianese community continued to be vandalised and set on fire in protests throughout September 2019.
- Violent protesters using Incident on 21 July 2019 to rally violent protests in Tuen Mun and Yuen Long on 21 September 2019.
- Violent protesters were suspicious about the death of a female student on 22 September 2019 despite the family’s plea that the incident not be used for. City-wide violent protests with damage to shops and restaurants considered by protesters as pro-Government.
- “Global Anti-Totalitarianism March” was held on 29 September 2019 with a live round fired for warning at Wan Chai.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

4.98 Following the severely violent protests in August 2019, the protests in September 2019 were considerably less violent and less frequent. Meanwhile, MTR stations had become frequent targets of repeated vandalism and arson in violent protests.

Sunday 1 September 2019 - Paralyzing Traffic to the Airport

4.99 The protesters did not stage any demonstration or assembly at the Airport after the Airport Authority had obtained an injunction order forbidding from the Court. On 1 September 2019, however, protesters resumed their disturbances to the Airport, this time by disrupting the traffic going to the transportation hub. At around 14:18, they set up barricades with trolleys and other miscellaneous items near the bus terminal of the Airport. Cars and buses were unable to reach the Airport. Passengers and air crews had to walk all the way from Tung Chung. Commuters and passengers could not take the Airport Express to the Airport as the service had been disrupted by objects thrown to the restricted area of the railway track by protesters. Some violent protesters also damaged the facilities at Tung Chung Station and Tsing Yi Station. When police officers walked to the Airport for dispersal action, the protesters left area on foot and returned to the urban area by ferry or by bus. 25 flights were cancelled.⁸⁷

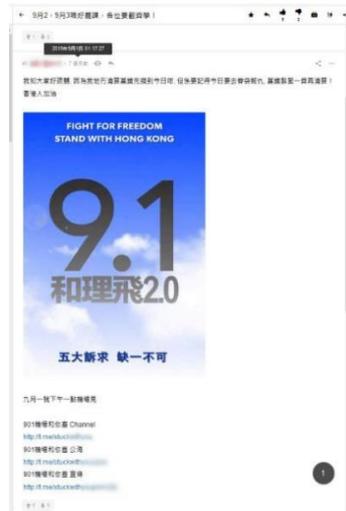


Image 4-44: Netizens called for a traffic disruption at the Airport on 1 September 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

⁸⁷ Airport Authority (2019-09-01). Traffic to and from Airport severely obstructed by public assembly Airport Authority implements contingency measures to safeguard normal operations of Terminal Buildings. Retrieved from https://www.hongkongairport.com/en/media-centre/press-release/2019/pr_1427



Image 4-45: Protesters set up barriers with trolleys at the Airport
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-46: Protesters discharged a fire hose in Tung Chung Station
(Image source: HK01)

4.100 The protesters later called for another disruption to the Airport on 7 September 2019. The Police set up road blocks for search on the motorway to the Airport. A number of people, found carrying helmets and masks in their bags, were taken away by the Police.⁸⁸ The Police also warned drivers against intentionally driving slowly on the motorway on Lantau Island. An SCMV, tow trucks and armoured vehicles were arranged on stand-by at nearby locations. Bailiffs were present at the Airport, asking people to leave if they were not taking any flights.⁸⁹

⁸⁸ HK01 (2019-09-07). 【9.7 機場·圖輯】警機場內外嚴陣戒備 拖車、搜身、拉人. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/372741/9-7機場-圖輯-警機場內外嚴陣戒備-拖車-搜身-拉人>

⁸⁹ HK01 (2019-09-07). 【9.7 機場】水炮車裝甲車戒備 三千警力中環至東湧佈防. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/372644/9-7機場-水炮車裝甲車戒備-三千警力中環至東湧佈防>

HK01 (2019-09-08). 【9.7 機場·分析】警高調堵截 執達吏厲行禁令 機場示威者減. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/372780/9-7機場-分析-警高調堵截-執達吏厲行禁令-機場示威者減>

SCMP (2019-09-07). As it happened: violent clashes escalate in Hong Kong as protesters corner officers in Sha Tin MTR control room. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3026145/hong-kong-protests-shift-mtr-stations-and-malls-earlier>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

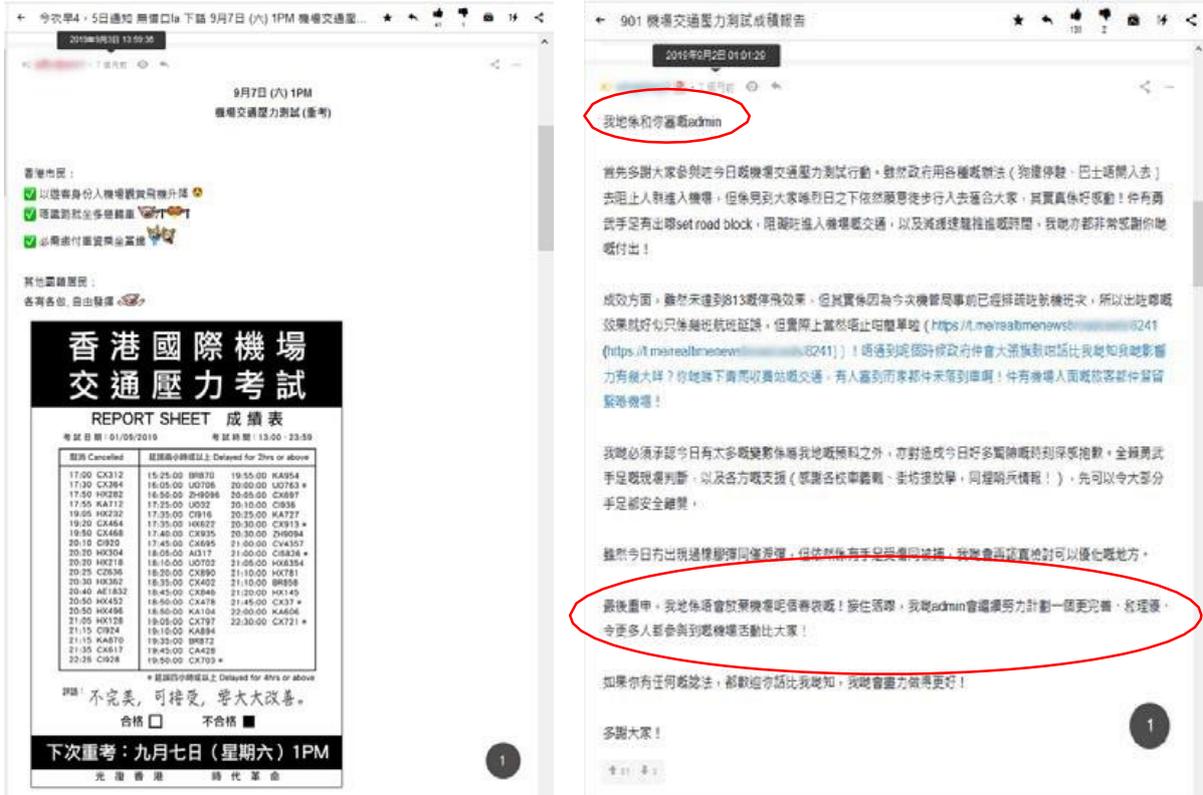


Image 4-47: Netizens called for a second traffic disruption at the Airport on 7 September 2019 (Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-48: An armoured vehicle stood by at Lantau Link Toll Plaza in Tung Chung (Image source: HK01)



Image 4-49: A vehicle was towed away
(Image source: HK01)

Wednesday 4 to Tuesday 10 September 2019 – Protesters Vandalised MTR Stations and Besieged Mong Kok Police Station

4.101 Since 24 August 2019, MTR stations became targets of repeated vandalism by violent protesters after they dubbed MTRC as a “Communist Party’s railway”. Between 4 and 8 September 2019, violent protesters sabotaged the facilities of a number of MTR stations, including Admiralty, Causeway Bay, Central, Mong Kok, Po Lam, Prince Edward, Sha Tin, Tai Po Market, Tin Hau, Tseung Kwan O, Wan Chai and Yau Ma Tei.⁹⁰ As a result, on 13 September 2019, MTRC planned to hire former members of the Brigade of Gurkhas in Hong Kong to tackle the problem.⁹¹

4.102 Mong Kok Police Station was also a target of siege and attack. It was besieged every night between 2 and 4 September, 6 September, 21 September and 22 September 2019.⁹²

⁹⁰ Transport and Housing Bureau, the HKSAR Government (November 2019). Measures and train service arrangements implemented by the MTR to cope with large scale public order events. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr19-20/english/panels/tp/tp_rdp/papers/tp_rdp20191206cb4-153-5-e.pdf

⁹¹ SCMP (2019-09-15). MTR chief Jacob Kam takes heat for plan to use Gurkhas as railway enforcers because they do not know Cantonese curse words. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3027269/mtr-chief-jacob-kam-takes-heat-plan-usegurkhas-railway>

⁹² SCMP (2019-09-03). Tear gas fired in Mong Kok stand-off as protesters target police station and block roads in escalating anger at force amid two-day citywide strike. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3025364/thousands-gather-tamar-park-rally-hong-kong-protesters>

Stand News (2019-09-04). 太子站男子被警制服 疑昏迷送院 九龍灣截停巴士帶走多人 街坊包圍罵警. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/太子站男子被警制服-疑昏迷送院-九龍灣截停巴士帶走多人-街坊包圍罵警/>

HK01 (2019-09-05). 【示威現場】過百人圍旺角警署及北大嶼警署 寶琳站落閘. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/371679/示威現場-過百人圍旺角警署及北大嶼警署-寶琳站落閘>

SCMP (2019-09-07). Hong Kong protests: tear gas fired on Nathan Road as demonstrations force closure of multiple MTR stations, including Prince Edward, Mong Kok and Yau Ma Tei. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/transport/article/3026054/prince-edward-mtr-station-closed->

Monday 2 September to Tuesday 3 September – Student and Work Strikes

4.103 On 2 September 2019, several thousand secondary and tertiary students from 230 schools took part in strikes at their schools. Around 3 000 people attended a sit-in assembly at The Chinese University of Hong Kong (CUHK). At around 21:00, people gathered at the Prince Edward Station to commemorate the Prince Edward Station Incident on 31 August 2019 and sprayed the MTR CCTV cameras with black ink. They later besieged the nearby Mong Kok Police Station, throwing eggs and shining laser beams at the station. They then occupied Nathan Road. The Police responded with tear gas and pepper spray. The violent protesters dispersed late at night.⁹³

Wednesday 4 September 2019 – the Chief Executive Withdrew the Fugitive Offenders Bill

4.104 On 4 September 2019, the Chief Executive announced that the Government would withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill.⁹⁴ After the announcement, the violent protests abated for a while before the momentum picked up from mid-September onwards.

crowds-gather-inside

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from

<https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekendprotest-tuen-mun>

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: how Hong Kong protesters went on mall and MTR rampage, as police fired tear gas and beanbag rounds. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029698/sha-tin-mtr-closes-hong-kong-protesters-vandalise-mall>

⁹³ HK01 (2019-09-03). 【太子衝突】記者遭警推跌 警拘多人包括浸大學生會長方仲賢. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/370789/太子衝突-記者遭警推跌-警拘多人包括浸大學生會長方仲賢>

SCMP (2019-09-02). Thousands attend Hong Kong rally to kick off university class boycott. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3025342/protesting-pupils-gather-hong-kong-class-boycott-rally>

⁹⁴ Information Services Department, the HKSAR Government (2019-09-04). CE announces withdrawal of Fugitive Offenders Bill among “four actions” to help society move forward. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201909/04/P2019090400704.htm>

Thursday 5 September 2019 – Peaceful “Human Chains”

4.105 On 5 September 2019, some secondary students joined their hands to form “human chains” in Mid-levels and Tin Shui Wai.⁹⁵ Students of schools in other areas were similarly engaged.

Sunday 8 September 2019 – Peaceful March to the Consulate General of the United States (US)

4.106 On 8 September 2019, thousands of protesters marched to the Consulate General of the US in Central, urging the US Government to enact the Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act.⁹⁶

Saturday 14 September 2019 – Clashes in Kowloon Bay

4.107 In the afternoon of 14 September 2019, a scuffle broke out outside Kowloon Bay Station between pro-establishment and anti-Government groups. There was also fighting and confrontation between the two camps inside Amoy Plaza and at a Lennon Wall nearby.⁹⁷

Sunday 15 September 2019 – Violent Protests on Hong Kong Island

4.108 CHRFB organised a march on 15 September 2019 to walk from East Point Road in Causeway Bay to Chater Road in Central. Despite Police disapproval of the event, protesters proceeded as scheduled. During the procession, some violent protesters threw petrol bombs and bricks at CGC, and set barricades on the eastbound Harcourt Road and Hennessy Road outside the closed Sogo Department Store. They also burnt a National Flag outside a hotel in Wan Chai, damaged the CCTV camera outside Wan Chai Station and set fire at its Exit A3. Some protesters smashed the glass panels at Exit A of Admiralty Station at the Admiralty Centre and

⁹⁵ SCMP (2019-09-05). Students at Hong Kong secondary schools form human chains as part of class boycott, with pupils at one accusing management of restricting freedom of expression. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/education/article/3025924/students-hong-kong-secondary-schools-form-human-chains>

RTHK (2019-09-05). 市民發起「天水圍人鏈」行動 有中學生穿校服參與. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1479013-20190905.htm>

⁹⁶ SCMP (2019-09-08). Hongkongers march on US consulate to call for human rights help. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3026218/hongkongers-march-us-consulate-calling-human-rights-help>

⁹⁷ SCMP (2019-09-15). As it happened: Hong Kong protests: brawls, skirmishes and stand-offs followed by mass singing in mall. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3027239/hong-kong-protests-fighting-breaks-out-when-pro-government>

barricaded the exit with water-filled barriers and other objects.⁹⁸

4.109 In response, the Police fired tear gas, rubber rounds and react rounds at various locations including areas outside Admiralty Station, Tim Wa Avenue, Harcourt Road in Admiralty, and Hennessey Road near Wan Chai Station. An SCMV discharged water with blue-dyed outside CGC to disperse the crowds at Harcourt Road. According to the Police, protesters threw more than 80 petrol bombs, some of which landed on the SCMV, the “Civic Square” outside CGC and Harcourt Road in Admiralty.⁹⁹ In Wan Chai, around 20 protesters attacked two traffic police officers with petrol bombs near the junction of Gloucester Road and Marsh Road. In the face of such violent acts of the protesters, the officers had to draw their guns in self-defence.¹⁰⁰

4.110 In the evening, some protesters fought with a large group of Fujianese in Fortress Hill while the Police dispersed the violent protesters in North Point by firing rounds of tear gas.¹⁰¹

4.111 On 15 September 2019, the Police fired 62 rounds of tear gas, 17 rubber rounds and 18 react rounds, and arrested 57 persons.¹⁰²

⁹⁸ HK01 (2019-09-16). 【9.15 示威·全日總覽】水炮車、燃燒彈互攻 北角晚間民間互毆. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/375371/9-15-示威-全日總覽-水炮車-燃燒彈互攻-北角晚間民間互毆>

SCMP (2019-09-15). As it happened: tear gas fired amid street brawls between rival camps in North Point, after day of protest violence in Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3027308/causeway-bay-shops-close-illegal-march-kicks-hong-kongs>

⁹⁹ HK01 (2019-09-16). 【9.15 示威·全日總覽】水炮車、燃燒彈互攻 北角晚間民間互毆. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/375371/9-15-示威-全日總覽-水炮車-燃燒彈互攻-北角晚間民間互毆>

SCMP (2019-09-15). As it happened: tear gas fired amid street brawls between rival camps in North Point, after day of protest violence in Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3027308/causeway-bay-shops-close-illegal-march-kicks-hong-kongs>

¹⁰⁰ HK01 (2019-09-16). 【9.15 衝突】警方：兩警因生命受威脅而拔槍示警. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/375577/9-15-衝突-警方-兩警因生命受威脅而拔槍示警>

¹⁰¹ HK01 (2019-09-16). 【9.15 示威·全日總覽】水炮車、燃燒彈互攻 北角晚間民間互毆. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/375371/9-15-示威-全日總覽-水炮車-燃燒彈互攻-北角晚間民間互毆>

¹⁰² RTHK NEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3>

Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749>



Image 4-50: A violent protester threw a petrol bomb towards the Police
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-51: An exit of Wan Chai Station was burnt by protesters
(Image source: HK01)

Saturday 21 September 2019 – Violent Protests in Tuen Mun and Yuen Long

4.112 21 September 2019 was the two-month commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident on 21 July 2019. There were appeals on the internet to “Reclaim Tuen Mun” on 21 September 2019 in protest against the “dama” in Tuen Mun Park causing nuisance to the neighbourhood. It was the second protest in Tuen Mun over this, the first having been on 6 July 2019. The Police objected to the march but the Appeal Board on Public Meetings and Processions allowed it but with shorter duration, from 14:00 to 17:00.¹⁰³

¹⁰³ HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威·總覽】屯門元朗掙燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/377759/9-21示威-總覽-屯門元朗掙燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突放催淚彈>



Image 4-52: Netizens called for protests on 21 September 2019
to commemorate the Yuen Long Incident
(Image Source: LIHKG)

4.113 That afternoon, hundreds of protesters marched from San Wo Lane Playground to Tuen Mun Government Offices. When the procession reached the Government Offices around 15:43, some protesters burnt the National Flag and damaged the facilities at the Light Rail Station, causing MTRC to stop the Light Rail service and the connecting bus service. Some protesters proceeded to put up barricades with mills barriers and water-filled barriers and set various objects on fire on the roads. According to the Police, some of them were equipped with metal rods, catapults and laser pointers. The protesters remained on the road despite repeated warnings by the Police.¹⁰⁴

4.114 The protests soon escalated into clashes between the violent protesters and the Police. Violent protesters threw rocks, hard objects and petrol bombs at the police officers who responded with tear gas and other less-lethal weapons. Some protesters discharged fire extinguishers at the Police cordon line. Many shops pulled down the shutters. The violent protests very soon spread out to other locations.

4.115 In one episode at Tuen Hi Road, when a police officer subdued an escaping protester onto the ground, at least seven violent protesters came to his rescue. These violent protesters

¹⁰⁴ HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威·總覽】屯門元朗掙燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/377759/9-21示威-總覽-屯門元朗掙燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突-警放催淚彈>

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hongkong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun>

hit the police officer with umbrellas, metal poles and wooden poles. One violent protester even attempted to snatch the officer's firearm, though unsuccessful. These violent protesters quickly dispersed when Police reinforcement arrived. Most of the protesters left the area by 18:30.¹⁰⁵

4.116 Two LegCo Members were at Tuen Wui Street near Tuen Mun Town Hall. They tried to get the name and the identity card number of a protester arrested by the Police. One of them told the arrested protester that they could provide legal assistance to him.¹⁰⁶



Image 4-53: Violent protesters attacked a police officer in Tuen Mun and one of them attempted to snatch his gun on 21 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.117 Many protesters planned a sit-in protest inside the Yuen Long Station to commemorate the Yuen Long Incident. As MTRC closed the Yuen Long Station early, the protesters went to the adjacent Yoho Mall where they chanted “Liberate Hong Kong; revolution of our times” and sang “Glory to Hong Kong”. Some of them sprayed alcohol and slippery liquid on the floor at the entrance to Yuen Long Station from Yoho Mall.¹⁰⁷

¹⁰⁵ HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 屯門示威】示威者搶警棍毆防暴警 黑衣人疑搶警槍遭打走. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/377907/9-21-屯門示威-示威者搶警棍毆防暴警-黑衣人疑搶警槍遭打走>

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun>

¹⁰⁶ SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun>

¹⁰⁷ HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威·總覽】屯門元朗燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/377759/9-21-示威-總覽-屯門元朗燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突-警放催淚彈>

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong's 16th weekend of protest. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun>

4.118 Later in the evening, many protesters appeared at different locations in the town area of Yuen Long, including Fung Yau Street North and Fung Cheung Street. Subsequently, there were clashes between the protesters and the Police. The protesters hurled petrol bombs at the police officers, and who then fired tear gas at the violent protesters in Fung Cheung Street. Meanwhile, at Fung Yau Street North, a member of “Protect the Children” wearing a yellow T-shirt was arrested by the Police for “Assaulting Police Officer” and taken to a back alley.¹⁰⁸ It was claimed that police officers kicking this person here was captured on videos.¹⁰⁹ However, the Police in a press conference stated that the videos only showed a “yellow object”, not a person.¹¹⁰ This response created widespread backlash from some netizens for dehumanising a person. The violent protests lasted until midnight.



Image 4-54: A protester threw a petrol bomb towards a police vehicle in Yuen Long on 21 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)

¹⁰⁸ HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威·總覽】屯門元朗掙燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/377759/9-21示威-總覽-屯門元朗掙燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突-警放催淚彈>

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: petrol bombs thrown and tear gas fired as tension grows during Hong Kong’s 16th weekend of protests. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029798/hong-kong-unrest-rolls-16th-weekend-protest-tuen-mun>

¹⁰⁹ HK01 (2019-09-24). 【9.21 元朗示威】被捕守護孩子義工獲釋 好鄰舍尋疑警襲擊片搜證. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/378593/9-21元朗示威-被捕守護孩子義工獲釋-好鄰舍尋疑警襲擊片搜證>

¹¹⁰ SCMP (2019-09-27). Hong Kong police slammed for ‘kicking man in an alley and referring to him as a yellow object when questioned’ in online post by self-proclaimed family member. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030564/self-proclaimed-family-member-arrested-suspect-condemns>



Image 4-55: Netizens expressed their discontent over the “yellow object” incident
(Image Source: LIHKG)

4.119 That evening in Mong Kok, some violent protesters blocked Nathan Road with rubbish bins, railings and other objects. They also besieged Mong Kok Police Station. The Police reacted with PAVA solution. In Tseung Kwan O, the Police arrested a 13-year-old boy for “Unlawful Assembly”, “POOW” and “Possession of Instrument Fit for Unlawful Purpose”. Some local residents were angered by the police action and over 100 people besieged Tseung Kwan O Police Station. They hurled objects at the police station, set up barricades at the vehicular entrance there. The Police fired tear gas.¹¹¹

4.120 On 21 September 2019, the Police fired 43 rounds of tear gas, six rubber rounds, one super sock round and 11 react rounds. The Police arrested 31 persons.¹¹²

¹¹¹ HK01 (2019-09-22). 【9.21 示威·總覽】屯門元朗掙燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突 警放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/377759/9-21示威-總覽-屯門元朗掙燃燒彈將軍澳警民衝突催淚彈>

¹¹² RTHK NEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3> Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749>

Sunday 22 September 2019 - Naked Body of an Female Student Found and Clashes in Different Districts

4.121 On 22 September 2019, a naked body of a 15-year-old female student of Vocational Training Council (VTC), who attended classes in the campus of Hong Kong Design Institute (HKDI), was found in the sea near Yau Tong. Rumours immediately circulated on the internet that she had been killed by the Government for taking part in the protests even though the Police asserted that the cause of her death was not suspicious. She was last seen at HKDI on the afternoon of 19 September 2019 as CCTV footage revealed. On 15 October 2019, HKDI management acceded to demands by students to release the CCTV capturing her appearance at HKDI. Dissatisfied with subsequent partial release of the footage, some disgruntled students vandalised the school premises, damaged surveillance cameras and set off a fire alarm. HKDI had to suspend classes between 15 and 17 October 2019.¹¹³ Meanwhile, the student's mother clarified on television news that she had no suspicion over her daughter's death and pleaded for peace for the family at the time of grief.¹¹⁴ Many continued to insist that the student had been killed.¹¹⁵

¹¹³ CitizenNews (2019-10-12). 警稱 15 歲少女陳彥霖「死亡情況及背景沒可疑」 塗謹申：遺體雖火化，仍可召開死因研訊。 Retrieved from <https://www.hknews.com/article/24125/浮屍-陳彥霖-死因庭-24125/浮屍>

HK01 (2019-10-15). 【油塘女浮屍】香港知專設計學院宣佈 多個學院今起停課三日。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/386026/油塘女浮屍-香港知專設計學院宣佈-多個學院今起停課三日>

¹¹⁴ Apple Daily (2019-10-17). 陳彥霖母親接受 TVB 訪問：我個女係自殺唔係被殺。 Retrieved from <https://hk.appledaily.com/local/20191017/Z3RDTQXKD3RCILOCLICQSECZTE/>

¹¹⁵ The Epoch Times (2020-01-01). 網爆陳彥霖死亡真相：港警勾結大陸特務強姦勒斃。 Retrieved from <https://hk.epochtimes.com/news/2020-01-01/31162387>



Image 4-56: Netizens had doubts on the cause of death of the student
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.122 On 22 September 2019, there were sporadic disturbances flared at different locations. The protesters vandalised shops like Best Mart 360 and restaurants operated by Maxim's Caterers Limited at different shopping malls. Some violent protesters also damaged the facilities inside Nam Cheong Station, West Kowloon Station, Sha Tin Station and the adjacent New Town Plaza. Some protesters took down the National Flag, stamped and splashed water on it before throwing it into Shing Mun River.¹¹⁶ In Tsing Yi, the vehicle of a Principal Government Official was besieged by protesters after he had attended an event celebrating the National Day. They threw different kinds of objects such as metal rod and rubbish bin at the vehicle, causing damage to the windscreen. The vehicle could leave only with the assistance of riot police officers.¹¹⁷ On 22 September 2019, the Police arrested 53 persons.¹¹⁸

¹¹⁶ HK01 (2019-09-23). 【922·圓方】示威者設路障 警舉藍旗 港鐵宣佈關閉九龍站. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/377916/922-圓方-示威者設路障-警舉藍旗-港鐵宣佈關閉九龍站>

SCMP (2019-09-22). As it happened: how Hong Kong protesters went on mall and MTR rampage, as police fired tear gas and beanbag rounds. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3029698/sha-tin-mtr-closes-hong-kong-protesters-vandalise-mall>

¹¹⁷ HK01 (2019-09-23). 【9.22】時序重組 塞機場變陣 聶德權被圍 多區商場爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/378113/9-22-時序重組-塞機場變陣-聶德權被圍-多區商場爆衝突>

¹¹⁸ Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749>



Image 4-57: Protesters vandalised Sha Tin New Town Plaza on 22 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)

Saturday 28 September 2019 – A March to commemorate OCM

4.123 On 28 September 2019, CHRF held an assembly with a LoNO at Tamar Park to commemorate OCM in 2014. CHRF estimated that around 200 000 to 300 000 had joined the assembly while the Police estimated around 8 440 at peak time. Some violent protesters threw petrol bombs and bricks at CGC. The Police used PAVAsolution and fired tear gas to disperse them. SCMV was also deployed. In Mong Kok, some violent protesters threw petrol bombs at the police station.¹¹⁹ On that day, the Police used five rounds of tear gas, three rubber rounds and 13 react rounds, and arrested 11 persons.¹²⁰

Sunday 29 September 2019 - “Global Anti-Totalitarianism March”

4.124 On 29 September 2019, without applying for a LoNO, netizens organised a procession entitled “Global Anti-Totalitarianism March”, to walk from Causeway Bay to CGC. That day, the Police mobilised two SCMVs and two armoured vehicles to stand by at LOCPG and another SCMV and armoured vehicle at CGC.¹²¹

¹¹⁹ HK01 (2019-09-29). 【9.28 集會·全日總覽】警舉藍旗警告 旺角警署一度冒黑煙. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/380355/9-28-集會-全日總覽-警舉藍旗警告-旺角警署一度冒黑煙>

¹²⁰ RTHK NEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3>
Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749>

¹²¹ HK01 (2019-09-30). 【9.29 遊行·全日總覽】警員旺角警署開數槍 現場遺數布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/380557/9-29-遊行-全日總覽-警員旺角警署開數槍-現場遺數布袋彈>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-58: Netizens called for a march on 29 September 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.125 Before the march began, violent protesters occupied Hennessy Road in Causeway Bay. Scuffles broke out when they hurled bricks and petrol bombs at police officers.¹²² As a result, the Police fired tear gas and rubber rounds to disperse them. In Wan Chai, other protesters smashed the glass panel at Exit A of Wan Chai Station and threw petrol bombs and bricks into the station, causing a small fire. Another group of violent protesters blocked Fenwick Street in Wan Chai. During these events in Wan Chai, violent protesters caused damages to outlets of Café de Coral and Starbucks, which they considered be pro-Government and owned by the Maxim's Caterers Limited.¹²³

4.126 In Admiralty, violent protesters used rubbish bins and other objects to block the exits of Admiralty Station and threw a petrol bomb at Exit B. To disperse the protesters, the Police

¹²² SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hongkong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kong-streets-ahead-anti-government-march>

¹²³ HK01 (2019-09-30). 【9.29 遊行·全日總覽】警員旺角警署開數槍 現場遺數布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/380557/9-29-遊行-全日總覽-警員旺角警署開數槍-現場遺數布袋彈>

SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kong-streets-ahead-anti-government-march>

fired tear gas and rubber rounds at different locations at Harcourt Road, outside Pacific Place, Cotton Tree Drive and Leighton Road. Protesters also threw petrol bombs at CGC. In Tim Wa Avenue, they hurled bricks from a mega sling shot over the water-filled barriers into CGC. The Police protected the building with tear gas, react rounds and SCMV.¹²⁴

4.127 In the afternoon, a female Indonesian reporter was allegedly hit by a rubber round in the right eye,¹²⁵ when she was making live coverage on a footbridge in Wan Chai connecting to Immigration Tower. At the times, the Police was taking action to disperse the protesters on the footbridge and had asked everyone including reporters to leave. However, the protesters and the reporters remained there ignoring the warning of the Police. Suddenly, the Indonesian reporter was hit by something in her right eye and fell to the ground. She later became blind in her right eye and she alleged that it was caused by a rubber round. She plans to take private prosecution against the Police.¹²⁶ This matter gave protesters further reason to protest against police excessive use of force.

¹²⁴ HK01 (2019-09-30). 【9.29 遊行·全日總覽】警員旺角警署開數槍 現場遺數布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/380557/9-29-遊行-全日總覽-警員旺角警署開數槍-現場遺數布袋彈>

SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kongstreets-ahead-anti-government-march>

¹²⁵ HK01 (2019-09-30). 【929 示威】印尼記者疑眼中彈 記協譴責對記者暴力. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/380779/929-示威-印尼記者疑眼中彈-記協譴責對記者暴力>

¹²⁶ Stand News (2020-01-03). 【印尼女記者案】警認曾發橡膠子彈 披露警員資料申請下月審. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/右眼失明印尼記者-提私人檢控時限將屆-網民稱成功找出開槍警員身份/>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-59: Netizens calling for “an eye for an eye” with the Police
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.128 In the late afternoon, a police officer suspected to be an undercover officer was attacked by protesters near Southorn Playground in Wan Chai. To protect himself from attack, he fired one round of warning shot into the air.¹²⁷ A video clip online showed that some 30 seconds before the warning shot was heard fired, protesters had thrown bricks at four individuals holding extendable batons and wearing black masks. About 80 protesters assaulted those four individuals before a man wearing a white helmet came to their rescue and fired one round of warning shot.¹²⁸

¹²⁷ HK01 (2019-09-30). 【警方記者會】盤點三臥底行動兩敗露開槍解圍 網民發動 10.1 楔衫. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/380840/警方記者會-盤點三臥底行動兩敗露開槍解圍-網民發動 10-1 楔衫>

SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kong-streets-ahead-anti-government-march>

¹²⁸ SCMP (2019-09-30). At it happened: more than 100 arrests after march descends into violence and chaos on Hong Kong Island. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030822/tensions-hong-kong-streets-ahead-anti-government-march>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

4.129 At night, some protesters besieged Mong Kok Police Station and set fire outside Prince Edward Station. The Police fired super sock rounds in response.¹²⁹

4.130 On 29 September 2019, the Police fired 347 rounds of tear gas, 297 rubber rounds, 96 super sock rounds, 80 react rounds and one live round warning shot. The Police also arrested 135 persons.¹³⁰



Image 4-60: A huge fire was caused by protesters in Hennessey Road, Wan Chai on 29 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-61: Protesters attacked a police vehicle in Queensway on 29 September 2019
(Image source: HK01)

¹²⁹ HK01 (2019-09-30). 【9.29 遊行・全日總覽】警員旺角警署開數槍 現場遺數布袋彈. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/380557/9-29_遊行-全日總覽-警員旺角警署開數槍-現場遺數布袋彈

¹³⁰ RTHK NEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3> Facebook of Hon CHU Hoi-dick (2020-03-01). 【7165 被捕，1154 被起訴】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Protests in October 2019:

October 2019						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
		1 National Day Protest First injury by live round in Tsuen Wan	2	3	4 Anti-mask Law announced Second injury by live round in Yuen Long	5 Anti-mask Law effective
6 Anti-mask Law Protests in Kowloon & HK Island	7	8	9	10	11	12
13 Territory-wide “Shopping Malls Protests” Officer’s neck slashed in Kwun Tong	14 Protest at HKDI for the CCTV footage re the VTC student incident	15	16	17	18	19
20 Tsim Sha Tsui Procession SCMV sprayed blue-dyed water at Kowloon Mosque	21	22	23	24	25	26
27 Rally in Tsim Sha Tsui	28	29	30	31		

Highlights of October 2019

- **1 October National Day 2019** was marked by city-wide violence and unrest in a “National Grief March”. The clashes were the most ferocious, disorderly and extensive since 12 June 2019. An 18-year-old student was injured by live round fired by a police officer in Tsuen Wan. This was used on the internet to rally further protests. On that day, five warning shots were also fired in some other districts.
- **Prohibition on Face Covering Regulation (Anti-mask Law)** announced on 4 October 2019 sparked a series of protests starting that day. A 14-year-old boy was shot by a plainclothes police officer under attack.
- Protesters continued to use Anti-mask Law to rally violent protests throughout October, more violent ones being those on 6 October, 13 October, 20 October and 27 October 2019. Tsim Sha Tsui and Mong Kok were the common battlegrounds with scenes of arson and vandalism along Nathan Road. On 13 October 2019, a police officer was slashed on the neck by a protester in Kwun Tong. On 20 October 2019, an SCMV discharged blue-dyed water at the entrance of the Kowloon Mosque in Tsim Sha Tsui, after which the Chief Executive apologised for the incident.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Tuesday 1 October 2019 – Violent Protests on the National Day

4.131 The National Day celebration on 1 October 2019 was marred by violent unrest throughout the entire city and the shooting of an 18-year-old protester in Tsuen Wan. CHRF had applied for a LoNO to launch a “National Grief March” from Causeway Bay to Central in the afternoon of National Day but the Police rejected the application. Four pan-democrats then urged the public to disregard the Police ban and take part in the march as a form of civil disobedience. Defying the Police ban, tens of thousands of protesters took to the street to join the march.¹³¹



Image 4-62: A poster of CHRF calling for people to attend the protests on 28 September and 1 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.132 There were online appeals mobilising people to attend protests in six districts to “celebrate” on the “Day of National Mourning”.¹³² There were also online discussions inciting protesters to confront and attack police officers.¹³³ The protesters vowed to ruin the National Day celebrations.

¹³¹ SCMP (2019-10-02). “Protester shot by police, trail of destruction across Hong Kong, while Beijing celebrates National Day”. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031161/protester-shot-police-trail-destruction-across-hong-kong>

¹³² <https://lihkg.com/thread/1606490/page/1>

¹³³ <https://lihkg.com/thread/1607154/page/1?post=1>



Image 4-63: A poster on LIHKG calling for protests in six districts on the “1 October National Mourning”

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-64: One of the posts appeared on LIHKG urging people to attack police officers on 1 October 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

4.133 In anticipation of severe violence from protesters, a large number of police officers were deployed to protect the HKCEC where the celebration activities would take place and in various districts where violent protests would be held. The Police warned the public of the serious danger from some protesters’ plan for disturbances on 1 October 2019. The Police revealed that on 29 and 30 September 2019, they had arrested 22 people at multiple locations in connection with illegal assemblies and illegal possession of weapons, including materials for making petrol bombs, such as bottles of thinner, empty glass bottles, lighters, cloth strips for ignition which the Police believed were to be used in protests on 1 October 2019.

4.134 Out of safety concern, a number of major shopping malls all over Hong Kong, including IFC Mall, Sogo Department Store, Pacific Place, New Town Plaza, Telford Plaza, Yoho Mall were closed for the day. By 11:00, MTRC had closed 11 MTR stations, including Admiralty Station, Wan Chai Station, Causeway Bay Station and Prince Edward Station. As

violent protests erupted in a number of districts from afternoon to midnight, MTRC eventually closed more than 40 MTR stations. Before violent protests broke out, many shops had closed and streets normally teeming with people were almost deserted.¹³⁴

4.135 Celebration activities at the HKCEC that morning went off without major incident. However, by noon, protesters wearing black outfits gathered at different locations in Causeway Bay, Wan Chai, Wong Tai Sin, Sham Shui Po, Tsuen Wan and Tuen Mun. Around 13:00, the procession in Causeway Bay started, occupying all lanes of Hennessy Road. Some participants carried a banner that read, “End the dictatorial rule. Return power to the people”. They also chanted “Fight for freedom, stand with Hong Kong”.

4.136 After 14:00, violence broke out between protesters and the Police in various districts, starting from Tuen Mun, Wong Tai Sin, Sha Tin and Sham Shui Po. Violent protesters tucked in their black T-shirts to distinguish themselves from plainclothes officers in disguise among them. They occupied roads, hurling bricks, other hard objects and petrol bombs at police officers. They set fire on a number of roads. In different locations there were huge fires. Police officers dispersed protesters with tear gas and other less-lethal weapons. Protesters were seen beating police officers with umbrellas and wooden poles in attempts to retrieve protesters subdued by police officers. In Tuen Mun, some violent protesters used corrosive liquid, injuring a number of police officers and some reporters. Very soon, violent protests spread to Mong Kok, Yau Ma Tei, Jordon and Tsim Sha Tsui.¹³⁵

4.137 On Hong Kong Island, after the march reached Admiralty, thousands of protesters occupied Harcourt Road by putting up barricades with miscellaneous objects and setting fire on the road. Violent protesters hurled petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at police officers. The Police fired tear gas and deployed SCMV to disperse the crowd.

4.138 There was extensive unrest across the city. Entrances of a number of MTR stations were set on fire; shops and banks connected to the Mainland were vandalised and set on fire; a mahjong parlour in Tsuen Wan was severely damaged; Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices was broken into and vandalised. Six live rounds were fired, two warning shots in Yau Ma Tei, two warning shots in Tsuen Wan, one warning shot in Wong Tai Sin and the remaining shot hit the chest of an 18-year old secondary school student in Tsuen Wan. The student was shot when together with other protesters, he attacked a police officer with weapons.¹³⁶ The incident was recorded on video and had been viewed by many citizens. The student was discharged from hospital after receiving treatment. It was the first injury caused by a live round since June 2019 and was subsequently used as propaganda to reinforce allegations of police brutality and to fuel the momentum of the protests in the following days.¹³⁷

¹³⁴ SCMP (2019-10-01). As it happened: Hong Kong protester shot in chest, six live rounds fired on National Day. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031044/chaos-expected-across-hong-kong-anti-government-protesters>

¹³⁵ Ming Pao Daily News (2019-10-02). 催淚彈對燃燒彈 多區激戰 25 警傷. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%E8%A6%81%E8%81%9E/article/20191002/s00001/1569955565533/催淚彈對燃燒彈-多區激戰 25 警傷>

¹³⁶ SCMP (2019-10-02). “Schoolmates of Hong Kong teen shot by police hold sit-in as college faces pressure to condemn force”. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031200/schoolmates-hong-kong-teen-shot-police-hold-sit-college>

¹³⁷ Facebook: <https://www.facebook.com/DeMosDerivedFromMaOnShan/photos/pcb.1455599177911651/1455594997912069/?type=3&theater>



Image 4-65: A graphic on facebook about the shooting on the National Day
(Image source: Facebook)

4.139 The event that led to the firing of the two warning shots in Yau Ma Tei was recorded on video. A police vehicle was under attack by protesters. The officers got off the police vehicle but were outnumbered by the violent protesters. In order to fend off further attacks, an officer fired two warning shots. In the event, the officer suffered bleeding injuries on his head.

4.140 The clashes on 1 October 2019 were the most serious with violence and the biggest in scale since June 2019. According to the Police, violent protesters used petrol bombs, corrosive fluid, bricks, metal rods and other hard objects as weapons. On that day the Police fired 1 667 rounds of tear gas, 1 156 rubber rounds, 267 super sock rounds and 248 react rounds in addition to six live rounds. The Police arrested a total of 299 people.

Friday 4 October 2019 – Violent Protests against Anti-mask Law

4.141 On 4 October 2019, the Government invoked the Emergency Regulations Ordinance to impose the Anti-mask Law banning facial covering during protests. Prior to the Chief Executive's announcement at 15:00, there were online appeals calling for people to attend an unapproved assembly at Chater Garden in Central to voice against the legislation at 12:30. Thousands of office workers turned out at Chater Garden. They later occupied the west-bound lanes of Des Voeux Road Central and the east-bound lanes of Connaught Road Central near International Finance Centre, blocking the traffic there.¹³⁸

¹³⁸ Ming Pao Daily News (2019-10-04). 港九新界多區仍有人群聚集未散. Retrieved from <https://m.mingpao.com/ins/%e6%b8%af%e8%81%9e/article/20191004/s00001/1570172333182/>
【禁蒙面法-示威】港九新界多區仍有人群聚集未散 (不斷更新)



Image 4-66: A poster appeared on facebook calling for people to attend an assembly in Central on 4 October 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.142 Before 4 October 2019, there had been rumours about the Anti-mask Law and discussions in the community over whether the Chief Executive should enact the Anti-mask Law. On 3 October 2019, protesters turned up at 11 shopping malls throughout the territory to oppose the new law. In the evening, clashes between violent protesters and the Police broke out at Citiplaza in Tai Koo Shing.¹³⁹

4.143 Soon after the announcement on 4 October 2019, there were online petitions for protesters to defy the new law, which was regarded by the netizens as a means of totalitarian rule and suppression of the protests.¹⁴⁰ Opposition to the Anti-mask Law became the theme for subsequent protests in October 2019 and protest slogans became more radical. The widely-used slogan of “香港人，加油” (Translation: Hongkongers, add oil) in previous protests evolved to “香港人，反抗” (Translation: Hongkongers, resist).¹⁴¹ The demand of “追究警暴” (Translation: Investigate into police brutality) further turned into “解散警隊” (Translation: Disband the Police Force).

¹³⁹ SCMP (2019-10-03). Tear gas and pepper spray in Tai Koo as anti-government protesters hold rallies across Hong Kong in protest to reports of law banning face masks. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031475/tear-gas-and-pepper-spray-tai-koo-anti-government>

¹⁴⁰ <https://lihkg.com/thread/1616670/page/1>

¹⁴¹ <https://lihkg.com/thread/1627833/page/1>



Image 4-67: A poster appeared on a LIHKG on 4 October 2019 appealing people to wear mask in defiance of the Anti-mask Law
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-68: A post appeared on LIHKG on 6 October 2019 with the new slogan “Hong Kong People, resist”
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.144 Following the Chief Executive’s announcement of the new law at 15:00, several universities cancelled afternoon classes and many businesses and malls also closed early. Around 16:30, hundreds of protesters, many of them office workers in suits and students in school uniform, gathered in Central. The protesters built barricades on Man Yiu Street outside the Hong Kong Station to stop traffic on Connaught Road Central and Des Voeux Road Central. They burned the National Flag and a red banner with words celebrating for the National Day on the footbridge connecting Jardine House and Chater House.¹⁴²

¹⁴² SCMP (2019-10-05). Rampaging Hong Kong protesters bring large parts of city to standstill, destroying property after anti-mask law announced. Retrieved from

4.145 In the evening, violent protests spread across the city, causing traffic chaos. Many protesters wore masks in defiance of the new law. They chanted “Hongkongers, resist” and “蒙面無罪 立法無理” (Translation: No crime to cover our face, no reason to enact the law) and occupied several major roads, including Harcourt Road and Hennessey Road on Hong Kong side, Nathan Road and Lung Cheung Road in Kowloon. Violent protesters also set up barricades to block the entrance of the Cross-Harbour Tunnel.¹⁴³ They vandalised and set fire on shops and bank branches linked to the Mainland and damaged some MTR stations. Some even set fire on the railroad tracks at Kowloon Tong Station while others hurled petrol bombs onto a train at Sha Tin Station.¹⁴⁴ Because of the violent acts of the protesters, and the damages to a number of MTR stations, MTRC suspended train services completely and closed all MTR stations at 22:30. Earlier around 22:00, the Police had carried out dispersal action in various districts including Causeway Bay, Wong Tai Sin and Tuen Mun, after which the mobs gradually disappeared. MTRC would re-open only half of the MTR stations on 6 October 2019.

4.146 Late night of 4 October 2019, another incident of firing one live round occurred, in Yuen Long at around 23:00. A plainclothes police officer was attacked from behind and was swamped by protesters knocking him to the ground and beating him. He pulled out his pistol and gunshot was heard amidst the chaos, whereupon the assailants immediately dispersed. At once, someone threw a petrol bomb at him and his trousers caught fire. The officer dropped his gun when he tried to put out the fire on his person. Someone attempted to pick up the gun but the officer managed to retrieve it. A 14 year-old boy was shot in his left thigh by that live round.¹⁴⁵

4.147 On 4 October 2019, according to the Police, violent protesters attacked the officers with petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects. The Police fired 271 rounds of tear gas, 157 rubber rounds, 30 super sock rounds and 26 react rounds, in addition to the live round fired by the plainclothes officer in Yuen Long. The Police arrested 13 people on that day.

Sunday 6 October 2019 – Violent Protests after Enactment of Anti-mask Law

4.148 Prior to 6 October 2019, there were online appeals for people to take part in two unauthorised protests to be held on Hong Kong Island and in Kowloon on the afternoon of 6 October 2019 to oppose to the Anti-mask Law.¹⁴⁶

<https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031656/rampaging-hong-kong-protesters-bring-large-parts-city>

¹⁴³ SCMP (2019-10-04). As it happened: boy, 14, hit by bullet during night of violent protests in Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031515/hong-kong-leader-carrie-lam-announce-introduction-anti-mask>

¹⁴⁴ Apple Daily (2019-10-05). 沙田焚城 五港鐵站被毀. Retrieved from <https://hk.appledaily.com/local/20191004/5TC24P6IERPHLLJ42K52UD54D4/>

¹⁴⁵ SCMP (2019-10-04). Hong Kong protests: teenage boy who suffered gunshot wound in leg arrested on suspicion of taking part in riots and attacking police officer. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031706/hong-kong-protests-teenage-boy-who-suffered-gunshot-wound>

¹⁴⁶ <https://lihkg.com/thread/1628612/page/1>



Image 4-69: A poster on LIHKG appealing people to participate in the two protests respectively held at Causeway Bay and Tsim Sha Tsui on 6 October 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

4.149 When the protesters marched on the streets, they wore masks in defiance of the new law. The marches subsequently turned chaotic and clashes with the Police flared up at different locations. Protesters blocked roads in Wan Chai, Admiralty, Sham Shui Po and Prince Edward, throwing bricks onto streets, hurling petrol bombs and vandalising shops with links to the Mainland.¹⁴⁷ Around 17:00, the Police fired tear gas to clear the crowds in Wan Chai and Admiralty.¹⁴⁸ At around 17:30 in Sham Shui Po, a taxi under attack by some protesters, rammed into a crowd and severely injured a female protester. Some protesters dragged the driver out from the taxi, to be immediately surrounded by a large crowd and badly beaten.¹⁴⁹

4.150 On 6 October 2019, the Police fired 156 rounds of tear gas, 69 rubber rounds, three super sock rounds and five react rounds. The Police arrested 121 people that day.

Protests from Monday 7 October to Saturday 12 October 2019

4.151 During a protest on 7 October 2019, violent protesters had sporadic confrontation with the Police at various locations in Mong Kok, Tai Po, Ma On Shan and Tseung Kwan O.

¹⁴⁷ SCMP (2010-10-06). As it happened: Hong Kong protest chaos ends in Mong Kok stand-off as MTR again closes network. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3031732/hong-kong-protesters-outraged-anti-mask-law-return-streets>

¹⁴⁸ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-05). HKFP Lens: Hong Kong rocked by further protests as emergency mask ban provokes more unrest. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/06/hkfp-lens-hong-kong-rocked-protests-emergency-mask-ban-provokes-unrest/>

¹⁴⁹ SCMP (2019-10-10). Hong Kong taxi driver beaten by mob after car rams into crowd of protesters in Sham Shui Po gives account of crash. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3032381/hong-kong-taxi-driver-beaten-mob-after-car-rams-crowd>

The Police responded with tear gas and less-lethal weapons.¹⁵⁰ On 10 October 2019, protesters wearing masks in defiance of the Anti-mask Law gathered outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station on the “World Sight Day” in support of the woman who suffered eye injury in the protest on 11 August 2019.¹⁵¹ On 12 October 2019, over a thousand took part in an unauthorised but largely peaceful march from Tsim Sha Tsui to Sham Shui Po to protest against the Anti-mask Law.¹⁵²

Sunday 13 October 2019 – Territory-wide Protests in Shopping Malls

4.152 Prior to 13 October 2019, there were online appeals mobilising people to deploy a strategy of popping up in small groups to protest in major shopping centres in different districts including Central, Mong Kok, Kowloon Bay, Kwun Tong, Tseung Kwan O, Tsuen Wan and Sha Tin.¹⁵³ To avoid being arrested, they were advised to “Be Water”, to move quickly from one location to another and to contemplate an escape route at each new location.¹⁵⁴

¹⁵⁰ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-08). Hong Kong riot police storm Ma On Shan mall to make arrest, as multi-district protests, vandalism continue to fizzle. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/08/hong-kong-riot-police-storm-ma-shan-mall-make-arrest-multi-district-protests-vandalism-continue-fizzle/>

¹⁵¹ RTHK (2019-10-10). Protest in Tsim Sha Tsui to support injured woman. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1485417-20191010.htm?archive_date=2019-10-10

¹⁵² Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-12). ‘We are not afraid’: Over a thousand Hongkongers protest gov’t use of emergency law. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/12/not-afraid-thousand-hongkongers-protest-govt-use-emergency-law/>

¹⁵³ The Guardian (2019-10-13). Hong Kong protesters use new flashmob strategy to avoid arrest. Retrieved from <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2019/oct/13/hong-kong-protesters-flashmobs-blossom-everywhere>

¹⁵⁴ <https://lihkg.com/thread/1649018/page/1>



Image 4-70: A poster on LIHKG calling for people to adopt “Be Water” flash-mob strategy to cause unrest in shopping malls in various districts on 13 October 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

4.153 Starting from 13:00, violent protesters vandalised and sprayed graffiti at MTR stations, shops and bank branches that had links to the Mainland inside the shopping malls they visited. Later on, they took to the streets to continue to cause damage and set fire at various spots. Scenes of vandalism were ubiquitous in shopping malls and on streets in many districts.¹⁵⁵ A total of 27 MTR stations, including Wong Tai Sin Station, Cheung Sha Wan Station and Tseung Kwan O Station, were forced to close. All service on the Tsuen Wan MTR line were suspended. Violent protesters also caused damages to Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices, Tai Po Government Offices and the offices of some pro-Government LegCo Members. They blocked roads, sabotaged the traffic lights and set objects on fire. The violent protesters moved swiftly to other locations before Police arrival.

4.154 Police officers were targets of attack when they took action in the late afternoon, especially in the course of their making arrests. In Tseung Kwan O, two plainclothes police officers were assaulted by a protester after being found out that they were police officers. At Kwun Tong Station, a police officer was slashed on the neck by an 18-year old student,

¹⁵⁵ SCMP (2019-10-13). As it happened: policeman slashed in the neck amid citywide protests in Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3032714/flash-mob-protests-flare-across-hong-kong-groups-smash>

sustaining a five centimetre cut wound close to the carotid artery. He was with his team on their way to handle a case of “Criminal Damage” there. The assailant was arrested at the scene and charged with wounding the police officer.^{156,157}

4.155 At 21:00, a homemade bomb by remote controlled placed in a roadside flower bed on Nathan Road in Mong Kok exploded soon after a police vehicle drove past. The police officers were nearby clearing road blocks set up by the protesters. Luckily, there was no casualty.

4.156 13 October 2019 was another day of anarchy, chaos and violence in the entire city. Apparently with the flash-mob strategy for protesters to act in small groups and to leave very quickly, the Police only fired two rounds of tear gas, seven rubber rounds, 24 super sock rounds and six react rounds. Significant number of people, 178, were arrested.

Protests from Monday 14 October to Saturday 19 October 2019

4.157 On 14 October 2019, an assembly was held at night in Chater Garden, the first protest with LoNO since the Anti-mask Law came into force. Thousands of protesters called for the US to enact the “Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act”. The organiser claimed that more than 130 000 had taken part in the rally, while the Police estimated 25 000 at the peak.¹⁵⁸ On 18 October 2019, protesters formed human chains across the city in major areas such as Tsuen Wan, Sha Tin, Tai Wai, Causeway Bay, chanting slogan “五大訴求 缺一不可” (Translation: Five demands, not one less).¹⁵⁹

Sunday 20 October 2019 – Violent Protests in Kowloon

4.158 Despite the Police refusal of CHRF’s application for launching a march in the afternoon of 20 October 2019 from Tsim Sha Tsui to the West Kowloon Station to protest against the Anti-mask Law and to condemn police brutality, CHRF went ahead with the procession.¹⁶⁰ After the event, CHRF declared that 350 000 had taken part.

¹⁵⁶ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-13). Protester ‘slashed police officer’s neck’ with sharp object, amid clashes and vandalism across Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/13/protester-slashed-police-officers-neck-sharp-object-amid-clashes-vandalism-across-hong-kong/>

¹⁵⁷ SCMP (2019-11-08). Hong Kong police officer slashed in neck reveals fears of leaving behind his family and the difficulty of talking to his children because of his injury. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3036801/hong-kong-police-officer-slashed-neck-reveals-fears>

¹⁵⁸ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-15). Fight with Hong Kong: 130,000 gather to urge US to pass human rights act to monitor city’s autonomy, organisers say. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/15/fight-hong-kong-130000-gather-urge-us-pass-human-rights-act-monitor-citys-autonomy-organisers-say/>

¹⁵⁹ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-10-19). Hongkongers don Pepe, Guy Fawkes, Winnie-the-Pooh and Xi Jinping masks at human chain protest against new law. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/10/19/hongkongers-don-pepe-guy-fawkes-winnie-xi-jinping-masks-human-chain-protest-new-law/>

¹⁶⁰ <https://lihkg.com/thread/1655245/page/1>

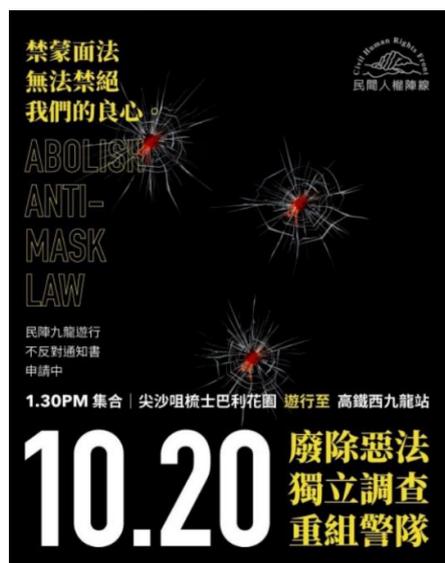


Image 4-71: A poster of CHRF calling for people to participate in the 20 October March in Tsim Sha Tsui
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-72: A post appeared on LIHKG calling for people to take up different roles in the protest on 20 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.159 During the event, many protesters digressed to Nathan Road in Tsim Sha Tsui then along Nathan Road to Prince Edward and even further to Sham Shui Po, some violent protesters continued to target MTR stations, shops connected with the Mainland or having ties with Fujianese community. When some violent protesters committed acts of criminal damage, other protesters would open umbrellas to block the view from outside and shield individual from being identified. They spray-painted, vandalised and threw petrol bombs into Mong Kok Station, Yau Ma Tei Station and Austin Station. MTR stations between Tsim Sha Tsui and Prince Edward were closed after 16:00. Branches of Mainland-owned banks were not spared.

A news footage captured some violent protesters breaking into a branch of the Bank of China and throwing a petrol bomb into it. For unknown reasons, however, some violent protesters damaged a branch of the Bank of East Asia, after which someone spray-painted an apology on the glass panel, “Sorry, wrong bank.” Protesters surrounded Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station and hurled petrol bombs inside. Later, they surrounded Mong Kok Police Station. Police officers fired tear gas at the violent protesters from within.¹⁶¹



Image 4-73: A group of protesters vandalising MTR Station in Yau Mau Tei with others covering them with umbrellas on 20 October 2019
(Image source: Now TV)

4.160 Around 15:15, the Police took action in response to the riotous acts of the violent protesters. Tear gas and other less-lethal weapons were fired. Around 16:10, an SCMV was deployed to clear the violent protesters along Nathan Road from Tsim Sha Tsui to Mong Kok. When the SCMV drove past the Kowloon Mosque in Tsim Sha Tsui, it sprayed blue-dyed water at the gates of the Mosque and a group of people including a former President of the Indian Association of Hong Kong and a pan-democratic LegCo Member there.¹⁶² The Police issued a statement to apologise for the incident, explaining that the mosque was not a target in the operation. The Chief Executive later also apologised to the Muslim community.¹⁶³

4.161 Following the enforcement action by the riot police officers and the SCMV, protesters went to Mong Kok and Prince Edward, later that evening to become a major battlefield. An additional SCMV was deployed for dispersal. Around 19:00, riot officers advanced down Nathan Road. The two SCMVs together with an armoured vehicle crashed through the road blocks set up by protesters. When violent protesters hurled bricks and petrol bombs at them, the police officers fired tear gas and rubber rounds in response. The turmoil lasted until midnight when most of the protesters in Mong Kok had dispersed.

4.162 On 20 October 2019, according to the Police, violent protesters used petrol bombs, bricks, sling shots and other hard objects to attack the officers. The Police fired 266 rounds of

¹⁶¹ SCMP (2019-10-20). As it happened: Hong Kong arson spree on stores such as Xiaomi, Best Mart 360 and Tong Ren Tang amid protests. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3033714/protesters-block-roads-during-illegal-march-hong-kong>

¹⁶² SCMP (2019-10-20). Muslim Council of Hong Kong appeals for calm after police water cannons spray blue dye at front of Kowloon Mosque. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3033792/hong-kong-ethnic-minority-groups-safe-reprisal-attacks>

¹⁶³ Reuters (2019-10-21). Hong Kong leader apologizes after mosque hit by police water cannon". Retrieved from <https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-protests/hong-kong-leader-apologizes-for-mosque-water-cannon-incident-after-day-of-violence-idUSKBN1X004X>

tear gas, 140 rubber rounds, 19 super sock rounds and 43 react rounds. The Police arrested 60 people.

Protests from Monday 21 October to Saturday 26 October 2019

4.163 On 24 October 2019, a rally was launched to support protesters in Catalonia, Spain. The approved assembly was attended by 3 000 people according to the organiser and the Police counted 550 at the peak.¹⁶⁴ On 26 October 2019, hundreds of medical professionals gathered in a park in Central to protest against alleged police violence against protesters, and the arrest of medical professionals working in the frontline of the protests.¹⁶⁵

Sunday 27 October 2019 – Rally in Tsim Sha Tsui

4.164 Around 15:00 on Sunday 27 October 2019, hundreds of protesters gathered at Salisbury Garden outside the Space Museum and the Cultural Centre in Tsim Sha Tsui to protest against police brutality and the spraying of blue-dyed water onto Kowloon Mosque in the dispersal operation on 20 October 2019. Prior to 27 October 2019, there were online messages appealing people to take part in the protest.¹⁶⁶ At the time of the event, police officers stood on guard at the location. Many protesters wore masks in defiance of the Anti-mask Law.



Image 4-74: A poster on LIHKG calling for participation in the protest on 27 October 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

¹⁶⁴ Reuters (2019-10-24). Hong Kong pro-democracy protesters rally for Catalan separatists. Retrieved from <https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-protests/hong-kong-pro-democracy-protesters-rally-for-catalan-separatists-idUSKBN1X308F>

¹⁶⁵ The New York Times (2019-10-27). Doctors and Nurses Criticize the Police. Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/10/27/world/asia/hong-kong-protests.html>

¹⁶⁶ <https://lihkg.com/thread/1674224/page/1>

4.165 Around 15:40, clashes broke out between some violent protesters and the police officers there. News footage showed that the protesters hit some police officers with their umbrellas and the police officers fought back with batons. Shortly afterwards, the Police used pepper spray and tear gas to disperse the violent protesters. Some of protesters went into the Peninsula Hotel on Salisbury Road.¹⁶⁷

4.166 Some protesters moved to Nathan Road towards Mong Kok and others left in the direction of Chatham Road. Again, along the way they vandalised MTR stations, shops and bank branches connected to the Mainland or the Fujianese community. They blocked roads and set fire at different locations. When they went to Sham Shui Po later in the evening, they also hurled petrol bombs at Sham Shui Po Police Station and Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices.¹⁶⁸ Mong Kok Police Station was as usual the target of attack. The Police deployed an SCMV to Tsim Sha Tsui and Mong Kong area to disperse the crowds. Around 19:00, violent protesters set up barricades at the junction of Argyle Street and Nathan Road, the usual battleground. Police officers fired tear gas and other less-lethal weapons for dispersal.¹⁶⁹

4.167 In Mong Kok, a group of police officers were unable to defend themselves from the attack of some violent protesters. They had to retreat into an MTR station and closed the gate before firing tear gas from behind the iron grille to disperse the protesters pursuing them. In Yau Ma Tei, violent protesters attacked a man with hammers, believing that he was an undercover officer. The man sustained bleeding injuries on his head. In Hung Hom, a rubbish bin was hurled onto the railway track, disrupting the train service to Lo Wu.

4.168 On 27 October 2019, the Police fired 135 rounds of tear gas, 34 rubber rounds, 20 super sock rounds and six react rounds. 129 people were arrested on that day. The clashes in October 2019, in particular those on 1 October 2019, were the most violent compared with those in the preceding months. In October 2019, the Police fired a total of 2 848 rounds of tear gas, 1 625 rubber rounds, 386 super sock rounds, 350 react rounds and seven live rounds with two persons shot. The Police made a total of 1 189 arrests. However, these figures reflecting the severity of the clashes were all dwarfed by those in November 2019, the peak of the protest activities.

¹⁶⁷ The New York Times (2019-10-27). Hong Kong Police Brawl With Protesters Outside Luxury Hotel. Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/10/27/world/asia/hong-kong-protests.html>

¹⁶⁸ SCMP (2019-10-28). Hong Kong hit by violence and chaos as protests continue into 21st weekend. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3034750/hong-kong-police-fire-tear-gas-anti-government-protesters>

¹⁶⁹ Ming Pao Daily News (2019-10-28). 集會再變多區衝突 半關藥房中彈困 3 人 旺角密放催淚彈 煙湧滿客巴士 Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20191028/s00001/1572200397100/集會再變多區衝突-半關藥房中彈困3人-旺角密放催淚彈-煙湧滿客巴士>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Protests in November 2019:

November 2019						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
					1	2 Clashes over Hong Kong Island and Kowloon Xinhua News Agency on fire
3	4 An HKUST student fell inside a carpark	5	6	7	8 Death of the HKUST student HKUST President issued an open letter requesting a thorough and independent investigation into the student's death	9
10 Territory wide violent actions	11 General Strike Territory wide violent actions Man chasing protesters who vandalised MTR station was set on fire Tolo Highway, East Rail Line (partial), and Cross Harbour Tunnel intermittently closed	12 General Strike CUHK clashes Territory wide violent actions Tolo Highway, and East Rail Line (partial) intermittently closed	13 General Strike CUHK clashes Territory wide violent actions Cleaner fatally hit by a brick thrown in the midst of clashes between people with opposing views Tolo Highway and East Rail Line (partial) closed, Cross Harbour Tunnel intermittently closed	14 General Strike Continued occupation of Bridge No.2 (CUHK) Territory wide violent actions Tolo Highway and East Rail Line, and Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	15 General Strike Continued occupation of Bridge No.2 (CUHK) Occupation of PolyU Territory wide violent actions Tolo Highway and East Rail Line, and Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	16 Tolo Highway reopened Occupation of PolyU East Rail Line (partial) and Cross Harbour Tunnel closed
17 PolyU clashes Territory wide violent actions East Rail Line (partial) and Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	18 PolyU clashes Territory wide violent actions Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	19 PolyU clashes Territory wide violent actions Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	20 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	21 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	22 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	23 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed
24 District Council Election Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	25 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	26 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	27 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel closed	28 Siege of PolyU Cross Harbour Tunnel reopened	29 Siege of PolyU ended	30

Highlights of November 2019

- **Protests continued to escalate in violence. Lobby of Xinhua News Agency was set on fire, suspected explosives found in Causeway Bay and petrol bombs manufacturing centre uncovered.**
- **Doxxing of police officers and their family members intensified with criminal acts to cause nuisance and intimidation to the police officers and their families.**
- **A student from The Hong Kong University of Science and Technology (HKUST) falling to his death from a height gave protesters claims to escalate their violent protests.**
- **Violent protesters paralysed the entire city traffic network for five consecutive days to stop Hong Kong citizens from going to work and to schools so as to make them virtually participants in city-wide strikes.**
- **Violence continued to escalate, reaching a climax with the clashes at The Hong Kong Polytechnic University (PolyU) on 17 and 18 November, with the use of a record high number of police weapons and number of arrests.**
- **The Police fired eight live rounds, hitting one protester in Sai Wan Ho.**
- **A man chastising a group of masked protesters who had vandalised an MTR Station was set on fire.**
- **A 70-year old male cleaning worker was fatally hit in the head by a brick hurled from a group believed to be violent protesters in the midst of confrontation between the protesters and a group of local residents.**

4.169 November 2019 is the month with the most ferocious confrontation featuring the following major clashes:

- Protests on Hong Kong Island and in Kowloon on 2 November 2019;
- Territory-wide strikes and protests over five consecutive days from 11 to 15 November 2019, each day given a separate “action” name by the protesters;
- Violent clashes with hold-up at CUHK and in its vicinity over the Tolo Highway on 12 and 13 November 2019 coinciding with the territory-wide protests on these two days; and
- Violent clashes at PolyU and over the surrounding area on 17 and 18 November 2019.

4.170 The clashes outside CUHK and PolyU were war-like combat. Cross Harbour Tunnel outside PolyU, Tolo Highway outside CUHK and other major roads were blocked, effectively paralysing the traffic throughout Hong Kong.

4.171 In November 2019, the Police used a total of 9 597 rounds of tear gas (59.3% of the total), 7 479 rubber rounds (74.2% of the total), 1 425 super sock rounds (70.1% of the total), 1 104 react rounds (58.7% of the total), and eight live rounds (42.1% of the total), and arrested 2 899 persons (38.1% of the total). Figures for the clashes cited are given in the table below:

Date	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
	Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
2 Nov	409	132	20	18	263
11 Nov	659	251	55	78	309
12 Nov	2 330	1 770	434	159	167
13 Nov	736	593	54	34	220
14 Nov	177	56	11	9	64
15 Nov	121	18	0	4	17
17 Nov	1 530	1 344	172	279	142
18 Nov	3 293	3 188	667	499	1 071

Table 4-4: The use of police weapons and the number of arrests in major clashes in November 2019¹⁷⁰

Saturday 2 November 2019 – Territory-wide Violent Protests

4.172 Starting from late October 2019, messages circulating on the internet called for “Punishing the Police by our means” if the Government did not set up an Independent Commission of Inquiry to investigate into alleged police brutality.

¹⁷⁰ RTHK VNEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3>
Secretary for Security replies to initial written questions raised by Finance Committee Members in examining the Estimates of Expenditure 2020-21. Q2696. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr19-20/english/fc/fc/w_q/sb-e.pdf
<https://www.facebook.com/chuhoidick/posts/2799321570133749>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

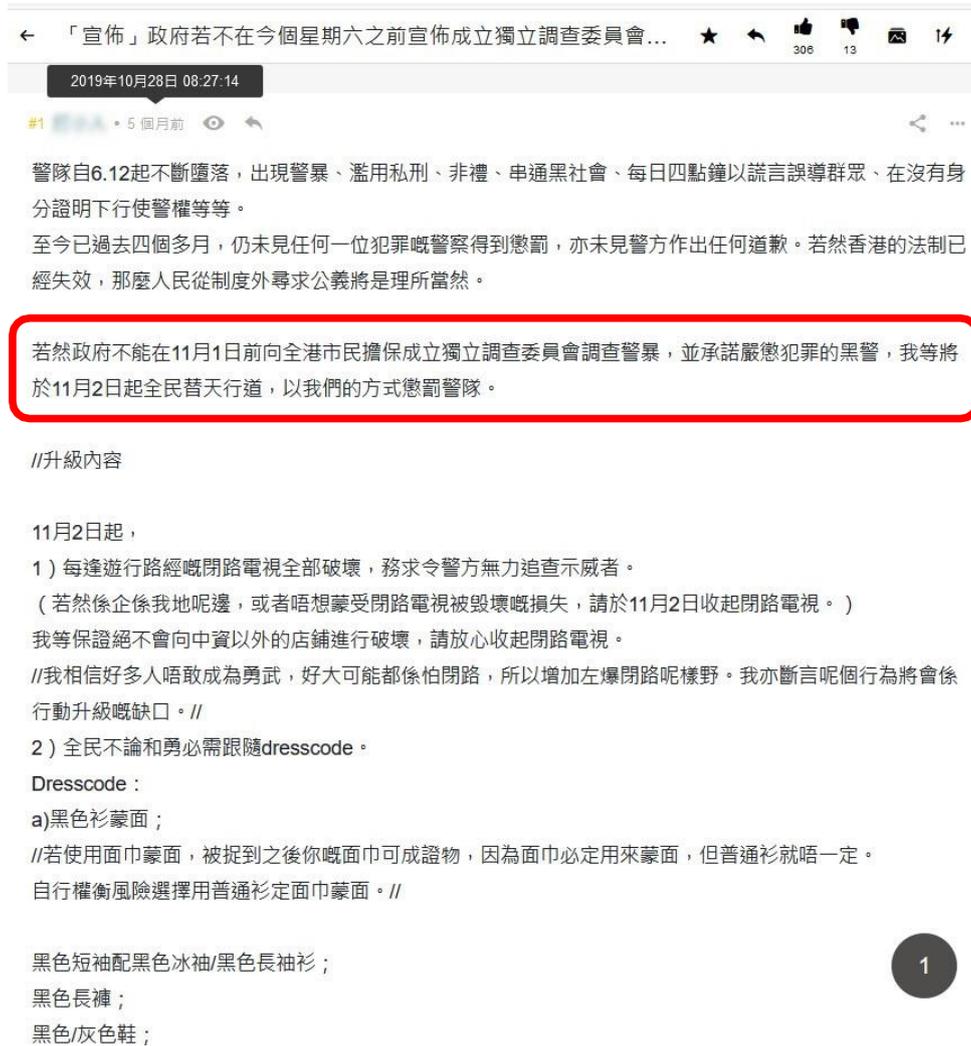


Image 4-75: Calls for “Punishing the Police by our means” starting from 2 November 2019
(Image Source: LIHKG)

4.173 On 18 October 2019, a political activist applied for a LoNO to launch an assembly entitled “Fight for Autonomy; Stand with Hong Kong” at Victoria Park on 2 November 2019. The Police turned down this application but allowed two other assemblies to be held in Central the same day.¹⁷¹ As a result, there was discussion on the internet about circumventing Police disapproval of the assembly at Victoria Park calling for people participating in “election meetings”, which netizens claimed not requiring Police approval, at Victoria Park on 2 November 2019 and then joining the approved assemblies in Central.

¹⁷¹ HK01 (2019-10-31). 逃犯條例-11-2-遮打-愛丁堡廣場集會-警發不反對通知書. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/392948/逃犯條例-11-2-遮打-愛丁堡廣場集會-警發不反對通知書>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-76: Calls for participation in protests on 2 November 2019
(Image Source: LIHKG)



Image 4-77: Calls for participation in protests on 2 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-78: Calls for peaceful protesters to protect “valiant” ones on 2 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.174 In the afternoon of 2 November 2019, 128 pro-democracy District Council election candidates organised “election meetings” at Victoria Park to substitute the rally prohibited by the Police. Thousands of people gathered at Victoria Park and its vicinity. That afternoon, the Police found 188 petrol bombs in a flat in Wan Chai and arrested five persons.¹⁷²

¹⁷² 星島日報 (2019-11-03). 瘋火圍城 襲新華社 警破武器庫檢 188 汽油彈. Retrieved from <https://std.sheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2088768/日報-港聞-瘋火圍城-襲新華社-警破武器庫檢188汽油彈>



Image 4-79: Police showing “blue flag” at Great George Street on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.175 Some violent protesters blocked roads outside Victoria Park and set up barricades at an entrance to the Park. The Police fired tear gas to disperse the protesters.¹⁷³ The violent protesters left Victoria Park in the direction of Wan Chai. Along the way, they caused damages to their usual targets of MTR stations, shops and bank branches that were connected to the Mainland or the Fujianese community. They blocked roads, hurled petrol bombs and set fire at various locations. The Police used tear gas and deployed an SCMV for dispersal.¹⁷⁴

¹⁷³ RTHK (2019-11-02). Tear gas sends crowd racing through Victoria Park. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1489673-20191102.htm>

¹⁷⁴ HK01 (2019-11-02). [11.2 集會] 總覽 示威由日打到凌晨 警全日拘逾 200 人. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/393511/11-2_集會_總覽_示威由日打到凌晨_警全日拘逾_200_人

SCMP (2019-11-02). As it happened: how another Hong Kong weekend of violence ended in clashes in Mong Kok and Causeway Bay, with Xinhua office smashed. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3036040/tear-gas-pepper-spray-and-body-searches-protesters-and>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-80: Protesters set up barricades at an entrance to Victoria Park on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-81: Police firing tear gas into Victoria Park on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.176 In view of the breach of the peace in Causeway Bay and Wan Chai, the Police asked the organisers of the two approved assemblies in Central to conclude earlier and the participants to leave the venues.¹⁷⁵

4.177 From the late afternoon till the evening, violent clashes took place at different locations from Causeway Bay to Sheung Wan. In addition to usual illegal acts to cause damages, they smashed the glass doors of the office of Xinhua News Agency in Wan Chai and set the lobby on fire. Suspected explosives were found in Causeway Bay and detonated by a bomb disposal robot.¹⁷⁶



Image 4-82: Xinhua News Agency office in Wan Chai was attacked on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

¹⁷⁵ HK01 (2019-11-02). [11.2 集會] 中環兩集會需腰斬 直擊示威者堵路車輛被困. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/393700/11-2集會-中環兩集會需腰斬-直擊示威者堵路車輛被困>

¹⁷⁶ SCMP (2019-11-02). As it happened: how another Hong Kong weekend of violence ended in clashes in Mong Kok and Causeway Bay, with Xinhua office smashed. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3036040/tear-gas-pepper-spray-and-body-searches-protesters-and>

HK01 (2019-11-02). [11.2 集會] 總覽 示威由日打到凌晨 警全日拘逾 200 人. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/393511/11-2集會-總覽-示威由日打到凌晨-警全日拘逾200人>



Image 4-83: An exit of Causeway Bay Station set on fire on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-84: A coffee shop in Sheung Wan was vandalised on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-85: A bomb disposal robot detonated suspected explosives
in Causeway Bay on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.178 In Kowloon, some violent protesters blocked Nathan Road and hurled petrol bombs at police officers. The violent protesters set up road blocks and set fires along Nathan Road to Mong Kok where some of them beat a man for taking pictures of them. The Police dispersed them with tear gas and other less-lethal weapons. The violent clashes in Mong Kok continued into the small hours of 3 November 2019.¹⁷⁷ On 2 November 2019, the Police fired 409 rounds of tear gas, 132 rubber rounds, 20 super sock rounds, 18 react rounds, and arrested 262 persons.¹⁷⁸

¹⁷⁷ Ibid.

¹⁷⁸ Information provided by HKPF

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-86: Fire was seen on Nathan Road in Mong Kok on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

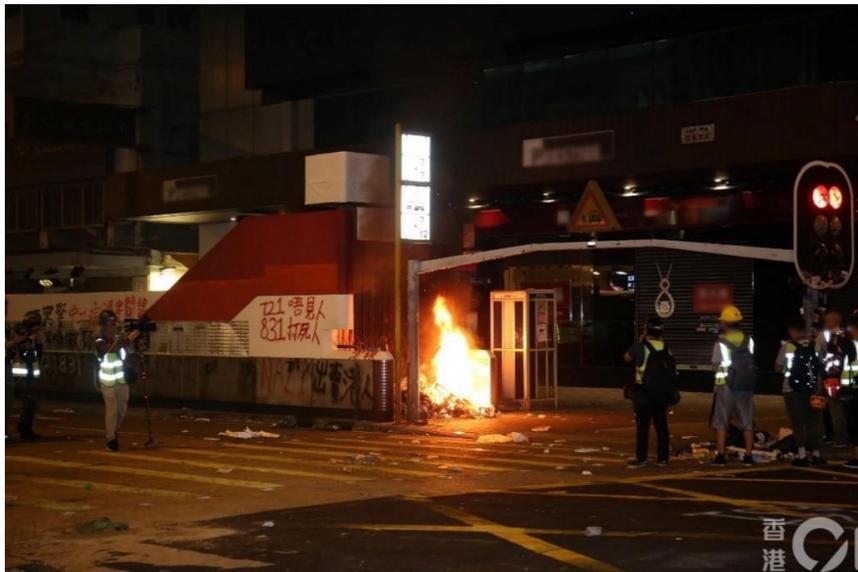


Image 4-87: Fire was seen at an exit of Mong Kok Station on 2 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

Sunday 3 November- Friday 8 November 2019 – Protests Related to the Death of an HKUST Student

4.179 On 3 November 2019, “Street Wandering” protests were organised in seven districts throughout Hong Kong where violent clashes eventually took place. In Tai Koo, part of the ear of a pro-democracy District Councillor was bitten off during a scuffle between two parties with opposing views.¹⁷⁹



Image 4-88: Fire and obstacles were outside Kwong Ming Court on 3 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-89: The Police fired tear gas near Sheung Tak Estate on 3 November 2019
(Image source: HK01)

¹⁷⁹ HK01 (2019-11-03). [七區集會-總覽] 趙家賢被咬用耳 太古夫婦捱斬 將軍澳夜戰. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/393828/七區集會-總覽-趙家賢被咬用耳-太古夫婦捱斬-將軍澳夜戰>

4.180 According to media reports, some protesters, by means of doxxing, knew a police officer's wedding banquet in Tseung Kwan O would be held on 3 November 2019. They called for people to make trouble at the event. That night, a crowd gathered near the banquet venue shouting and yelling to cause nuisance and police officers came to the scene. Subsequently, some violent protesters took to the streets in the vicinity, set up roadblocks and threw objects from a height. The Police fired tear gas to disperse them.¹⁸⁰ In the small hours of 4 November 2019, while police officers were clearing violent protesters from the streets, an HKUST student fell from the third to the second floor at a nearby carpark in Sheung Tak Estate, suffering fatal injuries. He died on 8 November 2019.¹⁸¹

4.181 On the internet, there were speculations about the cause of the student's death. Questions were raised about whether police officers were inside the carpark at that time, and whether any police officers were involved in the incident. The President of HKUST issued an open letter calling for an independent inquiry into the student's death, in particular the delay of 20 minutes in rescue as an ambulance had seemingly been blocked by police vehicles.¹⁸² FSD confirmed that the ambulance sent to the incident spot was blocked by buses and private cars but not police vehicles.¹⁸³ The CCTV footage released by LINK to the public showing that no policeman was on the floor from which the HKUST student fell. The student's death is under Police investigation heading for a death inquiry.

¹⁸⁰ Oriental Daily (2019-11-04). 東方日報 A1:警婚宴遇激進示威 亂極生悲. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20191105/bkn-20191105033042108-1105_00822_001.html

HK01 (2019-11-08). [墮樓科大生] 周日警民衝突前因 警員辦婚禮 警曾入尚德停車場. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/396102/墮樓科大生-周日警民衝突前因-警員辦婚禮-警曾入尚德停車場>

¹⁸¹ Ming Pao (2019-11-08). 科大生周梓樂今晨不治-交死因庭跟進 _17:05). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20191108/s00001/1573176989626/科大生周梓樂今晨不治-交死因庭跟進>

¹⁸² RTHK (2019-11-08). HKUST calls for independent probe into student death. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1490865-20191108.htm>

¹⁸³ RTHK (2019-11-08). 消防處稱處理周梓樂個案時 救護員沒有與現場警員接觸. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1490828-20191108.htm>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



科大學生墜樓後 警察疑似阻礙救護車救援

Image 4-90: Photo showing an ambulance blocked by the Police
(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-91: Netizens opined that the Police delayed medical assistance for the HKUST student (Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-92: Timeline of events provided by the Police (Image source: HKPF)

4.182 The death incident further fuelled protesters' hatred for the Police. Protests were held on 8 November 2019 in various districts, calling for vengeance. That night, thousands of mourners came with flowers and origami to that carpark in memory of the student. Meanwhile, violent protesters began clashing with the Police in Causeway Bay, Yau Ma Tei, Mong Kok, Tuen Mun and other districts.¹⁸⁴ In Mong Kok, a police officer fired a warning shot to save himself from protesters ferociously attacking him and his colleagues with bricks.¹⁸⁵



Image 4-93: A protester holding a “Blood for blood” sign in Central on 8 November 2019
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

4.183 Following the death incident, the protest slogan evolved from “Hongkongers, resist” to “香港人，報仇” (Translation: Hongkongers, take revenge).¹⁸⁶ On the internet, there were calls for a general strike on 11 November 2019.

¹⁸⁴ HK01 (2019-11-08). [悼念周梓樂總覽] 油麻地警疑向天開一槍 警多區射催淚彈驅散. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/396192/悼念周梓樂-總覽-油麻地警疑向天開一槍-警多區射催淚彈驅散>

¹⁸⁵ Information provided by HKPF

¹⁸⁶ Ibid.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-94: “Hongkongers, take revenge” slogans on LIHKG
(Image source: LIHKG)

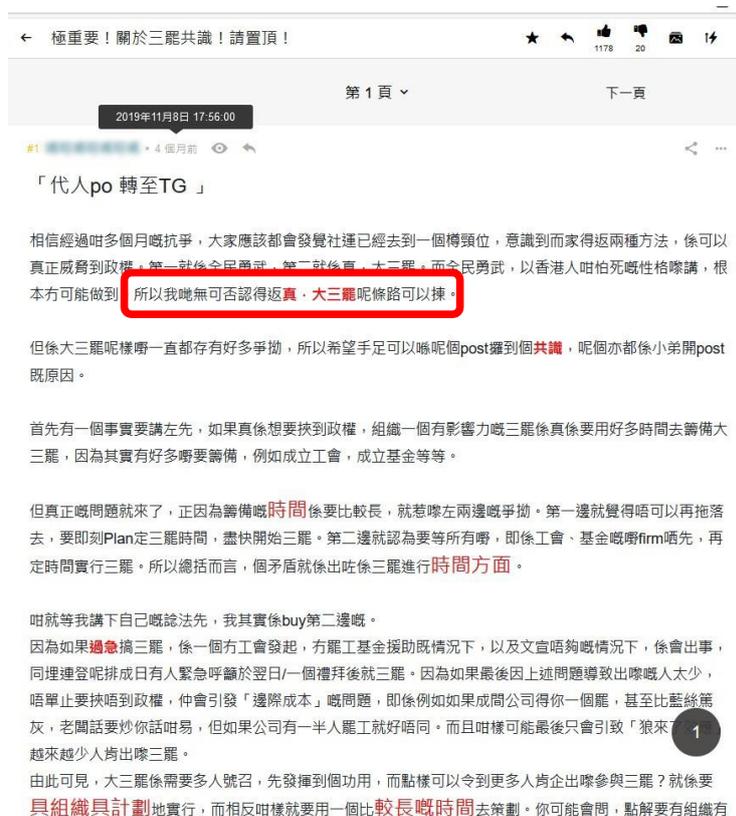


Image 4-95: Internet message on 8 November 2019 calling for General Strike
(Image source: LIHKG)

Sunday 10 November 2019 – Clashes at Shopping Malls

4.184 On 10 November 2019, protesters gathered in various major shopping malls in Hong Kong including New Town Plaza in Sha Tin, and Festival Walk in Kowloon Tong, responding to online calls to “go shopping”. Some violent protesters vandalised shops inside the malls, including those owned by Maxim’s Caterers Limited. Clashes ensued when the Police took enforcement action inside the malls using batons, OC Foam¹⁸⁷ and pepper balls.¹⁸⁸ There were also clashes in Tsuen Wan, Tuen Mun, Mong Kok, Tai Po, Sheung Shui, Tin Shui Wai, and Tseung Kwan O.¹⁸⁹

11-15 November 2019 – Territory-wide General Strikes

4.185 Violent protesters launched territory-wide general strikes between 11 and 15 November 2019, each day was given a title:¹⁹⁰

- “黎明行動” (Dawn Action) on 11 November 2019;
- “破曉行動” (Daybreak Action) on 12 November 2019;
- “晨曦行動” (Dagian Action) on 13 November 2019;
- “曙光行動” (Twilight Action) on 14 November 2019; and
- “旭日行動” (Sunrise Action) on 15 November 2019.



Image 4-96: Calls for “Dawn Action” on 11 November 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

¹⁸⁷ HKFP (2019-11-10). Hong Kong shopping mall protests descend into skirmishes with tear gas fired and multiple arrests made. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/11/10/hong-kong-shopping-mall-protests-descend-fresh-skirmishes-tear-gas-fired-multiple-arrests-made/>

¹⁸⁸ RTHK (2019-11-11). Midnight search at Festival Walk amid online rumours. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1491177-20191111.htm>

¹⁸⁹ HK01 (2019-11-10). [11.10 全日總覽] 又一城染血上水警舉槍 旺角警民衝突不息. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/396648/11-10全日總覽-又一城染血-上水警舉槍旺角警民衝突不息>

¹⁹⁰ LIHKG (2019-11-17). 有無可能聽朝罷三隧. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1730229/page/1>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-97: Calls for continued protests on 12 and 13 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-98: Calls for continued protests on 14 and 15 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.186 The violent protesters adopted urban guerrilla tactics, aiming at paralysing the traffic networks in the entire city by blocking major roads and disrupting MTR services. There were online posts appealing to “peaceful protesters” to participate in the disruptive activities by way of dropping objects on the roads and the railways, crossing roads in a snail pace and taking out Octopus cards slowly to create congestion at the ticket gates of MTR stations.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-99: Suggestions on how to participate in the protests
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-100: Suggestions on how to participate in the protests
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.187 There were also posts giving advice how to make iron nails and install them on roads so as to puncture tyres on moving vehicles.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-101: How to install iron rods on roads
(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-102: How to make iron nails
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.188 Early each morning from 11 to 15 November 2019, violent protesters set up barricades on the roads, one after another, to disrupt traffic in all 18 districts in Hong Kong. Tolo Highway running past CUHK, Waterloo Road, Junction Road and Cornwall Street in the vicinity of HKBU and City University of Hong Kong (CityU), Pokfulam Road by the side of The University of Hong Kong (HKU), Nathan Road and Kings Road were blocked intermittently between 11 and 16 November 2019. Train service between Fo Tan and Tai Po Market Station on the MTR East Rail Line was suspended from 13 to 16 November 2019 due to damage to rail facilities.¹⁹¹ Cross Harbour Tunnel by the side of PolyU was closed intermittently from 11 to 13 November 2019 and then for two straight weeks from 14 to 27 November 2019 due to damage to the toll booths, which had been set ablaze by violent protesters.¹⁹² The University Station next to CUHK was reopened only on 21 December

¹⁹¹ HKEJ (2019-11-17). 東鐵線火炭站至大埔墟站路段週一重開. Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2306157/東鐵線火炭站至大埔墟站路段週一重開>

¹⁹² RTHK (2019-11-26). Cross-Harbour Tunnel to reopen on Wednesday. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1494542-20191126.htm>

2019.¹⁹³ At MTR stations, violent protesters stood at train doors to keep them from closing so that the train could not leave the MTR station. As a result, rail service of the entire MTR line was disrupted. They also blocked MTR exits and ticket gates to prevent people from using the MTR stations. Owing to the traffic disruption, many could not go to work or took a very long time to go to their workplaces.¹⁹⁴ All classes at kindergartens, primary schools and secondary schools were suspended from 14 to 19 November 2019.¹⁹⁵

¹⁹³ RTHK (2019-12-21). 港鐵東鐵綫大學站重開 有中大學生稱方便很多. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1498916-20191221.htm>

¹⁹⁴ HK01 (2019-11-11). [11.11 三罷] 警員西灣河開真槍屯門示威者架駛巴士堵路. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/396823/11-11三罷-警員西灣河開真槍-屯門示威者架駛巴士堵路>

HK01 (2019-11-11). [11.11 港九總覽] 旺角示威者火燒太興中銀 再毀翠華茶餐廳. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/396895/11-11港九總覽-旺角示威者火燒太興中銀-再毀翠華茶餐廳>

HK01 (2019-11-11). [11.11 三罷-總覽] 屯門防暴射催淚彈截車檢汽油彈拘多人. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/396898/11-11三罷-總覽-屯門防暴射催淚彈-截車檢汽油彈拘多人>

HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.港九總覽] 催淚煙與汽油彈不息 衝突升級前景不明. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397178/11-12港九總覽-催淚煙與汽油彈-不息-衝突升級前景不明>

HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.新界總覽] 中大戰況激烈多人傷多區烽煙四起. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/397155/11-12新界總覽-中大戰況激烈多人傷-多區烽煙四起>

HK01 (2019-11-13). [11.13.港九全日總覽] 警與示威者旺角警署外對峙對戰至深夜. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397616/11-13港九全日總覽-警與示威者旺角警署外對峙-對戰至深夜>

HK01 (2019-11-13). [11.13.新界全日總覽] 示威者元朗破壞輕鐵軌 商店 防暴到場. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18%E5%8D%80%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397614/11-13新界全日總覽-示威者元朗破壞輕鐵軌-商店-防暴到場>

HK01 (2019-11-14). [11.14.港九全日總覽] 紅隧收費亭多次被焚 旺角對峙不斷. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/398006/11-14港九全日總覽-紅隧收費亭多次被焚-旺角對峙不斷>

HK01 (2019-11-14). [11.14.新界總覽] 警多區射催淚彈 嶺大兩外籍交換生被捕. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/398003/11-14新界總覽-警多區射催淚彈-嶺大兩外籍交換生被捕>

HK01 (2019-11-15). [11.1.港九總覽] 早上大學區堵路火燒路軌晚上旺角現火蘑菇雲. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/398474/11-15港九總覽-早上大學區堵路火燒路軌-晚上旺角現火蘑菇雲>

HK01 (2019-11-15). [11.15.新界總覽] 防暴上水施放催淚彈 中大疑儲汽油彈車爆炸. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18%E5%8D%80%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/398456/11-15新界總覽-防暴上水施放催淚彈-中大疑儲汽油彈車爆炸>

HK01 (2019-11-16). [11.16.港九總覽] 解放軍浸大外清磚 晚間理大催淚彈汽油彈橫飛. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/398936/11-16港九總覽-解放軍浸大外清磚-晚間理大催淚彈汽油彈橫飛>

¹⁹⁵ Ming Pao (2019-11-19). 網民再號召堵路阻明復課-教育局籲勿擾亂上學秩序 (17:34). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/%E6%B8%AF%E8%81%9E/article/20191119/s00001/1574140705191/網民再號召堵路阻明復課-教育局籲勿擾亂上學秩序>

4.189 In the morning of 11 November 2019, as a traffic police officer cleared objects from a road junction in Sai Wan Ho, several violent protesters confronted him. In the struggle that ensued, the traffic police officer fired three live rounds, one of which hit one of the violent protesters.¹⁹⁶ That injured violent protester was subsequently arrested. On the same day, in Kwai Fong, a police officer riding a police motorcycle charged into a crowd of protesters in a zig-zag manner. The officer was suspended from frontline duties and took leave instantly following the incident.¹⁹⁷



Image 4-103: Roadblocks were set up on Tuen Mun Road
(Image source: HK01)

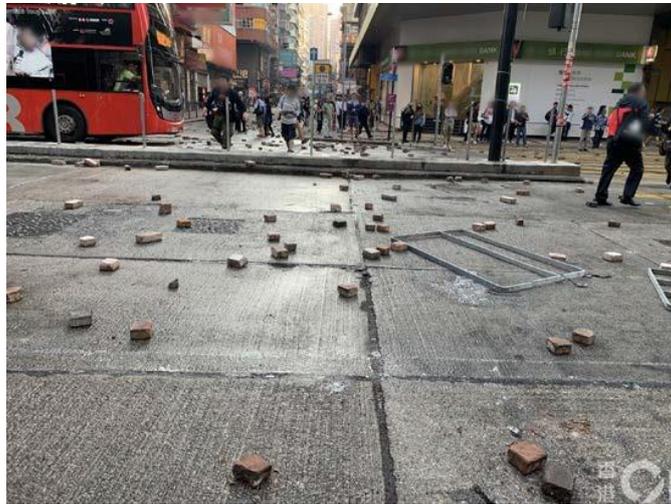


Image 4-104: Roadblocks were set up on Nathan Road
(Image source: HK01)

¹⁹⁶ SCMP (2019-11-12). Hong Kong protests: shot student remains in critical condition after surgery to remove right kidney, part of liver and bullets, as arguments raised over force used. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3037265/hong-kong-protests-shot-student-remains-critical>

¹⁹⁷ News.gov.hk (2019-11-11). Police probe motorbike incident. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/eng/2019/11/20191111/20191111_164223_362.html?type=ticker

HKFP (2019-11-11). Hong Kong police suspend motorcycle officer who drove into protesters. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/11/11/hong-kong-police-suspend-motorcycle-officer-drove-protesters/>



Image 4-105: Roadblocks were set up on Cheung Sha Wan Road
(Image source: HK01)

4.190 People affected by or objecting to the unruly behaviours of the protesters disputed with them and urging them not to block roads and train doors. At times, the disputes turned violent. On 11 November 2019, a violent protester poured gasoline on a man and set him on fire after he chastised a group of masked protesters vandalising Ma On Shan MTR Station. The man suffered second degree burns on 28% of his body.¹⁹⁸ On 13 November 2019, a 70-year old cleaning worker was hit on the head by a brick hurled from a group believed to be violent protesters in the midst of a confrontation between the violent protesters and a group of local residents. The man died on 14 November 2019.¹⁹⁹

4.191 While general strikes were taking place, some protesters began to occupy the campuses of HKU, CUHK, PolyU, CityU and HKBU, blocking the major roads in their vicinity. The occupation of CUHK on 12 and 13 November 2019 and PolyU on 17 and 18 November 2019 saw the most violent clashes between protesters and the Police. On the internet, netizens' opinion differed whether the protesters should hold fort at university campuses. Some championed geographically strategic locations of some of the campuses, some considered occupying universities to have symbolic significance, while others thought urban guerrilla tactics to be more effective.

¹⁹⁸ SCMP (2019-11-11). Hong Kong father of two 'burned alive' after chasing protesters at MTR station in grisly act of violence police classify as attempted murder. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3037243/hong-kong-father-two-burned-alive-after-chasing>

¹⁹⁹ SCMP (2019-11-15). Hong Kong protests: police treat death of 70-year-old cleaner as murder, saying he was struck by brick thrown with malice. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3037927/hong-kong-protests-police-treat-death-70-year-old-cleaner>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-106: Pokfulam Road outside HKU was blocked
(Image source: HK01)

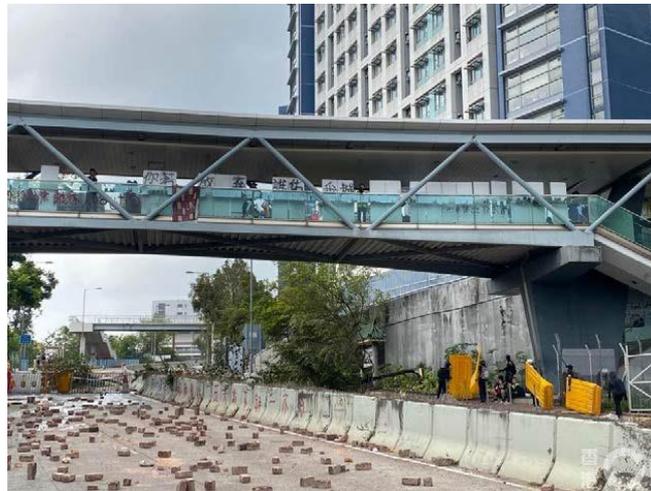


Image 4-107: Cornwall Street outside residential halls of CityU was blocked
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-108: Junction Road outside HKBU was blocked.
(Image source: HK01)



CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

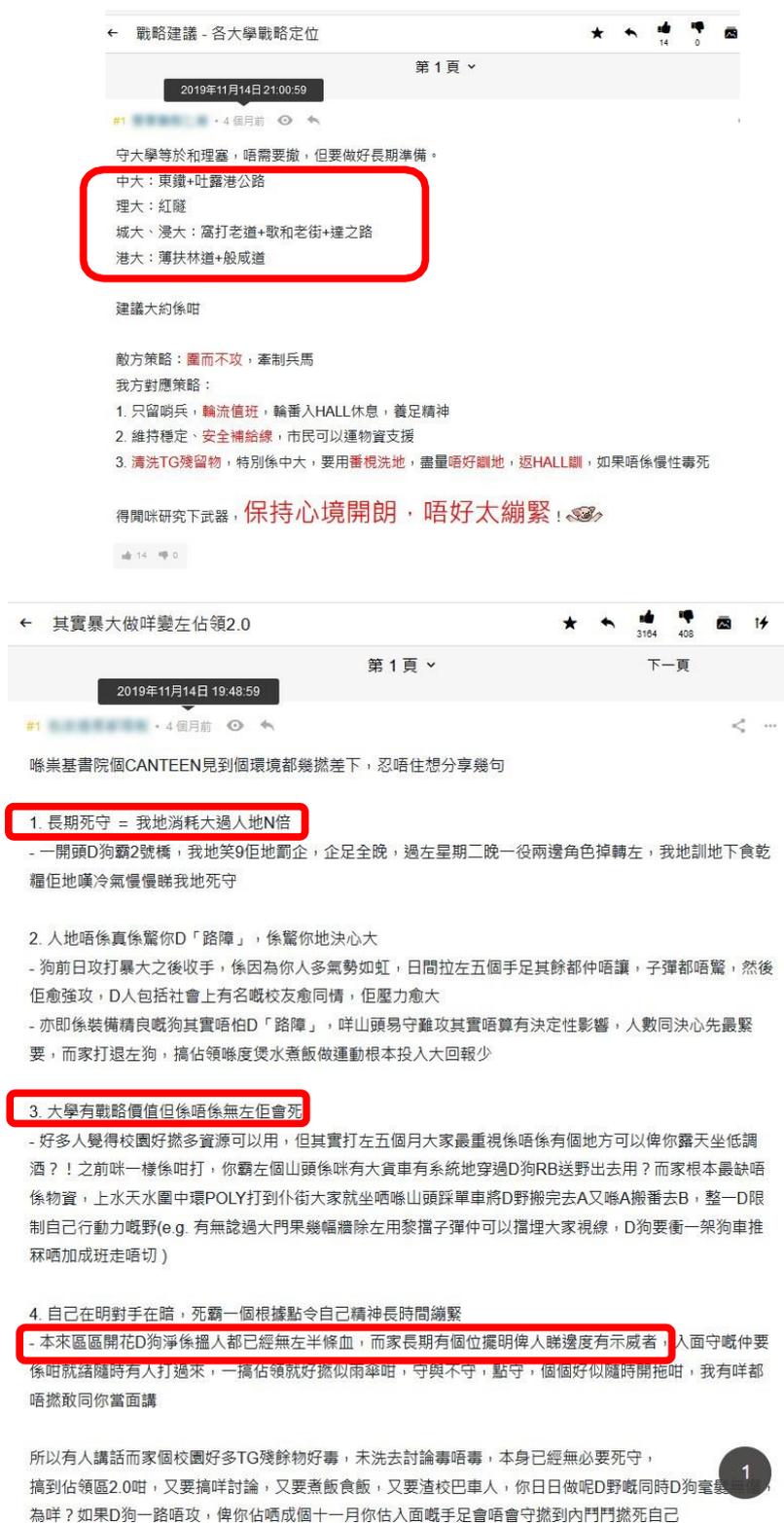


Image 4-109: Netizens discussed the occupation of university campuses
(Image source: LIHKG)

12 - 13 November 2019 – Violent Clashes at CUHK

4.192 Starting from 11 November 2019, violent protesters at CUHK blocked Tai Po Road outside CUHK and threw objects from Bridge No. 2, which spanned over Tolo Highway to the Science Park, and the East Rail Line railroad track, to block the two major traffic lines. The violent protesters also put objects on Bridge No. 2 to stop the Police from advancing into CUHK. They hurled bricks and petrol bombs at police officers when the latter attempted to clear the objects that blocked Tolo Highway and the East Rail Line. The Police fired tear gas and other less-lethal weapons in attempts to get into CUHK and to disperse the protesters. It was the first time the Police fired tear gas into university campuses.²⁰⁰

4.193 There was a long standoff at Bridge No. 2 interspersed with sporadic clashes. The atmosphere intensified in the evening after various failed attempts by university management to mediate between the protesters and the Police.²⁰¹



Image 4-110: Protester blocking Tai Po Road outside CUHK
(Image source: HK01)

²⁰⁰ SCMP (2019-11-11). Tear gas fired on campuses for first time as student protesters battle police at Chinese University, Polytechnic University and University of Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3037262/tear-gas-fired-campuses-first-time-student-protesters>

²⁰¹ HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.新界總覽] 中大戰況激烈多人傷多區烽煙四起. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/397155/11-12-新界總覽-中大戰況激烈多人傷-多區烽煙四起>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-111: Bricks, barricades, fire and tear gas were seen at CUHK
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-112: A protester hurled at petrol bomb at Police cordon line on Bridge No. 2
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-113: Clashes on Bridge No. 2
(Image source: HK01)

4.194 At 22:00, the Police deployed an SCMV, but the violent protesters threw petrol bombs to stop the SCMV from advancing. After a while, the Police retreated from the campus to the far end of Bridge No. 2 in order not to escalate the situation.²⁰²

4.195 The violent clashes at CUHK attracted widespread public attention. On the internet, there were calls for people to protect CUHK, provide supplies to the protesters there, and send cars to take protesters away. To divert Police attention and resources from CUHK, some internet messages asked people to create conflicts in other districts, particularly in Tai Po and Sha Tin, by blocking roads, vandalising shopping malls and public infrastructure, and attacking police stations. At 20:00 on 12 November 2019, violent protesters broke into Festival Walk in Kowloon Tong and caused massive damage to the shopping mall for six hours, shattering all the glass panels on the railings and main entrances and burning down a Christmas tree four-storey high. There were also violent clashes in many districts, including Causeway Bay, Central, Kowloon Tong, Mong Kok, Sai Wan Ho, Tai Po, Tin Shui Wai, Tseung Kwan O and Tuen Mun, throughout Hong Kong.²⁰³

²⁰² HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.新界總覽] 中大戰況激烈多人傷多區烽煙四起. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/397155/> 11-12-新界總覽-中大戰況激烈多人傷-多區烽煙四起

²⁰³ HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.港九總覽] 催淚煙與汽油彈不息 衝突升級前景不明. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397178/11-12-港九總覽-催淚煙與汽油彈-不息-衝突升級前景不明>

HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.新界總覽] 中大戰況激烈多人傷多區烽煙四起. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/397155/> 11-12-新界總覽-中大戰況激烈多人傷-多區烽煙四起

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

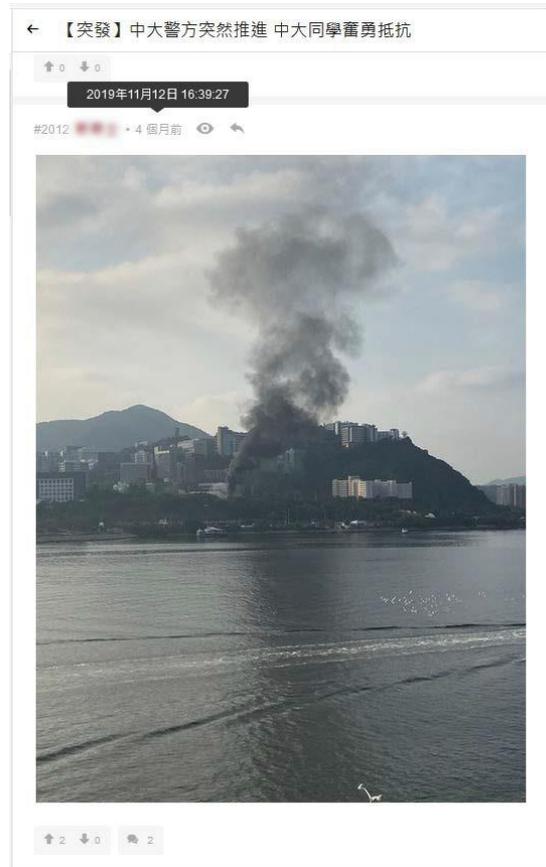


Image 4-114: Picture showing heavy smoke emitting from CUHK in a discussion thread stating that CUHK students valiantly resisting the Police
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-115: Calls for supplies relating to the petrol bombs
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-117: Calls for diverting Police attention
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.196 On the 13 and 14 November 2019, the violent protesters continued to occupy CUHK, especially Bridge No. 2, and set up barricades with bricks, large rubbish bins, tables and chairs at the major entrances of the university.²⁰⁴ At 03:00 on 15 November 2019, three masked protesters at CUHK held a press conference indicating their intention to reopen one lane in each direction of the Tolo Highway as a gesture of good faith. They demanded that the Government hold the 2019 Hong Kong District Council elections as scheduled on 24 November 2019, release all the people arrested in the protests and establish an Independent Commission of Inquiry within 24 hours.²⁰⁵ Nevertheless, CUHK Students' Union questioned the plan to open Tolo Highway although they respected the wishes of "the frontline protesters".²⁰⁶ Protesters gradually left CUHK campus in the evening of 15 November 2019. Tolo Highway was reopened at noon on 16 November 2019.

4.197 On 15 November 2019, the Vice-Chancellor of CUHK issued a statement suggesting that many of the masked protesters were not CUHK students. He said that the masked protesters had set fires in the campus, removed bricks from pavements, stole vehicles, broke into academic buildings and hostels, and damaged many university facilities. These people also had brought into CUHK materials and supplies from outside to assemble a large number of petrol bombs. Some CUHK laboratories had been broken into, and various hazardous and highly inflammable chemicals had been found missing. He regretted that the university had become a base for illegal activities that threatened public safety.²⁰⁷ According to a media report, more than 8 000 petrol bombs were found inside CUHK.²⁰⁸

²⁰⁴ Apple Daily (2019-11-15). 【中大保衛戰】設「入境處」防警臥底混入校園 抗爭者：一方有難 八方支持. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/20191115/7S4OKU47TCQTKPTSV364WDX7SY/>

²⁰⁵ HK01 (2019-11-15). 【11.15 中大】示威者重開部分吐露港公路 要求 24 小時內回應訴求. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/398465/11-15-中大-示威者重開部分吐露港公路-要求-24-小時內回應訴求>

²⁰⁶ RTHK (2019-11-15). 中大學生會：從未知悉及同意前線示者對區選行動訴求. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1492304-20191115.htm?archive_date=2019-11-15

²⁰⁷ CUHK (2019-11-15). CUHK Vice Chancellor and President Professor Rocky S. Tuan's Open Letter. Retrieved from https://www.cpr.cuhk.edu.hk/en/press_detail.php?id=3169&t=cuhk-vice-%20chancellor-and-president-professor-rocky-s-tuan-s-open-letter&s=

²⁰⁸ SCMP (2019-11-18). Dangerous chemicals missing from laboratories of Hong Kong's universities could threaten public safety, officials and experts warn after campus clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038300/dangerous-chemicals-missing-laboratories-hong-kongs>

SCMP (2019-11-19). More than 8,000 petrol bombs primed for Hong Kong streets 'found in weapons factory at Chinese University'. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038399/thousands-petrol-bombs-primed-hong-kong-streets-found>

4.198 The figures on the weapons used and the arrests made by the Police on 12 and 13 November 2019 are given in the following table.

Date	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
	Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
12 Nov	2 330	1 770	434	159	167
13 Nov	736	593	54	34	220

Table 4-5: The use of police weapons and the number of arrests in major clashes on 12 and 13 November 2019²⁰⁹

17 - 29 November 2019 – Violent Clashes outside PolyU and Aftermath

4.199 On 12 November 2019, the second day of the five-day General Strike, violent protesters dropped different objects from the footbridge above the toll booths of the Cross Harbour Tunnel to block the entrance of the tunnel. The Police used tear gas for dispersal.²¹⁰

4.200 On 13 November 2019, some violent protesters started to occupy PolyU. PolyU management urged all staff and students not to return to the university. That late evening, some violent protesters threw petrol bombs at some of toll booths of the tunnel to set them on fire. The tension at PolyU started building up from 13 November 2019 onwards with intermittent clashes between the violent protesters occupying PolyU and the Police during dispersal action, culminating in the violent clashes on 17 and 18 November 2019.²¹¹

4.201 As the situation at CUHK began to ease off, the violent protesters at PolyU set up barricades to block all accesses to PolyU in order to hold fort there. They put a large quantity of miscellaneous objects on the footbridges connecting to Hung Hom Station and Tsim Sha Tsui East, the flyover going to the Hong Kong Coliseum and the area surrounding PolyU to block access to the campus. At each of the barricades, they put up a wall of opened umbrellas to block the Police from viewing of their action behind the umbrellas and to shield themselves from projectiles fired by the Police and water discharged by SCMV. At the road junction of Chatham Road and Austin Road, later one of the major battlefields between the violent protesters and the Police, they scattered bricks, rocks and other objects over a large area to

²⁰⁹ RTHK VNEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3>

²¹⁰ HK01 (2019-11-12). [11.12.港九總覽] 催淚煙與汽油彈不息 衝突升級前景不明. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397178/11-12-港九總覽-催淚煙與汽油彈-不息-衝突升級前景不明>

²¹¹ HK01 (2019-11-13). [11.13.港九全日總覽] 警與示威者旺角警署外對峙對戰至深夜. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/397616/11-13-港九全日總覽-警與示威者旺角警署外對峙-對戰至深夜>

HK01 (2019-11-14). [11.14.理大] 防暴警今早校園放催淚彈 警:箭從理大射出. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/398013/11-14-理大-防暴警今早校園放催淚彈-警-箭從理大射出>

HK01 (2019-11-16). [11.16 理大] 校外晚上催淚彈汽油彈橫飛 校方指化學品被盜報警. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399141/11-16-理大-校外晚上催淚彈汽油彈橫飛-校方指化學品被盜報警>

obstruct police vehicles and police officers from approaching PolyU from that direction. They threw bricks at innocent citizens who tried to remove the objects from the junction to the pavement. Violent protesters equipped with bows and arrows, wooden poles, sling shots and petrol bombs stood guard at various vantage points on the edge of PolyU, ready to tackle the Police. Some violent protesters practised hurling petrol bombs at the swimming pool of the university while others produced petrol bombs inside the campus. Yet others took chemicals from the laboratories to make weapons.²¹²

4.202 On 17 and 18 November 2019, the Police attempted to get into PolyU via the junction of Chatham Road South and Austin Road and the flyover connecting Hong Kong Coliseum but were met with brutal resistance from the violent protesters who threw petrol bombs, bricks and other objects at the advancing police officers.²¹³ The violent protesters also used large sling shots and catapults to launch petrol bombs and hard objects at police officers. The Police fired multiple rounds of tear gas and less-lethal weapons and deployed armoured vehicles and SCMV's to discharge water at the violent protesters behind the barricades and the wall of opened umbrellas. Innumerable petrol bombs and bricks were hurled by the violent protesters and numerous rounds of tear gas and other projectile rounds were fired by the Police. A police armoured vehicle was hit by petrol bombs and caught fire when it tried to advance on the flyover from the direction of Hong Kong Coliseum. So did an SCMV and another armoured vehicle at the junction of Chatham Road South. Fires were everywhere. The whole place was literally a horrifying battlefield. The scenes were disturbing and saddening. A police officer responsible for media liaison work was shot outside PolyU in his left calf by an arrow which almost went right through the muscle with the tip of the arrow bulging out on the other end under the skin.²¹⁴

²¹² HK01 (2019-11-14). [11.14.理大] 防暴警今早校園放催淚彈 警:箭從理大射出. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/398013/11-14-理大-防暴警今早校園放催淚彈-警-箭從理大射出>

Oriental Daily (2019-11-15). 修例風波：理工泳池演練靶場 黑衣人樂玩掙汽油彈. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20191115/bkn-20191115093321790-1115_00822_001.html?refer=hn2

HK01 (2019-11-16). [11.16 理大] 校外晚上催淚彈汽油彈橫飛 校方指化學品被盜報警. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399141/11-16理大-校外晚上催淚彈汽油彈橫飛-校方指化學品被盜報警>

HK01 (2019-11-17). [11.17.理大] 實驗室被擅闖搜掠 記者直擊一地化學品. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/399336/11-17-理大實驗室被擅闖搜掠-記者直擊一地化學品>

²¹³ China Daily DOCS (2020-02-25). Battleground PolyU. Retrieved from https://www.youtube.com/watch?time_continue=520&v=Nl7fA8pL0l8&feature=emb_title

²¹⁴ SCMP (2019-11-17). As it happened: live round fired near army barracks in Hong Kong as police warned of mass arrests of anti-government radicals. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038096/hong-kong-officer-shot-arrow-police-deploy-water-cannons>

SCMP (2019-11-18). Polytechnic University war zone: how Hong Kong radicals got boxed in by police after two days of ferocious clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3038308/polytechnic-university-war-zone-how-hong-kong-radicals>

RTHK (2019-11-17). Police officer shot in leg with arrow. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1492745-20191117.htm>

HK01 (2019-11-17). [11.17.港九總覽] 理大火後一片狼藉 旺角大量防暴巡邏. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399155/11-17港九總覽-理大火後一片狼藉-旺角大量防暴巡邏>

4.203 Similar to the clashes at CUHK, protesters began to adopt urban guerrilla tactics with a view to diverting police attention from PolyU and stretching police resources in order to rescue the protesters in PolyU. On 17 and 18 November 2019, violent clashes broke out in areas near PolyU, including Hung Hom, Tsim Sha Tsui, Jordan, Yau Ma Tei, and Mong Kok.²¹⁵ The Police fired four live rounds over these two nights. At about 21:49 on 17 November 2019, a private vehicle was driven towards a uniformed officer whilst he was forming a police cordon line at Austin Road, Tsim Sha Tsui. In order to protect that officer, another officer fired one shot at the driver. The shot hit the windscreen of the vehicle but missed the driver. The vehicle did not stop. In the small hours of 18 November 2019 on Nathan Road in Jordan, whilst a group of officers were escorting a female arrested person to an ambulance, some violent protesters ferociously threw hard objects at them. An officer fired two warning shots to protect themselves. As the protesters further attacked officers with petrol bombs, the officer fired a third round at the protesters. The three live rounds did not hit any protester.²¹⁶

HK01 (2019-11-18). [11.18.港九全日總覽] 張達明曾鈺成陪理大學生離開 局勢稍緩. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399364/> 11-18 港九全日總覽-張達明-曾鈺成陪理大學生離開-局勢稍緩

²¹⁵ HK01 (2019-11-17). [11.17.港九總覽] 理大火後一片狼藉 旺角大量防暴巡邏. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399155/> 11-17 港九總覽-理大火後一片狼藉-旺角大量防暴巡邏

HK01 (2019-11-18). [11.18.港九全日總覽] 張達明曾鈺成陪理大學生離開 局勢稍緩. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399364/> 11-18 港九全日總覽-張達明-曾鈺成陪理大學生離開-局勢稍緩

²¹⁶ Information provided by HKPF.

4.204 After multiple unsuccessful attempts to disperse the violent protesters, the Police decided to adopt a strategy of containment, thus avoiding casualties from direct confrontation. It was estimated that a few hundred people were inside PolyU and the Police asked them to leave via Block Y of Lee Shau Kee Building. From that day onwards until 28 November 2019, many protesters did leave at different times. The Police made arrest as they came out.²¹⁷ Some of those arrested included three who claimed themselves to be student reporters and 12 who said they were medical professionals but none could provide proof of their identity.²¹⁸ Thereafter, a photo showing a group wearing reflective vests identifying themselves as doctors, nurses and first aiders sitting on the ground with their hands zip-tied behind their backs was widely circulated. Some medical professionals expressed concern over police's handling of the group.²¹⁹ Some of the protesters tried to escape from PolyU by different means. Some dangerously zip-lined down a footbridge whereas some others crawled through the sewage pipes.²²⁰ The standoff lasted until 28 November 2019 when the Police decided to search PolyU those still remaining inside and to clear the campus of dangerous materials, such as petrol bombs and the materials for such bombs, other offensive weapons and hazardous chemicals taken from the PolyU laboratories. The Police and FSD found 3 989 petrol bombs, 1 339 explosive items, 601 bottles of corrosive liquid, and 573 items of offensive weapons including 12 bows, 200 arrows and an air rifle.²²¹

²¹⁷ SCMP (2019-11-18). Polytechnic University war zone: how Hong Kong radicals got boxed in by police after two days of ferocious clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3038308/polytechnic-university-war-zone-how-hong-kong-radicals>

HK01 (2019-11-18). [11.18.港九全日總覽] 張達明曾鈺成陪理大學生離開 局勢稍緩. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399364/11-18港九全日總覽-張達明-曾鈺成陪理大學生離開-局勢稍緩>

HK01 (2019-11-19). [11.1.全日總覽] 張翔離開理大無交代詳情 夏志誠指留守者疲累. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/399778/11-19全日總覽-張翔離開理大無交代詳情-夏志誠指留守者疲累>

HK01 (2019-11-20). [11.20.全日總覽] 理大全部義務急救員撤離 料有約百示威者留低. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/400262/11-20全日總覽-理大全部義務急救員撤離-料有約百示威者留低>

HK01 (2019-11-21). [11.21.全日總覽] 理大再有十多人撤離 有示威者手拖手步出校園. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/%E7%A4%BE%E6%9C%83%E6%96%B0%E8%81%9E/400745/11-21全日總覽-理大再有十多人撤離-有示威者手拖手步出校園>

²¹⁸ Stand News (2019-11-18). 理大外圍捕 警:12名自稱救護員被捕 未能證醫護資格 另3名自稱記者涉暴動被捕. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/理大外圍捕-警-12名自稱救護員被捕-未能證醫護資格-另-3名自稱記者涉暴動被捕/>

²¹⁹ HKFP (2019-11-23). 'Unheard of in civilised countries': Top medical journal blasts Hong Kong police for treatment of medics at Polytechnic University. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/11/23/unheard-civilised-countries-top-medical-journal-blasts-hong-kong-police-treatment-medics-polytechnic-university/>

²²⁰ HK01 (2019-11-19). [理大逃走記] 直擊示威者白天潛渠遁不遂 黑夜遊繩墮地負傷逃. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/%E7%AA%81%E7%99%BC/399505/理大逃走記-直擊示威者白天潛渠遁不遂-黑夜遊繩墮地負傷逃#media_id=3572865

²²¹ HKSAR Government (2019-11-29). Police search operation finished and cordon lifted at PolyU. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201911/29/P2019112900430.htm>

SCMP (2019-11-28). Hong Kong Police seize more than 3,800 petrol bombs of Polytechnic University, saying campus siege will end on Friday. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3039681/hong-kong-police-team-enters-polytechnic-university-riot>



Image 4-118: A group of people wearing reflective vests identifying themselves as doctors, nurses and first aiders arrested by the Police
(Image source: Telegram)

4.205 On 29 November 2019, the Police lifted the cordon around PolyU. Upon inspection, many facilities of the university were seriously damaged and graffiti was everywhere. The gymnasium was full of yoga mats, clothes and shoes. Rotten food was found inside the canteen emitting a foul odour. The entrances were scarred with signs of violent clashes.²²²

4.206 The figures on the weapons used and the arrests made by the Police on 17 and 18 November 2019 are given in the following table:

Date	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
	Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
17 Nov	1 530	1 344	172	279	142
18 Nov	3 293	3 188	667	499	1 071

Table 4-6: The use of police weapons and the number of arrests in major clashes on 17 and 18 November 2019²²³

4.207 Between 19 and 28 November 2019, the Police further arrested 312 people.

24 November 2019 - District Council Election

4.208 Despite speculations that the District Council Election would be postponed, the election was held peacefully on 24 November 2019. The pan-democratic camp won 85% of the contested seats. The intensity of the protests generally dropped following the election.

²²² HKFP (2019-11-26). HKFP Lens: Hong Kong's devastated Poly U campus becomes a safety hazard after protest battle lockdown. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/11/26/hkfp-lens-hong-kongs-devastated-poly-u-campus-becomes-safety-hazard-week-brutal-protest-battles/>

²²³ RTHK VNEWS (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年彈藥使用詳細列表. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/photos/a.7235297755079/3043489319092437/?type=3>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-119: A protesters hurled a petrol bomb outside PolyU
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 4-120: SCMV deployed outside PolyU
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 4-121: A police officer shot in the calf by an arrow
(Image source: HK01)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-122: A protestor hurled a petrol bomb on Cheung Wan Road Bridge
(Image source: HK01)

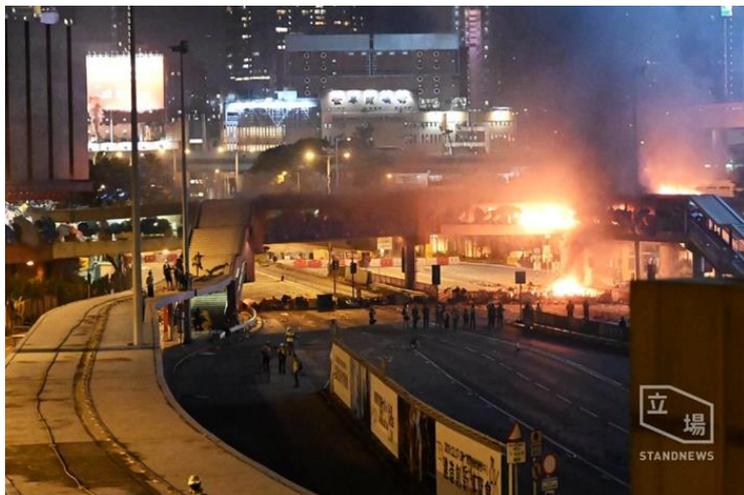


Image 4-123: Protesters clashed with the Police over the Cross Harbour Tunnel Toll Plaza
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

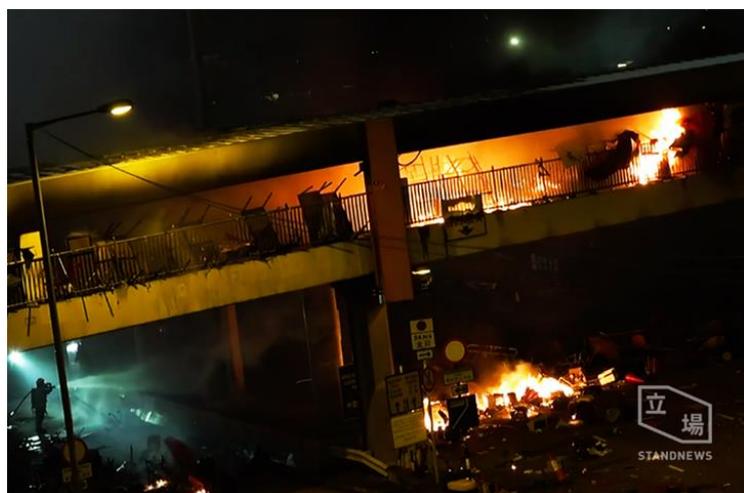


Image 4-124: Footbridge over the Cross Harbour Tunnel Toll Plaza set on fire
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 4-125: Fire broke out at an entrance to PolyU
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-126: Fire, road blocks and SCMV outside PolyU
(Image source: HK01)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-127: Calls for “Protect PolyU” on 17 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-128: Calls for “Saving PolyU” on 18 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

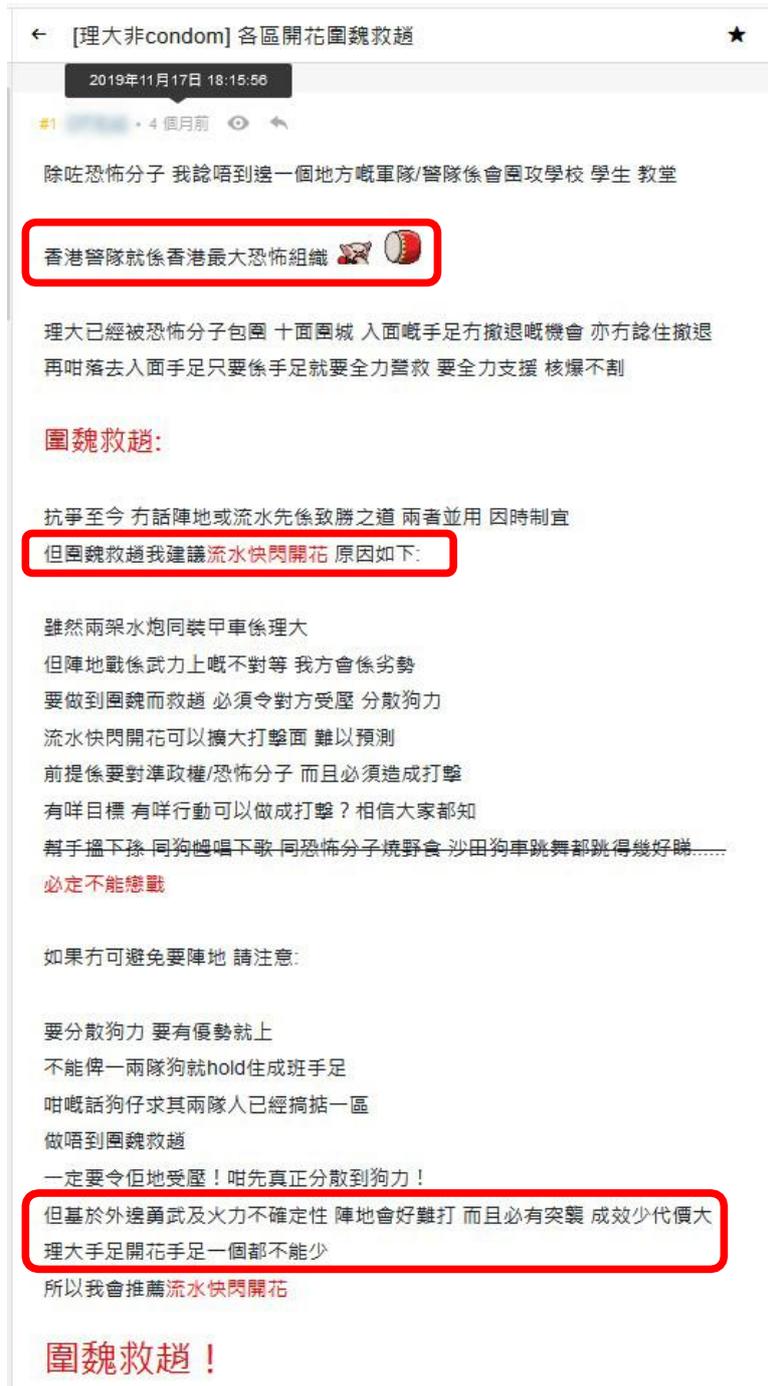


Image 4-129: The Police was described “the largest terrorist organisation in Hong Kong” in a post calling for adopting urban guerrilla tactics on 17 November 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-130: Calls for adopting urban guerrilla tactics on 17 November 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 4-131: Protesters attempted to leave PolyU by zip-lining
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-132: Protesters attempted to leave PolyU through sewage system
(Image source: HK01)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Protests in December 2019:

December 2019						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
1 Procession in Tsim Sha Tsui (380 000 participants) * A man being hit at the head with drain cover while clearing barricades	2	3	4	5	6	7
8 CHRF Procession (800 000 participants)* Arson at Courts	9 Bomb plot foiled	10	11	12	13	14 Bomb plot foiled
15 Protests in shopping malls	16	17	18	19	20	21
22	23	24 Protests in Shopping malls Arson at HSBC branch and Mong Kok Station	25 Protests in Shopping malls	26 Protests in shopping malls	27	28
29	30	31 4 month anniversary of the Prince Edward station Incident				

* Figures according to organiser

Highlights of December 2019

- Protesters returned to the streets after a peaceful week on 1 December 2019. Shops were vandalised and petrol bombs were thrown at Cross Harbour Tunnel. A man, while voluntarily clearing barricades alone in Mong Kok, was attacked by a masked man with drain cover in early hours of 1 December. He suffered serious head injury as a result.
- First approved procession organised by CHRF since August 2019. Arson and vandalism resurfaced. It was the first time the Judiciary became a target in the protests.
- Two bomb plots foiled in a week.
- Violence broke out in shopping malls in various districts. Protesters disrupted the business of shops deemed to hold opposite views.
- On three consecutive days during the Christmas period, violence again broke out in shopping malls in various districts. The highest intensity of violence was witnessed on Christmas Eve, with protesters setting fire inside a branch of the Hongkong and

Shanghai Banking Corporation (HSBC) in Mong Kok and also the Mong Kok Station.

- **Protesters commemorated the Prince Edward Station Incident by putting flowers outside Prince Edward Station.**

4.209 In December 2019, the level of violence of the protesters and the use of force by the Police fell sharply from the peak in November 2019. The arrest of hundreds of violent protesters in November 2019 during the siege of PolyU and the landslide victory of the pro-democracy camp in the District Council Election could be the reasons for the decline in violence. While public meetings and processions were still held in December 2019, episodes of “Lunch with You” and “shopping with you” gain prevalence this month. Shopping malls have become regular protest venues. In December 2019, the Police used a total of 166 rounds of tear gas, 66 rubber rounds, 27 super sock rounds, and ten react rounds, and arrested 698 persons.²²⁴ 49 officers were injured compared to 119 and 101 in the previous months.



Image 4-133: Poster on Facebook account 香港人抗爭日程表 promoting “Lunch with You” on various days in December 2019 at different locations
(Image source: Facebook)

²²⁴ Information provided by HKPF.

Sunday 1 December 2019 - Clashes in Whampoa after Procession in Tsim Sha Tsui

4.210 1 December 2019 was the first Sunday after the landslide victory of the pan-democratic camp in the District Council Election. After a week of relative calm, three approved public meetings and processions were held on 1 December 2019.²²⁵ The turnouts for the two events in Central were relatively small, while the procession started in Tsim Sha Tsui entitled “毋忘初心大遊行” (Translation: Forget not our Objective) attracted around 380 000 participants, according to the organiser.²²⁶ The Police estimated 16 000 at the peak. The procession was apparently intended to remind people the fight was not yet over despite a landslide victory in the District Council Election.

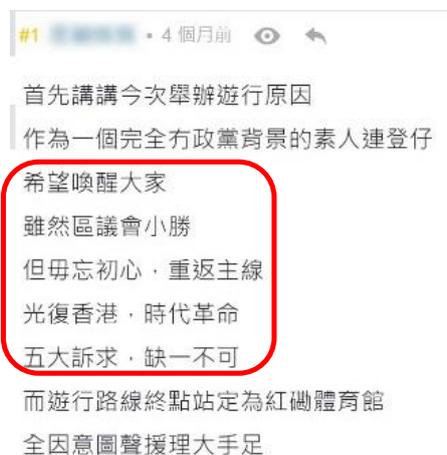


Image 4-134: Organiser explaining the reasons behind organising the 1 December March on LIHKG
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.211 The procession in Tsim Sha Tsui started peacefully with tens of thousands of people gathering at the clock tower to march to the Hong Kong Coliseum in Hung Hom chanting "Five demands, not one less" and other slogans. However, an hour later, a large number of protesters deviated from the designated route. A group of protesters set off smoke bombs which prompted the Police to fire tear gas into the densely packed assembly of participants. Some protesters threw objects at police officers in return. The procession later proceeded to Hung Hom Bypass where some protesters dropped bricks and glass bottles on the officers under the bridge. As repeated warnings were ignored, the Police proceeded to use OC Foam, batons, tear gas, rubber rounds, super socks rounds and pepper balls to disperse them.²²⁷

²²⁵ Ming Pao (2020-12-02). 抗爭未靜 區選後首遊行再現衝突 催淚彈射尖沙嘴遊行隊伍 示威者黃埔砸舖擲燃彈. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%e8%a6%81%e8%81%9e/article/20191202/s00001/1575224387490/抗爭未靜-區選後首遊行再現衝突-催淚彈射尖沙嘴遊行隊伍-示威者黃埔砸舖擲燃彈>

²²⁶ RTHK (2020-12-01). 毋忘初心大遊行發起人稱有 38 萬人 警方指高峰萬多人. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1495445-20191201.htm>

²²⁷ Information provided by HKPF.

4.212 In the evening, clashes erupted between violent protesters and the Police in Whampoa next to the designated destination of the procession. Apart from smashing shops which were deemed by the protesters to be holding opposing political view, traffic lights were also vandalised.²²⁸ Fire were set at the entrance of Whampao Station. Protesters built barricades to block Hung Hom Road and Tak Man Street.²²⁹ Petrol bombs were thrown at the Cross Harbour Tunnel. The Police responded by firing tear gas. After midnight, violent protesters set up a make-shift roadblock in Mong Kok and set it on fire. Violent protesters reverted to familiar tactics, not seen since the District Council Election.

4.213 In the early hours of 1 December 2019, a masked man attacked a man in Mong Kok with a gutter grille. The man, who suffered serious head injuries, had been removing barricades at that time.²³⁰

Sunday 8 December 2019 - Approved Procession Organised by CHRF

4.214 A public procession from Victoria Park in Causeway Bay to Chater Road in Central entitled “World Day of Human Rights Rally 2019” was staged by CHRF with LoNO. The first Police approved CHRF march since August 2019, it drew around 800 000 people²³¹ to the street on 8 December 2019, one day short of when Hong Kong raised the spectre of unrest on 9 June 2019. Police figured that the turnout peaked at 183 000. On its Facebook, CHRF posted promotional materials of the event suggesting that the march was intended to commemorate what happened in the past six months, e.g. the death of the HKUST student, the clashes at PolyU, the Yuen Long Incident and the Prince Edward Station Incident.

²²⁸ SCMP (2019-12-01). Masked protesters attack and trash shops in Hong Kong’s Whampoa district after stand-off with police following end of march. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3040101/thousands-black-clad-protesters-return-hong-kong-streets>

²²⁹ RTHK (2019-12-01). Tear gas in Whampoa as protesters smash up shops. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1495442-20191201.htm?archive_date=2019-12-01

²³⁰ SCMP (2019-12-01). Hong Kong man hit over head with drain cover while clearing protesters’ barricades in Mong Kok. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3040106/hong-kong-man-hit-over-head-drain-cover-while-clearing>

²³¹ SCMP (2019-12-08). As it happened: ‘about 800,000’ join Hong Kong protest on eve of six-month anniversary of anti-government unrest. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038319/thousands-show-hong-kong-protest-organised-civil-human>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-135: Poster on CHRF Facebook before (left) and after (right) the procession on 8 December 2019

(Image source: Facebook)

4.215 The morning of 8 December 2019 saw the first time the Police seized a semi-automatic pistol from a flat in North Point, suspected to be intended for creating chaos during the procession to be held in the afternoon.²³² Besides the gun, daggers, knives and five ammunition magazines (three of them loaded) and 105 bullets were also seized. 11 people were arrested.

²³² SCMP (2019-12-08). Hong Kong police seize weapons including handgun ahead of mass protest. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3041132/hong-kong-police-seize-weapons-including-handgun-ahead>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-136: More than one hundred participants of the march on 8 December 2019 wore over-sized masks of Pepe the frog and LIHKG pig, bringing the protest internet memes to life
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

4.216 The procession on 8 December 2019 starting from Causeway Bay was largely peaceful.²³³ Before the march, protesters were standing off with the Police on Percival Street, when some people reportedly challenged police officers with insults, demanding that the crowd be allowed to pass. The head of the march left Victoria Park at 15:15, with a giant banner which read “Justice against police brutality, defend our rights”. Participants were also seen waving British flags. Tension started to build up at around 16:30 in Central, where some violent protesters had set up barricades at Des Voeux Road Central, engaging in a standoff with the Police that continued into the evening. An SCMV and an armoured vehicle arrived at the scene on standby. Causeway Bay streets were still swamped by people waiting to start off even after the head of the march had reached the designated destination at about 16:45.²³⁴

²³³ SCMP (2019-12-08). After half a year of anti-government unrest, ‘800,000 marchers’ take to Hong Kong streets. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3041172/after-half-year-anti-government-unrest-800000-marchers-take>

²³⁴ Ibid.

4.217 At night, some violent protesters vandalised shops deemed to be pro-Government, and sprayed slogans outside the Bank of China Tower in Central.²³⁵ Others spray-painted the exterior walls of the High Court, hurled petrol bombs at the entrance of the High Court and Court of Final Appeal. It was the first time the Judiciary became a target in the protests since June 2019.



Image 4-137: Fire was set at this entrance of the Court of Final Appeal
(Image source: HK01)

4.218 By 20:00, most of the protesters had left and the traffic returned to normal.²³⁶ The large turnout on 8 December 2019 suggested that the POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill had not lost momentum, even after six months.

²³⁵ SCMP (2019-12-08). As it happened: ‘about 800,000’ join Hong Kong protest on eve of six-month anniversary of anti-government unrest. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038319/thousands-show-hong-kong-protest-organised-civil-human>

²³⁶ SCMP (2019-12-08). As it happened: ‘about 800,000’ join Hong Kong protest on eve of six-month anniversary of anti-government unrest. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3038319/thousands-show-hong-kong-protest-organised-civil-human>



Image 4-138: Bank of China Tower targeted with graffiti
(Image source: Now TV)

Saturday 14 December 2019 – The Police Foiled a Bomb Plot in Tuen Mun

4.219 The Police had foiled a second bomb plot in a week and three were arrested in Tuen Mun allegedly testing explosive devices and chemicals. The Police view was that the plan could have been to detonate explosives at a protest rally.²³⁷ Protective gear, shields, bulletproof vests and gas masks were also taken at the scene.²³⁸ Earlier in the week, on 9 December 2019, two home-made devices containing ten kilograms of high explosives were found at Wah Yan College, Hong Kong.²³⁹

Sunday 15 December 2019 – “Shopping with You”

4.220 With the Christmas season around the corner, there were posts from 11 December 2019 appealing to netizens to participate in “Shopping with you”, a mode of ‘soft’ protest at shopping arcades. On 15 December 2019, protesters assembled in various shopping malls for “Shopping with you”.

²³⁷ RTHK (2019-12-14). Three men arrested for allegedly testing explosives. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1497681-20191214.htm?archive_date=2019-12-14

²³⁸ SCMP (2019-12-14). Hong Kong police foil second bomb plot in under a week and arrest three men allegedly testing explosive devices and chemicals. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3042123/hong-kong-police-foil-second-bomb-plot-under-week-and>

²³⁹ SCMP (2019-12-09). Hong Kong police defuse two home-made bombs containing 10kg of explosives found on school grounds. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3041331/bomb-disposal-officers-deployed-after-two-suspected>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

#1 [redacted] · 3 個月前

#15Dec #全港 #和你Shop #Christmas限定 #開花
香城Online之和你Christmas Shop
日期：12月15日 (日)
時間：14:00-22:00
地點：當日12:00公佈
Link: [redacted]



Image 4-139: LIHKG post on 11 December 2019 promoting “Shopping with you” on 15 December 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

#1 [redacted] · 3 個月前

#15Dec #全港 #和你Shop #開花
和你Christmas Shop
日期：12月15日 (日)

12:00-14:00 和你Lunch幫襯黃店 facebook ig 打咗

14:00-16:00 和你Shop Part 1
-德福
-新都會
-新城市
-popcorn
-太古城
-Times Square

16:00 將會公開隱藏任務!

#目標商場關門大吉
#DressCodeBlack
#請準備文宣四寶及雨傘
#唔洗用劍用Suck就得喇
Link: <https://t.me/>[redacted]

Image 4-140: LIHKG post with details of “Shopping with you” on 15 December 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

4.221 Protesters staged citywide protests in seven shopping malls on 15 December 2019.²⁴⁰ The protest in New Town Plaza in Sha Tin turned violent when black-clad protesters smashed the glass panels of the atrium, spray-painted slogans on the floor and confronted people with apparently different opinions. Early in the afternoon, a woman was spray-painted in the face after trying to stop protesters from spraying graffiti at New Town Plaza.²⁴¹ Later in the afternoon, masked protesters stormed into restaurants operated by the Maxim's Caterers Limited. They sprayed paint on the walls and flipped over tables. Customers were forced to leave as the restaurants were vandalised and closed. The Police then arrived and arrested at least five people at the scene. At around 18:30, a crowd of people surrounded a middle-aged woman whom they accused of taking close-up photos of protesters. They ended up repeatedly smashing her phone on the floor.²⁴² The Police later entered the shopping mall to stop protesters from blocking the entrances.²⁴³ Batons and pepper spray were used, while protesters threw objects at the Police.

4.222 Similar scenes took place at Telford Plaza in Kowloon Bay and Metroplaza in Kwai Fong, where protesters disrupted the operation of restaurants.²⁴⁴ There were also protests in Times Square in Causeway Bay, PopCorn in Tseung Kwan O, Cityplaza in Tai Koo Shing and Harbour City in Tsim Sha Tsui. Most shops closed early amid the chaos.

²⁴⁰ SCMP (2019-12-15). Hong Kong 'Christmas shopping' protests in several malls across city lead to vandalism of outlets and clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3042169/hong-kong-protests-restaurants-spray-painted-and-diners>

²⁴¹ RTHK (2019-12-15). Protests halt Christmas shopping at Sha Tin mall. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1497765-20191215.htm?archive_date=2019-12-15

²⁴² RTHK (2019-12-15). Protests halt Christmas shopping at Sha Tin mall. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1497765-20191215.htm?archive_date=2019-12-15

²⁴³ SCMP (2019-12-15). Hong Kong 'Christmas shopping' protests in several malls across city lead to vandalism of outlets and clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3042169/hong-kong-protests-restaurants-spray-painted-and-diners>

²⁴⁴ SCMP (2019-12-15). Hong Kong 'Christmas shopping' protests in several malls across city lead to vandalism of outlets and clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3042169/hong-kong-protests-restaurants-spray-painted-and-diners>



Image 4-141: Violent protesters vandalised a restaurant in New Town Plaza on 15 December 2019
(Image source: HK01)

4.223 Later that night, large crowds lined up outside Pacific Place in Admiralty to commemorate the man who fell to his death six months ago on 15 June 2019.²⁴⁵



Image 4-142: People gathered outside Pacific Place on 15 December 2019
(Image source: HK01)

²⁴⁵ SCMP (2019-12-15). Hong Kong 'Christmas shopping' protests in several malls across city lead to vandalism of outlets and clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3042169/hong-kong-protests-restaurants-spray-painted-and-diners>

Tuesday 24 December 2019 – “Shopping with You” on Christmas Eve

4.224 On Christmas Eve, protesters gathered in various major shopping malls in different districts going on a "Shopping with You" protest. They visited restaurants, shops and banks deemed to be pro-Government or not supporting their actions.²⁴⁶ Their tactics ranged from vandalism to causing nuisance and intimidating customers. Unrest spread to the districts. In response to the actions of the protesters, the Police fired tear gas, rubber rounds and pepper spray in multiple locations on Christmas Eve. Netizens have called for protests over Christmas, targeting shopping malls.



Image 4-143: Poster urging people to take part in the protest in shopping malls on 24 December 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.225 In Tsim Sha Tsui, protesters gathered outside Peninsular Hotel to disrupt traffic and, threw objects onto the road and at police officers at around 21:00.²⁴⁷ The Police fired several

²⁴⁶ SCMP (2019-12-24). Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui MTR stations close as Hong Kong marks Christmas Eve with return to tear gas on streets and protest chaos in malls. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043449/hong-kong-marks-christmas-eve-return-mall-chaos-protesters>

²⁴⁷ SCMP (2019-12-24). Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui MTR stations close as Hong Kong marks Christmas Eve with return to tear gas on streets and protest chaos in malls. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043449/hong-kong-marks-christmas-eve-return-mall-chaos-protesters>

rounds of tear gas in response. An SCMV later was deployed to disperse the crowds. Petrol bombs were also thrown at Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station.²⁴⁸ At Harbour City, protesters attacked people they suspected to be undercover officers and threw objects at officers entering the mall.²⁴⁹ In return, the officers used baton to stop the protesters and yelled at them to stop throwing objects.

4.226 In Mong Kok, some violent protesters started a fire at one of the entrances of Mong Kok Station.²⁵⁰ Both Mong Kok and Tsim Sha Tsui Stations were closed before 23:00. Protesters threw objects at police officers, and in response, officers used pepper spray on them.²⁵¹ Petrol bombs were thrown at police vehicles.²⁵² Protesters also targeted an HSBC branch in Mong Kok because it had earlier closed the account of Spark Alliance, a fund-raising platform for protesters.²⁵³ They smashed up glass doors and set up a fire inside the branch. Protesters sprayed the message “don't forget Spark Alliance” on the walls of the building. 21 sets of traffic lights were damaged in Mong Kok.²⁵⁴

²⁴⁸ Press Releases of HKSAR (2019-12-24). Rioters throw petrol bombs at Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201912/24/P2019122400924.htm>

²⁴⁹ RTHK (2019-12-24). Tear gas, pepper spray and clashes mar Christmas Eve. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499415-20191224.htm>

²⁵⁰ SCMP (2019-12-24). Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui MTR stations close as Hong Kong marks Christmas Eve with return to tear gas on streets and protest chaos in malls. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043449/hong-kong-marks-christmas-eve-return-mall-chaos-protesters>

²⁵¹ RTHK (2019-12-24). Tear gas, pepper spray and clashes mar Christmas Eve. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499415-20191224.htm?archive_date=2019-12-24

²⁵² SCMP (2019-12-24). Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui MTR stations close as Hong Kong marks Christmas Eve with return to tear gas on streets and protest chaos in malls. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043449/hong-kong-marks-christmas-eve-return-mall-chaos-protesters>

²⁵³ RTHK (2019-12-24). HSBC building vandalised in Mong Kok. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499452-20191224.htm>

²⁵⁴ SCMP (2019-12-25). Police use tear gas, pepper spray as Hong Kong Christmas protests turn ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043493/police-use-pepper-spray-sporadic-clashes-christmas>



Image 4-144: Protesters smashed the glass walls of HSBC's Mong Kok branch and started a fire at its entrance on 24 December 2019

(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-145: Protesters set fire to an entrance to the Mong Kok Station on 24 December 2019

(Image source: HK01)

4.227 Protests also occurred in New Town Plaza in Sha Tin, Yoho Mall in Yuen Long and Time Square in Causeway Bay. A man jumped from the second floor of Yoho Mall while running away from the Police. He was taken care of by paramedics in a conscious state and was later arrested on suspicion of assaulting police.²⁵⁵

²⁵⁵ RTHK (2019-12-24). Man injured in mall jump while running from police. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499431-20191224.htm>

Wednesday 25 December 2019 – “Shopping with You” on Christmas Day

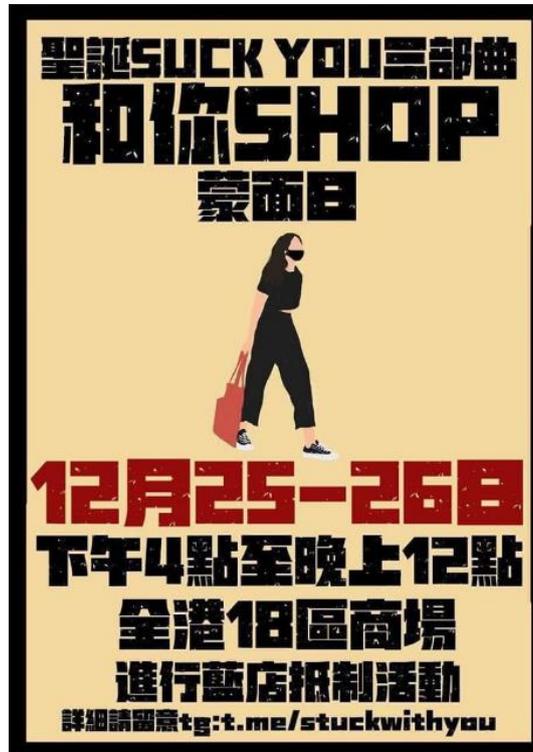


Image 4-146: Poster urging people to take part in the protest in shopping malls on 25-26 December 2019
(Image source: Facebook)

4.228 Similar to the night before, protesters took to the street and gathered in shopping malls on Christmas Day. Protesters chanted slogans and disrupted business deemed to be pro-Government in various shopping malls. In response to the disruption, the Police used batons and pepper spray on them in New Town Plaza in Sha Tin, outside Langham Place in Mong Kok and at Telford Plaza in Kowloon Bay.²⁵⁶ The Police charged at a crowd of protesters in Mong Kok firing tear gas and arrested seven protesters as tensions rose for several hours. Near midnight, some protesters set fire in Dundas Street.

4.229 The clashes between protesters and the Police on Christmas Day were similar to the conflicts on Christmas Eve but on a smaller scale.

²⁵⁶ SCMP (2019-12-25). Police use tear gas, pepper spray as Hong Kong Christmas protests turn ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043493/police-use-pepper-spray-sporadic-clashes-christmas>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4-147: The Police fired tear gas and made arrest outside Langham Place at around 18:00 on Christmas Day
(Image source: HK01)



Image 4-148: Protesters marching in Telford Plaza in Kowloon Bay on 25 December 2019
(Image source: HK01)

Thursday 26 December 2019 - Shopping with You on Boxing Day

4.230 Similar protests continued on Boxing Day. Protesters assembled and walked around in Tai Po Mega Mall.²⁵⁷ Some caused nuisance inside a restaurant by scattering menus and packets of condiments all over a table.

²⁵⁷ RTHK (2019-12-26). Riot police swarm Tai Po mall and arrest protesters. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1499643-20191226.htm?archive_date=2019-12-26

4.231 In Moko Mall in Mong Kok, protesters heckled customers at restaurants connected to the Mainland.²⁵⁸ As the Police entered the mall, protesters threw potted plants and black paint at them.

4.232 Similar disturbances happened at Sogo and Time Square in Causeway Bay, Langham Place in Mong Kok, V City in Tuen Mun and Harbour City in Tsim Sha Tsui.²⁵⁹

Tuesday 31 December 2019 – Protests to Mark Four Months since the Prince Edward Station Incident

4.233 On New Year's Eve, protesters gathered at the Prince Edward Station to mark four months since the Prince Edward Station Incident. A group mourned the death of those were allegedly killed, placing flowers at the Prince Edward Station.²⁶⁰ Officers from Mong Kok Police Station nearby came and cleared them. In response to the Police action, people put up more flowers. At around 19:00, the Police ordered the protesters, using pepper spray. Two hours later, at around 21:00, protesters rushed to occupy Nathan Road despite Police warning that they might use rubber rounds and super sock rounds.²⁶¹ The Police later deployed an SCMV on Nathan Road in Mong Kok to clear the crowd, after warning them several times to disperse. Armoured vehicles were also deployed to clear roadblocks set up by protesters on Nathan Road. The disturbance lasted to New Year's Day. In the small hours of 1 January 2020, some violent protesters hurled petrol bombs on Nathan Road in Mong Kok while others occupied the roads in the vicinity of Nathan Road and Shantung Street.²⁶² Tear gas was fired for dispersal.

4.234 On 31 December 2019, the Police fired 23 rounds of tear gas, 15 rubber rounds and one super sock round.²⁶³

²⁵⁸ SCMP (2019-12-26). After Christmas chaos, Hong Kong protesters plan major New Year's Day rally. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043547/hong-kong-protesters-and-police-clash-third-straight-day>

²⁵⁹ SCMP (2019-12-26). After Christmas chaos, Hong Kong protesters plan major New Year's Day rally. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043547/hong-kong-protesters-and-police-clash-third-straight-day>

²⁶⁰ RTHK (2019-12-31). Scuffles and pepper spray at Prince Edward MTR. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500378-20191231.htm?archive_date=2019-12-31

²⁶¹ RTHK (2019-12-31). Water cannon fired on Nathan Road. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500406-20191231.htm?archive_date=2019-12-31

²⁶² Press releases of HKSAR (2020-01-01). Rioters hurl petrol bombs in various districts. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202001/01/P2020010100074.htm>

²⁶³ Ming Pao (2020-01-02). 【元旦遊行】警昨 5 時許已擲催淚彈 今稱 7 時始用催淚煙應對汽油彈 (17:37). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/%E6%B8%AF%E8%81%9E/article/20200102/s00001/1577956910221/> 【元旦遊行】警昨 5 時許已擲催淚彈-今稱 7 時始用催淚煙應對汽油彈

Protests in January 2020:

January 2020						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
			1 CHRF Procession (1.03 million participants) * HSBC lion sculptures were vandalised	2 Lunch with You	3	4
5	6 Lunch with You	7	8	9	10	11
12	13	14	15	16 Lunch with You	17 Lunch with You	18
19 Assembly at Chater Garden	20	21	22	23	24	25
26	27	28	29	30	31	

*Figure according to organiser

Highlights of January 2020

- **The frequency of large-scale protests decreased in 2020. On 1 January 2020, the procession organised by CHRF ended in violence with protesters damaging traffic lights, banks, restaurants and other targeted shops en route. Some violent protesters threw petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at police officers. The Police used OC Foam, batons, tear gas, rubber rounds and SCMV for dispersal.**
- **“Lunch with You” continued in various districts.**
- **On 19 January 2020, the assembly at Chater Garden ended in violence. Two police officers were attacked with wooden sticks. The Police fired tear gas to disperse the rally.**

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

4.235 The frequency of large-scale protests decreased in 2020, but still, some protests took place to commemorate the Yuen Long Incident, Prince Edward Station Incident and Mong Kok Riot in 2016.

4.236 The first day of 2020 was a continuation of unrest from the preceding year. Procession organised by CHRF on New Year's Day is a norm in recent years in Hong Kong. The number of participants in 2020 was a record. Later in the month, the attention shifted to the outbreak of COVID-19.



Image 4-149: 1 January 2020 – Protest on the New Year's Day
(Image source: HK01)

Wednesday 1 January 2020 – Procession Followed by Violence

4.237 On the first day of 2020, CHRF organised a public procession from Victoria Park in Causeway Bay to Central. The theme was “Keep our commitment, stand as one! —2020 New Year Rally”. According to the organiser, there were over 1.03 million participants whereas the Police estimated 60 000 at peak. About two hours after the start of the procession at around 14:40, some violet protesters began to damage traffic lights, banks, restaurants and other targeted shops en route.

4.238 CHRF received notice from the Police at 17:30 to end the rally by 18:15. It immediately complied and asked people to leave.²⁶⁴ The demand came after plainclothes officers arrested several people for vandalising the facilities of the bank just before 17:00. They vandalised an HSBC branch at the junction of Hennessy Road and Luard Road in Wan Chai by damaging the facilities therein such as glass door and automated teller machines (ATM).²⁶⁵ After protesters had ignored repeated warnings from the Police, the Police used OC Foam, batons, tear gas, rubber rounds and SCMV for dispersal.²⁶⁶ Some violent protesters damaged the traffic lights in the vicinity of Des Voeux Road Central and Pedder Street in Central at around 18:00.²⁶⁷ On the other hand, thousands of people still stayed in the Causeway Bay area after the CHRF announcement of ending the procession. It was not clear if they were aware of CHRF's announcement. Meanwhile, hundreds of people were still in Victoria Park waiting to start the march when the Police ordered an end. At least three petrol bombs were thrown at police officers but they all fell short.²⁶⁸

4.239 Some protesters set fire and spray-painted the lion sculptures of HSBC Headquarters in Central. An outer wall of High Court was also found spray-painted with words of hatred for a named judge.²⁶⁹



Image 4-150: Barricades were set on roads and fires started
(Source : Now TV)

²⁶⁴ RTHK (2020-01-01). Police order end to march after Wan Chai clashes. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500513-20200101.htm>

²⁶⁵ RTHK (2020-01-01). Tear gas fired in Wan Chai, HSBC branch vandalised. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500509-20200101.htm>

²⁶⁶ Information provided by HKPF

²⁶⁷ Press Releases of HKSAR (2020-01-01). Rioters damage traffic lights in Central. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202001/01/P2020010100679.htm>

²⁶⁸ RTHK (2020-01-01). Police order end to march after Wan Chai clashes. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500513-20200101.htm>

²⁶⁹ RTHK (2020-01-01). Vandalism of court, attack on judge condemned. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1500554-20200101.htm?archive_date=2020-01-01



Image 4-151: Violent protesters vandalise an HSBC branch in Wan Chai
(Source : Now TV)

2, 6, 16, 17 January 2020 – “Lunch with You”

4.240 “Lunch with You” protests continued in January 2020. Some protesters called a “Lunch with You” rally on 2 January 2020. At about 13:00, about 100 citizens gathered in and around Statue Square in Central. The crowd walked towards Pedder Street and disbanded at about 13:45.²⁷⁰ “Lunch with You” rallies continued in multiple districts.

4.241 On 6 January 2020, in Wan Chai and Causeway Bay, protesters walked along Hennessy Road and Johnston Road. Some people raised banners and shouted slogans common in the protests.²⁷¹

4.242 On 16 January 2020, a “Lunch with You” rally was held in the Tsun Yip Street Playground in Kwun Tong. A crowd of about 100 moved towards How Ming Street, shouting slogans along the way. On the same day, a “Lunch with You/Write with You”est campaign was launched in Statue Square in Central. Dozens of people came and wrote slogans on scrolls.²⁷²

²⁷⁰ ON.CC (2020-01-02). 修例風波：中環「和你 Lunch」皇后像廣場逾百人聚集. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20200102/bkn-20200102132017997-0102_00822_001.html

²⁷¹ RTHK (2020-01-06) 多區「和你 Lunch」參與者叫口號 有途人舉掌和應. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1501261-20200106.htm>

²⁷² ON.CC (2020-01-16) 修例風波：網民續發起觀塘中環「和你 Lunch」 Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20200116/bkn-20200116131010103-0116_00822_001.html

4.243 On 17 January 2020, protesters called a "Lunch with You" rally in Cheung Sha Wan and another in San Po Kong. About 30 people gathered in the parking lot of the Hong Kong Industrial Centre. About 70 protesters shouted "release the righteous" outside the Lai Chi Kok Reception Centre, a prison where arrested protesters were held. In San Po Kong, about 50 citizens gathered, including a number of students in school uniforms. Police officers were on alert but the rally was relatively calm.²⁷³

Sunday 19 January 2020 – Calling for Global Sanctions on Hong Kong Officials

4.244 On 19 January 2020, there was an assembly at Chater Garden calling for global sanctions on Hong Kong officials who undermined human rights. The organisers had sought to obtain a LoNO for a procession, but the Police only permitted a public meeting.²⁷⁴ The assembly began at 15:00. One hour later, participants surrounded police officers and threw water bottles and debris in Des Voeux Road Central in Central. Some protesters also set up barricades with iron bars, bricks, traffic cones, and umbrellas. Some bricks on roads were dug up by the protesters and graffiti was sprayed on a building nearby. The Police decided to curtail the event at around 16:00. A few police officers entered Chater Garden to raise the matter with the organiser at about 16:30 for security reasons. Two of the officers were attacked with wooden sticks and sustained head injuries shortly after the organiser had agreed to call off the rally.²⁷⁵ The Police fired tear gas outside Chater Garden to disperse the rally.²⁷⁶ On that day, the organiser indicated that there were 150 000 attending the assembly, while the Police estimated a peak attendance of 11 680.²⁷⁷

²⁷³ ON.CC (2020-01-17). 修例風波：網民發起長沙灣新蒲崗「和你 lunch」活動. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20200117/bkn-20200117130331257-0117_00822_001.html

²⁷⁴ REUTERS (2020-01-20). Police arrest organizer of Hong Kong protest after rally turns violent. Retrieved from <https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-protests/police-arrest-organizer-of-hong-kong-protest-after-rally-turns-violent-idUSKBN1ZJ0B3>

²⁷⁵ Ibid.

²⁷⁶ HK01 (2020-01-19) 【1.19】員警遇襲爆缸 施催淚煙驅散 外傭遭煙攻眼痛：很害怕. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/423800/1-19-員警遇襲爆缸-施催淚煙驅散-外傭遭煙攻眼痛-很害怕>

²⁷⁷ REUTERS (2020-01-20). Police arrest organizer of Hong Kong protest after rally turns violent. Retrieved from <https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-protests/police-arrest-organizer-of-hong-kong-protest-after-rally-turns-violent-idUSKBN1ZJ0B3>

Protests in February 2020:

February 2020						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
						1
2	3 Lunch with You	4 Lunch with You	5	6	7	8 Commemoration of the death of the HKUST student
9	10	11	12	13	14	15
16	17	18	19 Commemoration of the death of a female VTC student	20	21 7 month commemoration of Yuen Long incident	22
23	24	25	26	27	28	29 6 month anniversary of the Prince Edward Station Incident

Highlights of February 2020

- Large-scale protests subsided in February 2020 but small-scale protests continued. The “Lunch with You” continued at Central on 3 and 4 February 2020.
- Commemorations of the death of the HKUST and VTC students on 8 and 19 February 2020
- Commemorations of the Yuen Long Incident and the Prince Edward Station Incident continued in February 2020.

4.245 In February 2020, street protests have almost been halted, probably because of COVID-19. While the frequency of large-scale protests had decreased, there were still some protests of small scale in different districts to commemorate some significant incidents occurred during the POEs in 2019.

Monday 3 and Tuesday 4 February 2020 – “Lunch with You”

4.246 On 3 February 2020, more than a hundred people gathered inside the IFC Mall in Central to participate the “Lunch with You” event.²⁷⁸ The protesters were there to "Support Medical Strikes" so as to pressurise the Government to close the borders.



Image 4-152: Protest of “Lunch with You”
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

4.247 A “Lunch with You” event was held in Central on 4 February 2020 to support the strike of medical professionals. The protesters also reiterated the demand of setting up an independent commission of inquiry to investigate the police use of force.²⁷⁹

²⁷⁸ Inmediahk (2020-02-03). 中環「和你 Lunch」撐醫護罷工：香港人應做任何可以做的事。 Retrieved from <https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1070443>

²⁷⁹ HKheadline (2020-02-04). 【修例風波】網民中環「和你 Lunch」促政府封關及查警暴. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1693942/即時-港聞-修例風波-網民中環-和你 Lunch-促政府封關及查警暴>



Image 4-153: “Lunch with You” in Central
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

Saturday 8 February 2020 – Commemoration of the Death of the HKUST Student

4.248 In the evening of 8 February 2019, more than 100 citizens gathered at the parking lot of Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O, where the body of the HKUST student was found three months ago.²⁸⁰ At 21:00, some protesters started to block the roads with bicycles and other items outside the Sheung Tak shopping mall. Rounds of tear gas were fired and 119 were arrested including five District Councillors.²⁸¹

Wednesday 19 February 2020 – Commemoration of the Death of the female VTC Student

4.249 Some protesters initiated a gathering on the ground floor of the parking lot in Sheung Tak Village, Tseung Kwan O in remembrance of the HKUST student and the female VTC student. About 70 people participated in the event.²⁸²

²⁸⁰ Stand News (2020-02-08) 周梓樂逝世三個月 將軍澳有市民堵路 警方拘多人施放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/周梓樂逝世三個月-將軍澳有市民堵路-警方拘多人施放催淚彈/>

²⁸¹ Apple Daily (2020-02-09) 【抗暴之戰】將軍澳防暴瘋狂拘 119 人包括 2 記者 年紀最少僅 13 歲 5 區議員包括西貢主席同被濫捕. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/20200209/PLOMHJB5DGTJLCAKWRQM5A6NME/>

²⁸² ON.CC (2020-02-19). 修例風波：網民悼念陳彥霖離世 5 個月 防暴警到場戒備. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20200219/bkn-20200219212558564-0219_00822_001.html

Friday 21 February 2020 – Commemoration of Yuen Long Incident at YOHO Mall

4.250 To mark seven months of the Yuen Long Incident, a large number of protesters responded to online calls to gather in Yuen Long²⁸³, Causeway Bay Station and Ma On Shan Station. The MTR closed the Yuen Long Station at 17:00. From 19:00, protesters started to gather at the atrium of the Yoho Mall in Yuen Long.²⁸⁴ At about 23:00, some protesters blocked the main road in Yuen Long with plastic boxes and garbage. The Police later arrived to clear the road.²⁸⁵ The commemoration in Causeway Bay Station and Ma On Shan Station were comparatively peaceful.

Saturday 29 February 2020 – Commemoration of Prince Edward Station Incident

4.251 In the evening of 29 February 2020, protesters gathered at the Prince Edward Station to mark six months of the Prince Edward Station Incident. It turned out to be the biggest outbreak of violence since the start of COVID-19.²⁸⁶



Image 4-154: The Police fired tear gas after protesters threw petrol bombs on 29 February 2020

(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

²⁸³ RTHK (2020-02-21) 元朗 7.21 事件至今 7 個月 數百市民在商場靜坐集會. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1510041-20200221.htm>

²⁸⁴ Ming Pao (2020-02-22). 「7. 21」 7 個月 200 人聚 Yoho Mall. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/港聞/article/20200222/s00002/1582309994750/「7-21」7個月-200人聚yoho-mall>

²⁸⁵ Apple Daily (2020-02-21). 【抗暴之戰】元朗 7.21 恐襲 7 個月 300 市民聚 Yoho Mall 悼念. Retrieved from <https://hk.appledaily.com/breaking/20200221/5BY6BVIGL3TOCITSITBVTYCAII/>

²⁸⁶ SCMP (2020-02-22). Hong Kong police arrest 115 after biggest outbreak of protest violence since coronavirus crisis. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3053025/hong-kong-protests-riot-police-fire-tear-gas-pepper-spray>

4.252 In the evening, hundreds gathered at Exit A of the Prince Edward Station, near Mong Kok Police Station. The Police said in a press release that protesters shone laser pointers, built barricades and set fires on roads at around 18:00 outside the police station.²⁸⁷ The protesters also threw petrol bombs at the junction of Nathan Road and Argyle Street at 20:30. Violent protesters occupied the roads by makeshift barricades in the Mong Kok area near Prince Edward Station. They threw petrol bombs and bricks at police officers. The Police responded by firing rounds of tear gas. It has been over three weeks since the Police last deployed tear gas.



Image 4-155: Protesters used umbrellas to protect from tear gas and pepper spray
(Image Source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 4-156: Protest at Mong Kok
(Image Source : HK01)

²⁸⁷ HKFP (2020-03-01). In Pictures: Tear gas, pepper spray, 115 arrests during clashes in Mong Kok, as police officer pulls gun on protesters. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2020/03/01/pictures-tear-gas-pepper-spray-clashes-mong-kok-police-officer-pulls-gun-protesters/>

4.253 On that evening, a police officer pointed his gun at protesters attacking him during a standoff around Nathan Road. The Police later explained that the officers drew his weapon because he feared for his life as protesters hurled brick, stones, bamboo sticks and other hard objects at him.²⁸⁸

4.254 115 people were arrested over the night.²⁸⁹

²⁸⁸ HKFP (2020-03-01). In Pictures: Tear gas, pepper spray, 115 arrests during clashes in Mong Kok, as police officer pulls gun on protesters. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2020/03/01/pictures-tear-gas-pepper-spray-clashes-mong-kok-police-officer-pulls-gun-protesters/>

²⁸⁹ RTHK (2020-03-01). 115 arrested after night of violence in Mong Kok. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1511792-20200301.htm>

Protests in March 2020:

March 2020						
Sun	Mon	Tue	Wed	Thu	Fri	Sat
1	2	3	4	5	6	7
8 Commemorati on of the death of the HKUST student	9	10	11	12	13	14
15	16	17	18	19	20	21 8 month commemoration of the incident on 21 July
22	23	24	25	26	27	28
29	30	31 7 month commemoration of the Prince Edward Station Incident				

Highlights of March 2020

- Less violence and small-scale protests were noted in March 2020. Commemorations of the death of the HKUST student, the Yuen Long Incident and the Prince Edward Station Incident were held.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

4.255 In March 2020, the city's attention shifted to COVID-19. There were only a few activities in commemoration of several significant incidents.

Sunday 8 March 2020 - To Commemorate the Death of the HKUST Student

4.256 To mark four months since of the death of the HKUST student, some protesters gathered to mourn for him in the Kwun Tong Promenade and the parking lot at Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O, where his body was discovered. At about 20:00, several hundred people went to the carpark to mourn his death and observed a minute of silence. At 20:20, the Police gave warning that the assembly was unauthorised, and asked the protesters and journalists to leave. The Police blocked a pedestrian road and checked identity cards and belongings of nearly 300 people.²⁹⁰ A total of 63 persons were arrested that night.

Saturday 21 March 2020 - Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident

4.257 To mark eight months since the Yuen Long Incident, some protesters gathered in Yuen Long at night. They blocked roads and threw petrol bombs in Citistore on Tai Tong Road. In response, police officers fired multiple rounds of tear gas, rubber rounds and used pepper spray for dispersal.²⁹¹ 61 people were arrested, including the Chairman of Yuen Long District Council.²⁹² Following the arrest of the Chairman of Yuen Long District Council, a joint statement of 17 District Council Chairmen, Vice-Chairmen and representatives criticised the Police for abuse of the power of arrest.²⁹³

Tuesday 31 March 2020 - Commemoration of Prince Edward Station Incident

4.258 To mark seven months since the Prince Edward Station Incident, protesters brought flowers and gathered at the Prince Edward Station from 19:00.

²⁹⁰ AsiaTimes (2020-03-09). HK police arrest more than 80 over protests. Retrieved from <https://asiatimes.com/2020/03/hk-police-arrest-more-than-60-over-protests/>

²⁹¹ Information provided by HKPF.

²⁹² MingPao (2020-03-22) 7. 21 事件 8 個月 催淚彈再現警拘數十人. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/港聞/article/20200322/s00002/1584815370397/7-21 事件 8 個月-催淚彈再現警拘數十人>

²⁹³ Inmediahk (2020-03-21). 元朗區議會主席黃偉賢被捕——十七區區議會正副主席及離島民主派區代表聯席會議聯合聲明. Retrieved from <https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1071760?fbclid=IwAR3zIplIR99bpn6NQkqk0GcaRtPZuNUdtbOkUWXUCa9x6WlQAShCzmn5Qp0>



Image 4-157: Protesters commemorated the Prince Edward Station Incident outside Prince Edward Station on 31 March 2020
(Image source : HK01)

4.259 Later in the same evening, some protesters blocked the roads in the vicinity. Petrol bombs were thrown at the nearby Police Sports and Recreation Club and Mong Kok East Station. Police officers used pepper spray and batons to disperse the protesters.²⁹⁴ At least ten protesters were intercepted and searched²⁹⁵, and four were arrested that night.²⁹⁶

²⁹⁴ Information provided by HKPF

²⁹⁵ RTHK (2020-03-31). 831 太子站事件 7 個月 市民到站外聚集並獻花. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1518056-20200331.htm>

²⁹⁶ Newsflare (2020-04-01). Hong Kong Police makes four arrests during protests in Mong Kok. Retrieved from <https://www.newsflare.com/video/347837/hong-kong-police-makes-four-arrests-during-protests-in-mong-kok>

IPCC Observations

4.260 The IPCC notes that the protests since June 2019 have been attended by a degree and scale of violence unprecedented in recent history. The violence has shown some signs of waning from January 2020 onwards and has been further attenuated by the epidemic now afflicting our community. But it is possible that despite the damage that has been wrought by the violence and the potential consequences that might bring to Hong Kong's economy, it might once again re-ignite as the epidemic passes. That is a matter for the future. Whilst no one can predict the future, we can at least learn lessons from the past.

4.261 Although the triggering event was the Fugitive Offenders Bill, the protests continued even after the Government announced on 15 June 2019 that it would suspend the Bill. On multiple occasions between June and August 2019, the Chief Executive re-affirmed that the Bill was dead and there was no plan to revive it. On 4 September 2019, the Government finally announced the full withdrawal of the Bill. Yet, the protests persisted, and even escalated in violence until December 2019 when signs of decline began to surface.

4.262 This Study revealed that the protests were accompanied by a scale and depth of lawlessness and violence not seen in Hong Kong since the riots of 1967. The lawlessness and violence varied from blocking roads, throwing bricks, attacking Police cordons with umbrellas (some with sharpened tips), to hurling petrol bombs and setting fire on streets and to public and private property or vandalising banks, shops and MTR stations. From early August 2019 onwards, petrol bombs were used at almost every protest, hurled at police officers, and public and private property.

4.263 In November 2019, the two universities occupied became the factories for manufacturing petrol bombs for use in the clashes with the Police outside the campus. Sling shots were seen to be deployed from July 2019 onwards. And as time went on, assorted potentially lethal weapons were seen being used in the streets against the Police, traffic network, public and private property.

4.264 The damage to public and private property was significant. The full extent of the damage has not been fully studied but to the extent the IPCC can gather, a list appears at Annex 1 to this Chapter.

4.265 In the past months there have been cases, where the Police have discovered bomb making materials and instruments enabling remote detonation. Guns and live ammunition were also found and persons involved arrested. If these weapons had been deployed, the consequences would be unimaginable. The Commissioner has warned that Hong Kong may be heading into an era of terrorism.

4.266 While the protests have been characterised by the media and scholars to be leaderless (無大台), there were visible signs of various forms of organisation at every violent protest, such as co-ordinated protest tactics, the availability of large amounts of petrol bombs and gas masks of similar designs and large numbers of lasers. There has been great inventiveness in the use of the internet, a feature of the protests which will be dealt with below. For example, the internet was used in convening protests and disseminating real-time information on police mobilisation, and teaching protesters in the fabrication and use of weapons. The inventiveness in use of the internet also extended to rapid assembly of information for doxxing police officers and their families and the fashioning of large amounts of hate messages and propaganda against the

Police. The discovery of rifles and hand guns and substantial amounts of live ammunition in recent months, as well as large amounts of materials for bomb making suggest some form of organisation behind these activities.

4.267 On 8 January 2020, the S for S in response to questions raised by Legislative Councillors said that some protesters “*had received training*”.²⁹⁷ He elaborated that, “*It seems that in every operation or incident, they will plan in advance with a deliberate plot in a syndicated manner. In terms of resources and mobilisation, we don’t believe that a handful of unorganised rioters could orchestrate such events.*”

4.268 At various times, some news articles reported that Mainland officials had mentioned about foreign influences behind the protests.²⁹⁸ In the telephone survey of members of the public conducted by the Centre for Communication and Public Opinion Survey of CUHK, 9.4% to 11.6% of respondents thought foreign forces should be responsible for the escalation of violence in the protests. More details are given in Chapter 15: Perceptions of Police Officers, Protesters and General Public.

4.269 It is not the purpose of this Study and the IPCC has no power to investigate into whether there was any organisation behind the protests or whether there were foreign influences. The possible existence of organisation or foreign influences behind the protests is a dimension of law enforcement. If organisation or foreign influences does indeed exist, then that adds to the difficulty of law enforcement. That is a matter for the Commissioner to take into account in the maintenance of law and order.

The Essential Features of the Protests

4.270 The essential features of the protests in the past months have been:

- (1) Continual metamorphosis of the demands of the protesters from initially asking for withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill to investigation of police brutality by an independent commission of inquiry and calls for universal suffrage together with other demands, including a full amnesty for all persons arrested or involved in the protests and even disbandment of the Police Force;

²⁹⁷ SCMP (2020-01-08). Hong Kong protesters have been receiving training from foreign forces, city’s security chief says, while also revealing more than 3,700 phones were seized and broken into. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3045255/hong-kong-protesters-have-been-receiving-training-foreign>

²⁹⁸ SCMP (2019-10-22). Hong Kong protest violence being fanned by foreign forces, China’s Wang Yi claims. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/china/article/3033963/chinas-wang-yi-blames-foreign-forces-sowing-chaos-hong-kong>

New York Times (2019-10-15). In Hong Kong Protests, China Angrily Connects Dots Back to U.S. Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/09/05/world/asia/china-hong-kong-protests.html>

Hong Kong Free Press (2019-07-24). China says it will ‘not tolerate foreign forces’ in Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/07/24/china-says-will-not-tolerate-foreign-forces-hong-kong/>

Reuters (2019-06-10). Chinese paper says ‘foreign forces’ using Hong Kong havoc to hurt China. Retrieved from <https://www.reuters.com/article/us-hongkong-extradition-march-china/chinese-paper-says-foreign-forces-trying-to-create-havoc-in-hong-kong-idUSKCN1TA0U4>

- (2) The use of the internet in spreading hatred against the Police, resulting in threats, intimidations and attacks on individual police officers whether in or out of duty and their families. In the most serious cases, an on duty officer was slashed in his neck and another off duty officer set on fire. There were many other instances where individual police officers who had fallen behind their teams were ferociously attacked by mobsters with potentially lethal weapons; and
- (3) Escalation of the violence, including blocking of streets, destruction of public and private property, disabling of major transport infrastructure, vigilantism against persons of different opinions, resulting in a person being killed by a brick hurled at him, and the setting on fire of another person.

The Ascent of Technology

4.271 Possibly the most important feature of the protests is the use of technology. The protests have been characterised by the media and scholars to be leaderless but is evident that the internet social media have played a key role in driving the protests forward. Practically instant and widespread communications were effected through social media, including Facebook, Instagram, WhatsApp, LIHKG and Telegram.

4.272 The internet was clearly the power and the driving force for continuing and escalating protests. It mobilises protesters to take part in the protests and gives momentum to the protests by providing a platform for the dissemination of propaganda materials, messages of hatred against the Police and other unsupported claims to launch rallies, perpetrate acts of violence, and doxxing police officers and their families. All protests to date have been called through the internet. And to facilitate the protesters, an App has since August 2019 appeared showing the real-time dispositions of the Police. This is an App updated by all persons watching the movements of the Police. In effect, it is a battlefield App giving information of enemy movements. The ability to track the movements of the Police, was no doubt a factor emboldening protesters in using violence, as their tactics could be adjusted by the information posted on the App.

4.273 The internet was not only an important convening force but effectively the medium by which propaganda²⁹⁹ against the Police was created and swiftly disseminated. The propaganda to date has been a continuing message of hatred against the Police for what the internet messages termed “police brutality” against “comrades in protest”. It was easy for such propaganda to gain credibility among protesters as they came face-to-face with law enforcement action by the Police or when their attacks of police officers and police stations were repulsed by police action, even if the force used was less than lethal. This message of hatred was not only a means for convening more protests but also a platform for inciting escalating violence against police stations, police officers and police quarters.

4.274 There have been a number of tragic deaths which the propaganda on the internet have attributed to the Police, with no more basis than a mere allegation. In June 2019, a protester fell from a scaffolding at Pacific Place, Admiralty. In the same month, two female committed suicide leaving notes with message to carry on the protest. The Prince Edward Station Incident spawned bare allegations of killings by the Police and another girl whose dead body found in

²⁹⁹ The dictionary definition of “Propaganda” is “information, especially of a biased or misleading nature, used to promote a political cause or point of view”.

the sea was alleged to have been “suicided” by the Police, again with no more basis than a mere allegation. In November 2019, a young university student fell to his death from height. Despite the CCTV footage released by LINK to the public showing that no policeman was on the floor from which this unfortunate student most probably fell, the death was nonetheless used for hate messages on the internet against the Police.

4.275 In addition, the internet was used as a platform for teaching protesters on the making of petrol bombs, along with inciting more violent protests. Annex 3 to this Chapter provides a summary of the convening and propaganda powers of the internet.

4.276 In the chapters relating to specific incidents (Chapters 7 to 12), the IPCC have made various observations and recommendations on timely Police response to incidents which would assist the Police to spread their explanations. The use of the internet requires careful study on how future strategies for policing public order should be fashioned. The IPCC recommends that the Commissioner to review the capacity of the Police to utilise the power and impact of the internet in support the Police in the maintenance of law and order for the HKSAR.

The Continuing Message of Police Brutality

4.277 This Overview reveals that the protests continue to be driven by the message of police brutality in social media and elsewhere. It must be recognised that civilized society is not based on the use or threat of force, but in the free and peaceful exchange of ideas. The use of force by anyone is illegal, save in exceptional circumstances. These exceptional circumstances fall into two essential classes:

- (a) Law enforcement, where the law allows the use of force under legally defined circumstances by officers empowered to enforce the law, where the law has been broken or where there is reasonable belief that the law is about to be broken; and
- (b) Self-defence of person or property or defence of the person or property of another, when faced with unlawful use of force.

4.278 In the past months of violent protests, roads were blocked, transport infrastructure seriously affected, public and private property destroyed, and police officers and private citizens attacked. Protesters used sling shots and arrows, threw petrol bombs, and deploy a variety of weapons. These are illegal acts, which could have fatal consequences.

4.279 This Overview reveals that in the face of these illegal and potentially lethal acts, the Police has had to enforce the law and to protect themselves against harm. Over 590 police officers have been injured. When attacked with potentially lethal consequences, the Police has, except in 12 instances, deployed less than lethal force. In those 12 instances, 19 live rounds were deployed, three persons were injured and they have now been discharged from hospital. As has been seen in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing, the Police has strict guidelines governing the use of weapons and an investigation procedure reporting up to the level of the Director of Operations where live rounds were deployed.

4.280 With a view to complying with the law, the Police has in place policies, procedures and training for the use of force in law enforcement. Whilst these are extensive, there is obvious room for improvement and this Study has made a set of recommendations for improvement of these guidelines in Chapter 6. As an institution the Police has a large collection of guidelines

for the use of force and a system of management review every time force is used. This Study reveals that the Police use of force in the past months have been in reaction to the violence directed against them and in execution of their duties under the PFO and the POO, where they would need to disperse crowds or make arrests of persons who have offended the law.

The Complaints System

4.281 However, this cannot discount or excuse the possibility of individual officers overstepping the law and insufficient supervision in specific cases. The complaints system is designed to deal with these situations.

4.282 Chapter 5: Synopsis of Complaints deals with the complaints received up to end of February 2020 and provide information as to how they will be dealt with. The IPCC notes that 20.5% of the RCs came from reporters.³⁰⁰ The IPCC fully appreciates the work of reporters on the ground as it is their duty to get the best news coverage possible. However, it must be balanced with the safety of the reporters themselves, the protesters and the police officers, and at the same time not to hinder the frontline police officers in action. This Report is intended to assist the IPCC in monitoring and reviewing the investigation of all RCs lodged with CAPO.

The Commissioner's Supervisory Powers

4.283 As to cases where no complaints have been made, the events in the past months, has been the most widely and deeply photographed and video-recorded events in history of Hong Kong to date, where in the footage, if there is evidence of overstepping the mark as to application of force, the IPCC would expect the Commissioner to step in and put his house in order.

³⁰⁰ Chart 5-3 in Chapter 5 refers.

ANNEX 1

LIST OF DAMAGE AND IMPACT CAUSED BY THE PROTESTS

(The information contained below is accurate to the best of knowledge
of the IPCC based on available information)

Private Property

- Branches and ATM of banks connected to the Mainland were frequent targets of vandalism and arson by violent protesters.
- Several HSBC branches were targeted by violent protesters in December 2019.
- Shops owned by companies, which were:
 - (1) connected to the Mainland;
 - (2) supported the Mainland Government or Hong Kong Government; or
 - (3) allegedly connected to the Fujianese
 were frequent targets of vandalism and arson by violent protesters.

A. Banks
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Bank of China • Bank of Communication • Bank of East Asia • China Construction Bank (Asia) • CMB Wing Lung Bank • Hang Seng Bank • HSBC • Industrial and Commercial Bank of China • Shanghai Commercial Bank
B. Restaurants and others
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Beijing Tong Ren Tang • Best Mart 360 • Café de Carol • China Life Insurance • China Mobile • China Travel Service (Hong Kong) • Chung Hwa Bookstore • CR Care • Fulum Restaurant • Hey Tea • Luen Fat Mahjong Playing • Lung Mun Café • Maxim's Caterers Limited and associated franchises, including Arome, Maxim's Cakes, Maxim's Palace, Genki Sushi, Starbucks, SimplyLife, Peking Garden, etc. • McDonald's • Miniso • Pacific Coffee • Sasa • Sing Thai Cuisine

- Tai Hing, TeaWood (brand restaurants of Tai Hing Group)
- Tsui Wah Restaurant
- Uniso
- Xiaomi
- Yifang
- Yoshinoya

Public property

A. Government / Public Property

- Central Government Offices
- Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices
- Court of Final Appeal
- High Court
- Immigration Tower
- Kowloon City Government Offices
- Kowloon Government Offices
- Kowloon Tong Education Services Centre
- Kwai Hing Government Offices
- Legislative Council Complex
- Leisure and Cultural Services Headquarters
- North District Community Centre and Town Hall
- North District Government Offices
- Public Health Laboratory Centre
- Sai Kung Tseung Kwan O Government Complex
- Sha Tin District Office Ma On Shan Sub-office
- Sha Tin Government Offices
- Sha Tin Magistrates' Court
- Tai Hing Government Offices
- Tai Po Complex
- Tai Po Government Offices
- Trade and Industry Tower
- Tsuen Wan Government Offices
- Tuen Mun Government Offices
- Tuen Mun Town Hall
- Wanchai Tower
- Yuen Wo Road Indoor Recreation Centre

B. Police Stations and Related Premises

- Castle Peak Police Station
- Central Police Station
- Cheung Sha Wan Police Station
- Happy Valley Police Station
- Hong Kong Police Headquarters
- Kwai Chung Police Station
- Kwun Tong Police Station
- Ma On Shan Police Station

- Mong Kok Police Station
- New Territories South Regional Police Headquarters
- North Point Police Station
- Sha Tin Police Station
- Sham Shui Po Police Station
- Shau Kei Wan Reporting Centre
- Tai Po Police Station
- Tin Shui Wai Police Station
- Tin Sum Police Station
- Tseung Kwan O Police Station
- Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station
- Tsuen Wan Junior Police Call Club House
- Tsuen Wan Police Station
- Tuen Mun Police Station
- Wong Tai Sin Disciplined Services Quarters

C. Other Premises

- City University of Hong Kong
- Gun Club Hill Barracks
- Heung Yee Kuk in Sha Tin
- Hong Kong Baptist University
- Hong Kong Federation of Trade Unions in Ma Tau Wai
- Independent Commission Against Corruption (ICAC) office
- Liaison Office of the Central People's Government and its New Territories office in Sha Tin
- Nine offices of Legislative Council / District Council Members
- Office of Xinhua News Agency in Wan Chai
- The Chinese University of Hong Kong
- The Hong Kong Polytechnic University
- The Hong Kong University of Science and Technology
- The University of Hong Kong

Traffic network

A. Traffic Infrastructure¹

- 740 sets of traffic lights, 365 of which were vandalised more than once²
- The total number of traffic light damages amounted to 1,590
- Around 55 km long of iron railings removed / damaged
- Around 22 000 square meters of paving blocks of footpaths
- 1 463 traffic island bollard
- 87 traffic signs
- Toll booths of Cross-Harbour Tunnel
- 20 Smart Lampposts

¹ Government Press Releases (2020-01-08). LCQ13: Countermeasures against traffic chaos. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202001/08/P2020010800302.htm>
Information from HKPF

² Government Press Releases (2020-01-08). LCQ13: Countermeasures against traffic chaos. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202001/08/P2020010800302.htm>

B. Buses and Other Public Vehicles³
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • 420 franchised buses • 100 public light buses, taxis and non-franchised buses • seven tram cars
C. MTRC network and facilities⁴
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • 1 976 gates of Automatic Fare Collection • 1 154 ticketing machines, add value machines, enquiry machines, Officer Smart Card processor terminals • 1 592 light rail platform Octopus processors • 1 289 CCTV Cameras • 312 information display panels • 363 break glass units • 311 portable fire extinguishers • 81 lifts • 117 escalators • 1 884 lighting units • 309 glass panels of platform screen doors • 1 130 entrance glass panels • 221 entrance roller shutters • 85 MTR stations • 62 light rail stations
D. Air transport⁵
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • More than 1 000 flights cancelled

³ Government Press Releases (2019-12-11). LCQ5: Supporting public transport sector. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201912/11/P2019121100493.htm?fontSize=1>

⁴ Information provided by MTRC to Police as at 31 March 2020

⁵ SCMP (2019-08-15). Hong Kong airport struggles to pick up pieces after 1,000 flights grounded as security tightened after court order secured to clear protesters. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3022841/hong-kong-airport-struggles-pick-pieces-after-1000-flights>

Airport Authority (2019-09-01). Traffic to and from Airport severely obstructed by public assembly Airport Authority implements contingency measures to safeguard normal operations of Terminal Buildings. Retrieved from https://www.hongkongairport.com/en/media-centre/press-release/2019/pr_1427

Ming Pao (2019-08-06). 快閃堵三隧 15 幹道受阻. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%e8%a6%81%e8%81%9e/article/20190806/s00001/1565030065902/快閃堵三隧-15 幹道受阻>

Deterioration of Crime Situation

Crime figures showed that there was a 9.2% increase in the crimes reported in 2019 (59 225) comparing to those in 2018 (54 225). Violent crimes in 2019 also increased by 9.1% from 8 884 cases to 9 690 cases. According to the Police, the increase in crime reports was attributed to the crimes committed in the protests and the thinning out of police resources in coping with daily crime work.⁶

Overall crime and violent crime situation⁷

Year	Overall Crime	Violent Crime
2019	59 225 (↑9.2%)	9 690 (↑9.1%)
2018	54 225 (↓3.2%)	8 884 (↓2.2%)
2017	56 017 (↓7.6%)	9 086 (↓10.1%)
2016	60 646 (↓8.7%)	10 103 (↓7.2%)
2015	66 439	10 889

Economy in General**A. Unemployment rate⁸**

- The seasonally adjusted unemployment rate increased to 3.3% for October 2019 to December 2019
- It further increased to 3.4% for November 2019 to January 2020, the highest in more than three years

B. Tourism and related sectors^{9,10,11,12}

- A number of events were postponed or cancelled in the second half of 2019 (e.g. the National Day Fireworks Display, Hong Kong Tennis Open and Hong Kong Wine & Dine Festival)
- The overall visitor arrivals in the third quarter of 2019 plunged by 26% from those of a year earlier, the sharpest year-on-year fall since the second quarter of 2003
- Tourism business, convention and exhibition services domain decreased sharply by 27.8%, the largest year-on-year decline since the SARS episode in 2003
- Retail, accommodation and food services business dropped by 17.5%, 19.1% and 11.7% respectively in the third quarter.

⁶ Government Press Releases (2020-03-02). Law and order situation in 2019. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/202003/02/P2020030200619.htm?fontSize=1>

⁷ Hong Kong Police Force. Crime statistics in detail. Retrieved from https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_en/09_statistics/csd.html

⁸ Census and Statistics Department (2020-01-18). Unemployment and underemployment statistics for November 2019 - January 2020 [18 Feb 2020]. Retrieved from https://www.censtatd.gov.hk/press_release/pressReleaseDetail.jsp?charsetID=1&pressRID=4611

⁹ Census and Statistics Department (2020-01-18). Unemployment and underemployment statistics for November 2019 - January 2020 [18 Feb 2020]. Retrieved from https://www.censtatd.gov.hk/press_release/pressReleaseDetail.jsp?charsetID=1&pressRID=4611

¹⁰ Government Press Releases (2019-11-20). LCQ12: Impacts of social disturbances on economy. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201911/20/P2019112000497.htm?fontSize=1>

¹¹ Ibid.

¹² Government Press Releases (2019-12-18). LCQ4: Measures to support enterprises and employment. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201912/18/P2019121800423.htm?fontSize=1>

Vigilantism events (according to public information)

Date	Location	Details
1 July 2019	Admiralty	A Mandarin speaking male was suppressed by protesters for taking photos at scene ¹
7 July 2019	Mong Kok	Early hour of 8 July, a lady holding a mobile phone was suspected to be a police officer and was detained by a few protesters ²
21 July 2019	Sheung Wan	During the clash with police in Western District, brawls broke out between protesters and drivers, one of whom was beaten up and windows of his van for livelihood were smashed ³
22 July 2019	Tsuen Wan	A male, who was photographing protesters' siege of Legislative Councillor's office at Tsuen Fung Centre, was attacked by a group of people at scene ⁴
3 August 2019	Mong Kok	A male was reported to be attacking people with glass bottles who was then detained by people/protesters with plastic bans ⁵
5 August 2019	Tuen Mun	A motorcycle driver rushed to the roadblock set up by protesters, he was detained by protesters ⁶
5 August 2019	North Point	A group of white clad with wooden poles had conflicts with protesters on street, protesters fought back ⁷
11 August 2019	North Point	People in red clad were reported to be attacking a male and a reporter in North Point, and a few persons were attacked by people in white clad around midnight of 12 Aug ⁸
13 August 2019	Hong Kong International Airport	Detained and assaulted a traveller and a reporter, obstructed ambulance crews from reaching the injured ⁹
20 August 2019	Tseung Kwan O	Three persons were attacked by a middle-aged male with knife while they were viewing Lennon Wall at a pedestrian underpass in Tseung Kwan O ¹⁰
24 August 2019	Sham Shui Po	Protesters had fight with a white clad male of different stance ¹¹
25 August 2019	Tsuen Wan	Protesters were reported to be attacked by some white clad gang, they stopped a taxi which was found to have stored weapons, a blue clad male from the taxi was in turn attacked by protesters ¹²
28 August 2019	Mei Foo	Dispute over Lennon Wall outside Lai Wan Market which led to beating and assault of several people ¹³
14 September 2019	Ngau Tau Kok	Brawls at Amoy Plaza in Ngau Tau Kok in which some pro-establishment supporters were attacked ¹⁴

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Date	Location	Details
	Tin Shui Wai	Street quarrel between protesters and persons of different views in Tin Shui Wai ¹⁵
	North Point	Two males were attacked by a group of blue clad supporters who were singing Chinese anthem in North Point ¹⁶
	Quarry Bay	Dispute of people over Lennon Wall outside Quarry Bay MTR Station which involved fighting of a group of blue-clad people and people in black ¹⁷
15 September 2019	Wan Chai	A blue clad male was reportedly assaulted by protesters in Wan Chai ¹⁸
	North Point	A middle-aged male was reportedly assaulted by protesters in North Point ¹⁹
16 September 2019	San Po Kong	Dispute over Lennon Wall at Ning Yuen Street, San Po Kong, a man was injured ²⁰
22 September 2019	Yuen Long	Five males were injured over separate incidents of allegedly harassing a female voluntary first-aider at scene, quarrelling with protesters while appearing drunken, and removing papers from a Lennon Wall set up by protesters ²¹
27 September 2019	Central	A male and a female were sprayed paint and hit on the face for allegedly photographing female protesters with his mobile phone during a rally at Edinburgh Place and for tearing off posters from Lennon Wall nearby respectively ²²
29 September 2019	Causeway Bay	A white clad Mandarin-speaking male passing by a protest site was attacked on the head after being suspected by protesters as a trouble-maker ²³ ; windows of a taxi were smashed and its interior and engine were destroyed by protesters as the taxi driver was allegedly ramming the vehicle to a group of people on Hennessy Road in Causeway Bay ²⁴
4 October 2019	Central	A Mandarin-speaking JP Morgan employee was punched in the face by a protester for saying “We are all Chinese” outside the company’s office at Chater House in Central ²⁵
	Sham Shui Po	A white clad male holding knife/steel ruler-like object reportedly had a fight with outnumbered protesters and sustained injury on the head while the incident took place near a fire engine in Sham Shui Po ²⁶ . A blue clad middle-aged male was reportedly attacking a face-masked male with two axes, who was in turn attacked by a group of protesters with poles and bamboo sticks ²⁷
6 October 2019	Sham Shui Po	A taxi allegedly rushed on pavement in Sham Shui Po causing injuries to three persons; the taxi driver was beaten by people at scene ²⁸

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Date	Location	Details
	Mong Kok	A male, who was reportedly holding a pole and attacking protesters at Nathan Road near HSBC branch in Mong Kok, was found lying on ground with blood on his head as protesters counter-attacked him on two counts ²⁹
	Mong Kok	An actress was attacked by protesters in Mong Kok while filming people vandalising a Bank of China automated teller machine (ATM) with her mobile phone ³⁰
	Mong Kok	Early on this day, a male passer-by who was removing road blocks at Nathan Road and Argyle Street in Mong Kok was reportedly quarrelling with and attacked by protesters ³¹
13 October 2019	Mong Kok	A 49-year-old lady, who was moving roadblocks at Argyle Street and Nathan Road junction, was sprayed paint and assaulted by two females in their 40s ³²
19 October 2019	Tai Po	A male, who were distributing Lennon Wall materials outside Tai Wo MTR Station, was stabbed in the torso by two males ³³
31 October 2019	Mong Kok	A man in white was attacked after he was said to be driving passed protesters at high speed at Argyle Road towards Tai Kok Tsui ³⁴
2 November 2019	Tsim Sha Tsui	Several violent conflicts occurred between masked rioters and bystanders, a female was spray-painted on Park Lane Shopper's Boulevard and three men were assaulted on Nathan Road near Haiphong Road ³⁵ ;
	Mong Kok	A number of masked protesters assaulted two passers-by on two separate occasions in Mong Kok, one of the victims in Shantung Street had his clothes, trousers and even underwear stripped by masked protesters in front of the public ³⁶
3 November 2019	Tai Koo Shing	A fight over political differences in Taikoo Shing in which a District Councillor had part of his left ear bitten off and the suspect was in turn beaten by people at scene ³⁷
9 November 2019	Tseung Kwan O	A male was confined and attacked by protesters following a dispute over noises of protesters' memorial at Beverly Garden for a university student who passed away after fallen from height in a carpark nearby ³⁸
11 November 2019	Ma On Shan	A 57-year-old male was poured with suspected inflammable liquid and set on fire following an argument with a group of people in Ma On Shan ³⁹
	Sha Tin	A motorcycle delivery driver has his vehicle vandalised after it allegedly rushed to the road blocks set up by protesters at Tai Chung Kiu Road in Sha Tin ⁴⁰

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

Date	Location	Details
12 November 2019	Tai Po	A lorry was set on fire and the driver was snatched from the vehicle after it had allegedly crashed road blocks at protest site while passing Tai Wo Road ⁴¹
13 November 2019	Sheung Shui	A 70-year-old cleaner was reported to be hit in the head by a brick during a fight between two groups of people outside North District Town Hall, leading to death on the next day ⁴²
1 December 2019	Mong Kok	A male who was clearing barrier objects was hit by a drain cover ⁴³
9 December 2019	Mong Kok	A male allegedly had a quarrel with protesters at Sai Yeung Choi Street South and Shan Tung Street junction and was hit with a torch and fell in unconscious state ⁴⁴
24 December 2019	Mong Kok	Three males were reportedly attacked in different spots near Shan Tung Street and Dundas Street in Mong Kok over quarrels with protesters and allegedly indecent conduct to a person at protest scene ⁴⁵
26 Jan 2020	Mong Kok	A 37-year-old male Mainlander was attacked by protesters outside Langham Place, Portland Street; Police said three males were assaulted in the incident ⁴⁶
30 January 2020	Yuen Long	6 persons viewing Lennon Wall materials near Yuen Long West Station were reportedly to be attacked by some 10 males ⁴⁷

- 1 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/346773/逃犯條例-被揭發近距離拍攝示威者-一男掙手機另一男速逃>
- 2 <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1045052/即時-香港-尖沙嘴遊行-女子被誤認便衣遭包圍搶手機-3男女被捕>
<http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/text/2019/0710/317391.html>
- 3 https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190722/bkn-20190722231847003-0722_00822_001.html
<https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3019484/protesters-spill-beyond-end-point-third-major-march-against>
- 4 <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/433686/逃犯條例-涉-私了-拍攝男子-中年漢被控-還押候訊> ;
<http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0723/323858.html>
- 5 <https://www.hk01.com/政情/359855/旺角再遊行-警方稱-忍讓-克制-譴責示威者四處破壞>
<https://hk.appledaily.com/local/20190803/QUNZA3YWHO6GYSUAQ4FCDMRRLI/>
- 6 <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/8-5-衝突-無綫-男子遭制服-索帶綁手腳-疑因駕電單車撞示威者路障-揮鋼棍/>
- 7 <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=358083>
- 8 <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=358098>
- 9 <http://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=106170>
- 10 <https://topick.hket.com/article/2426573/建制派嚴厲譴責示威者機場行私刑%E3%80%80強調非公民逮捕>
- 11 <https://yp.scmp.com/article/113946/knife-attack-near-lennon-wall-tseung-kwan-o-leaves-three-injured>
<https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/367644/觀塘遊行-深水埗衝突-示威者打白衣男-混亂間有人亮菜刀>
<https://www.worldjournal.com/6471840/article-暴力升級?警2天逮86人:示威者也襲擊不同意見市/>

- 12 <https://www.speakout.hk/港人花生/47947/-茶藝青遊行-多人疑持械襲擊示威者-藍衣漢反被圍毆受傷>
https://hk.nextmgz.com/article/2_689796_0
- 13 <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190829/s00001/1567083878369/美孚連儂牆打架警拘3人-男子索帶網綁他人涉非法禁錮被捕>
- 14 <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/09/14/brawls-malls-clashes-streets-pro-china-groups-confront-protesters/>
- 15 <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1591360/即時-港聞-修例風波-天水圍堵路示威者大部分散去-持不同意見女子爆口角>
- 16 <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1591201/即時-港聞-修例風波-北角藍衣人聚集唱國歌拆連儂牆-多人被圍遇襲-片段>
- 17 <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1091258/即時-香港-修例風波-涉毆鬥藍衣群眾離去-炮台山反修例人士重整-連儂牆>
- 18 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/375523/逃犯條例-藍衣男子灣仔與示威者口角-遭數十人圍毆至重傷>
- 19 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/375512/逃犯條例-挑釁示威者遭圍毆-中年漢頭破血流稱後悔-我飲大咗>
- 20 <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1480937-20190917.htm>
- 21 https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/377921/9-21元朗示威-一晚四-私了-五男被指非禮-挑釁頭破血流?itm_source=universal_search&itm_campaign=universal_search&itm_content=articles&itm_medium=w eb
- 22 https://www.hk01.com/突發/380272/9-27集會-兩男女疑撕紙拍大頭相-遭集會人士-私了-黑漆噴面?itm_source=universal_search&itm_campaign=universal_search&itm_content=articles&itm_medium=w eb
- 23 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/380758/9-29遊行-全日48人受傷一人嚴重-趙聿修紀念中學中六生被捕>
- 24 <https://www.ejinsight.com/eji/article/id/2263212/20190930-march-turns-into-bloody-clashes-between-protesters-and-police>
- 25 <https://www.scmp.com/news/china/society/article/3031708/attack-jpmorgan-banker-hong-kong-sparks-outrage-mainland-china>
- 26 <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/被指未阻示威者-私了-刀手-消防處-處理暴力經驗不足-未能確保在安全情況下協助/>
- 27 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/382570/禁蒙面法-大埔雙斧大叔-長沙灣道鐵尺男-遭示威者-私了>
- 28 <http://www.orangenews.hk/news/system/2019/10/06/010128194.shtml>
- 29 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/382910/禁蒙面法-深水埗的士撞人-旺角男子被二度-私了-大字型攤路>
- 30 <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/馬蹄露旺角影相惹示威者不滿-受襲頭部流血痛哭/>
- 31 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/382767/禁蒙面法-示威者旺角設路障-過路男圖移走遭-私了>
- 32 <https://today.line.me/hk/pc/article/旺角有女子與示威者口角繼而被追打-aj0XR0;>
<https://www.speakout.hk/焦點新聞/49634/-私了-處處-旺角女搬走路障-遭示威者噴黑面部兼扯髮>
- 33 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/388108/大埔血案-男子連儂牆派傳單-被刺肚傷口見腸-刀手被捕>
- 34 <https://today.line.me/hk/pc/article/修例風波%E3%80%80疑在港鐵旺角站口縱火%E3%80%80白衣男遭「私了」-O99oXv>
- 35 <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/5353611-內地女生尖沙咀與示威者口角-遭男子噴黑漆後送院>
- 36 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/393757/11-2集會-旺角兩男遭-私了-一人遭扯開內褲-警-令人髮指>
- 37 <https://www.hk01.com/政情/393937/太古城血案全實錄-趙家賢耳朵遭監生咬用-地面遺殘肉>
- 38 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/396389/悼念周梓樂-富康花園男子舌戰示威者-遭-私了-5分鐘>
- 39 <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2495673/被淋液放火燒%20馬鞍山男變「火人」%20曾與黑衣人拉扯追逐%20級燒傷危殆>
- 40 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/396368/悼念周梓樂-沙田外賣鐵騎高速過路障衝人群-遭-私了-扑車>
- 41 https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20191112/bkn-20191112063435912-1112_00822_001.html
- 42 <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/398414/11-13上水-清潔工疑遭黑衣人擲磚掙中-搶救逾一日證實不治>
- 43 https://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-12/02/content_1167485.html
- 44 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/407596/12-8-旺角-警午夜前後拘捕多人-一男子疑被-私了-受傷>
- 45 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/413907/平安夜-旺角-男子疑遭-私了-大量出血倒地昏迷>
- 46 <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3047723/hong-kong-protests-tear-gas-fired-second-night-row>
- 47 <https://www.hk01.com/突發/428233/連儂牆-元朗西鐵站看-文宣-遭多人揮棍圍毆-六男女受傷送院>

LIST OF REPORTED POEs FROM JUNE 2019 TO FEBRUARY 2020

(The information contained below is accurate to the best of knowledge of the IPCC
based on the information gathered from news reports and media coverage)

Date	Incident	Location / area(s)	Description
June 2019			
6 Jun 2019 (Thu)	Silent procession by members of the legal sector	Central - Admiralty	More than 2 500 joined the procession according to the organiser, 880 at peak according to police.
9 Jun 2019 (Sun)	"Safeguard Hong Kong, No extradition to China" procession (「守護香港反送中」大遊行)	Causeway Bay - Admiralty	<p>A procession organised by CHRF. According to CHRF, 1.03 million joined the procession. Police counted that there were 240 000 participants at peak.</p> <p>Around midnight, hundreds of violent protesters charged on the police cordon line at the LegCo Complex. They threw iron rods, metal barriers and other hard objects at the Police. The police officers used batons, OC Foam and PAVA solution to hold back the violent protesters.</p>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

12 Jun 2019 (Wed)	Protests outside CGC and LegCo Complex	Admiralty	<p>The day scheduled for the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill.</p> <p>In the morning, tens of thousands of protesters gathered in CGC area paralysing the traffic network. LegCo Secretariat later announced that the meeting for the Second Reading would be postponed.</p> <p>Clashes broke out between protesters and Police near the LegCo Complex in the afternoon. Some protesters threw bricks and other hard objects at the Police. The Police fired tear gas and less lethal projectiles, and declared the situation a riot.</p>
14 Jun 2019 (Fri)	Hong Kong Mothers' Anti-Extradition Rally (「香港媽媽反送中集氣大會」)	Central	A rally at Chater Garden urging for withdrawing the Fugitive Offenders Bill and expressing concern on Police use of force on 12 June. 6 000 joined the rally according to the organiser. The Police counted that there were 980 participants at peak.
16 Jun 2019 (Sun)	"Condemn Suppression, Withdraw the Evil Law" procession (「譴責鎮壓·撤回惡法」大遊行)	Causeway Bay - Admiralty	A procession organised by CHRF. According to CHRF, two million people joined the procession. The Police counted that there were 338 000 at peak. The procession concluded peacefully at CGC without any clashes.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

21 Jun 2019 (Fri)	Rally at the LegCo Complex	Admiralty - Wan Chai	A rally organised by the Federation of Students and five university student unions. More than a thousand people gathered at the LegCo Complex in the morning. They later escalated their action by blocking the eastbound and westbound lanes of Harcourt Road.
	First Siege of PHQ	Wan Chai	After the rally at the LegCo Complex, protesters proceeded to PHQ and laid siege to it, with thousands of people at its peak. The Police stood guard inside PHQ and allowed the protesters to disperse in their own time.
26 Jun 2019 (Wed)	"G20 Free Hong Kong" rally at Edinburgh Place	Central - Admiralty	A rally launched by CHRF. About 10 000 joined the rally according to the organiser.
	Second siege of PHQ	Wan Chai	After the CHRF rally, over a thousand people walked to PHQ and once again laid siege to it. Most of the people left around midnight. In the small hours of the following day, the Police dispersed around 200 protesters remaining at PHQ in the direction of Wan Chai.
30 Jun 2019 (Sun)	Rally in support of the police and rule of law (「撐警隊，護法治，保安寧」集會)	Admiralty	A rally organised by Dr Hon Junius Ho and Politikh Social Strategic at Tamar Park to support the Police. According to the organiser, 165 000 joined the rally. The Police figure was 53 000 at peak.

July 2019			
1 Jul 2019 (Mon)	July 1 Procession	Causeway Bay - Admiralty	The procession was organised by CHRF, about 530 000 joined according to organiser; 190 000 at peak according to police. Violent protesters later vandalised LegCo with a subsequent cost of \$40 million for repairs.
6 Jul 2019 (Sat)	Procession "Reclaim Tuen Mun Park" (「光復屯門公園」遊行)	Tuen Mun	A few thousand protesters marched against the nuisance caused by some people at Tuen Mun Park. A few hundred protesters surrounded Tuen Mun Police Station and occupied the roads outside.
7 Jul 2019 (Sun)	Grand procession in Kowloon (「九龍區大遊行」)	Tsim Sha Tsui, West Kowloon Station, Mong Kok	Tens of thousands of protesters marched from Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station to promote their cause to Mainland visitors. After procession, thousands of protesters went “shopping” in Mong Kok where clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action.
13 Jul 2019 (Sat)	Procession with a theme “To Liberate Sheung Shui” (「光復上水」行動)	Sheung Shui	The organiser estimated a turnout of 30 000 while the Police counted 4 000 at the peak. After the march, clashes broke out between the protesters and the Police.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

14 Jul 2019 (Sun)	Sha Tin Procession (「沙田區大遊行」) descending into violent clashes in New Town Plaza	Sha Tin	The organiser of the march estimated 115 000 participated while Police counted 28 000 at the peak. Clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action. Chaotic scenes were seen at New Town Plaza.
17 Jul 2019 (Wed)	Silent procession by "silver hair" group (「銀髮族靜默」 遊行)	Central	About 9 000 participated according to organiser, 1 500 at peak according to police.
20 Jul 2019 (Sat)	"Safeguard Hong Kong" rally (「守護香港」大 集會)	Admiralty	About 310 000 joined according to organiser, 100 000 at peak according to police.
21 Jul 2019 (Sun)	Hong Kong Island Procession	Causeway Bay - Admiralty - Sheung Wan	About 430 000 joined the procession according to organiser, 138 000 at peak according to police. Some protesters marched to the LOCPG and defaced the national emblem.
	Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long	A group of people dressed in white congregated at the Yuen Long MTR station, attacking protesters and targeting those in black.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

26 Jul 2019 (Fri)	Mass sit-in at the HK International Airport (「和你飛」集會)	Hong Kong International Airport	Protesters distributed leaflets and displayed posters to inform travellers of their reasons for protest and to enlist support from the international community. About 15 000 participated according to organiser, 4 000 at peak according to police.
27 Jul 2019 (Sat)	Rally and recession for an event "Reclaim Yuen Long" (「光復元朗」)	Yuen Long	Protesters protested against the Yuen Long Incident on 21 July. About 288 000 attended according to organiser.
28 Jul 2019 (Sun)	Hong Kong Island Procession	Central - Sheung Wan	Participants of an authorised sit-in at Chater Garden diverted to Causeway Bay and Western District in the late afternoon. Some violent protesters had violent clashes in Sheung Wan with police officers.
August 2019			
1 Aug 2019 (Thu)	"Flash" protest organised by members from the financial sectors	Central	To demonstrate against the Fugitive Offenders Bill.
2 Aug 2019 (Fri)	Rallies held by medical professionals and Civil Servants	Central	Around ten thousand participants joined the rally organised by medical professionals. Members from Civil Service sector gathered to demand an independent inquiry into recent incidents.

3 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Procession in Mong Kok (「旺角再遊行」)	Mong Kok - Tsim Sha Tsui, Hung Hom, Wong Tai Sin	The procession descended into protests in different directions to Yau Ma Tei, Tsim Sha Tsui, along with blocking of Cross-Harbour Tunnel, siege of police stations in Tsim Sha Tsui, Mong Kok.
4 Aug 2019 (Sun)	Procession in Tseung Kwan O and rally in Kennedy Town	Hong Kong Island (Kennedy Town, Sheung Wan, Causeway Bay) Kowloon (Tseung Kwan O, Kwun Tong, Wong Tai Sin, Hung Hom) New Territories (Tin Shui Wai)	Procession in Tseung Kwan O turned into conflicts between protesters and police. Rally in Western District spilling over to Causeway Bay. Flash mob, hit-and-run protests in multiple districts and locations. Protesters barricaded and placed various objects at the toll booths, paralysing the tunnel traffic. At night, hundreds of violent protesters staged another stand-off outside Wong Tai Sin Police Station, occasionally attacking with bricks and miscellaneous objects.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

5 Aug 2019 (Mon)	General strike in 7 districts (「全港三罷、七區開花」)	Hong Kong Island Kowloon New Territories	<p>Rallies at Tamar Park in Admiralty, MacPherson Playground in Mong Kok, Wong Tai Sin Square, Fung Shui Square in Tai Po, Sha Tin Town Hall, Tsuen Wan Park and Tuen Mun Park.</p> <p>Protesters resorted to urban guerrilla tactics in multiple districts in Hong Kong Island, Kowloon and the New Territories.</p> <p>Flash mob protests in various locations including Admiralty, Mong Kok, Tsim Sha Tsui, Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, Cross-Harbour Tunnel etc.</p> <p>Protesters barricaded and placed various objects at the toll booths, paralysing the tunnel traffic.</p>
6 Aug 2019 (Tue)	Siege of Sham Shui Po Police Station	Sham Shui Po	<p>A student union leader was arrested for possession of offensive weapons.</p> <p>Protesters besieged the police station to support the student.</p>
7 Aug 2019 (Wed)	Protesters gathered at Hong Kong Space Museum	Tsim Sha Tsui	<p>Hundreds of protesters gathered at Hong Kong Space Museum and shone their laser pointers on the egg-shaped dome of the museum in protest against the arrest of the Student Union President of Hong Kong Baptist University (HKBU).</p>

9 Aug 2019 (Fri)	A three-day mass sit-in protest at the arrival halls of the HK International Airport was launched (「萬人接機」機場集會)	Hong Kong International Airport	Several thousands joined the sit-in.
10 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Protests in various locations	New Territories (Tai Wai, Sha Tin, Tai Po, Kwai Chung, Tsuen Wan) Kowloon (Tsim Sha Tsui, Hung Hom, Kowloon Bay, Kwun Tong, Tsuen Wan and Kowloon Tong)	Multiple ‘flash mob’ style protests erupted across the city (Tai Po, Tai Wai, Hung Hom etc.) with protesters emerging from the MTR system, blocking a number of thoroughfares including Cross-Harbour Tunnel.
11 Aug 2019 (Sun)	"Flash" protests in various locations	Hong Kong Island (Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, North Point, Tai Koo, Sai Wan Ho)Kowloon (Sham Shui Po, Cheung Sha Wan, Tsim Sha Tsui, Mei Foo, Kowloon Tong)New Territories (Kwai Fong, Kwai Fong)	Police fired tear gas at Kwai Fong Station and pepper balls at Tai Koo Station. A female sustained injuries in her right eye allegedly caused by the Police outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

12 Aug 2019 (Mon)	Rally and blocking of arrival halls and check-in/departure passageways at the Hong Kong International Airport (「警察還眼」)	Hong Kong International Airport	Protesters aimed to paralyse the airport operations and protest at the escalation of violence over 10-11 August. By 4pm all departure flights were cancelled.
	Grievance against police operation	Tai Koo MTR Station	About a hundred people gathered in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against Police operations at the station on 11 August 2019.
13 Aug 2019 (Tue)	Protest at the Airport continued	Hong Kong International Airport	The protest ended in scenes of chaos in the evening as protesters assaulted and detained two mainland Chinese males, obstructed ambulance and confronted police outside the terminal.
16 Aug 2019 (Fri)	Rally "Stand With Hong Kong Power to the People" (「英美港盟，主權在民」)	Central	It was organised by Hong Kong Higher Institutions International Affairs Delegation (香港大專學界國際事務代表團) and a LIHKG discussion forum group 「我要攞炒」. About 60 000 attended according to organiser, 7 100 at peak according to police.
17 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Public procession (「光復紅土遊行」)	To Kwa Wan, Whampoa	Several thousands joined the procession.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

18 Aug 2019 (Sun)	Rally at Victoria Park	Causeway Bay - Admiralty	<p>Due to large crowd, participants occupied carriageways of Causeway Road and Hennessy Road after leaving the public meeting venue.</p> <p>About 1.7 million participated according to organiser, 128 000 at peak according to police.</p>
20 Aug 2019 (Tue)	Grievance against police operation	Tai Koo MTR Station	About a hundred people gathered again in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against Police Operation at the station on 11 August 2019.
21 Aug 2019 (Wed)	Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long MTR Station	A thousand protesters assembled at Yuen Long Station in commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident.
23 Aug 2019 (Fri)	Protest by forming human chains "Hong Kong Way"	Various locations	<p>Along MTR lines from Kennedy Town to Causeway Bay, from Kowloon Tong to Yau Ma Tei, along the Tsim Sha Tsui harbourfront, and from Tsuen Wan to Lai King, as well as further east along the Kwun Tong line.</p> <p>About 210 000 participated in 60 km for the "Hong Kong Way"</p>
24 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Public procession and meeting in Kwun Tong	Kowloon Tong, Sham Shui Po, Wong Tai Sin, Kwun Tong	More than 1 000 joined the procession. Some protesters caused damage to the smart lamppost in Kowloon Bay.

25 Aug 2019 (Sun)	Public meetings and procession in Kwai Tsing	New Territories (Kwai Tsing, Tsuen Wan)	Public events in Tsuen Wan descended into violent clashes between the police and protesters. Police deployed water cannon for the first time in Tsuen Wan and a warning shot was fired.
28 Aug 2019 (Wed)	Rally to protest against sexual violence of police force (「反送中 #Metoo 集會」)	Central	More than 30 000 joined the #Metoo rally according to organiser, 11 000 at peak according to police.
31 Aug 2019 (Sat)	Unauthorised procession on Hong Kong Island, protests and clashes in various locations	Hong Kong Island (Central, Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, North Point) Kowloon (Yau Tsim Mong, Wong Tai Sin, Kwun Tong, Hang Hau)	Protests on Hong Kong Island without LoNO. Protests extended to various districts including North Point, Tsim Sha Tsui, Mong Kok, Wong Tai Sin, Kwun Tong and Chai Wan. Police entered the Prince Edward Station and took arrest actions.
September 2019			
1 Sep 2019 (Sun)	“Fly to Freedom” 2.0 (「和你飛 2.0」)	Hong Kong International Airport, Tung Chung	Protesters blocked and vandalised roads outside Hong Kong International Airport and nearby Tung Chung area including MTR station.
2 Sep 2019 (Mon)	Rally on general strike of cross sectors, class boycotts started in secondary schools and universities	Various locations	3 000 according to the organiser for the sit-in assembly in CUHK. 40 000 according to organiser for the general strike rally.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

5 Sep 2019 (Thu)	"Human Chain" events	Various locations	Secondary students from various schools joined their hands to form "Human chains".
7 Sep 2019 (Sat)	"Fly to Freedom" 3.0 (「和你飛 3.0」)	Hong Kong International Airport	Protesters called for another traffic disruption at the Airport.
8 Sep 2019 (Sun)	Rally and procession to the U.S. Consulate General (「香港人權與民主祈禱會」)	Central - Causeway Bay	To urge the US congress to pass Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act.
9-13 Sep 2019 (Mon-Fri)	Widespread line-up of human chains, mass signing of the protest theme song "Glory to Hong Kong" (願榮光歸香港)	Various locations	
15 Sep 2019 (Sun)	Procession which was objected by the police	Causeway Bay - Central	Procession led to clashes outside Central Government Offices and LegCo, some protesters set fire at multiple locations in Central and Admiralty.
21 Sep 2019 (Sat)	Yuen Long sit-in rally	Yuen Long	A sit-in for the two-month of the Yuen Long Incident, which ended with a night of tear gas and petrol bombs.
	Public procession "Reclaim Tuen Tuen Mun Park" (「光復屯門公園」遊行)	Tuen Mun	Tuen Mun protest turned into conflicts between police and protesters. Police fired rounds of tear gas and sponge grenades.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

27 Sep 2019 (Fri)	Rally in support of arrestees who had been detained at San Uk Ling Holding Centre (「聲援新屋嶺被捕者集會」)	Central	About 50 000 participated according to organiser, 9 520 at peak according to police.
28 Sep 2019 (Sat)	Rally organised by CHRF (「反抗威權迎接黎明」)	Admiralty - Causeway Bay	To commemorate the Occupy Central Movement in 2014.
29 Sep 2019 (Sun)	Protest on anti-totalitarianism (「929 全球反極權」大遊行)	Hong Kong Island (Causeway Bay - Central)	It led to clashes in Central District. An Indonesian reporter was injured on her right eye by a police rubber bullet in Wan Chai. A warning shot was fired by the Police.
October 2019			
1 Oct 2019 (Tue)	"National Grief March" on Hong Kong Island (「沒有國慶 只有國殤」遊行) and Protests in six districts (「六區開花」)	Various locations (including Causeway Bay, Wan Chai, Admiralty, Central, Wong Tai Sin, Sham Shui Po, Mong Kok, Sha Tin, Tuen Mun, Tsuen Wan, etc.)	Despite the Police's refusal of CHRF's application for launching the march, thousands of protesters marched from Causeway Bay to Central in the afternoon. Meanwhile, violent protests were held in various districts across the city. Clashes between protesters and the Police were the most ferocious and extensive since 12 Oct 2019. First injury case by live bullet fired by police in Tsuen Wan.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

04 Oct 2019 (Fri) - 5 Oct 2019 (Sat)	Protests in various districts against the Anti-mask Law	Various locations (including Causeway Bay, Sha Tin, Mong Kok, Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Yuen Long, etc.)	On 4 Oct 2019, the HKSAR Government announced that the “Anti-mask Law” would come into effect on 5 Oct 2019. Citywide violent protests in opposition to the new law were held in various districts. Second injury case by live bullet fired by police in Yuen Long on 4 Oct 2019.
6 Oct 2019 (Sun)	Two unauthorized Anti-mask Law protests in Kowloon and on Hong Kong Island (「九龍革命, 港島起義」)	Various locations (including Causeway Bay, Central, Admiralty, Tsim Sha Tsui, Mong Kok, Kowloon Tong and Sham Shui Po etc.)	Protesters on Hong Kong Island marched from Causeway Bay to Central while those in Kowloon marched from Tsim Sha Tsui to Sham Shui Po. Protesters blocked major roads at multiple locations and vandalised -MTR stations and shops with links to the Mainland. MTR Corporation suspended all service for the very first time.
7 Oct 2019 (Mon)	Protests against the Anti-mask Law	Various locations including Mong Kok, Tai Po, Ma On Shan and Tseung Kwan O	Sporadic protests in opposition to the Anti-mask Law continued in a number of locations.
10 Oct 2019 (Thu)	Protest on “World Sight Day”	Tsim Sha Tsui	Protesters gathered outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station in support of a woman who suffered from eye injury in the protest on 11 Aug 2019.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

12 Oct 2019 (Sat)	Unauthorized protest against the Anti-mask Law	Tsim Sha Tsui to Sham Shui Po	Protesters held an unauthorized protest from Tsim Sha Tsui to Sham Shui Po against the Anti-mask law.
13 Oct 2019 (Sun)	Territory-wide Shopping Malls Protests (「18區開花」行動)	Various locations (including Central, Kwun Tong, Tuen Mun, Tsuen Wan, Sha Tin, Mong Kok etc.)	Protesters deployed flashmob strategy by popping up at major shopping malls in different districts to vandalize shops and MTR stations. A protester slashed an officer's neck in Kwun Tong.
14 Oct 2019 (Mon)	Protests in Central and Tiu King Leng	Central and Tiu King Leng	An assembly was held in Chater Garden in Central calling for the US to enact the “Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act”. Crowds gathered in VTC in Tiu King Leng to urge the campus management to release the CCTV footage relating to the VTC student incident
18 Oct 2019 (Fri)	“Human chain” protests	Various districts including Causeway Bay, Sha Tin, Tsuen Wan, etc.	Protesters formed human chains across the city and chanted protest slogans.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

20 Oct 2019 (Sun)	Unauthorised protest in Tsim Sha Tsui	Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station	Despite the Police's refusal of CHRF's application for launching the protest, thousands of protesters participated in the protest from Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station, which later turned into clashes and vandalised acts in a number of areas in Kowloon. Water cannon sprayed blue-dyed water at Kowloon Mosque.
21 Oct 2019 (Mon)	Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long, Causeway, Mong Kok, Tseung Kwan O, Tai Wai MTR stations	To mark the 3rd month commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident at various MTR stations.
24 Oct 2019 (Thu)	Protest in Chater Garden	Central	A rally was held to support protesters in Catalonia, Spain.
26 Oct 2019 (Sat)	Rally at Chater Garden	Central	Hundreds of medical professionals gathered in Central to protest against alleged Police violence.
27 Oct 2019 (Sun)	Unauthorised assembly in Tsim Sha Tsui(「追究警暴, 守護清真寺, 守護民眾記者」集會)	Tsim Sha Tsui - Mong Kok, Sham Shui Po, Whampoa, Kwun Tong	The rally in Tsim Sha Tsui soon turned into violent clashes between protesters and the Police. Some protesters moved to other districts blocking roads and vandalizing properties.
31 Oct 2019 (Thur)	Assembly outside Prince Edward MTR station	Kowloon (Prince Edward, Kowloon Bay)	To mark the 2nd month commemoration of the Prince Edward Station Incident.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

November 2019			
2 Nov 2019 (Sat)	Protests on Hong Kong Island and Tsim Sha Tsui	Hong Kong Island (Causeway Bay, Wan Chai, Central) Kowloon (Mong Kok and Tsim Sha Tsui)	Office of Xinhua News Agency in Wan Chai was attacked for the first time, with its glass doors and windows smashed and lobby set on fire.
3 Nov 2019 (Sun)	7-district "street-wandering" protest (「七區行街」反對警方濫暴)	Various locations (Sha Tin, Tai Po, Tuen Mun, Wong Tai Sin, Diamond Hill, Taikoo Shing, Tseung Kwan O)	Some protesters vandalised the MTR facilities and selected shops, prompting the early closure of a few large shopping malls.
4 Nov 2019 (Mon)	Confrontation between protesters and police over a police officer's wedding	Tseung Kwan O	An HKUST student sustained fatal injuries after falling from height in Tseung Kwan O.
5 Nov 2019 (Tue)	Protests in Tsim Sha Tsui and Tseung Kwan O	Tseung Kwan O	For protest in Tsim Sha Tsui, it was to mark the one-month of anti-mask regulation. For the one in Tseung Kwan O, it was about protest against police operation on 4 November in relation to a HKUST student's fall.
8 Nov 2019 (Fri)	Protests in relation to the death of the HKUST Student	Causeway Bay, Yau Ma Tei, Mong Kok, Tuen Mun, Tseung Kwan O, Whampoa, Tsuen Wan	The HKUST student was certified death that morning.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

10 Nov 2019 (Sun)	“Shopping mall” rallies and protests in various locations	Various shopping malls in Sha Tin, Kowloon Tong, Hang Hau, Tsuen Wan, Tuen Mun, Causeway Bay	Protesters loitered in several malls, vandalised shops and facilities therein.
11 Nov 2019 (Mon)	Citywide "all-in strike" campaign (「三罷行動」) leading to disruptions and clashes in various locations The early actions to cause traffic disruptions was coined "Dawn Action" (「黎明行動」)	Various locations with particular focus in Sai Wan Ho, Sha Tin (CUHK campus), Kwai Fong, Causeway Bay, Mong Kok	A 21-year-old man was shot by a police officer in Sai Wan Ho. Police entered university campuses for arrest and dispersal operation. A violent protester poured gasoline on a man and set him on fire after he chastised a group of masked protesters vandalising Ma On Shan MTR Station.
12 Nov 2019 (Tue)	Continuation of citywide general strike and "Daybreak Action" advancing start time at 6.30am (「破曉行動」) Clashes at CUHK Protests in other areas to save "CUHK" (「圍魏救趙」行動)	Various locations with particular focus in Kowloon Tong (CityU and HKBU campuses), Pokfulam (HKU main campus), Mong Kok, Hung Hom (PolyU campus), Central, Kwun Tong, Sha Tin (CUHK campus), Mong Kok and Tai Po	Clashes on and near Bridge No. 2 at entrance of CUHK. Highest number of tear gas, rubber rounds and beanbag rounds fired up to 12 November 2019.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

13 Nov 2019 (Wed)	Continuation of citywide general strike and "Dagian Action" (「晨曦行動」) Clashes at CUHK	Various locations with particular focus in Sheung Shui, Tin Shui Wai, Kowloon Tong, Central, Sha Tin (CUHK)	High Court dismissed CUHK Student Union's application for an injunction to stop police from entering the Chinese University campus without a search warrant or the university's consent. In Sheung Shui, a 70-year-old cleaning worker was reported to be hit in the head by a brick hurled from a group believed to be violent protesters in the midst of a confrontation between the violent protesters and a group of local residents. The man died on 14 November 2019.
14 Nov 2019 (Thu)	Continuation of citywide general strike and "Twilight Action" (「曙光行動」)	Various locations with particular focus in Sha Tin, Kowloon Tong, Tsim Sha Tsui, Hung Hom, Central	Clashes at university campuses continued.
15 Nov 2019 (Fri)	Continuation of citywide general strike and "Sunrise Action" (「旭日行動」)	Various locations with particular focus in Aberdeen, Yuen Long, Tseung O, Hung Hom, Mong Kok	Clashes between protesters and police continued.
16 Nov 2019 (Sat)	Clashes near PolyU and nearby Tsim Sha Tsui area	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	Clashes between protesters and police in Tsim Sha Tsui, near PolyU campus, black-clad protesters lobbed petrol bombs at advancing lines of police on Chatham Road South.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

17 Nov 2019 (Sun)	Clashes near PolyU campus continued Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	Main buildings of PolyU campus were reportedly fortified by protesters. Police besieged PolyU campus from 17 November night.
18 Nov 2019 (Mon)	Clashes near PolyU campus continued Siege of PolyU Protests in Yau Tsim Mong area outside PolyU (「圍魏救趙」行 動)	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom, Yau Ma Tei, Tsim Sha Tsui, Mong Kok	Police dispersal and arrest operation from mid-night to early morning at PolyU, while people on the campus launched attacks with petrol bombs and setting fires. Highest number of tear gas, rubber rounds and beanbag rounds fired. Protesters called for rescuing protesters at PolyU by launching protests in Yau Tsim Mong area outside PolyU.
	High Court ruled that the anti-mask regulation was unconstitutional and "exceeds what is reasonably necessary to achieve the aim of law enforcement		

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

19 Nov 2019 (Tue)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	Police said they have seized over 3 900 petrol bombs at CUHK campus, and collected evidence after the university management reported theft of dangerous chemicals from laboratories.
20 Nov 2019 (Wed)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	Protesters at PolyU tried to leave on their means than to surrender to police, through sewage system and by zip-lining. All voluntary medics/first aiders have reportedly left PolyU campus by the night of 20 November.
21 Nov 2019 (Thu)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	About 50-100 protesters reportedly remained on PolyU campus which has been besieged by police since 17 November.
	Silent sit-in at YoHo Mall near Yuen Long MTR station	Yuen Long	To mark the 4th month of the Yuen Long Incident.
22 Nov 2019 (Fri)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	
23 Nov 2019 (Sat)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	
24 Nov 2019 (Sun)	Siege of PolyU		People trapped inside PolyU campus accused the police of stripping them of their right to vote.
	District Council Election polling date		
25 Nov 2019 (Mon)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	PolyU management issued statements to appeal people to leave.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

26 Nov 2019 (Tue)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	PolyU management has formed a working group to persuade the remaining people to leave the campus as soon as possible.
27 Nov 2019 (Wed)	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	
28 Nov 2019 (Thu)	Thanksgiving Day Rally at Edinburgh Place in Central	Hong Kong Island (Central)	To express gratitude to the US for passing the Hong Kong Human Rights and Democracy Act into law.
	Siege of PolyU	Tsim Sha Tsui / Hung Hom	The Police and FSD entered PolyU for gathering evidence of crime/damage and handling hazardous chemicals. The cordon around PolyU was lifted the next day.
30 Nov 2019 (Sat)	Assembling outside Prince Edward MTR station	Kowloon (Prince Edward, Kowloon Bay)	To mark the 3rd month of the Prince Edward Station Incident.
December 2019			
1 Dec 2019 (Sun)	Public meetings and processions in various locations	Central, Tsim Sha Tsui, Whampoa, Mong Kok	For the procession started in Tsim Sha Tsui on the themed "Forget not our objective" (「毋忘初心」大遊行), the organiser estimated around 380 000 participated. The Police counted 16 000 at peak. At night, clashes erupted between protesters and the Police in Whampoa and Mong Kok.
2 Dec 2019 (Mon)	Rally in Chater Garden of advertising sector	Central	Over 1 000 advertising sector workers started a week-long strike with a rally in Chater Garden.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

6 Dec 2019 (Fri)	"Lunch with you" protest (「和你 Lunch」) in various locations	Central, Tai Koo, Cheung Sha Wan, San Po Kong, Kwun Tong	"Lunch with you" in Central, Cheung Sha Wan, Tai Koo, San Po Kong and Kwun Tong.
8 Dec 2019 (Sun)	"World Day of Human Rights Rally 2019" (「12.8 國際人權日」遊行)	Causeway Bay, Wan Chai, Central	The first Police approved CHRF POE since August 2019. CHRF estimated that around 800 000 participated, while the Police counted 183 000 at the peak.
9 Dec 2019 (Mon)	People advocated a general strike protest on 9 December morning causing traffic disruptions	Sha Tin, Tuen Mun, Fanling, Tai Po, Mong Kok	Police were present at various MTR stations in the morning, including Mong Kok and Tuen Mun.
12 Dec 2019 (Thu)	Rally in Edinburgh Place to mark six months of 12 June 2019	Central	Organiser estimated 43 000 participated in the Rally, while the Police counted 5 800 at peak.
15 Dec 2019 (Sun)	"Shopping with you" in various shopping malls	Shopping malls in various districts, e.g. Cityplaza, Harbour City, Metroplaza, New Town Plaza, Popcorn, Times Square	Protesters staged protests in several shopping malls, where they disrupted the operations of shops and restaurants.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

20 Dec 2019 (Fri)	Protest in Central in support of Spark Alliance	Central	<p>Some protesters gathered outside HSBC Headquarters at lunchtime to protest against the actions of HSBC and the Police in relation to Spark Alliance, a fund-raising platform for protesters.</p> <p>HSBC closed the account of Spark Alliance and the Police arrested four persons related to Spark Alliance in November and 19 December 2019 respectively.</p>
21 Dec 2019 (Sat)	Protest in Yuen Long to mark five months of the Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long	Around a hundred protesters gathered at the Yoho Mall near Yuen Long Station. They chanted slogans and sang "Glory to Hong Kong".
22 Dec 2019 (Sun)	Rally in Edinburgh Place in support of the Muslim Uyghurs in Xinjiang	Central	Around 1 000 attended the rally according to the organiser. The rally ended in clashes between protesters and the Police after a National Flag was removed from City Hall nearby.
23 Dec 2019 (Mon)	Rally in Edinburgh Place in support of Spark Alliance	Central	The organiser estimated 45 000 joined the rally in Edinburgh Place, while the Police counted 3 300 at peak.
24 Dec 2019 (Tue)	"Shopping with you" in various shopping malls	Shopping malls in various districts, e.g. Harbour City, New Town Plaza, Time Square, Yoho Mall	Protesters chanted slogans and disrupted business deemed to be pro-Government or not supporting their actions. An HSBC branch in Mong Kok was targeted. Protesters smashed up glass doors and set up a fire inside the branch.

25 Dec 2019 (Wed)	"Shopping with you" in various shopping malls	Shopping malls in various districts, e.g. APM, Harbour City, New Town Plaza, Telford Plaza	Similar to the day before, protesters chanted slogans and disrupted business deemed to be pro-Government or not supporting their actions.
26 Dec 2019 (Thu)	"Shopping with you" in various shopping malls	Shopping malls in various districts, e.g. Harbour City, Langham Place, Sogo, Tai Po Mega Mall, Time Square, V City,	Similar to the day before, protesters chanted slogans and disrupted business deemed to be pro-Government or not supporting their actions.
31 Dec 2019 (Tue)	Protest outside Prince Edward Station	Prince Edward, Mong Kok	Protesters gathered at Prince Edward Station to mark four months of the Prince Edward Station Incident.
January 2020			
1 Jan 2020 (Wed)	New Year's Day procession "Keep our commitment, stand as one! — —2020 New Year Rally" (毋忘承諾，並肩同行——民陣元旦大遊行)	Causeway Bay - Central	It was organised by CHRF. Over 1.03 million joined according to organiser; 60 000 at peak according to police. The procession ended earlier about 5:30pm, some protesters vandalised shops and banks, some even set fire and spray-painted the lion sculptures of HSBC headquarters.
2 Jan 2020 (Thu)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Central	At about 1300, about 100 citizens gathered in and around Statue Square in Central. The crowd walked towards Pedder Street and disbanded at about 1345.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

3 Jan 2020 (Fri)	Rally by professional teachers at Edinburgh Place (「無懼白色恐怖，堅守教師專業」)	Central	About 20 000 attended according to organiser, 2 500 at peak according to police.
5 Jan 2020 (Sun)	Procession against cross-border parallel trading activities in Sheung Shui (「和理行之不要水貨辦年貨」遊行)	Sheung Shui	About 10 000 joined according to organiser, 2 500 at peak according to police.
6 Jan 2020 (Mon)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Wan Chai, Causeway Bay	Protesters walked along Hennessy Road and Johnston Road. Some people raised banners and shouted slogans in common with the protests.
8 Jan 2020 (Wed)	Vigil in Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O	Tseung Kwan O	To mark the 2nd month commemoration of the death of the HKUST student.
12 Jan 2020 (Sun)	Protest calling on the international community to impose sanctions on Hong Kong government (「天下制裁集氣大會」)	Central	About 36 000 attended according to organiser; 3 000 at peak according to police.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

16 Jan 2020 (Thu)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Kwun Tong	The rally was held in the Tsun Yip Street Playground in Kwun Tong. A crowd of about 100 moved towards How Ming Street. A “Lunch with You/Write with You” campaign was also launched in Statue Square in Central.
17 Jan 2020 (Fri)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Cheung Sha Wan, San Po Kong, Lai Chi Kok	Protesters called a rally in Cheung Sha Wan and another in San Po Kong. About 30 people gathered in the parking lot of the Hong Kong Industrial Centre and about 50 gathered in Tai Yau Street. There were also about 70 protesters shouted “release the righteous” outside the Lai Chi Kok Reception Centre.
19 Jan 2020 (Sun)	Rally calling for global sanctions on Hong Kong officials who undermine human rights	Central	The organiser was asked to call off the rally around 4pm. During the protest, it was reported some protesters sprayed graffiti on a Bank of China building, set fires on roads, vandalised traffic lights.
21 Jan 2020 (Tue)	Video showing rally in vicinity of Yuen Long MTR Station and sit-in rallies in several MTR stations	Yuen Long MTR Station	To mark 6th month of the Yuen Long Incident. The night ended with police dispersed the crowd with pepper spray.
25 Jan 2020 (Sat)	Protest in memory of fourth year of Mong Kok riot	Mong Kok	Turned into clashes between police and protesters.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

26 Jan 2020 (Sun)	Protest in memory of fourth year of "Fishball revolution" in Mong Kok (「魚蛋革命四周年」)	Mong Kok	Turned into clashes between police and protesters.
30 Jan 2020 (Thu)	Assembling of people outside Prince Edward Station in light of the Prince Edward Station Incident	Mong Kok	To mark the 5th month of the Prince Edward Station Incident.
February 2020			
3 Feb 2020 (Mon)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Central	More than a hundred people gathered inside the shopping mall of the International Financial Centre mall in Central to "Support Medical Strikes" so as to pressurise the Government to close the borders.
4 Feb 2020 (Tue)	Lunch with You (「和你 Lunch」)	Central	The event was held in Central to support the strike of medical professionals.
8 Feb 2020 (Sat)	Vigil in Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O	Tseung Kwan O	More than 100 people gathered at the parking lot of Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O to Commemorate the Death of the HKUST Student in November 2019.
19 Feb 2020 (Wed)	Vigil in Sheung Tak Estate in Tseung Kwan O	Tseung Kwan O	About 70 people gathering on the ground floor of the parking lot in Sheung Tak Village, Tseung Kwan O to commemorate the death of the female VTC student.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM
THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

21 Feb 2020 (Fri)	Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident	Yuen Long YOHO Mall	Commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident at various locations. In Yuen Long, about 200 people gathered at the atrium of the Yoho Mall in participation of the event.
29 Feb 2020 (Sat)	Protest in light of the Prince Edward Station Incident	Prince Edward - Mong Kok	Hundreds of protesters gathered at the Prince Edward Station. There were clashes between protesters and the Police.

USE OF INTERNET IN PROPELLING THE POEs

1. Social media play an important role in the POEs.¹ Digital media have served as a vital hub of information circulation for protesters. According to a survey published in March 2020 conducted by Centre for Communication and Public Opinion Survey, The Chinese University of Hong Kong, people often relies on online news media (over 80% to nearly 100%), Facebook (roughly 80% to 90%) and the online discussion forum LIHKG (roughly 50% to 90%) as sources of information about the movement against traditional media (roughly 40% to 60%)² Digital media also have served as a platform through which people can participate in the POEs. In particular, protesters often use different platforms such as Facebook, Telegram and LIHKG to distribute movement-related information and discuss issues.³

2. In general, protesters use online discussion forums such as LIHKG and messaging app such as Telegram for coordination and communication.⁴ They use these forums and apps to share information, discuss tactics and evaluate the effectiveness of tactics after every protest.⁵ LIHKG allows crowd ranking by pushing the most popular thread to the top.⁶ Telegram groups can have up to 200 000 members and public channels can have unlimited number of subscribers.⁷ These features of LIHKG and Telegram facilitate the discussion and dissemination of information. Protesters also recognise Twitter as a global platform to get the message out to audiences outside Hong Kong. While some people praised the artistic creativity of the publicity materials,⁸ others criticised such materials as helping to promote

¹ 49% of those aged 15 to 34 regarded Telegram was important for getting information about the protests, while 61 per cent in that age group felt the LIHKG platform was important for such information. And about a fifth of those aged 55 and above also found Telegram and LIHKG.

SCMP (2019-10-12). Older Hongkongers taking to online apps and social media for latest updates on protests, and some may join rallies too. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3032496/older-hongkongers-taking-online-apps-and-social-media>

² Research Report on Public Opinion during The Anti-extradition Bill Movement in Hong Kong published by Centre for Communication and Public Opinion Survey, The Chinese University of Hong Kong, March 2020

³ Ibid.

⁴ The Washington Post (2019-09-30). The Hong Kong protests have been going on for months. What explains this sustained action? Retrieved from <https://www.washingtonpost.com/politics/2019/09/30/hong-kong-protests-have-been-going-months-what-explains-this-sustained-action/>

⁵ SCMP (2019-09-28). From Occupy 2014 to protests 2019. Retrieved from <https://multimedia.scmp.com/infographics/news/hong-kong/article/3030696/from-occupy-to-hong-kong-protests/index.html>

⁶ LIHKG. LIHKG 常見問題. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1660096/page/1>

⁷ Telegram. FAQ. Retrieved from <https://telegram.org/faq#q-what-39s-the-difference-between-groups-and-channels>

⁸ BBC (2019-12-12). The powerful images of Hong Kong's protests. Retrieved from <http://www.bbc.com/culture/story/20191211-the-powerful-images-of-hong-kongs-protests>

violence and smear the Police.⁹ This part of the chapter would examine how the POEs continues and evolves with the use of the internet.

A. Appealing and mobilising people to take part in protests and use violence in the protests

Unifying Protesters

3. The POEs have been described as leaderless or “no central stage”. Yet, the internet, as an efficient and effect platform for mass communication of information or exchange of ideas, serves to unify the protesters.

4. The demands of the protests have been stated in the beginning, and changed over time at different stages. The “Five Demands” first emerged in written form at the conclusion of the protest on 16 June 2019. The demand for “setting up an independent commission of inquiry” for police probe was first raised in June 2019 and has become increasingly prominent and persistent since July 2019. Thereafter, the slogan “Five Demands, Not One Less” has been used in subsequent public meetings or processions. The “Five Demands” have then evolved as :

- (a) Full withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill
- (b) A commission of inquiry into alleged police brutality
- (c) Retracting the classification of protesters as “rioters”
- (d) Amnesty for arrested protesters
- (e) Dual universal suffrage

5. Since mid-July 2019, the slogan “Liberate Hong Kong, Revolution of Our Times” has again been popularised in the protests and has been chanted and sprayed as graffiti by protesters.

⁹ Takungpao (2019-08-24). 止暴制亂亂港文宣機器網上狂煽暴. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0824/340225.html>



Image 1: Poster containing the slogan title ‘Liberate Hong Kong, Revolution of Our Times’ with timing of 31 August 2019 at Chater Garden

(Image source: LIHKG)

6. Since August 2019, “disband the Police Force” has emerged as a new demand. The demands has been circulating on the internet to connect protesters.



Image 2: Poster stating ‘Six Demands Not One Less’, the additional demand on top of the ‘Five Demands’ is ‘Disband the Police Force’

(Image source: Facebook)

Appealing by Posts with Sentimental Messages

7. It is undeniable that many people would, at different extents, moved or motivated by sentimental news, messages or pictures. The most iconic image of the “Yellow Raincoat” at the early stage of the protests originated from the incident that a male fell from height on 15 June 2019. Protesters were motivated by his death to take part in the procession on 16 June 2019, which turned out to be the largest protest in HK history. The deceased’s yellow raincoat had since become an icon.

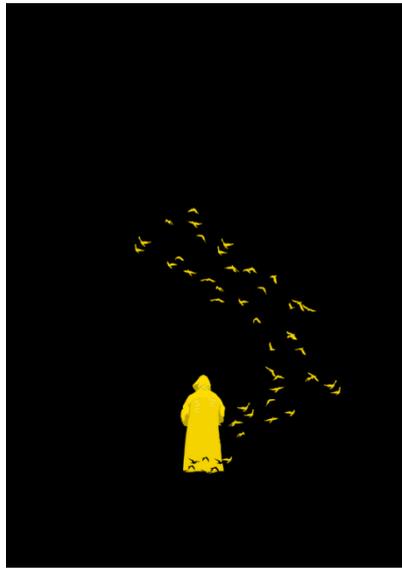


Image 3: Protest art from HK streets illustrate how people feel about fugitive bill
(Image Source: LIHKG)

8. Being saddened by the incident, some netizens asked people to come out on 16 June 2019 to show support in denouncing the Government who should be responsible and “repay by blood”:

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 4: A post on 15 June 2019 asking Hong Kong people to come out on 16 June to show support in denouncing the Government for being responsible and must 'repay by blood'

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 5: Some netizens stated that s/he 'decided to join the protest on 16 June 2019 on behalf of the male'

(Image source: LIHKG)

9. Two suicide cases happened at the end of June touched the hearts of many people. A young girl aged 21 committed suicide on 29 Jun 2019. Before she jumped down from height, she wrote her last words on the wall in red and posted onto her Instagram urging others to persevere the fight. It has been widely circulated on the internet.

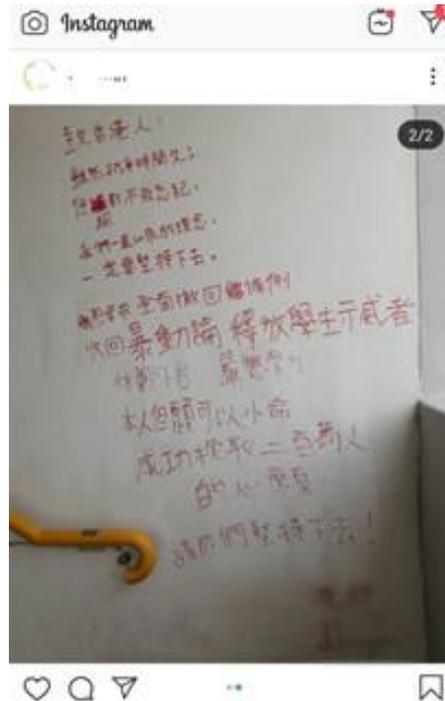


Image 6: The ‘Suicide Note’ asking all Hong Kong people not to forget and to persevere in the ‘Five Demands’

(Image source: Instagram)

10. News articles filled the internet stating the brief personal background of the deceased and the content of the ‘Suicide Note’. She stated that “I wish to spend my life for the wish of 2 million people. Please persist to fight!”

11. Within 24 hours, another lady aged 29 jumped off from IFC on 30 June 2019. She stated on her Facebook that “Hong Kong persevere, I wish to see you succeed. I cannot go on 1 July... Thanks for everyone’s love, grateful for each encounter”.¹⁰ The next day, 1 July 2019 protesters stormed the LegCo Complex.

¹⁰ Apple Daily (2019-06-30). 【引渡惡法】29 歲女子中環 ifc 墮樓亡 fb 留遺言：七一我去不了. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190630/59773700>



Image 7: News article stating the death of the “29 year old female” and the content of her post on Facebook
(Image source: Facebook)

Motivating People’s Participation of Events

12. Since June 2019, various publicity materials are circulated on the internet to solicit supports and enlist participants for various activities or protests. Starting from July 2019, netizens had been familiar with this kind of “Events Calendar” calling for support of the activities.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 8: These are examples of event calendars that called for support of the activities.

(Image source: NearSnake)

13. The promotional materials are effective as they are able to present numerous elements or multi information by a single visual aid. Sometimes, by using a punch line slogan or art work, the author could catch people’s attention to the core details of an activity.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 9: Posters calling for all citizens to go on labour strike on 5 August 2019
(Image source: LIHKG)

14. For instance, there are many posts on the internet appealing for protests on 1 October 2019 in six districts (Tuen Mun, Hong Kong Island, Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Sham Shui Po, Shatin) on the National Day.

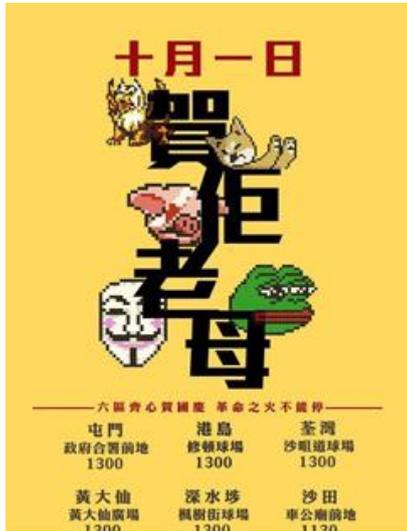


Image 10: Poster with profanity as title with appeal for '1 October 2019 – Six Districts (Tuen Mun, Hong Kong Island, Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Sham Shui Po, Shatin) celebrate National Day with the Fire of Revolution that cannot be stopped'
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 11: 1 October 2019 – 'No National Celebration, Only National Tragedy'
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 12: Online appeals mobilised people to attend protests in six districts (六區開花) on the “Day of National Mourning (國殤日)”
(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

15. Visuals with pop art designs could much engage young generations. The following are some examples of online appeals mobilising people to attend protests in five districts (Admiralty, Tsuen Wan, Wong Tai Sin, Shatin, Tuen Mun) and join the strike. The strike on 11 November 2019 was one of the major events widely covered by the media.



Image 13: “Blossom in five districts, Take Your Position”
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 14: Calls for General Strike
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 15: Poster calling for General Strike on 11 November 2019, with gathering in 18 Districts
(Image Source: LIHKG)



Image 16: Appealing for General Strike on 13 November 2019
(Image Source: LIHKG)

“Blossom Everywhere”

16. One of the characteristics of the POEs originating from the Fugitive Offenders Bill is that the protest activities have not been only centralised in traditional busy, commercial or central business districts like Admiralty, Central or Tsim Sha Tsui. Assemblies and processions have been held in different districts among the territories in residential areas like Tseung Kwan O, Yau Tong, Sha Tin and Wong Tai Sin, and even remote New Territories areas like Tin Shui Wai, Tuen Mun and Yuen Long.



Image 17: Poster to advertise public procession at Shatin on 14 July 2019 – stand up for your family
(Image source: LIHKG)

17. Some people who might not be so involved with objection to the Fugitive Offenders Bill but have been long unsatisfied with some district matters are engaged in these district activities. People’s grievance on matters concerning their livelihood like the problems of parallel trading activities in Sheung Shui and the nuisance caused by those singing “Big Aunties” in Tuen Mun became subjects of the district processions.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 18: Two posters titled: ‘Liberate Sheung Shui’ to advertise a gathering on 13 July 2019 at the Sheung Shui Garden No. 1

(Image source: HK01)

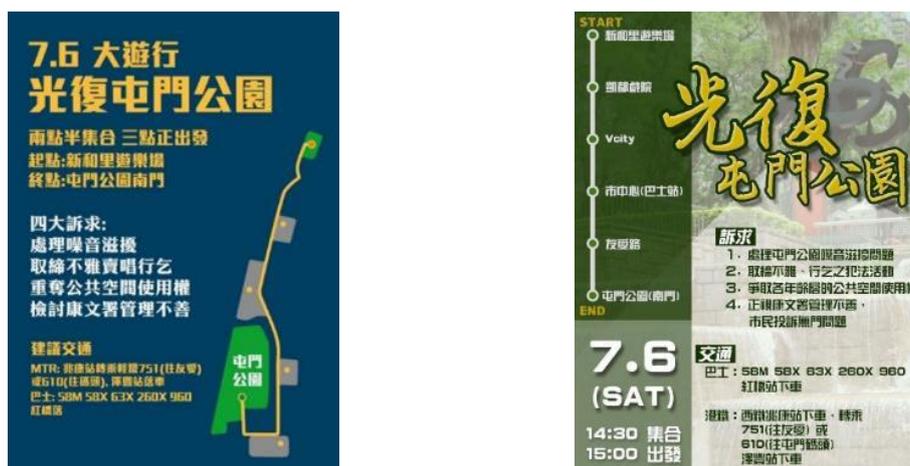


Image 19: Two posters titled: ‘Liberate Tuen Mun Park’ to advertise a gathering on 6 July 2019 at San Wo Lane Playground

(Image source: LIHKG)

18. These district events did absorb and further unify a large portion of participants as they share common interest in the same neighbourhood on top of the demands raised in the POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill. In fact, by these events, some giant chat groups of the neighbourhood were formed like ‘Shatin Group’¹¹ and ‘Tseung Kwan O Group’¹² which did unify protesters in those districts and boost not only their participation but also their sense of belonging in the POEs they participated. The formation of these chat groups helped to fuel their grudges or dissatisfaction on district matters onto the POEs.

¹¹ Facebook Group “Shatin”. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/groups/751264848301326/photos/>

¹² Facebook Group “Tseung Kwan O”. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/groups/1063204770469453/>



Image 20: Poster advertising processions on 11 August 2019
at Sham Shui Po and Hong Kong Island East

(Image source: LIHKG)

B. Sharing information on how to act in concert to assist the violent protesters in the clashes with the Police

19. Though the protest has been described as leaderless and ‘no central stage’, discussions and dissemination of information on the internet is an organic process that, through the interaction of the netizens, some sophisticated or practical opinions would stand out and become noticeable, and adopted by the protesters. The following post is a typical example showing that, though the author of the post did not hold out to be an expert, his advices was ‘liked’ by at least 1 572 netizens.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 21: Instructions on how to participate in the protests on 2 November 2019 in terms of what to wear, bring and act
(Image Source: LIHKG)

20. Social media provides an easy and convenient forum for protesters to discuss and exchange ideas in tactics of combatting Police actions. For instance, after 21 July incident (For details please refer to Chapter 10), there were discussion on the internet on how to act in response to the attack in Yuen Long.

← 「長期置頂」727元朗反鄉黑遊行終極攻略



再從長計議。

1. 直接衝殺入村是否理智？

我絕對明白好多手足既憤怒，作為一個係元朗長大既人我更加體諒到你地既心情，更唔好話當日係西鐵站裏面既受害者。但係你地覺得由星期一凌晨開始講起既光復元朗班圍村佬會唔知道？會唔準備？坦白講如果我地貿貿然衝入村基本上同警犬當日衝入沙田新城市廣場一樣，你唔知人地裏面有無咩埋伏，**人地係屋裏面由上而下飛把刀落黎你點擋**？黑社會就爛命一條，**兄弟損失一個都嫌多**。

2. 分化會唔會比一棍打沉一船人好？

以牙還牙既道理大家都明，但係唔係狗咬你一咬你就要咬返佢轉頭。雖然大家呢幾日都牛屎佬圍村狗咁樣叫佢地，**但大家都唔好忽略其實有好多圍村巴絲係企我地呢邊**。如果你燒村或者拆祠堂基本上就係得罪曬所有圍村既人，同埋更加坐實暴徒之名。

小總結：

我地非常不贊同直接衝入村裏面開拖，最重要既原因係巴絲們既安危，大家可能唔知其實祠堂係村裏面最入既地方，而祠堂後面就係山，基本上無地方可以走。第二就係講白少少呢場抗鄉黑運動其實就係**抗白色恐怖**，要俾個Signal政府話俾佢地聽我地唔驚白色恐怖。我地建議可以**圍住南邊圍既門口，俾係佢正門牌匾位置，同時亦係佢地鄉公所既正門**。我地認為應該做返我地最熟悉既野，當佢警總咁樣圍。**塗鴉、dum雞蛋之類既野乜都可以做（大家發揮創意）**。如果佢地忍住唔出黎既，我覺得俾到個信號話俾大家知我地係唔驚白色恐怖既就係已經叫成功。**如果佢地出黎既，唔好猶疑，打到佢老母個墳都唔認得**。重點係，去得南邊圍既就一定要**齊裝**！

逃生路線：

1

非常非常重要！一定要！**一群人一齊離開**唔可以落單！

最理想既情況係，無論發生咩事都好入夜後一兩個鐘就點都向元朗西鐵站方向走。今次唔同對付黑警，**黑**

Image 22: Tactical discussion on the 27 July 2019 procession to counter the Yuen Long villager triads on 28 July 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

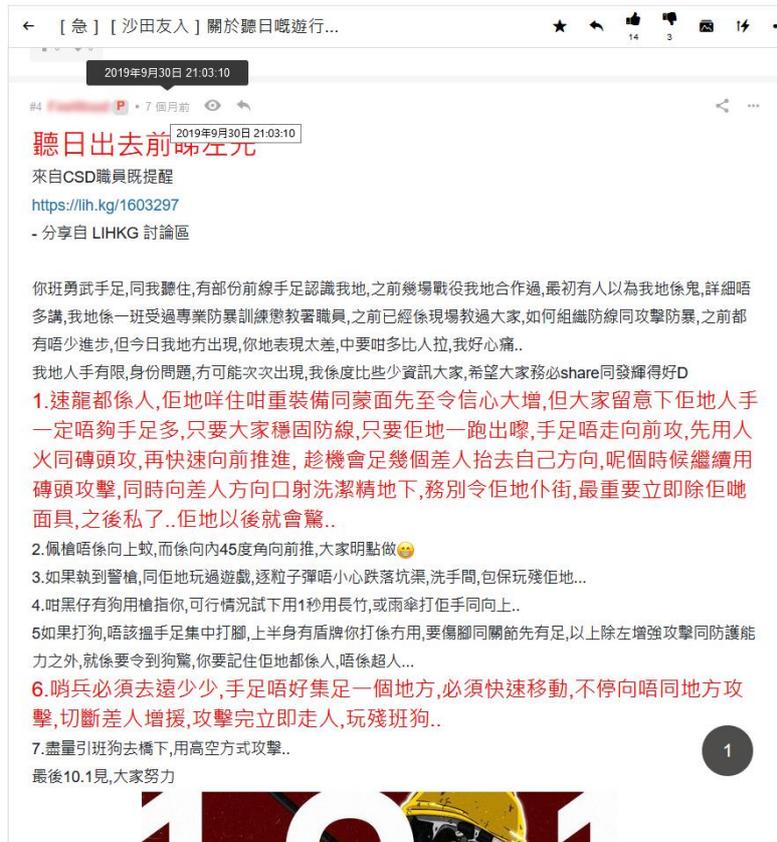


Image 23: Seven points of tactical advice on how to combat the police allegedly offered by someone purported to be a member of the Correctional Services Department

Anti-riot Unit

(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

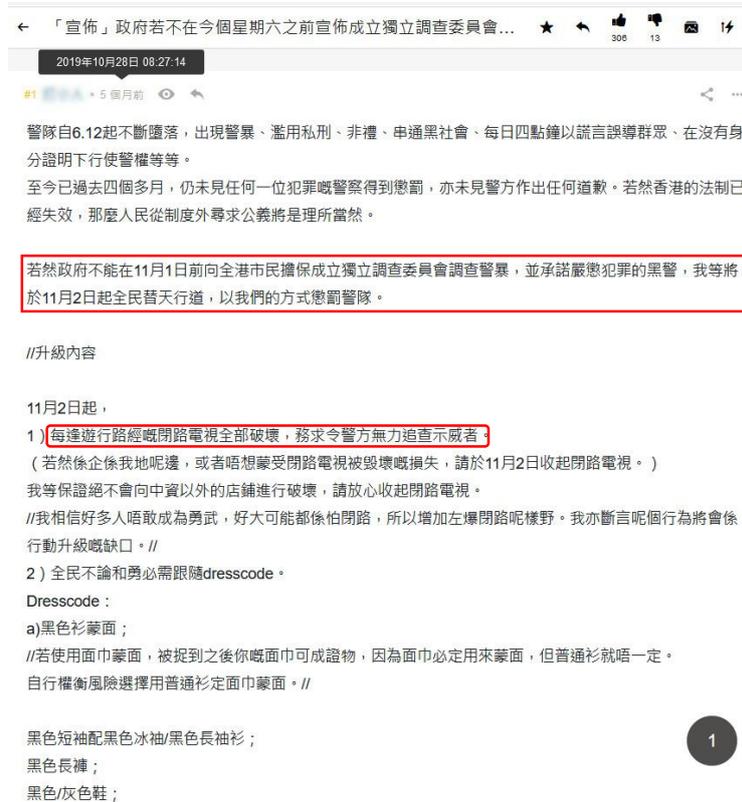


Image 24: Calls for “Punishing the Police by our means” starting from 2 November 2019. A netizen advised protesters damage all the CCTV cameras installed along the procession route so that Police could not trace the protesters.

(Image source: LIHKG)

C. Teaching people how to make weapons, such as petrol bombs

21. Netizens share the knowhow of making weapons on the internet. The following post appeared as early as June 2019 on the internet.



Image 25: A post instructing how to make petrol bombs

(Image source: LIHKG)

22. Below is an online post appeals protesters to bring weapons, e.g. rods and metal bars, and stay together in facing police officers on 1 October 2019.



Image 26: A post on 1 October 2019 appealing for protesters to bring weapons

(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 27: A post instructing how to install iron rods on roads
 (Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

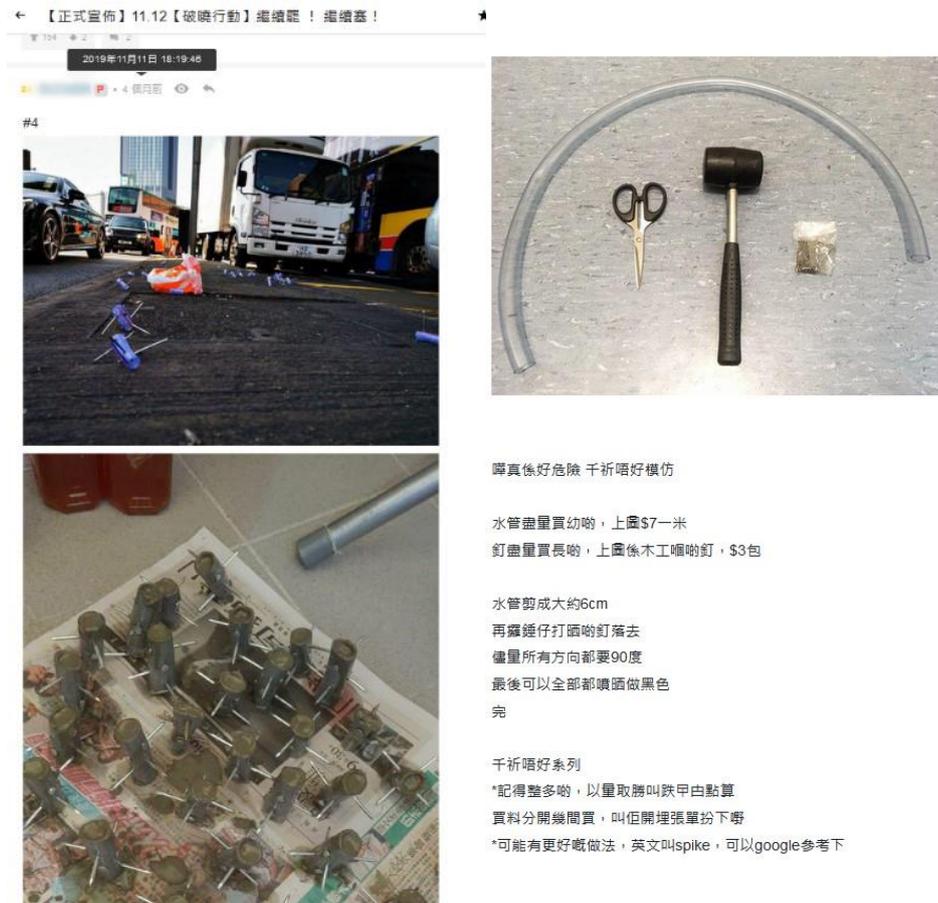


Image 28: A post instructing how to make iron nails
(Image source: LIHKG)

D. Disseminating fake news or unverified information

23. The most powerful character of the internet is the mass volume of information flow in a split of second. However, information are usually transmitted in the internet without any verification. It is understandable that if a person has already been implanted and occupied by an idea, it would be difficult to change his perception on the matter. The POEs are also characterised by the massive information flow. Different camps spread images and videos to sway public opinion.¹³ Information spreads quickly online, sometimes without verification, let alone the origin or the source of most information are unidentifiable. It is therefore increasingly difficult for the public to decide what to believe or to differentiate fact from fiction or what is fake. One example of fake news is an online video showing petrol bombs being

¹³ SCMP (2019-10-14). Hong Kong protests and 'fake news': in the psychological war for hearts and minds, disinformation becomes a weapon used by both sides. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/society/article/3032734/fake-news-and-hong-kong-protests-psychological-war-hearts>

thrown from police cordon line on 25 August 2019.¹⁴ The video was later revealed to be fabricated. Instead of the Police, it was the protesters who threw the petrol bombs on that particular occasion. An international media mistakenly referred to the fabricated video in the headline in an article. That media later corrected the headline and apologised to the HKPF for the mistake.

24. In response to rumours and false accusations against the Police, a Fact Check Team comprising of a group of inspectorate officers of the Police Public Relations Branch has been formed to find out the truth.¹⁵ The Police have also adopted various channels, e.g. press conference, stand-up briefing, press release and social media platforms, for instance Hong Kong Police Mobile App, YouTube, Facebook, Instagram, Weibo and Twitter to provide clarifications to debunk speculations.¹⁶ The Police once on Facebook rebutted some online comments stating that male officers searching a female in Tung Chung.¹⁷ The Police clarified that the concerning officer was a female with short hair.

25. There have been many articles circulating on the internet regarding the 31 August Prince Edward Station Incident accusing police brutality causing deaths in the MTR Station (Source: LIHKG). Since the incident, people gather at the Station to commemorate on every the 31th day of each month.

¹⁴ News.gov.hk (2019-08-29). Petrol bomb video is fake: Police. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/eng/2019/08/20190828/20190828_174312_813.html

¹⁵ Information provided by the Police.

¹⁶ Ibid.

For example, rumour clarifications on Facebook by the Police on the number of death in relation to protests (<https://www.facebook.com/960526577368640/posts/2425119690909314>) on 13 June 2019 and on dispersal operation near PolyU (<https://www.facebook.com/960526577368640/posts/2763973200357293>) on 18 November 2019.

¹⁷ Hong Kong Police Facebook (2019-09-09). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/photos/a.965784490176182/2601183943302887/?type=3&theater> and <https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/photos/a.965784490176182/260118399969548/?type=3&theater>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

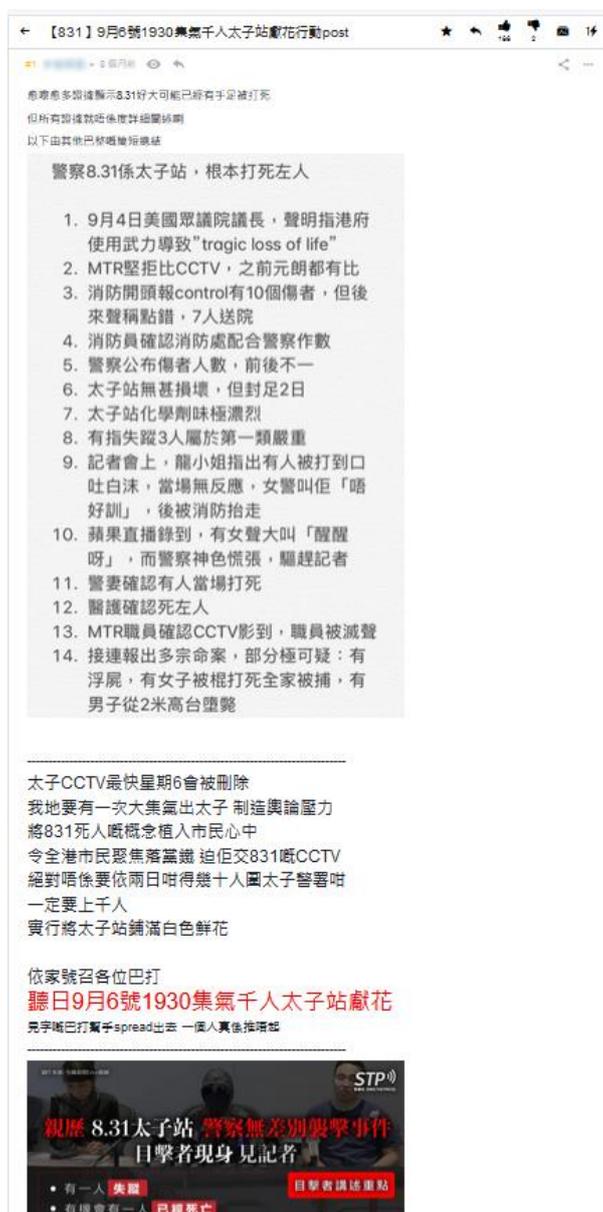


Image 29: Post that listed 14 points to support the rumour that people had been beaten to death by police on 31 August 2019 at the Prince Edward Station, with petition for a gathering on 6 September 2019 at the MTR station to present flowers

(Image source: LIHKG)

26. The death of the HKUST student in Tseung Kwan O arose accusations against the Police regarding the cause of it. There are photos on internet allegedly showing an ambulance blocked by the Police.

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



科大學生墮樓後 警察疑似阻礙救護車救援

Image 30: Photograph showing an ambulance that was allegedly blocked by the Police
(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 31: Netizens therefore opined that the Police had delayed medical assistance for the student
(Image source: LIHKG)

27. The above mentioned incidents remain unresolved in some people’s mind and its effect is still lasting. It leads to some people’s distrust or even hatred against Police.

28. As at 26 January 2020, a total of 66 press conferences were held and 66 letters or responses in other forms were sent to the media.¹⁸ When collaboration across different departments/bureaus is involved, multi-departmental press conference would be conducted, for instance, press conference was held jointly with FSD, HA and MTRC on 10 September 2019 to clarify rumours in relation to death in the incident on 31 August 2019.¹⁹

¹⁸ Information provided by HKPF.

¹⁹ SCMP (2019-09-10). Hong Kong rail operator MTR Corp finally releases images of station clashes in yet

E. Tracking of duty police officers' movement

29. In August 2019, a real time crowdsourced map – HKMap.live, was developed to show the locations of the Police. Apple Inc removed the app from its App Store in October 2019 saying that the app was used to target and ambush the Police, victimise residents and threaten public safety. The developer of the app disagreed that the app was illegal and explained that the app had received no legal complaints. Despite the removal from App Store, the app can still be accessed through the web version and be downloaded it on Google Play.

30. A post²⁰ on the internet introduced the map and encouraged the protesters to “be water”. HKmap.live also gathers reports on police patrols and tear gas deployment via Telegram.

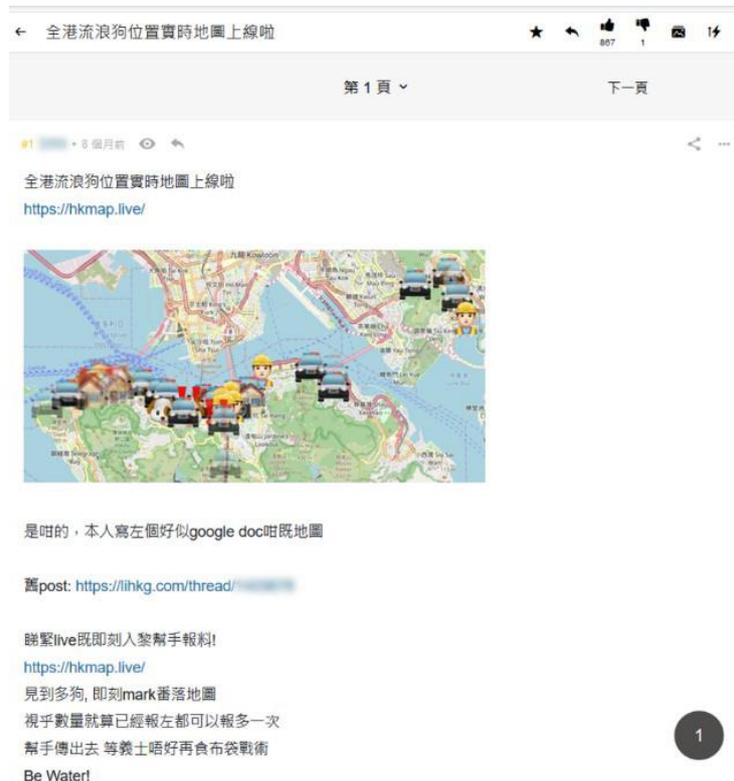


Image 32: A post on LIHKG introducing mobile app – hkmap.live
on 4 August 2019

(Image source: LIHKG)

another bid to end rumours that 3 protesters died in tussle with police. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/transport/article/3026510/hong-kong-rail-operator-mtr-corp-releases-images-station>

²⁰ LIHKG. (2019-08-04) 全港流浪狗位置實時地圖上線啦. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1406448/page/1>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 33: A post on LIHKG of a real time map showing the whereabouts of police officers near the scenes of attack on 10 August 2019.

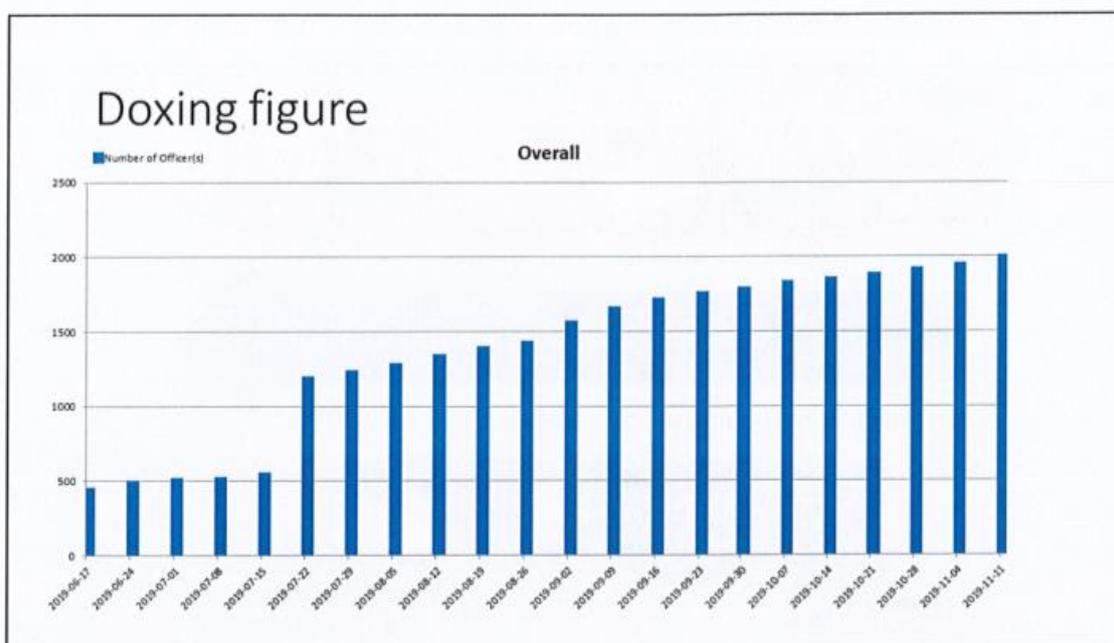
(Image source: LIHKG)²¹

31. Police’s actions and deployment plans in attempt to combat the protesters are defeated by these real time maps. Protesters’ urban guerrilla tactics make them “be water” and could always disperse before police’s arrivals. These real time maps could also facilitate them to instantaneously work out an escape route free from police’s road blocks.

F. Doxxing police officers and their family members

32. Doxxing involves posting online the private data of a person or his/ her families. An unprecedented scale of doxxing occurred since the protests arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill began. According to the Privacy Commissioner for Personal Data (“PCPD”), 4 359 cases of doxxing and cyberbullying were received or proactively found during the period from 14 June to 20 December 2019. It involved 16 online social platforms and discussion forums such as LIHKG and Telegram, and 2 916 web links. The victims of doxxing are from different backgrounds and of various views, among which 36% involved police officers and their family members. On the other hand, some citizens were doxxed after making online comments against the Government or the Police, accounting for about 10% of the total cases.

33. According to the information provided by the Police, up to 11 November 2019, 1 988 police officers had been doxxed. On 22 July 2019, right after the incident on 21 July, the number of officers doxxed surged by 643 in a single day.



As of 2019-11-11 :1988



Image 34: Poster with title: ‘After school opens in September, boycott the police next generation’ – calling for students, teachers and parents to boycott the children of police officers
(Image source: LIHKG)

34. The High Court has granted an injunction order²² on 8 November 2019 to restrain persons from unlawfully and wilfully disclosing personal data of police officers and/ or their family members, intended or likely to intimidate or harass them. When explaining the extended effects of doxxing, Mr Justice Coleman referred to a Court of Appeal judgement²³,

“The damage of widespread doxxing goes well beyond the victims. It seriously endangers our society as a whole. For it will instill chilling effect on our society when many individuals or targeted groups or sectors of the public are intimidated into silence or suppressed to express their opinion openly and honestly or conduct their affairs or pursue their life in the way they wanted for fear of being victimised by doxxing. If doxxing practices are not curtailed, the fire of distrust, fear and hatred ignited by them will soon consume the public confidence in the law and order of the community, leading to disintegration of our society.”²⁴

35. Another interim injunction order²⁵ also restrains persons from wilfully disseminating any material or information on any internet-based platform or medium for the purpose of promoting, encouraging or inciting the use or threat of violence, intended or likely to cause bodily injury to any person or damage to any property unlawfully within Hong Kong.

36. Personal information of not only officers, but their families, including young children,

²² HCA 1957/2019

²³ Paragraph 29 of HCA 1957/2019

²⁴ Junior Police Officers’ Association of the Hong Kong Police Force v Electoral Affairs Commission [2019] HKCA 1197 at paragraph 19

²⁵ HCA 2007/2019

were put online. In one case, an officer received up to 300 phone calls per hour from people looking to harass him.²⁶ In another case, the schools of an officer's children were disclosed. People then threatened to kidnap the children and hurt anyone who go in their way.²⁷ A social media channel used by protesters to share personal details of police officers and their families was suspended in early November 2019 after the court injunction deterring doxxing, a similar channel opened for the same purpose within the same month.²⁸ The negative media coverage, social cleavage, doxxing and safety of family under threat are some of the stressors of the Police.²⁹

G. Inciting hatred against the Police

37. The hostility of the protesters against police officers increased as the protests continue, with hate messages for beating police officers and their families. While the protesters dubbed the police officers “dog”, “Black Cop(黑警)” and “Yijin guys”, supporters of the Police increasingly responded to such insults by calling the protesters “cockroach” or “rubbish”. The term “黑警” was first used since the Occupy Movement in 2014, after a social worker was assaulted by seven police officers on 15 October 2014. Since then, people used “黑警” to describe officers who allegedly abuse their force or power, or act like triad.³⁰ The term was found again on news articles, YouTube and Facebook since 9 Jun 2019, and widely used after the death of the male who wore a yellow raincoat on 15 June 2019.³¹ The negative feelings of the protesters sprouted and grows as time goes. As protesters have more frequent encounters with the police, the relationship become tenser. The encounters became more violent, people's hatred against Police grows like a downward spiral. When the protesters act violently, the Police exercise a greater level of force in attempt to control the situation. (Detailed discussion in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing) More protesters might then join the combat to help out with their fellows, which may eventually outnumber the officers who therefore decide to escalate the force to control the scene.

²⁶ SCMP (2019-10-27). Court order on officer data targets doxxers not journalists, Hong Kong police insist. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3034734/court-order-officer-data-targets-doxers-not>

²⁷ Ibid.

²⁸ SCMP (2019-11-08). Telegram social media channel used by protesters for doxxing Hong Kong police suspended after leaking thousands of pictures and videos of officers and their families. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3037001/telegram-social-media-channel-used-protesters-doxing-hong>

Ming Pao (2019-11-16). 高院延長網禁令 官稱暴力示威者「罪犯」. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/%e8%a6%81%e8%81%9e/article/20191116/s00001/1573843801458/高院延長網禁令-官稱暴力示威者「罪犯」>

²⁹ Information provided by the Police

³⁰ Wikipedia. 雨傘革命. Retrieved from <https://zh.wikipedia.org/wiki/雨傘革命>

³¹ Mingpao (2019-06-20). 網民自發清獻花. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190620/s00001/1560968869579/網民自發清獻花>

38. Hatred always come out from anger or feeling of injustice. After the “Yellow Raincoat” suicide, a lady’s eye was injured in Tsim Sha Tsui on 11 August 2019. On 12 August 2019, in response to the widespread discussion in the social media about the incident, thousands of protesters gathered at the Hong Kong International Airport in protest of “Police brutality”, with signs proclaiming “Evil Police - An Eye for An Eye” alleging the female’s injured eye was caused by the Police .

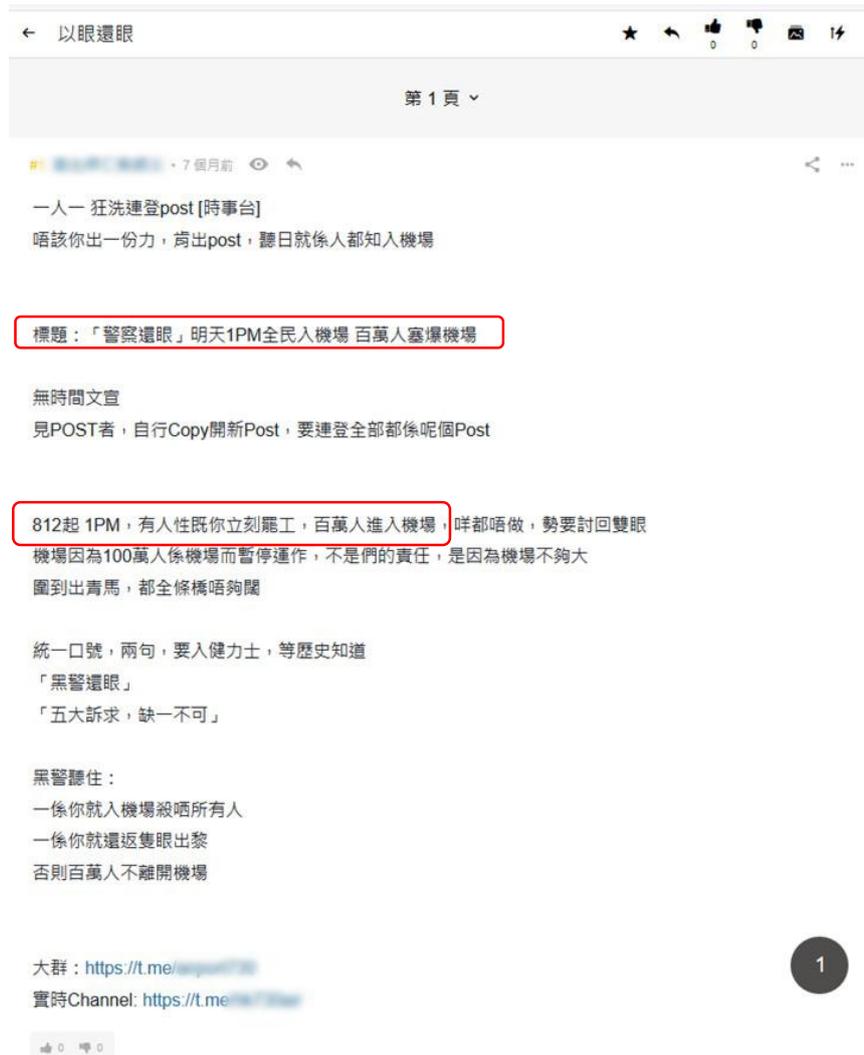


Image 35: ‘Police Repay Eye’.

Appealing netizens to overfill the airport and go on strike

(Image source: LIHKG)

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019

39. Since then, the image of a female with an injured eye has been iconic in the POEs.



Image 36: Poster calling for people to go to the airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: Facebook)



Image 37: Posts calling for people to go to the airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: Twitter)



Image 38: Posters appealing netizens to go on strike and go to the airport on 12 August 2019
(Image source: Twitter)



40. On the National Day, an 18 year-old secondary student was shot in the chest by a live round fired from close range by a police officer in Tsuen Wan. This was the first injury by a live round, which was subsequently used as a propaganda to reinforce the allegation of Police brutality and to fuel the momentum of the protests. Below is a Facebook post on 1 October 2019.³²

³² Facebook. DeMos 馬民 - 馬鞍山 · 民知民 Go. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/DeMosDerivedFromMaOnShan/photos/pcb.1455599177911651/1455594997912069/?type=3&theater>

CHAPTER 4 • AN OVERVIEW OF THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS ARISING FROM THE FUGITIVE OFFENDERS BILL SINCE JUNE 2019



Image 41: “Since the current regime has no bottom line in suppression of the people, then why do we have to give a bottom line to ourselves?”

(Image source: LIHKG)

42. Protests slogans has even become increasingly radical since the enactment of the “Anti-Mask law”. The widely-used slogan of “香港人，加油” (“Hong Kong People, cheer up”) in previous protests had evolved into “香港人，反抗” (“Hong Kong People, revolt”) and later became “香港人，報仇” (“Hong Kong People, revenge”). The demand of “追究警暴” (“Investigate into Police Brutality”) further turned into “解散警隊” (“Disband the Police Force”).



Image 42: Poster with title; ‘Hong Kong People, Fight Back’ - Liberate Hong Kong, Revolution of Our Time

(Image source: LIHKG)



Image 43: Poster with title: ‘Revenge – Hong Kong people’
(Image source: Twitter)



Image 44: “Hongkongers, revenge” slogans
(Image source: LIHKG)

43. Though the posters or visuals about police brutality seems less on the internet recently because of the outbreak of COVID-19. Protesters still gather from time to time, especially on the 21st or 31st of the months to commemorate the Yuen Long Incident and Price Edward Station Incident. Some hostile messages against the Police are still very commonly found on the internet.

H. Vandalising pro-Government corporations

44. At the early stage of the protests, protesters mainly boycotted pro-Government or pro-establishment corporations/ companies, they rarely vandalised shops. In a bid to cause greater economic damage to those targeted corporations and companies, violent protesters have started to burn and vandalise shops in late September 2019. Vigilantism in the community has become increasingly common since September 2019.³³ On 24 December 2019, the Mong Kok branch of HSBC was vandalised in revenge after the Police froze HK\$70 million raised by Spark Alliance for Hong Kong protesters.³⁴ Glass walls of the branch were smashed and a fire was started at the entrance. Other branches of HSBC also suffered damage.



Image 45: Protesters set fire on ATMs
(Image source: HK01)

³³ SCMP (2019-09-18). From vandalising MTR stations to setting off petrol bombs, now Hong Kong protesters are going for fist fights or ‘si liu’ to settle scores with rival groups. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3027740/vandalising-mtr-stations-setting-petrol-bombs-now-hong-kong>

³⁴ SCMP (2019-12-25). HSBC issues fresh statement to distance itself from police crackdown on protest fundraiser after demonstrators vandalise Hong Kong branch on Christmas Eve. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3043482/hsbc-issues-fresh-statement-distance-itself-police>

45. Protesters target mainly Chinese banks / shops. The following are some of their “rules”:



Image 46: Post with title: ‘Proposed Conduct Guideline’ against specific business entities (vandalism, no patronising)
(Image source: HK01)

46. Protesters explain their vandalising acts on social media.



Image 47: Post with title: [文宣]裝修手足麻煩完事後痴依啲文宣係鋪頭
(Translation: place these posters in the shop after vandalising them).
(Image source: LIHKG)

47. Some violent protesters reminded others to leave symbolic printings at the venues after vandalising shops or banks to explain why those places are being targeted.



Image 48: Instruction to spray paint specific meaning graffiti at the entrance of MTR Stations after vandalising
(Image source: LIHKG)

48. The protests are unprecedented and has completely overturned the mode of protest in Hong Kong. It is characterised by a decentralised mode and is heavily driven via digital media. Though there is no centralised mechanism to organise, coordinate and direct the protests, there is a clear pattern of changes of tactics, momentum and strategies in all aspects for spreading and sustaining the protests.



獨立監察警方處理投訴委員會
Independent Police Complaints Council

Rooms 1006-10, 10/F, China Resources Building,
No. 26 Harbour Road, Wan Chai, Hong Kong

Tel : 2524 3841
Fax : 2524 1801 / 2525 8042
Email : enq@ipcc.gov.hk
Website : www.ipcc.gov.hk



IPCC Website



IPCC YouTube Channel

A Thematic Study by the IPCC
on the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill
since June 2019 and the Police Actions in Response

Volume 2



Independent Police Complaints Council

CONTENTS

VOLUME 2

CHAPTER 5

SYNOPSIS OF COMPLAINTS

5.1	The Police Complaints System and IPCC Ordinance	2
5.4	Complaint Figures	3
5.8	Monthly Review on Reportable Complaints (RCs)	6
5.9	Nature of Allegations	12
5.11	General Observations	17
5.12	IPCC's Handling of Complaints	20

CHAPTER 6

POLICE USE OF FORCE IN PUBLIC ORDER POLICING

6.1	Introduction	24
6.5	Statutory Provisions on Use of Force	25
6.13	Doctrine of "Self Defence" of Person and Property under Common Law	27
6.16	Hong Kong Police Force (HKPF) Guidelines	29
6.26	Use of Force from 9 June 2019 to 29 February 2020	31
6.37	Use of Force in Comparable Jurisdictions	35
6.49	Effect on Health from Use of Tear Gas	40
6.56	IPCC Observations	42
6.68	Recommendations of the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance	46

CHAPTER 7

INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 9 JUNE 2019

7.1	Introduction	54
7.15	Sources of Information	60
7.16	The Events	61
7.17	Complaints against Police	71
7.18	Police Response	71
7.36	IPCC Observations	74
7.51	Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance Annex	78 80

CHAPTER 8

INCIDENT DAY – WEDNESDAY 12 JUNE 2019

8.1	Introduction	100
8.20	Sources of Information	105
8.21	The Events	106
8.22	Complaints against Police	132
8.29	Police Response	133
8.47	IPCC Observations	137
8.76	Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance Annex	148 150

CHAPTER 9

INCIDENT DAY – MONDAY 1 JULY 2019

9.1	Introduction	200
9.15	Sources of Information	205
9.16	The Events	206
9.17	Complaints against Police	220
9.18	Police Response	220
9.26	IPCC Observations	223
9.28	Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance Annex	224 226

CHAPTER 5**SYNOPSIS OF COMPLAINTS****The Police Complaints System and IPCC Ordinance**

5.1 The police complaints system in Hong Kong is a two-tier system. On the first tier is CAPO of the Police, responsible for receiving and investigating complaints. After investigation, CAPO would submit the complaint investigation reports to the IPCC, the second tier, which would scrutinise the reports to review whether the complaints have been properly investigated and the findings are just and fair.

5.2 There are two categories of complaints, namely Reportable Complaints (RCs) and Notifiable Complaints (NCs).¹ RCs are complaints lodged by members of the public directly affected by the alleged conduct of police officers who are either on duty or have identified themselves as police officers while off duty. NCs are complaints which do not meet the criteria to be classified as “RCs”, complaints that are frivolous or vexatious, or complaints that are lodged by persons not directly affected by the alleged police conduct which they might have overheard from others, seen or learnt of on the media. Under the current complaints system, CAPO is required to submit to the IPCC investigation reports on RCs for vetting and endorsement. As to NCs, CAPO has full authority to deal with those complaints without having to submit any investigation reports to the IPCC for examination. CAPO, nonetheless, has to provide summaries of the NCs on a monthly basis for IPCC’s scrutiny to ensure that all the NCs are properly categorised as NCs, and none of them should have been categorised as RC, in which case CAPO has to submit an investigation report to the IPCC.

5.3 Section 8(1)(a) of the IPCC Ordinance empowers the IPCC to monitor and review RCs. Other than powers to examine RCs, section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance further provides the IPCC with the authority to identify any fault or deficiency in any practice or procedure adopted by the Police that has led to or might lead to RCs, and to make recommendations in respect of such practice or procedure. Under section 8(2) of the IPCC Ordinance, the IPCC may do all things that are reasonably necessary for, or incidental or conducive, to the performance of its functions under the IPCC Ordinance.

¹ The categorisation of RCs and NCs is detailed in sections 9 to 16 of the IPCC Ordinance, Cap. 604.

Complaint Figures

5.4 As at 29 February 2020, Police action in response to the public order events (POEs) arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill since June 2019 have given rise to a total of 1 641 complaints, 542 RCs lodged by 565 complainants and 1 099 NCs lodged by 4 516² complainants. Table 5-1 and Charts 5-1 and 5-2 show the breakdown of complaints by month³ since the POEs began in June 2019.

<u>Incident Month</u>	<u>RCs</u>	<u>NCs</u>	<u>RCs + NCs</u>	<u>Cumulative</u>
June 2019	57	80	137	137
July 2019	78	150	228	365
August 2019	93	153	246	611
September 2019	66	149	215	826
October 2019	88	188	276	1 102
November 2019	120	218	338	1 440
December 2019	30	101	131	1 571
January 2020	10	60	70	1 641
February 2020	0	0	0	1 641

Table 5-1: Number of complaints by incident month⁴

5.5 The number of RCs rose from June to August 2019 but dropped in September 2019 and rose again in October and November 2019 before taking a steep dip in December 2019. The rise and fall of the number of NCs more or less follow the same pattern as that of the RCs only that the fall in the number of NCs from August to September 2019 was insignificant.

² According to the Police, around 700 NCs were lodged by 17 persons, one of which lodged more than 170 NCs.

³ Refers to the number of complaints regarding incidents occurred in those months.

⁴ Refers to the number of complaints regarding incidents occurred in those months.

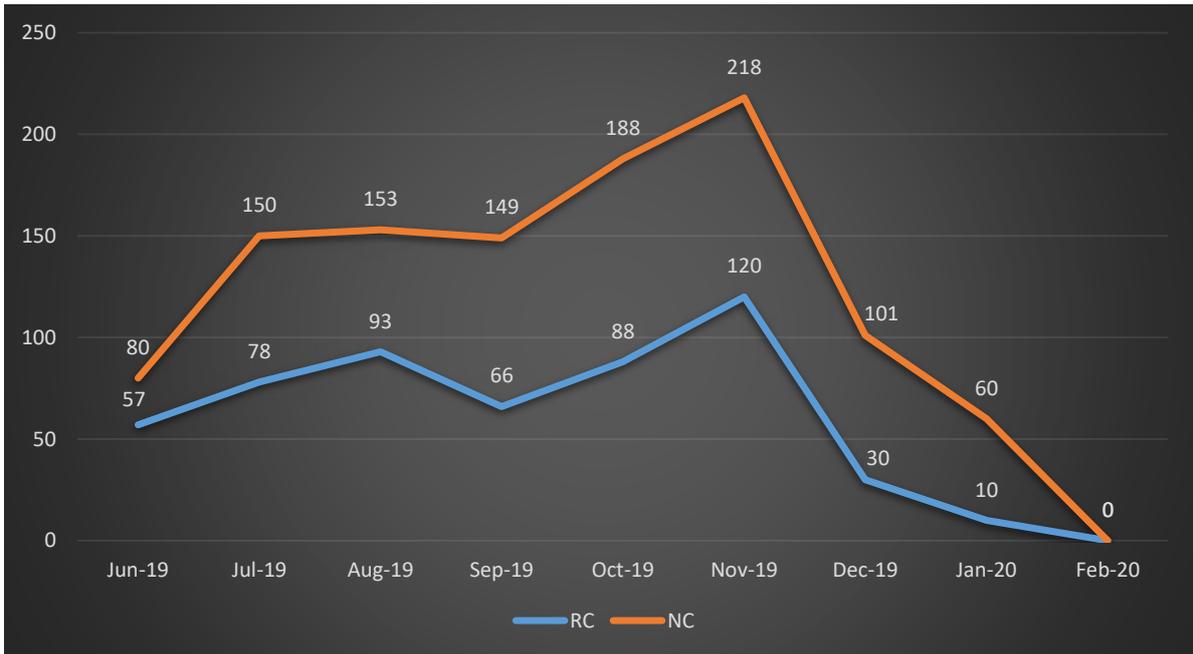


Chart 5-1: Number of complaints by incident month⁵



Chart 5-2: Number of complaints by incident month⁶ (cumulative)

⁵ Refers to the number of complaints regarding incidents occurred in those months.

⁶ Refers to the number of complaints regarding incidents occurred in those months.

5.6 139 of the 542 RCs were lodged by arrested persons, 111 by reporters, and the remaining 292 by other civilians. Chart 5-3 shows the breakdown of RCs by complainants.

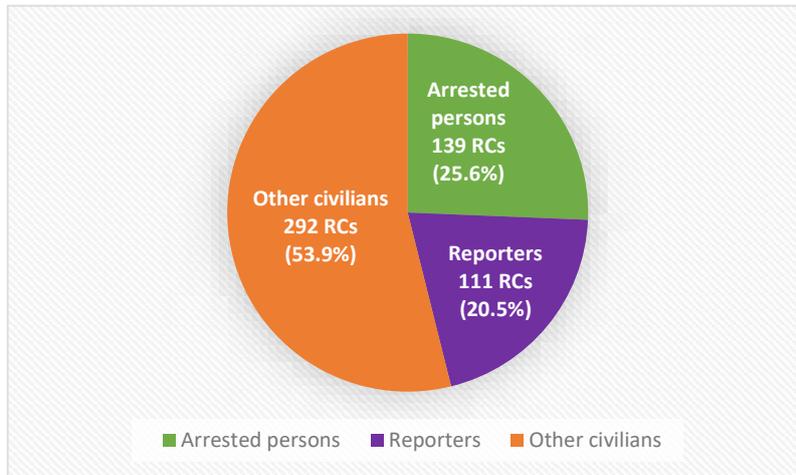


Chart 5-3: Percentage of RCs by complainants

5.7 Of the 139 RCs lodged by arrested persons, 36 (25.9% of the total) arose from Police action in August 2019, 22 (15.8% of the total) from October 2019, and 46 (33.1% of the total) from November 2019. The remaining 35 RCs were scattered among five other months. Chart 5-4 shows the breakdown of the 139 RCs by incident months.

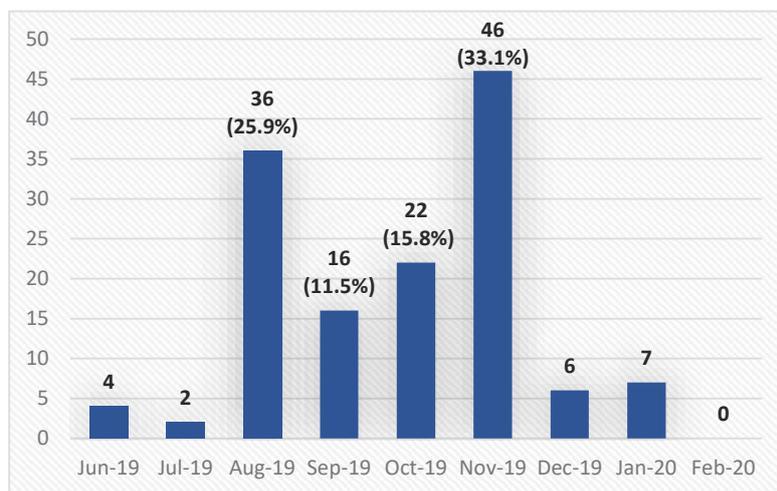


Chart 5-4: Number of RCs lodged by Arrested Persons by incident month⁷

⁷ Refers to the number of RCs regarding incidents occurred in those months.

Monthly Review on RCs

5.8 The following is a general analysis of the nature of the RCs of each month in relation to the POEs of that month.

June 2019

- There were only five major POEs in June 2019, on 9, 12, 16, 21 and 26 June 2019, all on Hong Kong Island. Only the POEs on 9 and 12 June 2019 resulted in clashes between the protesters and the Police, those on 12 June 2019 being the most serious.
- 57 RCs, representing more than 10% of the total of 542 RCs, resulted from Police action in June 2019, 23 RCs from 9 June 2019, and 27 RCs from 12 June 2019. The remaining seven RCs stemmed from Police action before and after 9 June 2019 and 12 June 2019.
- 18 of the 23 RCs on 9 June 2019 were about Police use of force, including allegations of police officers assaulting, pushing, pulling, or dragging people. Ten of the 18 RCs involved use of force on reporters. Out of the remaining five RCs that did not involve Police use of force, three concerned policer officers' hindrance of reporters' work and two were about police officers' manners.
- 24 of the 27 RCs on 12 June 2019 were about Police use of force, 13 on the use of tear gas and the remaining 11 on the use of PAVA Solution, OC Foam, batons and rubber rounds.
- Of the 50 RCs on 9 and 12 June 2019, 28 were lodged by reporters.

July 2019

- 78 RCs (14.4% of the total of 542 RCs) arose from Police action in July 2019.
- 53 RCs stemmed from the "Yuen Long Incident" on 21 July 2019. Of these 53 RCs, 28 RCs were about police officers' failure to answer 999 calls, 11 RCs about police officers hanging up 999 calls, nine RCs about police officers' failure to attend the scene, four RCs about police officers' impoliteness, and one RC about a police officer's failure to answer enquiries.
- Among the remaining 25 RCs, seven of the complaints arose from 7 July 2019, two RCs from 13 July 2019, nine RCs from 14 July 2019, one RC from the police operation outside LOCPG on 21 July 2019, five RCs from 28 July 2019 and one RC from 31 July 2019. 12 of the 25 RCs concerned Police use of force, while others were mainly about the manners of police officers and the display of police identity.
- Despite the magnitude of the clashes outside LOCPG on 21 July 2019 (55 tear gas rounds, nine rubber rounds and 25 react rounds fired) and 28 July 2019 in the Western district, Police action on these two days only gave rise to one RC and five RCs respectively, lower than those on other POE days in July 2019. All these six RCs concerned Police use of force, two about the use of physical force and four about the use of tear gas.

- The events on 1 July 2019 did not give rise to any RCs.

August 2019

- There were 93 RCs from the entire month of August 2019 (17.2% of the total).
- The clashes between the Police and some violent protesters on 3, 4, 5, 11, and 31 August 2019 were particularly widespread and intense (for details of the clashes, please see the Overview in Chapter 4). The figures on the number of police weapons used, arrests made and RCs generated on these five days are given in Table 5-2 below:

Date	No. of RCs	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
		Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
3 Aug	12	107	0	0	0	38
4 Aug	13	109	29	0	9	68
5 Aug	12	1 002	170	11	28	158
11 Aug	12	361	27	14	0	124
31 Aug	4	272	94	11	49	142

Table 5-2: Police weapons used, arrests made and RCs generated on 3, 4, 5, 11 and 31 August 2019

- Compared with the RC figures from 9 and 12 June 2019, the number of RCs from 3, 4, 5, 11 and 31 August 2019 was small given the level of violence and the scale of the POEs on these five days evident by the use of tear gas and other police weapons and the number of arrests. RCs on 11 and 31 August 2019 would be elaborated in Chapters 11 and 12 respectively.
- Of the 93 RCs from the entire month of August 2019, 54 RCs were about Police use of force. Among these 54 RCs, 25 RCs on the hitting, pushing or pulling of people, 21 on the use of tear gas, while others were on the use of flashlight, laser pens, OC Foam, and the pointing of guns at reporters.
- Among those 39 RCs that were not about Police use of force, 16 RCs were on the handling of arrested persons other than on the use of force, allegations included unlawful arrest, failure to explain the reason of arrest, improprieties in statement taking, denial of legal representation, delaying of medical treatment, and the mishandling of mobile phones of arrested persons. Other RCs concerned the police officers' manners, stop-and-searches conducted by police officers, the hindrance of reporters' work, and the display of police identity.

September 2019

- Police action in September 2019 gave rise to a total of 66 RCs (12.2% of the total).
- The clashes between the Police and some violent protesters on 15, 21, and 29 September 2019 were particularly widespread and intense (for details of the clashes, please see the Overview in Chapter 4). The figures on the number of police weapons used, arrests made and RCs generated on these three days are given in Table 5-3 below:

Date	No. of RCs	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
		Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
15 Sep	7	62	17	0	18	57
21 Sep	10	43	6	1	11	31
29 Sep	11	347	297	96	80	146

Table 5-3: Police weapons used, arrests made and RCs generated on 15, 21 and 29 September 2019

- Other than seven RCs from 15 September 2019, ten RCs from 21 September 2019 and 11 RCs from 29 September 2019, the remaining 38 RCs were scattered among 14 other days.
- 35 of the 66 RCs concerned Police use of force, 18 about hitting, pushing or pulling of people, eight about the use of flashlight, six on the use of tear gas, while others on the use of OC Foam, less lethal projectiles and Specialised Crowd Management Vehicle (SCMV).
- Of the remaining 31 RCs, 12 RCs concerned the handling of arrested persons other than on the use of force. Allegations included failure to caution upon arrest, improprieties during statement taking, mishandling of exhibits, denial of legal representation, delaying of medical treatment, and improprieties during custodial search. The remaining 19 RCs were about manners of police officers and the display of police identity.

October 2019

- Police action in October 2019 gave rise to a total of 88 RCs (16.2% of the total).
- The clashes between the Police and some violent protesters on 1, 4, 6, 13, 20, and 27 October 2019 were particularly widespread and intense (for details of the clashes, please see the Overview in Chapter 4). The figures on the number of police weapons used, arrests made and RCs generated on these six days are given in Table 5-4 below:

Date	No. of RCs	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
		Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
1 Oct	6	1 667	1 156	267	248	285
4 Oct	3	271	157	30	26	13
6 Oct	5	156	69	3	5	121
13 Oct	17	2	7	24	6	178
20 Oct	7	266	140	19	43	88
27 Oct	11	135	34	20	6	129

Table 5-4: Police weapons used, arrests made and RCs generated on 1, 4, 6, 13, 20 and 27 October 2019

- 53 of the 88 RCs concerned Police use of force, 30 about hitting, pushing or pulling people, 13 about the use of tear gas, seven on the use of flashlight or laser pens, while others on the use of OC Foam, the use of SCMV and the pointing of shotguns at people.
- Of the remaining 35 RCs, seven RCs concerned the handling of arrested persons other than on the use of force on these arrested persons. Allegations included threat and inducement, denial of legal representation, and verbal abuse. The remaining 28 RCs were about manners of police officers and the display of police identity.
- Despite the high level of violence and the severity of the clashes in the protests on 1 October 2019 as evident by the number of tear gas rounds and other police weapons used and the number of arrests, there were only six RCs from that day. The same observation can be made of 4, 6 and 20 October 2019 but obviously 1 October 2019 stands out prominently. Among the 21 RCs arising from 1, 4, 6, and 20 October 2019, ten concerned Police use of physical force and only one was about the use of tear gas.

November 2019

- Police action in November 2019 gave rise to a total of 120 RCs (22.1% of the total).
- The clashes between the Police and some violent protesters on 2, 11-15, 17, and 18 November 2019 were particularly widespread and intense (for details of the clashes, please see the Overview in Chapter 4). The figures on the number of police weapons used, arrests made and RCs generated on these eight days are given in Table 5-5 below:

Date	No. of RCs	Use of Police Weapons				No. of Arrests
		Tear Gas	Rubber Rounds	Super Sock Rounds	React Rounds	
2 Nov	16	409	132	20	18	263
11 Nov	7	659	251	55	78	309
12 Nov	12	2 330	1 770	434	159	167
13 Nov	9	736	593	54	34	220
14 Nov	4	177	56	11	9	64
15 Nov	5	121	18	0	4	17
17 Nov	5	1 530	1 344	172	279	142
18 Nov	13	3 293	3 188	667	499	1 071

Table 5-5: Police weapons used, arrests made and RCs generated on 2, 11-15, 17-18 November 2019

- 71 RCs stemmed from the days given in Table 5-5 contributed 59.2 % of all the RCs of November 2019. The remaining 49 RCs were scattered among 13 days in November 2019.
- 82 of the 120 RCs concerned Police use of force, 36 about hitting, pushing or pulling people, 23 about the use of tear gas, 15 about the use of OC Foam or PAVA Solution, while others on the use of flashlight and less lethal projectiles, and the pointing of shotguns at civilians.
- Of the remaining 38 RCs, 26 RCs concerned the handling of arrested persons (not about using force of the arrested persons). Allegations included failure to caution upon arrest, improprieties during statement taking, mishandling of exhibits, denial of legal representation and delay in arranging medical treatments. The remaining 12 RCs were about hindering reporters' work, manners of police officers and the display of police identity.
- Despite the high level of violence and the severity of the clashes in the protests on 12, 17 and 18 November 2019 as evident by the number of tear gas rounds and other police weapons used and the number of arrests, there were only 12, five, and 13 RCs from the respective days.
- The same observation can be made of 11, 13, 14 and 15 November 2019. Among the 25 RCs arising from 11, 13, 14, and 15 November 2019, ten concerned Police use of physical force, only three were about the use of tear gas.

December 2019

- Police action in December 2019 gave rise to a total of 30 RCs (5.5% of the total).
- 16 of the 30 RCs concerned Police use of force, 10 RCs on hitting, pushing or pulling people and the remaining six on the use of tear gas, OC Foam and flashlight.

- The remaining 14 RCs included allegations of inappropriate handling of arrested persons, failure to display of police identity, hindrance of reporters' work, showing a reporter's HKID Card in front of a live camera, and making inappropriate remarks.

January 2020

- Police action in January 2020 gave rise to a total of 10 RCs (1.8% of the total).
- Eight of the 10 RCs concerned Police use of force. Allegations included the hitting, pushing or pulling of people, and the use of OC Foam. The remaining two RCs were about the failure to provide the reason of arrest and hindering reporters' work.

February 2020

- As at 29 February 2020, there was no RC on Police action in February 2020.

Nature of Allegations

5.9 There are a total of 2 180 allegations in the 1 641 complaints (RCs and NCs), 842 allegations in 542 RCs and 1 338 allegations in 1 099 NCs. Table 5-6 gives the breakdown of the nature of these 2 180 allegations.

<u>Nature of Allegation</u>	<u>RC (%)</u>	<u>NC (%)</u>	<u>Total (%)</u>
Assault	96 (11.4%)	68 (5.1%)	164 (7.5%)
Unnecessary Use of Authority	73 (8.7%)	175 (13.1%)	248 (11.4%)
Misconduct	276 (32.8%)	529 (39.5%)	805 (36.9%)
Neglect of Duty	209 (24.8%)	354 (26.5%)	563 (25.8%)
Impoliteness	102 (12.1%)	108 (8.1%)	210 (9.6%)
Rudeness	30 (3.6%)	50 (3.7%)	80 (3.7%)
Offensive Language	33 (3.9%)	42 (3.1%)	75 (3.4%)
Threat	18 (2.1%)	4 (0.3%)	22 (1%)
Fabrication of Evidence	5 (0.6%)	8 (0.6%)	13 (0.6%)
Total	842	1 338	2 180

Table 5-6: Breakdown of allegations by nature

5.10 A breakdown of the RC allegations is given in Chart 5-5 followed by a brief analysis of each nature of allegation.

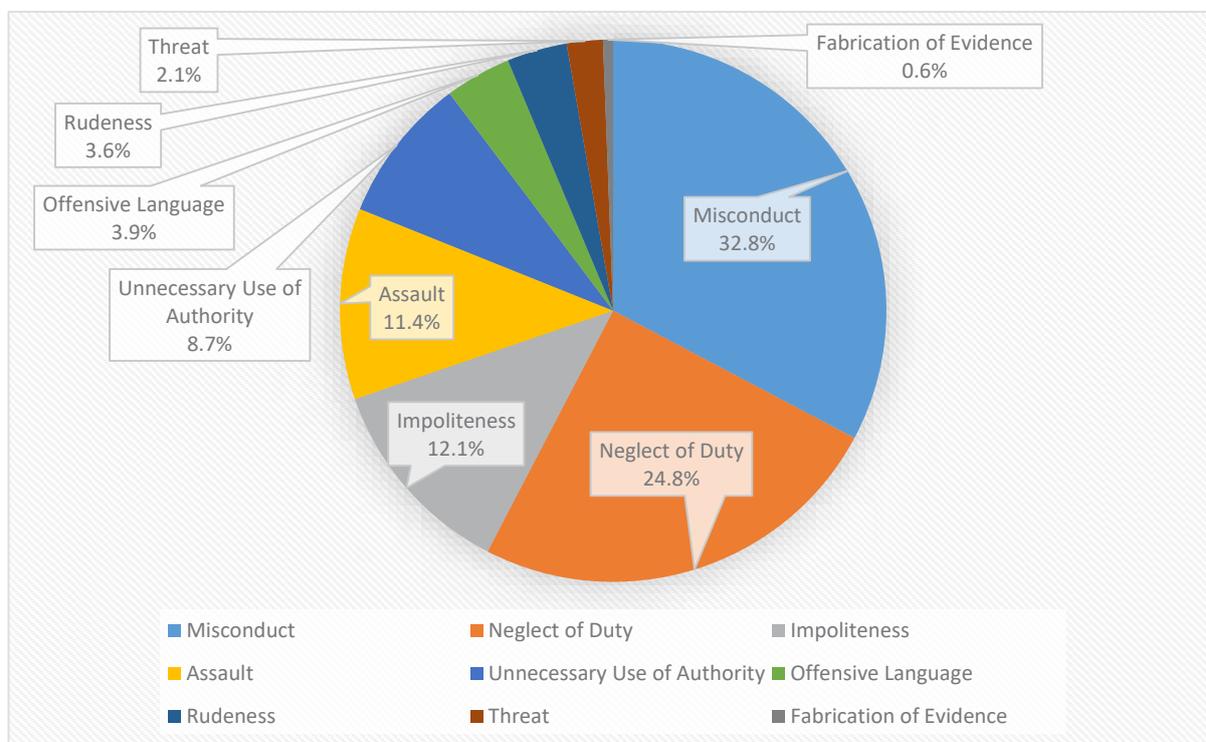


Chart 5-5: Breakdown of RC allegations by nature

Assault

- 96 allegations of “Assault” account for 11.4% of all the RC allegations.
- 83 of the 96 allegations were made by arrested persons, four by reporters, and the remaining nine by other people.
- November 2019 has the highest number of “Assault” allegations (27 allegations). Coincidentally, November 2019 is also the month which has the highest number of persons arrested.
- As to the locations where the alleged “Assault” took place, protest sites and locations of arrest are given in 66 allegations, police stations in 18 allegations, and police vehicles in the remaining 12 allegations.

Unnecessary Use of Authority

- 73 allegations of “Unnecessary Use of Authority” account for 8.7% of all the RC allegations.
- 67 of the 73 allegations concerned Police use of force. A breakdown is as follows:
 - 28 allegations on the use of OC Foam/PAVA Solution;

- 20 allegations on the use of tear gas;
 - Nine allegations on the hitting, pushing and pulling of civilians;
 - Seven allegations on the use of less lethal projectiles; and
 - Three allegations on the use of SCMV.
- Four allegations concerned searches conducted by police officers, and two allegations on the legality of arrests.
 - 34 of the 73 allegations were lodged by reporters, 16 by arrested persons, and the remaining 23 by other people.

Misconduct

- 276 allegations of “Misconduct” account for 32.8% of all the RC allegations.
- 157 of the 276 allegations concerned Police use of force. A breakdown is as follows:
 - 65 allegations about the hitting, pushing and pulling of civilians;
 - 52 allegations on the use of tear gas;
 - 32 allegations on the use of flashlight/laser pens;
 - Five allegations on the use of OC Foam/PAVA Solution;
 - Two allegations about pointing shotguns at civilians; and
 - One allegation on the use of handcuffs.
- 36 allegations concerned the handling of arrested persons. A breakdown is as follows:
 - 14 allegations on the denial of access to lawyers;
 - Nine allegations on police officers’ mishandling of mobile phones;
 - Six allegations on the impropriety in statement taking;
 - Three allegations about mistreatment of arrested persons (not about the use of force);
 - Two allegations on the handling of exhibits; and
 - Two allegations about making unnecessary remarks to arrested persons.
- 23 allegations concerned the handling of reporters. A breakdown is as follows:
 - 17 allegations about police officers hindering reporter’s work, e.g. blocking cameras;
 - Three allegations about police officers taking photographs of reporters;
 - Two allegations about police officers making unnecessary remarks to reporters; and
 - One allegation about the showing of a reporter’s HKID Card in front of a live camera.
- 23 allegations concerned searches conducted by police officers.
- The remaining 37 allegations concerned miscellaneous matters, such as police officers entering shopping malls and residential areas, causing panic and nuisances to civilians, hindering people from lodging complaints against police officers, and poor manners.

Neglect of Duty

- 209 allegations of “Neglect of Duty” account for 24.8% of all the RC allegations.
- 60 of the 209 allegations concerned Police handling of 999 reports and public enquiries.

A breakdown is as follows:

- 34 allegations about police failure to answer “999” calls;
 - Nine allegations about police failure to properly handle reports made by members of the public;
 - Eight allegations about police failure to answer calls made to Report Rooms;
 - Four allegations about police failure to handle public enquiries properly;
 - Two allegations about the closure of Report Rooms;
 - Two allegations about police officers’ failure to provide report reference number to the people who made the reports; and
 - One allegation about police officers’ refusal to accept a report.
- 48 allegations concerned the handling of arrested persons (not about the use of force). A breakdown is as follows:
- 18 allegations about police officers’ failure to facilitate arrested persons to find a legal representation;
 - 14 allegations about statement taking;
 - Eight allegations on the delay of arranging medical treatment;
 - Seven allegations were about the failure to caution; and
 - One allegation about the failure to declare arrest.
- 22 allegations concerned police identification, including the display of warrant card and/or insignia, and the provision of name and unique identification number.
- 16 allegations about police officers’ failure to give warnings before using tear gas/OC Foam.
- 13 allegations concerned searches conducted by police officers.
- The remaining 50 allegations concerned miscellaneous matters, such as failure to handle POEs properly, failure to supervise subordinates, failure to protect the public, and closure of roads/MTR stations causing inconvenience to the public.

Impoliteness

- 102 allegations of “Impoliteness” account for 12.1% of all the RC allegations. A breakdown is as follows:
- 50 allegations about police officers’ manners;
 - 37 allegations about police officers making unnecessary remarks; and
 - 15 allegations about police officers hanging up calls made to 999 Console or Report Rooms.

Rudeness

- 30 allegations of “Rudeness” account for 3.6% of all the RC allegations. These 30 allegations were about the rude gestures of police officers.

Offensive Language

- 33 allegations of “Offensive Language” account for 3.9% of all the RC allegations. These 33 allegations concerned the use of foul language by police officers in their encounter with members of the public.

Threat

- 18 allegations of “Threat” account for around 2.1% of all the RC allegations.
- 16 of these 18 allegations were lodged by arrested persons. Examples included threatening arrested persons to admit offences and using a police dog to threaten arrested persons to provide passwords of their mobile phones.

Fabrication of Evidence

- Five allegations of “Fabrication of Evidence”, all lodged by arrested persons, account for 0.6% of all the RC allegations. Allegations included the planting of petrol bombs in an arrested person’s rucksack, planting an arrested person’s fingerprints on a hammer, and placing an arrested person’s hand on a glass bottle.

Tear Gas and other Less-lethal Projectiles

- There are 87 allegations on the use of tear gas, which account for 10.3% of all the RC allegations. 23 of these 87 allegations stemmed from Police action in November 2019, 22 from August 2019, 13 from June 2019, 13 from October 2019 and the remaining 16 from July 2019, September 2019 and December 2019.
- Seven of the allegations were on the use of other less-lethal projectiles. They all stemmed from Police action on six different days.

Display of Police Identity

- There are 32 allegations on the display of police identity, which account for 3.8% of all the RC allegations. A breakdown of these 32 allegations is as follows:
 - 14 allegations about the failure to display warrant cards;
 - Six allegations about police officers refusing to provide their unique identification numbers;
 - Five allegations about the failure to display insignia or warrant cards;
 - Four allegations about police officers refusing to reveal his police identity; and
 - Three allegations about the absence of insignia on uniform.
- Ten of these 32 allegations arose from seven different days in October and the remaining 22 allegations came from six other months with no more than five allegations from one month.

Handling of Arrested Persons

- 241 allegations stemmed from Police handling of arrested persons, which account for 28.6 % of all the RC allegations. A breakdown of these 241 allegations is as follows:
 - 83 allegations of “Assault”;
 - 64 allegations of “Misconduct”;
 - 40 allegations of “Neglect of Duty”;
 - 16 allegations of “Unnecessary Use of Authority”;
 - 16 allegations of “Threat”;
 - Nine allegations of “Offensive Language”;
 - Five allegations of “Fabrication of Evidence”;
 - Five allegations of “Impoliteness”; and
 - Three allegations of “Rudeness”.
- 65 allegations came from August 2019, 37 allegations from October 2019 and 73 allegations from November 2019. The remaining 66 allegations were scattered among five other months.

Handling of Reporters

- 143 allegations stemmed from Police handling of reporters, which account for 17% of all the RC allegations. 32 of these 143 allegations were lodged by the Hong Kong Journalists Association on behalf of the reporters on 17 June 2019. Another 72 allegations, arising from Police action from June to November 2019, were collectively lodged by Hong Kong Cable Television Limited on 22 November 2019. The remaining 39 allegations were lodged by individual reporters.
- 36 allegations came from June 2019, 30 allegations from September 2019 and 28 allegations from November 2019. The remaining 49 allegations were scattered among five other months.
- 100 of these 143 allegations concerned Police use of force and the remaining 43 allegations were about the manners of police officers, such as using offensive language, shouting at and being impolite to reporters, and hindrance of reporters’ work.

General Observations

5.11 The IPCC has the following observations on the complaints arising from Police action in the POEs related to the Fugitive Offenders Bill :

- (i) In June and July 2019, the number of POEs and clashes between the Police and the violent protesters remained low in comparison with those from August 2019 onwards, but the number of RCs arising from each incident in these two months was higher

than those from August 2019 onwards. There were 23 RCs on 9 June 2019, 27 RCs on 12 June 2019 and 53 RCs on the “Yuen Long Incident” on 21 July 2019. From August to November 2019, the monthly highest were noticeably lower, 13 RCs on 4 August 2019, 11 RCs on 29 September 2019, 17 RCs on 13 October 2019, and 16 RCs on 2 November 2019.

- (ii) From August 2019 onward, the frequency, scale and violence of POEs continued to escalate. The number of RCs, however, did not increase correspondingly. Referring to the figures in (i) above, the POEs that gave rise to the RCs on 9 and 12 June 2019 took place in an area that could be demarcated and the level of violence was significantly lower, whereas the POEs on 4 August 2019, 29 September 2019, 13 October 2019 and 2 November 2019 were territory-wide and level of violence was alarming.
- (iii) Chart 5-6 gives the figures on police use of weapons and arrests made by the Police. Chart 5-7 provides the figures of RCs in general and RCs stemming from Police use of force and use of tear gas.

CHAPTER 5 • SYNOPSIS OF COMPLAINTS

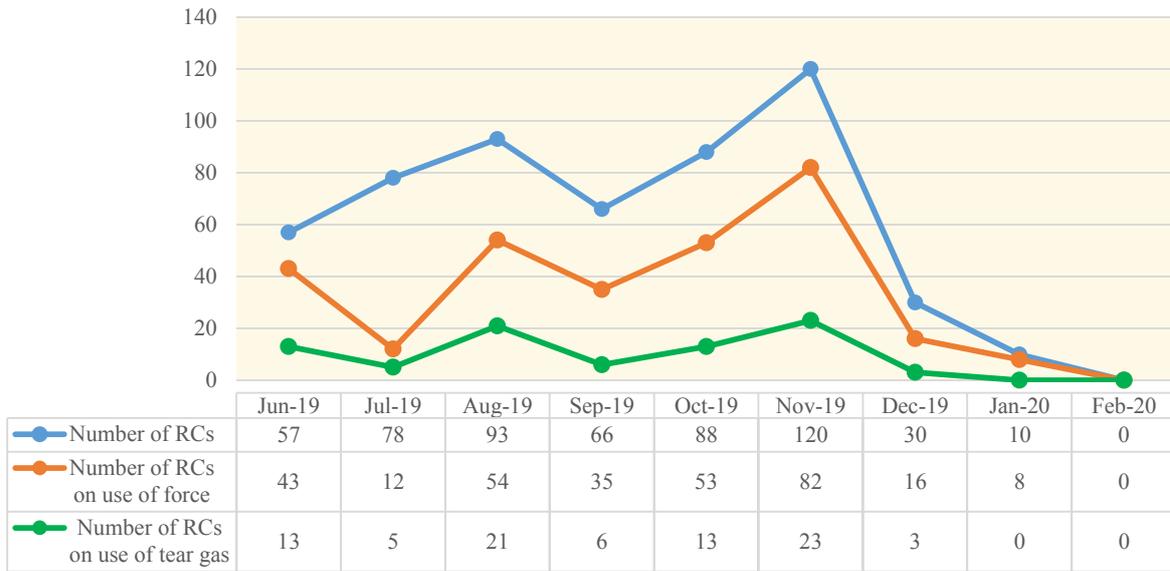


Chart 5-6: Figures of RCs in general and RCs stemming from Police use of force

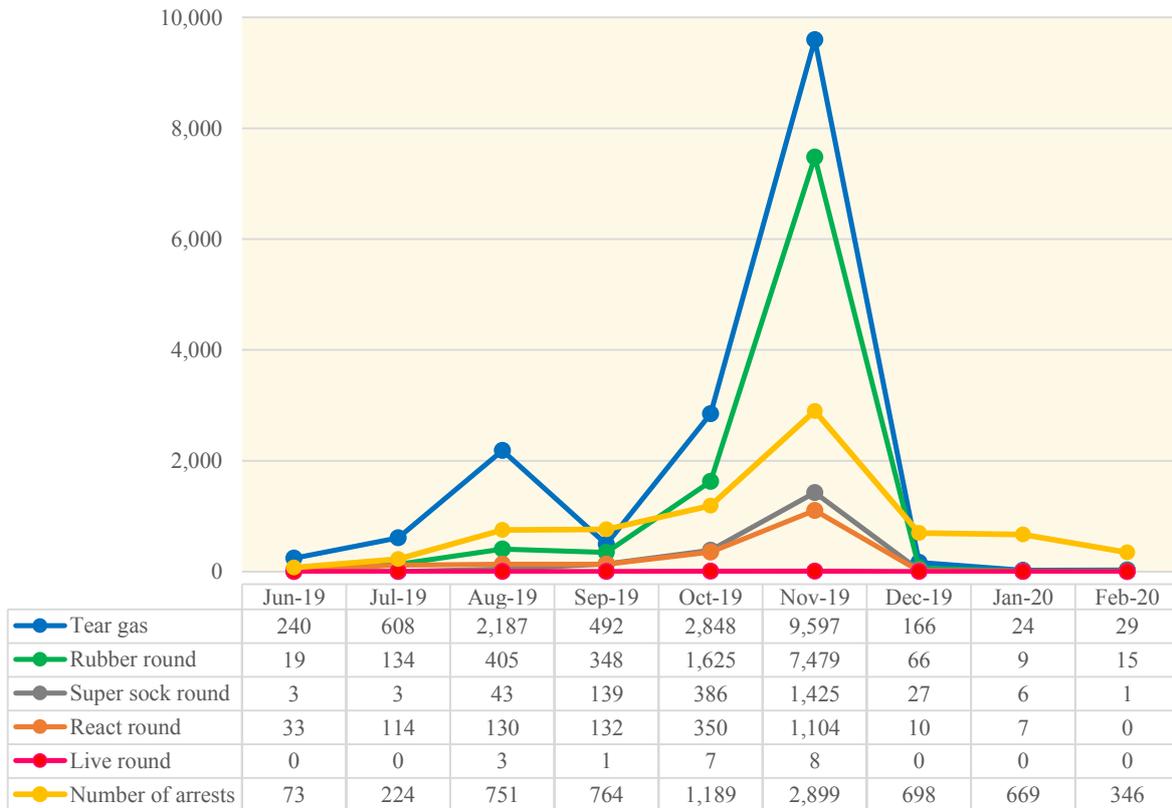


Chart 5-7: Police use of weapons and arrests made by the Police

It is apparent that the two charts look very similar. The rise and fall of the number of RCs and NCs correspond closely with the use of police weapons and the number of arrests made by the Police. Increase in the complaints arising from the use of police weapons naturally led to increase in the number of RCs and NCs. However, it does not account for all of the increase in the number of RCs and NCs. There is also an increase in complaints concerning police officers' manners, handling of arrested persons and encounters between police officers and civilians. The increase in the use of police weapons and the number of arrests reflect the increase in the number of POEs, and correspondingly the increase in the encounters between police officers and protesters as well as members of the public.

- (iv) Although a number of incident days attracted much public attention, such as the "Prince Edward Station Incident" on 31 August 2019, the clashes at the Chinese University of Hong Kong on 12 and 13 November 2019 and at the Hong Kong Polytechnic University on 17 and 18 November 2019, these incident days did not generate many RCs.
- (v) A number of events were widely discussed on the media and on the internet with serious allegations against the Police, such as a female being shot in the eye outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station on 11 August 2019 and other females being allegedly sexually assaulted at San Uk Ling Holding Centre and police stations, the purported victims did not come forward to lodge a complaint.

IPCC's Handling of Complaints

5.12 As mentioned above, investigation reports on all RCs will be submitted to the IPCC for scrutiny and endorsement after CAPO complete their investigation. Upon conclusion of a RC investigation, allegations would be classified, on the balance of probabilities, as in Table 5-7 below:

<u>Classification</u>	<u>Definition</u>
Substantiated	There is sufficient reliable evidence to support the allegation made by the complainant.
Substantiated Other Than Reported	Matters other than the original allegations but which are closely associated with the complaint itself and have a major impact on the investigation have been identified and are found to be substantiated.
Not Fully Substantiated	There is some reliable evidence to support the allegation made by the complainant, but insufficient to fully substantiate the complaint.
Unsubstantiated	There is insufficient evidence to support the allegation made by the complainant.
False	There is sufficient reliable evidence to indicate that the allegation made by the complainant is untrue, be it - <ul style="list-style-type: none"> ➤ a complaint with clear malicious intent; or ➤ a complaint which is not based upon genuine conviction or sincere belief but with no element of malice.
No Fault	The allegation is made either because of a misinterpretation of the facts or a misunderstanding; or when there is sufficient reliable evidence showing that the actions of the officer concerned were fair and reasonable in the circumstances, done in good faith or conformed to police regulations and orders made under the Police Force Ordinance (Cap. 232).
Withdrawn	The complainant does not wish to pursue the complaint made. ⁸

⁸ Where complainants themselves have withdrawn their complaints, the IPCC will ensure that no undue influence has been exerted on the complainants. A complainant's withdrawal does not necessarily result in the case being classified as "Withdrawn". The IPCC and CAPO will examine the available evidence to ascertain whether a full investigation is warranted despite the withdrawal and/or whether any of the allegations are substantiated on the basis of the information available.

<u>Classification</u>	<u>Definition</u>
Not Pursuable	The identity of the officer(s) being complained against cannot be ascertained; or when it has not been possible to obtain the co-operation of the complainant to proceed with the complaint investigation. ⁹
Informally Resolved	The Informal Resolution (IR) scheme aims at a speedy resolution of minor complaints, such as allegations of impoliteness or use of offensive language, the nature of which is considered as relatively minor. A minor complaint suitable for IR will not be subject to a full investigation. Instead, a senior officer, at least at the rank of Chief Inspector of Police, will act as the Conciliating Officer who will make enquiry into the facts of a complaint with the complainant and complainees separately. IR will only be adopted if the complainant agrees to this.
Curtailed	A complaint has been registered with CAPO but on the authorisation of the Chief Superintendent (Complaints and Internal Investigations Branch), is curtailed, i.e. not to be investigated further, owing to special circumstances such as known mental condition of the complainant.

Table 5-7: Classifications of allegations

5.13 Given the public concern over Police handling of the POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill, all relevant RCs are overseen by the IPCC's Serious Complaints Committee with all CAPO's interviews and onsite collection of evidence monitored by the IPCC's Observers Scheme to ensure the process has been conducted in a fair and impartial manner.

5.14 As at 31 March 2020, the IPCC has received the investigation reports of 158 RCs. On RCs which investigation reports have not been submitted, 84 RCs were under Sub-Judice

⁹ The definition does not mean that when the complainant cannot identify the complainees, no further action will be taken. CAPO will still make an effort to identify the complainees on the basis of the information available. Only after such an effort produces no result will a conclusion be reached that the identity of the complainees cannot be ascertained. If a complaint has been classified as "Not Pursuable" because of the lack of cooperation of the complainant, the complaint may be reactivated later as and when the complainant comes forward to provide the necessary information.

procedures and would be investigated by CAPO upon conclusion of relevant legal procedures. Hence, the resolution of these 84 RCs would take a longer time than other RCs that were not under Sub-Judice procedures. The remaining RCs were under CAPO's processing.

5.15 Among the 158 reports received by the IPCC, 30 were fully investigated, 67 were "Withdrawn", 55 were "Not Pursuable", and six were "Informally Resolved".

5.16 The IPCC has endorsed the investigation result of two "Withdrawn" reports, one on 22 January 2020 and another on 4 March 2020. Of the remaining 156 reports, 90 were under the IPCC's examination, while the other 66 were pending CAPO's reply to the IPCC's queries. The IPCC has raised 77 queries on CAPO's investigation reports.

CHAPTER 6**POLICE USE OF FORCE IN PUBLIC ORDER POLICING****Introduction**

6.1 In public order policing in Hong Kong, the legal basis for use of force by the Police is, apart from common law, mainly found in the Police Force Ordinance (PFO) and Public Order Ordinance (POO). These statutory provisions are incorporated into the Police operational guidelines, particularly the Police General Orders (PGO) and the Force Procedures Manual (FPM). The purpose of such guidelines is to set out fundamental principles for public order policing and provide practical guidance to ensure force applied by every police officer is always within the ambit allowed by the law.

6.2 In the series of Public Order Events (POEs) since 9 June 2019, the Police used various levels of force in handling numerous incidents where protesters had breached the peace, blocked roads and resorted to increasing degrees of violence with substantial destruction to both public and private property. In many cases, protesters attacked those people taking different views or thought to have come from the Mainland, thus threatening the personal safety of those people (as to this, please see the Overview (Chapter 4)). In the wake of the POEs, there have been 303 Reportable Complaints and 417 Notifiable Complaints against the Police concerning use of force.¹

6.3 Among various types of use of force, the public has been particularly concerned about the extensive use of tear gas by the Police. According to the Police, between 12 June 2019 and 29 February 2020, a total of 16 191 rounds of tear gas have been used in handling the series of POEs. There is general public concern that tear gas may linger in the air for a time after use and would have adverse effect on the health of those exposed to it, especially when the tear gas is used in busy streets or densely populated areas surrounded by buildings (including residential blocks and schools). For instance, on 12 November 2019, the Police fired 2 330 canisters of tear gas at The Chinese University of Hong Kong (CUHK) and on 18 November 2019, 3 293 canisters at The Hong Kong Polytechnic University (PolyU).² The two universities subsequently published reports by independent accredited laboratories that the

¹ Figures as of 29 February 2020.

² RTHK (2019-12-09). 警方過去半年反修例示威中共用 29863 發彈藥. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1496800-20191209.htm?archive_date=2019-12-09

residual effect of tear gas was within internationally accepted levels.^{3 4} In the light of the public concern, the effect on health from tear gas is discussed in this Chapter.

6.4 The purpose of this Chapter is firstly, to set out the principles of law and police practices governing the use of force in public order policing, so as to inform the IPCC in its on-going work to consider the results of investigations by the CAPO of Reportable Complaints under section 8(1)(a) of the IPCC Ordinance. Secondly, the opportunity is taken to make certain observations as the basis for recommendations to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) and the Chief Executive, pursuant to the IPCC's statutory remit under section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance. Thirdly, it is hoped that the information in this Chapter, would assist the public in understanding the principles governing the use of force by the Police in performing their duties where violent protests have occurred in the streets of Hong Kong.

Statutory Provisions on Use of Force

Duties Conferred on the Police

6.5 The first seven items in section 10 of the PFO sets out the following duties of the Police Force:

- (a) Preserving the public peace;
- (b) Preventing and detecting crimes and offences;
- (c) Preventing injury to life and property;
- (d) Apprehending all persons whom it is lawful to apprehend and for whose apprehension sufficient grounds exists;
- (e) Regulating processions and assemblies in public places and places of public resort;
- (f) Controlling traffic upon public thoroughfares and removing obstructions therefrom;
- (g) Preserving order in public places and places of public resort, at public meetings and in assemblies for public amusements, for which purpose any police officer on duty shall have free admission to all such places and meetings and assemblies while open to any of the public.

³ CUHK. Sampling and Testing Results of Harmful Chemicals on Campus. Retrieved from <http://www.cuhk.edu.hk/english/whats-on/focus/campus-env-result.html>

CUHK. Soil samples (#1 – #12) taken on 15/11/2019. Retrieved from http://www.cuhk.edu.hk/english/images/whats_on/inner/cuhk-env-samples/documents/soil_p_dioxins.pdf

CUHK. Soil samples (S1 – S9) taken on 19/11/2019. Retrieved from http://www.cuhk.edu.hk/english/images/whats_on/inner/cuhk-env-samples/documents/soil_dioxins.pdf

⁴ POLYU. Appendix II First Batch of Test Results for Environmental Contamination on Campus. Retrieved from https://www.polyu.edu.hk/web/cpa/notice/Appendix_II_Eng.pdf

POLYU. Appendix II: Test Results on Air Samples Collected on PolyU Campus. Retrieved from https://www.polyu.edu.hk/web/filemanager/common/mediarelease/20200103/Appendix_II_20200103_En.pdf

6.6 In this connection, the ordinance confers on the Police certain powers to discharge these duties, including the use of force. All powers are, however, only exercisable within the limits defined by the laws. Police officers may only use force when the circumstances so warrants. In the POEs since June 2019, the Police has had to resort to the use of force to maintain law and order in the event of breach of the peace, rioting, destruction of property, attack of police officers with weapons. When persons under arrest resisted violently, police officers have had to use force as circumscribed by law.

6.7 In addition to the above powers to use force, any police officer has the right to defend himself, his colleagues and others from harm. This power of self-defence also applies to the protection of property from harm.

6.8 These powers on the use of force will be further explained in the paragraphs below.

Powers of Arrest - Use of Force in Effecting Arrest

6.9 Section 50(1) of the PFO prescribes the powers of arrest. In particular, section 50(2) provides that if any person who may lawfully be apprehended forcibly resists the endeavour to arrest him or attempts to evade the arrest, a police officer “may use all means necessary to effect the arrest”. This includes the use of reasonable force in the apprehension of the offender.

Powers in Relation to Preserving Public Order and Use of Force

6.10 Section 17(3) of the POO empowers a police officer to apply reasonably necessary force to prevent the holding of, stop or disperse any public meeting, procession or gathering if he or she reasonably believes that the gathering is likely to cause or lead to a breach of the peace. Section 45 states that any police officer may use such force as may be necessary to prevent crime, arrest suspects and overcome resistance of lawful execution of the powers under the Ordinance.⁵ However, section 46(1) limits the degree of force to be not greater than is reasonably necessary for the intended purpose. Section 46(3) further confers immunity on members of the Police Force in the lawful use of force within the limits set out in sections 45 and 46(1). Thus, the legal provisions circumscribing the use of force in effecting arrest and management of public order events are legion.

⁵ Section 45 of the POO provides that:
Without prejudice to any other powers conferred by this Ordinance, any police officer may use such force as may be necessary—
(a) to prevent the commission or continuance of any offence under this Ordinance;
(b) to arrest any person committing or reasonably suspected of being about to commit or of having committed any offence under this Ordinance; or
(c) to overcome any resistance to the exercise of any of the powers conferred by this Ordinance.

General Principles for These Provisions

6.11 Whenever force is used by the Police, the following general principles are clear from the above statutory provisions:

- (a) The use of force must be in the course of performance of a police duty – in other words, the objective must be the lawful discharge of police duty; and
- (b) The use of force must not be more than reasonably necessary in achieving that lawful objective and should cease when that objective is achieved.

6.12 Furthermore, underpinning the law is the principle of personal accountability. If any police officer exceeds the bounds of the limit of the law in the application of force, he is personally accountable. A recent case can be found in the decision of the Court of Final Appeal: *HKSAR v Chu Frankly* [2019] HKCFA 5 (FAMC No. 56 of 2018) where the Court upheld the finding that a superintendent's use of force was unjustified and therefore the conviction against him should stand. Paragraph 15 of the judgement summarised the relevant statutory provisions as follows:

“... section 45 of the Public Order Ordinance⁶ authorizes police officers to use “such force as may be necessary” to prevent the commission or continuance of an offence under the Ordinance; to arrest someone committing or reasonably suspected of being about to commit, etc., such offence; or to overcome any resistance to the exercise of the powers conferred by the Ordinance. Section 46(3) exempts persons who use “such force as may be necessary for any purpose, in accordance with the provisions of” the Ordinance from liability for causing injury or death or damage to property. And section 46(1) limits the force which may be lawfully used:

“Whenever in this Ordinance it is provided that such force as may be necessary may be used for any purpose, the degree of force which may be so used shall not be greater than is reasonably necessary for that purpose.”

Doctrine of ‘Self Defence’ of Person and Property under Common Law

6.13 Apart from using force for effecting arrest and restoring public order, an officer, like any other person in a critical situation, would be entitled to use reasonable force for the

⁶ Cap. 245 of POO

protection of himself or others. It is a defence under common law to a complaint of assault that the officer was in fact acting in self-defence⁷ or the defence of another person⁸ or property⁹ provided no more was done than was necessary for such defence. Anyone under attack, whether or not a police officer, may be entitled to do more than merely ward off blows and may, depending on the circumstances, even strike first to defend himself.¹⁰ Of course, the defensive response must be proportional to the attack and there must be an imminent threat of harm.¹¹

6.14 The test of whether or not an officer acted justifiably in self-defence is partly objective and partly subjective - whether the officer actually and honestly believed that he was compelled to act as he did in order to defend himself, and whether, in all the circumstances, his response was reasonable.¹² The officer is entitled to use such force as is reasonable in the circumstances as he genuinely believes them to be.¹³ The essence of the defence is the honestly held belief of the officer as to the facts.¹⁴ Account is taken of the state of mind of the officer and whether the officer actually believed that he was in danger and compelled to act in the manner that he did, and whether in all the circumstances that was reasonable.¹⁵ Controversial cases would be subject to public scrutiny as to whether or not the amount of force used was reasonable in the circumstances in which the officer believed himself to be in.¹⁶ If self-defence is raised as a defence, it is for the prosecution to prove the accused was not so acting.¹⁷

6.15 The common law defence of self-defence is a straightforward concept that can readily be understood involving no complex legal thought.¹⁸ Common sense will judge what is reasonably necessary. Of course, the merits of each case will depend upon the particular facts and circumstances.

⁷ R v Deana (1909) 73 JP 255, 2 Cr App Rep 75 (CCA)

⁸ Kwaku Mensah v R [1946] AC 83 (PC); Cachay v Nemeth (1972) 28 DLR (3d) 603

⁹ Hall v Gerard (1626) Lat 20, 82 ER 254; Jones v Tresilian (1670) 1 Mod Rep 35, 86 ER 713; Oakes v Wood (1837) 2 M & W 791, 150 ER 1995; R v Hussey (1924) 89 JP 28, 18 Cr App Rep 160 (CCA). Right to retake goods: Blades v Higgs (1861) 10 CBNS 713, 142 ER 634

¹⁰ R v Deana (1909) 73 JP 255, 2 Cr App Rep 75 (CCA)

¹¹ Para 20-45, Archbold Hong Kong Criminal Law Pleading Evidence & Practice, 2020

¹² Ibid

¹³ R v Man Wai-keung [1992] 1 HKCLR 89; Palmer v R [1971] AC 814, PC

¹⁴ Para 20-44A, Archbold Hong Kong Criminal Law Pleading Evidence & Practice, 2020

¹⁵ Palmer v R [1971] AC 814, [1971] 1 All ER 1077 (PC); R v Chan Ming [1975] HKLR 666, [1975] HKCU 62 (CA); R v Shannon (1980) 71 Cr App Rep 192 (CA, Eng); R v Whyte [1987] 3 All ER 416, 85 Cr App Rep 283 (CA, Eng); Beckford v R [1988] AC 130, [1987] 3 All ER 425 (PC); R v Man Wai-keung [1992] 1 HKCLR 89, [1992] HKCU 387 (CA); R v Leung Yuet-man [1991] 1 HKLR 300, [1991] HKCU 351 (CA); R v Cheung Kwok-wai [1997] HKCU 689 (unreported, No 271/1996, 18 April 1997) (CA); Comr of Police v Coroner of Hong Kong [1997] 1 HKLRD 509, [1997] HKCU 1100 (HC)

¹⁶ R v Martin (2001) Times, 1 November (CA, Eng)

¹⁷ HKSAR v Osunwoke, MA no. 369 OF 2017, [2018] HKCFI 672

¹⁸ Palmer v R [1971] AC 814, PC, Lord Morris stated at 831

HKPF Guidelines

6.16 For operational purposes, the Police has a set of guidelines for the use of force based on the relevant legal principles. The guidelines are set out in the PGO and the FPM. These guidelines seek to encapsulate the legal principles set out above.

General Principles

6.17 The PGO are made by the Commissioner under section 46(1) of the PFO. The PGO applies to all police officers. They are mandatory and any non-compliance would render an officer liable to disciplinary action. Similarly, the FPM contains information, advice and guidelines on police procedures. They are practice manuals based on the PGO.

6.18 Chapter 29 of the PGO and the FPM concern the use of force. In the reply of the S for S to a LegCo Question on 19 June 2019, the use of force pursuant to Chapter 29 of PGO was mentioned as follows:

“[t]he Police have established guidelines on the use of force. Police officers may use minimum force as appropriate only when such an action is absolutely necessary and there are no other means to accomplish the lawful duty. Police officers shall give verbal warning prior to the use of force as far as circumstances permit, while the person(s) involved shall be given every opportunity, where practicable, to obey police orders before force is used.”¹⁹

6.19 In gist, officers may use only minimum force necessary to achieve the purpose and once that purpose has been achieved, they should cease using force. Force used must also be reasonable in the circumstances. To illustrate the corresponding levels of control to be adopted in response to the different levels of resistance put up by a subject, the Police Force provides guidance to their officers by way of a set of principles set out in what it calls the Use of Force Continuum (Force Continuum) in Chapter 29 of the FPM.

Force Continuum

6.20 The Force Continuum provides guidance on a series of closely linked escalating or de-escalating options of force to be considered by a police officer, ranging from the mere presence of the officer to the use of firearms in response to six levels of resistance, i.e. from psychological intimidation to deadly force assault. The Force Continuum is incorporated into the training of

¹⁹ Government Press Releases (2019-06-19): LC Urgent Question 1: Use of force by police officers in demonstrations. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/19/P2019061900469.htm>

all police officers from the beginning of their foundation training and continues throughout their career. It is also revised from time to time to cope with changing circumstances in the community.

6.21 The principle behind the Force Continuum is to enable a police officer to respond to different levels of aggression (defined as “level of resistance”) encountered in the course of law enforcement by use of the minimum level of force necessary to achieve the law enforcement objective. The Force Continuum defines six levels of resistance, by increasing levels of severity. For each level of resistance, the Force Continuum tabulates definitions, levels of control and options available.

6.22 In the latest version of the Force Continuum revised on 2 October 2019, the terminology, definitions, levels of control and options available at the fourth and fifth levels are all amended. For instance, in the fourth level of control in the revised Force Continuum, a number of irritant agent devices are added as options available to police officers. Less lethal weapons like super sock round, react round and more irritant agent devices than those stated in the fourth level are added to the fifth level in the revised Force Continuum. Besides, for the severest level, i.e. the sixth level of control, under which the use of firearms is available, the definition of “deadly force assault” is amended from “assaults intended to cause death or serious bodily injury” to “assaults to cause or likely to cause death or serious bodily injury”. In other words, under the revised Force Continuum, when an officer is under “assaults to cause or likely to cause death or serious bodily injury”, use of firearm might be one of the options available provided that the general principles of use of force are followed.

6.23 The Police believes that the revised definitions would enable officers to make assessments more easily and objectively in response to aggression encountered in the course of law enforcement.

6.24 The underpinning principle of the Force Continuum is the concept of personal accountability, contained in the remark that police officers “*should exercise their own discretion to determine what level of force is justified in a given situation.....*” The appropriate level of force to be adopted depends on the level of resistance of the subject, as judged by the officer in his/her perception of the threat and the circumstances at the time. The Force Continuum recognises that an officer would be justified to use a level of force greater than that of the subject in order to apprehend the subject or control the situation. The overall underlying principle is to use the minimum force necessary to achieve the lawful purpose. Meanwhile, the fundamental principle of personal accountability is that officers on the ground should exercise their own judgement to determine what level of force is justified in a given situation and the officers would be accountable for their own actions.

6.25 In relation to the use of firearms at the sixth level, there is a specified review procedure under PGO 29-05 – “Police Open Fire – Reporting and Investigation” which stipulates the submission of reports from different levels of commands at different prescribed periods. Such reports are eventually submitted to the Director of Operations for consideration.

Use of Force from 9 June 2019 to 29 February 2020

6.26 As can be seen from the POEs to date, the Police, faced with the aggressive violence accompanying the protests, have used force up to the sixth level as circumstances required. The use of force is to be in response to aggression encountered when the Police is called upon to maintain law and order, such as breach of the peace, rioting, destruction of property, arson, and in self-defence when police officers were attacked with weapons. Readers are referred to the Overview (Chapter 4) and chapters on individual incidents (Chapters 7 - 12) for an understanding of the scale and depth of the violence accompanying the protests.

6.27 Regarding the use of firearms in the sixth level, as at 29 February 2020, 19 live rounds were fired in 12 incidents involving 13 officers.²⁰ Live shots were fired only when officers in the course of operations became isolated into a single officer or a small group of officers and were attacked by aggressive protesters with potentially lethal weapons or when they perceived that the attackers attempted to snatch their service pistols. Majority of the shots were warning shots, while three of the attackers were actually shot, one in the left chest, one in the left thigh and the other in the upper abdomen.²¹ Details of the firearms used on each occasion as reported by the Police are in Annex 1 to this Chapter.

6.28 With regard to police firing of warning shots, the United Nations Human Rights Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement²² on the specific risks of use of Kinetic Impact Projectiles states that *“the firing of kinetic projectiles from the air or from an elevated position, such as could occur during an assembly, is likely to increase their risk of striking protesters in the head. Targeting the torso may cause damage to the vital organs and there may be penetration of the body, especially, when projectiles are fired at close range. The calibre and velocity of the projectiles, as well as the material of their construction, will also affect the likelihood and seriousness of injury.”* Similarly, the guidelines of Amnesty International²³ state that the decision on whether or not to fire a warning shot has to be weighed

²⁰ Information provided by HKPF.

²¹ Ibid. One officer fired one shot in Tai Ho Road on 1 October 2019. One officer fired one shot in Tai Tong Road Yuen Long on 4 October 2019. One officer fired 3 shots in Sai Wan Ho, Shau Kei Wan on 11 November 2019

²² Paragraphs 7.5.3 and 7.5.4 United Nations Human Rights Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement. Retrieved from https://www.ohchr.org/Documents/HRBodies/CCPR/LLW_Guidance.pdf

²³ Use of Force, Guidelines for Implementation of the UN Basic Principles on the use of force and firearms by

against “*the protection of third persons : when firing a warning shot in the air, the bullet will come down with a potentially lethal velocity at quite a distance from the place of firing. Its trajectory cannot be controlled so there is no way of knowing whether it will accidentally hit somebody. When warning shots are fired onto the ground or horizontally in any direction there is a high risk of potentially lethal ricochets, especially where the ground or walls consist of solid materials such as brick or concrete....*”.

6.29 The Police also stipulates in the FPM to remind police officer to take careful evaluation when opening fire in a crowded area that may put bystanders at risk. According to the abovementioned guidelines, firing of warning shots is not advisable, especially in a crowded area.

6.30 Regarding the Police’s use of live rounds, it is governed by PGO 29 which stipulates that under life threatening situation, police officers may discharge a firearm to protect themselves or any other persons. In addition, police officers may discharge a firearm to quell a riot or insurrection, provided that no lesser degree of force can achieve the purpose.

6.31 Over the past months throughout the POEs, it has not been uncommon to see extreme violent scenes in the streets with police officers being attacked, for instance, violent protesters throwing petrol bombs at police officers and police vehicles from a close distance²⁴ or from height²⁵. Under such critical situation, the police officers were indeed under life threatening situation and would be justified to discharge their firearms to save their own lives and that of other colleagues, and to quell the riot and insurrection according to the aforementioned use of force guidelines and the common law principle of self-defence as discussed in paragraphs 6.13-15. Nevertheless, it is observed that police officers had exercised restraint in the use of firearms throughout the POEs.

6.32 The table and chart below show the monthly and accumulative use of different types of ammunition by the Police from June 2019 to February 2020.²⁶ Readers may refer to Chart 4-1 of the Overview (Chapter 4) for a composite view to these figures in connection with the major POEs happened since June 2019.

law enforcement officials, Amnesty International. Retrieved from https://www.amnestyusa.org/files/amnesty_international_guidelines_on_use_of_force-2.pdf

²⁴ YouTube (2019-09-15). 【915 行街】示威者向灣仔站內投擲汽油彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xfI0beeKE54>

²⁵ HK01 (2019-08-25). 【825 荃葵青遊行】有人從高處向警員投擲汽油彈 腳邊閃爆險中招. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/367821/825_荃葵青遊行-有人從高處向警員投擲汽油彈-腳邊閃爆險中招

²⁶ Information provided by HKPF.

Date	Types of ammunition				
	Tear gas	Rubber round	Super Sock round	React round	Live round
June 2019	240	19	3	33	0
July 2019	608	134	3	114	0
August 2019	2 187	405	43	130	3
September 2019	492	348	139	132	1
October 2019	2 848	1 625	386	350	7
November 2019	9 597	7 479	1 425	1 104	8
December 2019	166	66	27	10	0
January 2020	24	9	6	7	0
February 2020	29	15	1	0	0
Total	16 191	10 100	2 033	1 880	19

Table 6-1: The monthly use of different types of ammunition by the Police between June 2019 and February 2020 (Source: HKPF)

Accumulative Figures of Police Use of Ammunition

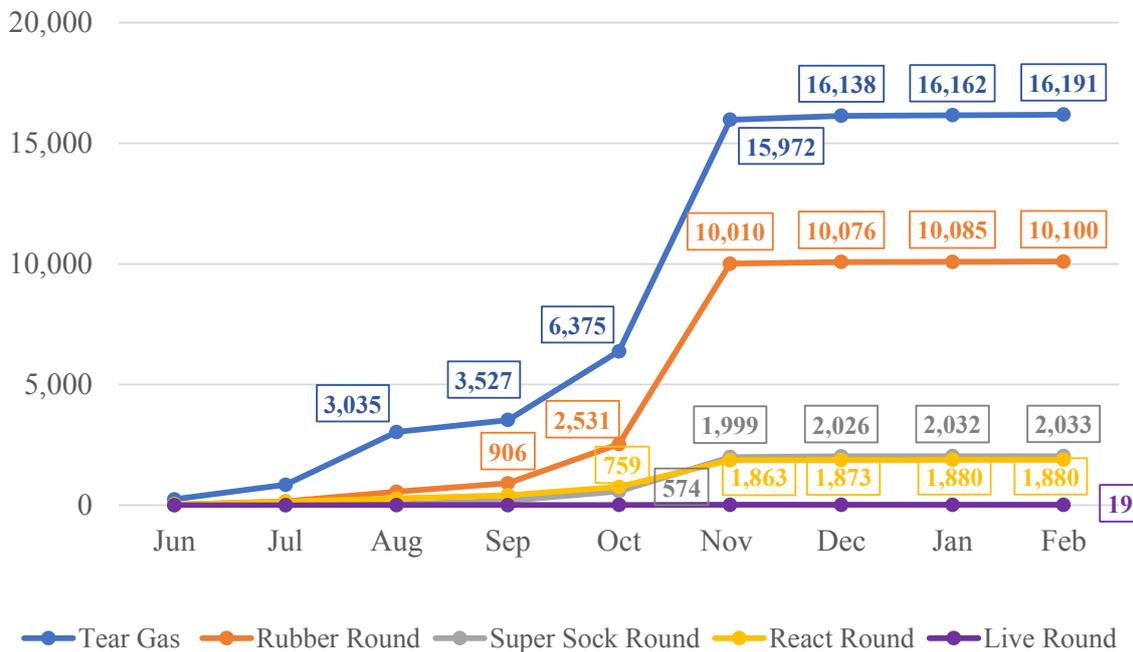


Chart 6-1: Accumulative figures of Police use of different types of ammunition (June 2019 to February 2020)

Injuries Sustained in POEs from 9 June 2019 to 29 February 2020

6.33 According to the Hospital Authority as at 25 November 2019, a total of 2 615 casualties were related to the series of POEs since 9 June 2019. Among this number, over 590 police officers²⁷ have been injured and a number of persons who were attacked by protesters. The three protesters who were shot by police officers have all been discharged from hospital. According to the best information collected under this Study, the only fatality caused by the violence in the POEs was that a 70-year old man who was fatally hit in the head by a brick hurled at him in the midst of a confrontation between the violent protesters and a group of local residents.

Arrests Made from 9 June 2019 to 29 February 2020

6.34 As at 29 February 2020, a total of 7 613 persons have been arrested with 1 206 charged. Among those charged, 559 persons have been charged in Court with “Riot” (section 19 of POO) while 143 with “Unlawful Assembly” (section 18 of POO)

Management of the Use of Force

6.35 The use of force is, however, only one facet in policing operation. All police operations require prior planning duly informed by intelligence, and executed with a command structure deemed appropriate to the circumstances. The general objective of each police operation is to prevent crime or ensure that crime observed does desist, and attention is also given to ensure officers and public and private property are protected from harm. In addition to blockage of roads and disablement of transport infrastructure, aggressive attacks against police officers and destruction of public and private property took place during the POEs since June 2019, with the most aggressive actions taking place in October and November 2019. To maintain law and order, protect property and prevent harm to officers and others, force sometimes has to be used within the limits of the law.

6.36 It is the Police policy to review the use of force after each operation. In this context, a count of the weapons used is always made after each operation. Officers at all levels have to account personally for the use of force, when a complaint is made or where their actions in operations are observed by supervisors to require investigation. Supervisors at all levels are duty-bound to manage their subordinates in accordance with Force regulations and are held accountable for their supervisory duties.

²⁷ Information provided by HKPF

Use of Force in Comparable Jurisdictions

6.37 The IPCC believes that the study of the use of force by the Hong Kong Police would not be complete without at least a cursory study of the “Use of Force Principles” in comparable international jurisdictions, so that the Police guidelines may be compared. Comparable jurisdictions include the United Kingdom (UK), the United States (US), Australia and Canada, where the common law forms the backbone of their legal systems. They are all developed countries and their legal standard is substantially identical with that of Hong Kong. All four jurisdictions are signatories to the International Covenant on Civil and Political Rights (ICCPR)²⁸ and are bound by the same human rights instrument. They are committed to taking all necessary measures to give effect to the rights recognised in the ICCPR. Any disproportionate or unnecessary use of force may constitute a violation of ICCPR in these jurisdictions as it is in Hong Kong.²⁹

6.38 In these jurisdictions, their local laws basically prescribe the principles on the use of force. In general, use of force should be reasonable, necessary and/or proportionate with due regard to the particular circumstances. The principles in these jurisdictions are summarised below:

²⁸ ICCPR is a multilateral treaty adopted by the United Nations General Assembly. Parties to the covenant commit to respect the civil and political rights of individuals, including the right to life, freedom of religion, freedom of speech, freedom of assembly, etc. The ICCPR is incorporated into the Hong Kong Law through the Hong Kong Bill of Rights.

²⁹ Article 6 – right to life and Article 7 – prohibits torture and cruel, inhuman or degrading punishment.

Jurisdiction	Use of Force Principles
UK	<p><u>Law</u> Reasonable force if necessary <i>(section 117 of Police and Criminal Evidence Act 1984)</i></p> <p><u>Manual / Guidelines</u> Reasonable and proportionate <i>(College of Policing - Authorised professional practice³⁰)</i></p>
New York, US	<p><u>Law</u> Objectively reasonable <i>(Graham v. Connor 490 U.S. 386 (1989))</i></p> <p><u>Manual / Guidelines</u> Reasonable under the circumstances <i>(NYPD Use of Force Policy³¹)</i></p>
Melbourne, Australia	<p><u>Law</u> Reasonable, necessary and proportionate to the circumstances <i>(section 462A, Crimes Act 1958)</i></p> <p><u>Manual / Guidelines</u> Minimum amount reasonably necessary <i>(Victoria Police Manual³²)</i></p>
Toronto, Canada	<p><u>Law</u> Proportionate, and reasonably necessary, in the circumstances. <i>(sections 26 & 27 of Criminal Code)</i></p> <p><u>Manual / Guidelines</u> Proportionate and reasonably necessary in the</p>

³⁰ College of Policing. Authorised Professional Practice. Retrieved from <https://www.app.college.police.uk/app-content/public-order/core-principles-and-legislation/police-use-of-force/>

³¹ New York City Police Department (2016). Annual Use of Force Report 2016. Retrieved from <https://www1.nyc.gov/assets/nypd/downloads/pdf/use-of-force/use-of-force-2016.pdf>

³² Victoria Police. Victoria Police Manual.

Jurisdiction	Use of Force Principles
	circumstances <i>(Ontario Use of Force Model & Toronto Police Service Procedures 15-01³³)</i>

United Kingdom

6.39 We look at not only the law of the abovementioned jurisdictions but also their assurance of compliance with their legal standards in practice. In terms of practical guidelines in the UK, “Authorised Professional Practice” (APP) developed by the College of Policing is an official source of professional practice on policing. The general principle for police use of force is reasonableness and proportionality. In the case of conduct contrary to the principle, the officers would be open to criminal or misconduct proceedings. In order to identify the proper considerations governing the use of force and to guide actions according to the law, the advice from a Queen’s Counsel given to Her Majesty’s Inspectorate of Constabulary (HMIC)³⁴ has been incorporated in the APP. This obliges officers to ask themselves **three core questions** and to act according to their answers:

- (a) Would the use of force have a lawful objective and, if so, how immediate the grave is the threat posed?
- (b) Are there any means, short of the use of force, capable of attaining the lawful objective identified?
- (c) Having regard to the nature and gravity of the threat, and the potential for adverse consequences to arise from the use of force, what is the minimum level of force required to attain the objective identified, and would the use of that level of force be proportionate or excessive?

6.40 As for accountability, there is a clear public order command structure in the APP.³⁵

³³ Toronto Police Service (2014). Police encounters with people in crisis. Retrieved from https://www.torontopolice.on.ca/publications/files/reports/police_encounters_with_people_in_crisis_2014.pdf

³⁴ Her Majesty's Inspectorate of Constabulary (HMIC) was replaced by Her Majesty's Inspectorate of Constabulary and Fire & Rescue Services (HMICFRS) in summer 2017.

³⁵ College of Policing. Authorised Professional Practice. Retrieved from <https://www.app.college.police.uk/app-content/public-order/command/>

The role and responsibilities of gold commander³⁶ (strategic), silver commander³⁷ (tactical) and bronze commander³⁸ (operational) are clearly stated. The command structure is role specific.³⁹ In general, the **gold commander** provides leadership and strategic oversight and is responsible for determining the strategic objectives. The **silver commander** on the other hand should develop, command and coordinate the overall tactical response of an operation, in accordance with the strategic objectives set by the gold commander. The **bronze commander** should implement the silver commander's plan and develop a deployment plan ensuring that staff understand their roles, responsibilities and limits.

6.41 According to the APP, the presumption in favour of peaceful assembly is a starting point for policing POEs. Peaceful intentions should be presumed unless there is compelling evidence that those organising or participating in a particular event will themselves use, advocate or incite violence. Police action should, therefore, target only those persons responsible for the breach of the peace. An action taken which is not directed at the person committing the breach will generally be unlawful.⁴⁰ Where and only where there is a reasonable belief that there is no other means whatsoever to prevent a breach of the peace, the lawful exercise by innocent third parties of their rights may be restricted by the Police. This is a test of necessity, which can only be justified in truly extreme and exceptional circumstances.⁴¹

6.42 Before the Police can take any steps which in any way restrict the lawful exercise of rights by innocent third parties, they must take all other possible steps (including making proper and advance preparations) to ensure that the breach, or imminent breach, is prevented and the rights of third parties are protected.⁴²

³⁶ The **gold commander** assumes and retains overall command for the operation or incident. They have overall responsibility and authority for the gold strategy and any tactical parameters that silver or bronze commanders should follow. The gold commander, however, should not make tactical decisions. They are responsible for ensuring that any tactics deployed are proportionate to the risks identified, meet the objectives of the strategy and are legally compliant.

³⁷ The **silver commander** commands and coordinates the overall tactical response in compliance with the strategy, and is the tactical commander of the incident. Generally, there should be one tactical commander, but it may not be practical or desirable in large-scale incidents or operations to have a single silver commander. The gold commander (when appointed or in a position to assume command) decides how many silver commanders are appointed and their individual span of command

³⁸ The **bronze commander** is responsible for the command of a group of resources, and carrying out functional or geographical responsibilities related to the tactical plan.

³⁹ College of Policing. Authorised Professional Practice. Retrieved from <https://www.app.college.police.uk/app-content/operations/command-and-control/command-structures/>

⁴⁰ College of Policing. Authorised Professional Practice. Retrieved from <https://www.app.college.police.uk/app-content/public-order/core-principles-and-legislation/?highlight=breach%20of%20the%20peace?s=breach+of+the+peace#police-action>

⁴¹ Ibid

⁴² Ibid

New York, US

6.43 The US Supreme Court has set the basic US legal standard for determining legality of any use of force by a law enforcement official as being whether his or her actions were “objectively reasonable”.⁴³ This assessment must be made from the perspective of a reasonable officer on the scene, including what the officer knew at the time.

6.44 Within the New York Police Department (NYPD), its latest use of force policy was implemented in 2016.⁴⁴ It stipulates that in all circumstances, any application or use of force must be reasonable under the circumstances. To determine whether the use of force is reasonable, there is a list of considerations NYPD members should consider, including the nature and severity of the crime / circumstances, actions taken by the subject, immediacy of the perceived threat or harm to the subject or others.⁴⁵ These considerations are all under the header of objective reasonableness as required by law.

Melbourne, Australia

6.45 Under the Crimes Act 1958, force may be used to prevent the commission of an indictable offence.⁴⁶ In order for the use of force to be legal, force must always be reasonable, necessary and proportionate to the circumstances.

6.46 For practical operation, the Victoria Police Manual on Crowd Control states that violent confrontation and the use of force should be avoided. When using force, only the minimum amount reasonably necessary may be deployed. In the context of POEs and crowd control, the police needs to consider the rights of the members of the public to exercise free speech, peaceful assembly, protest and industrial action. However, the police has an obligation to take action, using the minimum amount of force necessary, when “the action of those taking part in such activities either become unlawful or infringe upon the rights of others.” More importantly, force may not be used against non-violent refusal to cooperate.

⁴³ *Graham v Connor* 490 US 386 (1989)

⁴⁴ NYPD (28 December 2017). NYPD releases 2016 Use of Force Report. Retrieved from <https://www1.nyc.gov/site/nypd/news/p1228b/nypd-releases-2016-use-of-force-report>

⁴⁵ (a) The nature and severity of the crime/ circumstances (b) Actions taken by the subject (c) Duration of the action (d) Immediacy of the perceived threat or harm to the subject, members of the service, and/ or bystander (e) Whether the subject is actively resisting custody (f) Whether the subject is attempting to evade arrest by flight (g) Number of subjects in comparison to the number of members of service (h) Size, age, and condition of the subject in comparison to the members of service (i) Subject’s violent history, if known (j) Presence of hostile crowd or agitators (k) Subject apparently under the influence of a stimulant/ narcotic which would affect pain tolerance or increase the likelihood of violence.

⁴⁶ Section 462A, Crimes Act 1958

Toronto, Canada

6.47 The Criminal Code limits the acceptable level of force used by police officers acting under legal authority. Police officers may, acting on reasonable grounds, use force to prevent the commission of offences which, if committed, the person may be arrested without warrant and likely to cause immediate and serious injury to the person or property of anyone,⁴⁷ to prevent a breach of the peace,⁴⁸ to suppress a riot,⁴⁹ and to do anything in the administration or enforcement of the law.⁵⁰ The use of force must be proportionate, or reasonably necessary, in the circumstances.⁵¹ The Supreme Court of Canada has explained that police action should not be judged against a standard of perfection, but in the light of the exigent circumstances of dangerous and demanding work and the obligation to react quickly to emergencies.⁵²

Hong Kong Police

6.48 In sum, it is observed that the use of force principles in the HKPF is in line with comparable jurisdictions.

Effect on Health from Use of Tear Gas

6.49 As mentioned in paragraph 6.3 above, the Police has fired a total of 16 191 tear gas canisters between 12 June 2019 and 29 February 2020. There has been public concern on the use of tear gas, particularly those containing 2-chlorobenzalmalononitrile, commonly known as CS, whether inhaling the gas would have any adverse health effect. A submission in mid-January 2020 prepared by the Hong Kong Human Rights Monitor, Public Health Research Collaborative, and Civil Rights Observer regarding an “Urgent Appeal to the Special Rapporteur on Toxics – on the toxicity of tear gas and other chemical weapons used by the Police during the recent civil rights movement in Hong Kong”⁵³, has highlighted, among other things, the health risk associated with tear gas, or chemical irritant.⁵⁴

⁴⁷ Section 27, Criminal Code

⁴⁸ Sections 30-31, Criminal Code

⁴⁹ Sections 32-33, Criminal Code

⁵⁰ Section 25, Criminal Code

⁵¹ Sections 26-27, Criminal Code

⁵² R v Nasogaluak, 2010 SCC 6 at paragraph 35. Retrieved from <https://scc-csc.lexum.com/scc-csc/scc-csc/en/item/7845/index.do>

⁵³ Hong Kong Human Rights Monitor, Public Health Research Collaborative, and Civil Rights Observer (January 2020) Urgent Appeal to the Special Rapporteur on Toxics – on the toxicity of tear gas and other chemical weapons used by the HK Police Force during the recent civil rights movement in Hong Kong. Retrieved from https://drive.google.com/file/d/1p-pQ2WxSIDHRUi4DnmqvsCBe0_9SeqP1/view

⁵⁴ Ibid

6.50 In a study conducted by the Committees on Toxicity, Mutagenicity and Carcinogenicity of Chemicals in Food, Consumer Products and the Environment (COT, COM, and COC) on referral from the Department of Health, and with the support of Home Office in the UK,⁵⁵ the Committees have expressed concern for certain population groupings which might be susceptible to the exposure of tear gas including individuals with bronchial asthma or chronic obstructive airways disease, individuals suffering from hypertension or other cardiovascular disease etc. In actual situation, the police is unlikely to know the medical status of the susceptible groups when the tear gas is used. As such, adherence to the operational guidelines for the prudent use of tear gas is of particular importance.

6.51 As to the effect of tear gas in Hong Kong's environment, the Secretary for Food and Health has explained its effect in response to a Legislative Council (LegCo) Question on 13 November 2019 that *“health effects of tear gas depend on a number of factors such as the specific chemical composition of the tear gas, duration and dose of exposure, exposure route, health conditions of the individuals and the physical environment during exposure”*.⁵⁶ Moreover, the Department of Health has uploaded health information on tear gas to the website of the Centre for Health Protection (CHP) giving general advice to the public when faced with tear gas.⁵⁷

6.52 The Research Office of the LegCo Secretariat also released a report on 2 January 2020 stating the health impacts of tear gas on individuals which depends on various factors similar to those mentioned in paragraph 6.51. The report also highlighted the use of tear gas should take note as follows :

*“police guidelines from selected places specify that (a) tear gas should not be directly fired at individuals; (b) tear gas should not be used in enclosed spaces; and (c) the enforcement officers need to give sufficient warning and provide evacuate route prior to usage.”*⁵⁸

⁵⁵ Committees on Toxicity, Mutagenicity and Carcinogenicity of Chemicals in Food, Consumer Products and the Environment (COT, COM, and COC) (September 2019) COT/COM/COC statement on 2-chlorobenzylidene malononitrile and CS spray. Retrieved from <https://cot.food.gov.uk/cotstatements/cotstatementsyrs/cotstatements1999/maloncsspray>

⁵⁶ LCQ 16 Question raised by Professor the Hon Joseph Lee and a written reply by the Secretary for Food and Health, Professor Sophia Chan, in the Legislative Council on 13 November 2019. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201911/20/P2019112000559.htm>

⁵⁷ Centre of Health Protection (2019-11-07) Health Information on Tear Gas. Retrieved from <https://www.chp.gov.hk/en/healthtopics/content/460/102308.html>

⁵⁸ Research Office, Legislative Council Secretariat (2 January 2020) Guideline on the use of less-lethal police weapons in selected places. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/research-publications/english/1920rt04-guidelines-on-the-use-of-less-lethal-police-weapons-in-selected-places-20200102-e.pdf>

6.53 As to the health effect of chemical irritants such as tear gas and OC spray, information from United Nations Human Rights Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement on the circumstances of potentially lawful use and specific risk is extracted in Annex 2.

6.54 After the Police had fired over a thousand canisters of tear gas at both CUHK and PolyU in November 2019⁵⁹, both universities addressed the general public's concern about the potential hazards of tear gas residue remaining on their campuses and appointed independent accredited laboratories to collect environmental samples, namely air, and soil samples at various locations on campus for testing. According to the published reports, the results of the tests met the internationally accepted health and safety levels and both campuses could resume operation.^{60,61,62}

6.55 While the public has a grave concern on health effect from tear gas, the public health physicians are equally concerned about the lack of decontamination instructions for public reference and compliance.⁶³ This issue is addressed in paragraph 6.74.

IPCC Observations

6.56 It is evident that police counterparts elsewhere apply much the same principles for the use of force – reasonable, proportionate and minimum necessary force against subject individuals after considering the risk posed by their actions and behaviour. The use of force principle adopted by the Police, i.e. “*only minimum force necessary to achieve the purpose may be used and once that purpose has been achieved, the use of force shall cease*”, is in line with their international counterparts. Determining whether a level of force applied by the Police is appropriate would be situational, depending on the actual circumstances faced by a particular police officer.

⁵⁹ RTHK (2019-11-12) 警方過去半年反修例示威中共用29863發彈藥. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1496800-20191209.htm?archive_date=2019-12-09

⁶⁰ HKFP (2019-12-06) Campus soil and water samples show negligible health hazards from tear gas, says Chinese University of Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/12/06/campus-soil-water-samples-show-negligible-health-hazards-tear-gas-says-chinese-university-hong-kong/>
CUHK Announcement (2019-12-06) CUHK Releases First Batch of Test Results on Campus Environment. Retrieved from https://www.cpr.cuhk.edu.hk/en/announcements_detail.php?1=1&1=1&id=37

⁶¹ POLYU Media Releases (2019-12-28) PolyU Announces the Test Results on Campus Environment Assessment. Retrieved from https://www.polyu.edu.hk/web/en/media/media_releases/index_id_6723.html
POLYU First Batch of Test Results for Environmental Contamination on Campus. Retrieved from https://www.polyu.edu.hk/web/cpa/notice/Appendix_II_Eng.pdf

⁶² POLYU Media Releases (2020-01-03) PolyU Releases the Remaining Test Results for Air Samples Collected on Campus. Retrieved from https://www.polyu.edu.hk/web/en/media/media_releases/index_id_6724.html

⁶³ Chan EYY, Hung KKC, Hung HHY, Graham CA (2019-10-26) Use of tear gas for crowd control in Hong Kong. Retrieved from [https://www.thelancet.com/journals/lancet/article/PIIS0140-6736\(19\)32326-8/fulltext](https://www.thelancet.com/journals/lancet/article/PIIS0140-6736(19)32326-8/fulltext)

6.57 In communicating with the IPCC, the Commissioner has expressed his view that the Police has always endeavoured to comply with the law through application of its own policies and procedures in responding to actions; the response of the Police in the face of violent protesters in the past months is no exception. The Commissioner, however, acknowledges that each officer is accountable for the use of force, that any complaints and any alleged or observable instances of excessive use of force should be fully and fairly investigated.

6.58 The Police provides practical guidance to frontline officers by way of the Force Continuum but these guidelines are principle-based. As there is personal accountability under the law, each officer has to account subsequently for his or her conduct. More specific guidance might be fairer to the officer and easier for CAPO and the IPCC to work on when a complaint is made against an officer. More specific guidance would also enable the public to better understand the need for use of force in the law enforcement circumstances faced by the officer.

6.59 Specific scenario-based guidance, as suggested by HMIC in “The Rules of Engagement – A review of the August 2011 disorders” would be good reference for the Police. Based on the advice from a Queen’s Counsel,⁶⁴ ten key principles⁶⁵ are distilled from three core questions.⁶⁶ The ten key principles are to assist officers to consider their use of force. They include that force shall be exercised with restraint and shall be the minimum honestly and reasonably judged to be necessary to attain the lawful objective; individual officers are accountable and responsible for any use of force, and must be able to justify their actions in law. These are the elaboration of the three core questions reminding officers that the use of force should be minimum, necessary and reasonable and that they are held accountable for their actions. Based on them, HMIC has identified a series of specific scenarios to illustrate the problems encountered by police officers in the 2011 disturbances in the UK.

6.60 Some of the identified scenarios are similar to those that happened in the protests in Hong Kong, such as “*flash burglary rioting*”, “*barricades across road*”, “*petrol bombs*”

⁶⁴ Timony Otty, QC, Blackstone Chambers (2011-11-24) Annex C “Advice on the use of force by police in the context of civil unrest and riot” in “The Rules of Engagement – A review of the August 2011 disorders”. Retrieved from <https://www.justiceinspectorates.gov.uk/hmicfrs/media/a-review-of-the-august-2011-disorders-20111220.pdf>

⁶⁵ HMIC (2011) The Rules of Engagement: A review of the August 2011 disorder. Retrieved from <https://www.justiceinspectorates.gov.uk/hmicfrs/media/a-review-of-the-august-2011-disorders-20111220.pdf>

⁶⁶ The three questions are: (i) Would the use of force have a lawful objective and, if so, how immediate the grave is the threat posed? (ii) Are there any means, short of the use of force, capable of attaining the lawful objective identified? (iii) Have regard to the nature and gravity of the threat, and the potential for adverse consequences to arise from the use of force, what is the minimum level of force required to attain the objective identified, and would the use of that level of force be proportionate or excessive?

thrown”, etc.⁶⁷ The scenario-based guidance also contains corresponding tactical considerations for the police officer to act in every identified scenario.

6.61 Compared to the Force Continuum of the Police, the guidelines of HMIC detail more options for police officers and in some cases, the level of force envisaged (on Counsel’s advice) based on the scenario under consideration appears to be higher than that envisaged in the Force Continuum. For instance, in cases of arson attacks on a building, an officer can give warning or possibly use firearms if justified based on actual circumstances encountered. Meanwhile, most of the scenarios described in the HMIC list are very similar to events in Hong Kong in the past months, when the Police have had to enforce the law when faced with road blocking, arson and damage to property, attack by violent protesters with weapons, all of which constituted unlawful activity the Police is duty-bound to prevent or to arrest those in breach, and to bring them to justice.⁶⁸ Against this background, police officers have had to resort to use of force.

6.62 While appreciating that scenario-based guidelines would provide more certainty in terms of how frontline officers should react to a particular scenario, the IPCC also understands that in adopting such guidelines, the Police has to be cautious to avoid setting unduly rigid rules that may confuse or distract frontline officers from the use of force principles. Hence, a right balance needs to be struck between ensuring fundamental principles are followed and providing operational certainty to frontline officers.

6.63 The APP published by the College of Policing in the UK consists of many different aspects of policing. Among them, there is a specific section on “Public Order” policing, aimed at those officers who are involved in planning and commanding operations⁶⁹. It provides a framework for managing operations and deploying resources at a national, regional or local level. In that section of “Public Order” policing, there is a part on “commander considerations regarding the use of force”⁷⁰ with many useful examples like collective use of force, e.g., line of officers with batons drawn dispersing a crowd as a result of command decisions. Furthermore, there are special considerations which the commanders should take into account in planning and controlling the operations, for instance, the potential response (e.g., alienation/increase in tension), crowd dynamics (e.g. exit routes) and public perception when deploying officers.

⁶⁷ HMIC (2011) *The Rules of Engagement: A review of the August 2011 disorder*. Retrieved from <https://www.justiceinspectors.gov.uk/hmicfrs/media/a-review-of-the-august-2011-disorders-20111220.pdf>

⁶⁸ Ibid

⁶⁹ College of Policing (23 October 2013). *Public Order*. Retrieved from <https://www.app.college.police.uk/app-content/public-order/?s=>

⁷⁰ College of Policing (23 October 2013). *Police Use of Force*. Retrieved from <https://www.app.college.police.uk/app-content/public-order/core-principles-and-legislation/police-use-of-force/#commander-considerations-regarding-use-of-force>

6.64 In addition to the supplementation of specific guidelines to principle-based guidelines, the UK has formalised command structures for public order policing and put in place accreditation training for commanders and rank and file. Officers need to be re-accredited on a regular basis to keep up with the latest developments in POE tactics and policing techniques.

6.65 Following the 2011 Review, HMIC issued a further report in 2014 after inspecting how police forces in England and Wales deal with threats to public order. The report concluded that, among other things, training to the curriculum standard for Police Support Units (a public order-trained police team)⁷¹, and improved command training for gold, silver and bronze commanders in the use of public order situation related tactics⁷², have brought about an improved public order command capability compared with that which was in place at the time of the disorder in August 2011.⁷³

Tear Gas

6.66 Whether the use of tear gas has impact on human health hinges on different factors including specific chemical composition of the tear gas and whether they are properly used under different situations. From the perspective of human health, tear gas composition is the most direct element that would cause an impact and such information provided by the manufacturers is essential. It is advisable to have expert reviews in this regard to ensure that the chemicals contained in the tear gas used by the Police is acceptable.

6.67 In terms of practical operation, many factors such as duration and dosage of exposure, exposure route, health conditions of the individuals and physical environment during exposure have to be taken into account. Clear and systematic practical guidelines on these considerations would facilitate police officers to make more appropriate assessment of particular situations they may face when deciding to use tear gas.

⁷¹ Police Support Unit is a formation of resources for public order policing; the composition of a PSU is standardised across all of the 43 police forces in England and Wales and consists of: one inspector; three sergeants; eighteen constables; and three drivers; all trained and equipped to national standards with three suitably equipped personnel carrier vehicles.

HMIC (2014). Strategic Policing Requirement: An inspection of how police forces in England and Wales deal with threats to public order. Retrieved from <https://www.justiceinspectors.gov.uk/hmicfrs/wp-content/uploads/strategic-policing-requirement-public-order-2014-06.pdf>

⁷² The “*go-forward*” tactics: tactics used by the police in public order situations that go beyond the containment of disorder; they allow the police to take positive action to end incidents of disorder before they escalate; tactics include advancing to disperse crowds, making arrests and working in situations where attenuating energy projectiles (AEPs) are used.

HMIC (2014). Strategic Policing Requirement: An inspection of how police forces in England and Wales deal with threats to public order. Retrieved from <https://www.justiceinspectors.gov.uk/hmicfrs/wp-content/uploads/strategic-policing-requirement-public-order-2014-06.pdf>

⁷³ Ibid.

Recommendations of the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance

Use of Force Principles and Guidelines

6.68 The IPCC acknowledges that the Police has in place policies and procedures regarding the use of force which are well in line with international guidelines. However, the current guidelines tend to be principle-based and the IPCC recommends that the Commissioner should review the current use of force policies and procedures and consider the feasibility of taking the following action:

- (a) Scenario-based guidelines should be developed, with support by legal advice, similar in concept to those recommended by the HMIC as indicated above, to supplement the use of force guidelines now in existence in the PGO and FPM. While the existing guidelines provide principles and the Force Continuum focuses on the “level of resistance” of the subject, they could be improved by adding practical scenarios as examples for each level of resistance. In other words, there will still be one set of guidelines but with examples for illustration. These guidelines should be based on local conditions and the POE experience of the past months, and validated by legal advice from local Counsel. Furthermore, the Police should consider develop a separate set of comprehensive guidelines similar to the Public Order APP as mentioned in Paragraph 6.63. Such guideline should be distinct from the general use of force guidelines which are applicable in normal daily community policing. On this note, during a Joint Meeting with the Police in June 2018 to review a complaint case arising from 2016 Mong Kok riot, IPCC had recommended the Police to review and develop a separate set of use of force guidelines on policing riot situations and to strengthen professional training on handling riot or chaotic situations;
- (b) Upon development of these supplemental guidelines, they should be included in all training. Consideration should be given to whether operational command structure in POEs needs to be further formalised, and whether there should be an accreditation system to ensure that officers are up to date on POE policing techniques;
- (c) Allied with the review of guidelines and operational command structure, consideration should be given to ensuring that clear guidelines are given to commanders at all levels of their accountability to ensure that those under their command do adhere to Force guidelines in the operational circumstances faced by them;

- (d) To ensure that the public understands the law on the use of force and how it is applied by the Police, the IPCC believes that the results of this review should be published and that the Police policies and procedures on the use of force, be part of continuing public education on the role played by the Police in maintaining law and order.

6.69 The IPCC believes that if the foregoing recommendations are implemented, the work of CAPO and the IPCC will be greatly facilitated, because complaints can be looked at in a more informed manner and officers have better guidelines to conduct themselves. This might result in the reduction of complaints.

A Dedicated Legal Advisor's Office within the Police Force

6.70 One of the difficulties of the Police, which the IPCC has observed in the course of this Study, is that Police management has to seek frequent legal advice from the Department of Justice. For the Police to produce internal scenario-based guidelines with legal advice as recommended in paragraph 6.68, it would materially assist to have their own legal capability, either departmentally or by full-time secondment from the Civil Division of the Department of Justice. The Police is Hong Kong's most important and diverse law enforcement department in maintaining law and order. Endowing them with their own legal department is an investment in ensuring that the law is applied in an informed manner. Their own legal department may deal with non-prosecutorial activities including contracting, civil actions and formulation of policies and procedures for policing while prosecutorial activities and disciplinary cases for defaulting police officers would remain the jurisdiction of the Department of Justice.

Use of Tear Gas

6.71 As tear gas is the most widely used policing instrumentality in the past few months, the IPCC believes that the Commissioner is fully aware of the public opprobrium of the Police that such use has caused. The IPCC suggests that the Commissioner considers addressing the issue through policies and procedures which seek to comply with the aspects in the United Nations Human Rights Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement. Relevant extract is in Annex 2.

6.72 To address the public concern over the safety issues or health effects of tear gas, the IPCC recommends that the Commissioner appoint an expert committee comprising medical and scientific experts to advise the Police Force that current and future stocks of tear gas come within acceptable toxicological limits for use in Hong Kong streets. In defining these limits,

the expert committee may refer to information provided by the manufacturers and toxicological tests conducted by them and any information available in the medical and police literature on the effects of their use in developed jurisdictions. However, if it proves impossible to come to a definition of “Acceptable toxicological limits” for use in Hong Kong streets and/or if the appointment of an expert committee proves unfeasible, the Police may alternatively release information concerning the manufacturer, the model and any developed jurisdictions using the same model.

6.73 The IPCC recommends that the Commissioner reviews current practices and procedures for the use of tear gas in public order situations, specifying situations in which it should **not** be used (for example in enclosed space) and if used, the conditions under which it may be used, taking care to ensure affected persons can leave the vicinity quickly and to minimise any unavoidable effects.

6.74 The IPCC appreciates that tear gas may have to be used, but the public still does not fully understand why it is used and how its effects could be mitigated. This is a matter of continuing public education and on-going public relations work by the Police, the Health Department and other community relations departments of the Government.

6.75 Subject to individual accountability, it was observed that the Police guidelines have generally been applied to the circumstances the Police have had to face. Meanwhile, the use of force by the Police has been widely criticised in the media and by a wide cross-section of the public, resulting in a large number of complaints. The IPCC believes that the experience gained by the Police Force in the past months would facilitate the Commissioner conducting a review of the policies and practices to address these criticisms. Elsewhere in this Report, the IPCC has suggested specific areas for focus. These include consideration of higher transparency and better communications on police policies and practices, closer co-operation with the media, incorporation of relevant elements in the training of officers and clearer command structure.

ANNEX 1

**POLICE USE OF FIREARMS INCIDENTS
BETWEEN 9 JUNE AND 29 FEBRUARY 2020**
(Source from Hong Kong Police Force)

	Date/ Time	Location	No. of bullets	No. of officers involved	Brief description from Police Source
1	25 August/ Night time	Tsuen Wan	1	1	At the night time, a group of protesters furiously attacked two uniformed officers at Yi Pei Square, Tsuen Wan with poles and other hard objects. One officer fired one warning shot to save his colleague who fell on the ground and was being ferociously attacked by protesters with hard objects.
2	31 August/ Night time	Eastern District	2	2	At night time, two plain clothes officers fired two warning shots at Victoria Park, Eastern District when they were ferociously attacked by a group of protesters with metal rods, baseball bats and bricks with one protester attempting to snatch the officer's pistol.
3	29 September/ 17:43	Wan Chai District	1	1	One plain clothes officer fired one warning shot to save his colleague who fell on the ground and was being ferociously attacked by protesters with stones and umbrellas at Johnston Road, Wan Chai.
4	1 October/ 15:30	Nathan Road, Yau Tsim	2	1	A uniformed officer fired two warning shots when he and his colleagues were being ferociously

		District			attacked by protesters with hard objects.
5	1 October/ 15:40	Sha Tsui Road, Tsuen Wan District	2	1	A uniformed officer fired two shots at two protesters who were throwing petrol bombs at him. Both shots apparently missed.
6	1 October*/ 16:03	Tai Ho Road, Tsuen Wan District	1	1	A uniformed officer fired one shot against the protester who was hitting the officer with a metal rod. The protester was shot in his left chest.
7	1 October/ 16:30	Sha Tin Pass Road , Wong Tai Sin District	1	1	A uniformed officer fired one shot at a protester who threw a petrol bomb towards him and his colleagues. The shot apparently missed.
8	4 October*/ 21:05	Tai Tong Road, Yuen Long	1	1	An unmarked police vehicle was being surrounded and damaged by protesters with various hard objects at Tai Tong Road, Yuen Long. The uniformed officer disembarked and was forced to fire one shot when the protesters continued to assault him with spanners, metal rods and umbrellas and attempted to snatch his pistol. A male protester was shot in his left thigh while the officer was subsequently hit by two petrol bombs.
9	8 November/ 21:55	Nathan Road, Mong Kok	1	1	A uniformed officer fired one warning shot as a group of protesters was ferociously attacking him and his colleagues with bricks.

10	11 November*/ 07:20	Shau Kei Wan, Sai Wan Ho	3	1	A uniformed officer fired three shots against a group of protesters who attempted to snatch his revolver. One protester was shot in his right upper abdomen.
11	17 November/ 21:49	Austin Road, Outside Poly U	1	1	A private vehicle dashed towards a uniformed officer whilst he was forming a police cordon line at Austin Road, Tsim Sha Tsui. In order to protect the officer, another officer fired one shot towards the driver. The windscreen of the vehicle was hit and the vehicle fled.
12	18 November/ 03:50	Nathan Road, Jordan Road, Yau Ma Tei	3	1	Whilst a group of officers were escorting a female arrested person to the ambulance, they were attacked furiously by protesters with hard objects thrown at them. An officer thus fired two warning shots to protect themselves. As the protesters further attacked officers with petrol bombs, the officer fired a third shot towards the protester but without hitting any person.

* Protesters were injured by live round bullets in these incidents

**EXTRACT OF UNITED NATIONS HUMAN RIGHTS GUIDANCE ON
LESS-LETHAL WEAPONS IN LAW ENFORCEMENT
– USE OF CHEMICAL IRRITANTS**

Circumstances of Potentially Lawful Use

- A chemical irritant should be used only where sufficient toxicological information is available to confirm that it will not cause any unwarranted health problems and when its delivery against a target is accurate. Chemical irritants should only be deployed where a law enforcement official has reason to believe there is an imminent threat of injury.⁷⁴

Specific Risks

- When Chemical irritants are used appropriately, their effects are normally transient, lasting up to approximately three hours. Exposure to fresh air and treating the eyes with cool water typically remedies the effects within one or two hours. Some people, however, have exceptionally severe reactions to irritant spray. Restraining a suspect by placing them in the prone position (i.e. where the person is lying flat with the chest down and back up) should be avoided after exposure. If an individual suffering from the effects of a chemical irritant is restrained, his or her breathing shall be monitored constantly. Any unexpected or long-lasting effects should be referred for relevant specialist assessment and treatment.⁷⁵
- The use of chemical irritants can temporarily cause breathing difficulties; nausea; vomiting; irritation of the respiratory tract, tear ducts, and eyes; spasms; chest pains; dermatitis or allergies. In large doses, it can cause necrosis of the tissue in the respiratory tract and the digestive system, pulmonary oedema, and internal bleeding. There is also the possibility of burns or other injury resulting directly from the solvents if they have not evaporated before contact with skin. There is a specific risk of flammability from the solvent, for instance if a subject is smoking.⁷⁶

⁷⁴ Office of the High Commissioner, United Nations Human Rights (2020) Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement. Retrieved from https://www.ohchr.org/Documents/HRBodies/CCPR/LLW_Guidance.pdf

⁷⁵ Ibid, at paragraph 7.2.4

⁷⁶ Ibid, at paragraph 7.2.5

CHAPTER 7**INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 9 JUNE 2019****Introduction**

7.1 This Chapter deals with the events on Sunday 9 June 2019. This day saw the first large-scale public procession against the Fugitive Offenders Bill and then in the evening, the first clash between protesters and the Police outside the Legislative Council Complex (the LegCo Complex). The events on 9 June attracted 23 Reportable Complaints (RCs) and five Notifiable Complaints (NCs) (see paragraph 7.17 below for details). These complaints are investigated by CAPO and each RC will be monitored by the IPCC assigning observer(s) to attend interview(s) and observe the collection of evidence conducted by CAPO. The purpose of this Chapter is to enable the IPCC to inform itself of the facts of the incidents giving rise to these complaints and the context in which these incidents took place, so that the IPCC is in a better position to undertake its function under section 8(1)(a) of the IPCC Ordinance in monitoring and reviewing the investigations of the individual complaints by CAPO. At the same time, the opportunity is taken to make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) under section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance so that complaints from future Police operations may be prevented.

7.2 What followed the events on 9 June were another clash on 12 June, again outside the LegCo Complex, and the storming of the LegCo Complex by protesters on 1 July. This trilogy of events on 9 June, 12 June and 1 July, all taking place at the LegCo Complex, marked the beginning of a phase of the Fugitive Offenders Bill protests, when peaceful public order events (POEs) became interspersed with bouts of violence.

7.3 Before 9 June, the organisation Civil Human Rights Front (CHRF) had launched two public processions, on Sunday 31 March¹ and Sunday 28 April², against the Fugitive Offenders Bill. Both events were peaceful, though minor in scale in comparison with subsequent processions, with only 12 000 and 130 000 participants according to CHRF. Between mid-April and mid-May, after four meetings, the LegCo still could not set up a Bills Committee to scrutinise the Fugitive Offenders Bill. As a result, Secretary for Security, Mr. John LEE,

¹ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-03-31). “In Pictures: 12,000 Hongkongers march in protest against ‘evil’ China extradition law, organisers say”. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/03/31/pictures-12000-hongkongers-march-protest-evil-china-extradition-law-organisers-say/>

² SCMP (2019-04-28). “Estimated 130,000 protesters join march against proposed extradition law that will allow transfer of fugitives from Hong Kong to mainland China”. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3007999/thousands-set-join-protest-march-against-proposed>

announced on 20 May that the Government had decided to take the Fugitive Offenders Bill directly to the LegCo Meeting on 12 June for a Second Reading debate, bypassing the Bills Committee stage.³ It was against the background of this unusual arrangement⁴ that CHRF organised the third public procession on 9 June⁵, from Victoria Park to Central Government Complex (CGC) area in the afternoon, and a public meeting at the destination of the procession that evening (see Graphic 7-1, Maps 7-1 and 7-2).⁶



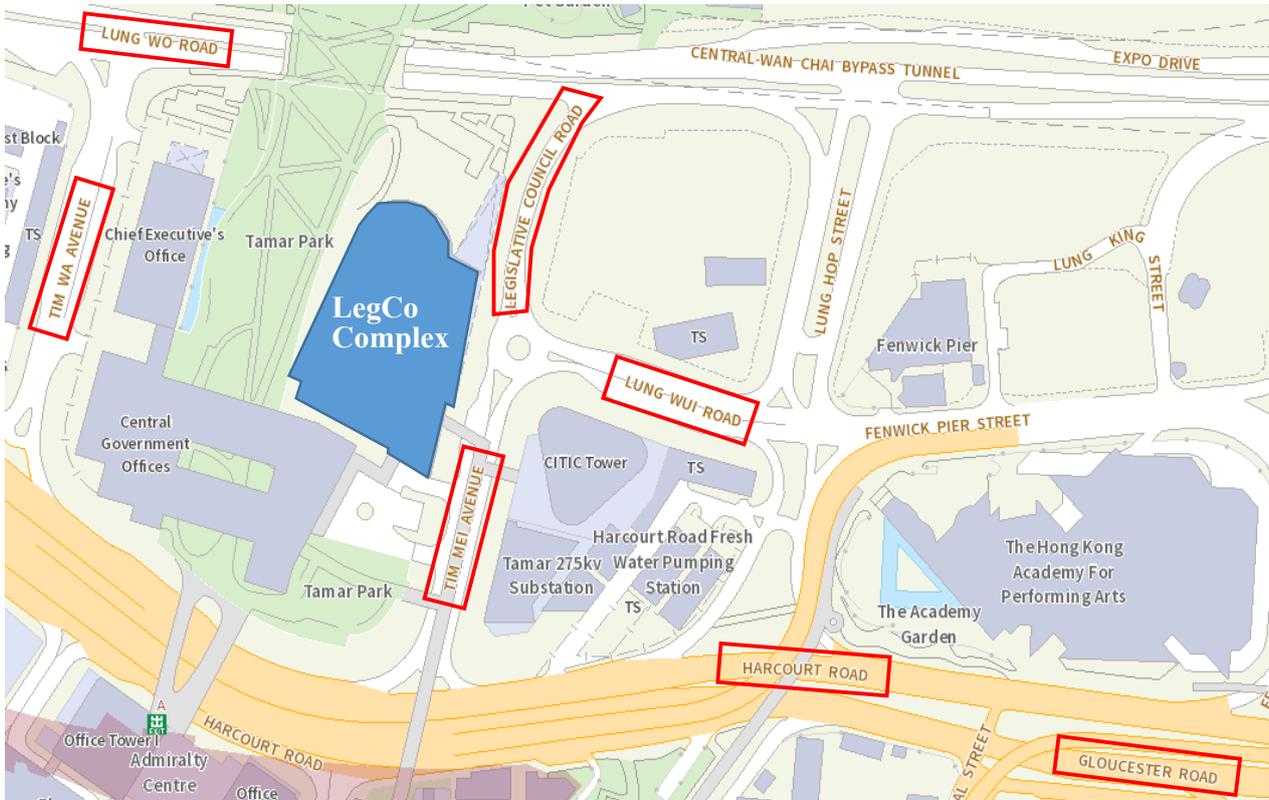
Graphic 7-1: The LegCo Complex
(Source of base image: SCMP)

³ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-05-20). “Hong Kong extradition bill to bypass legislative committee scrutiny, as gov’t fast-tracks controversial law”. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/05/20/just-hong-kong-extradition-bill-bypass-legislative-committee-scrutiny-govt-fast-tracks-controversial-law/>

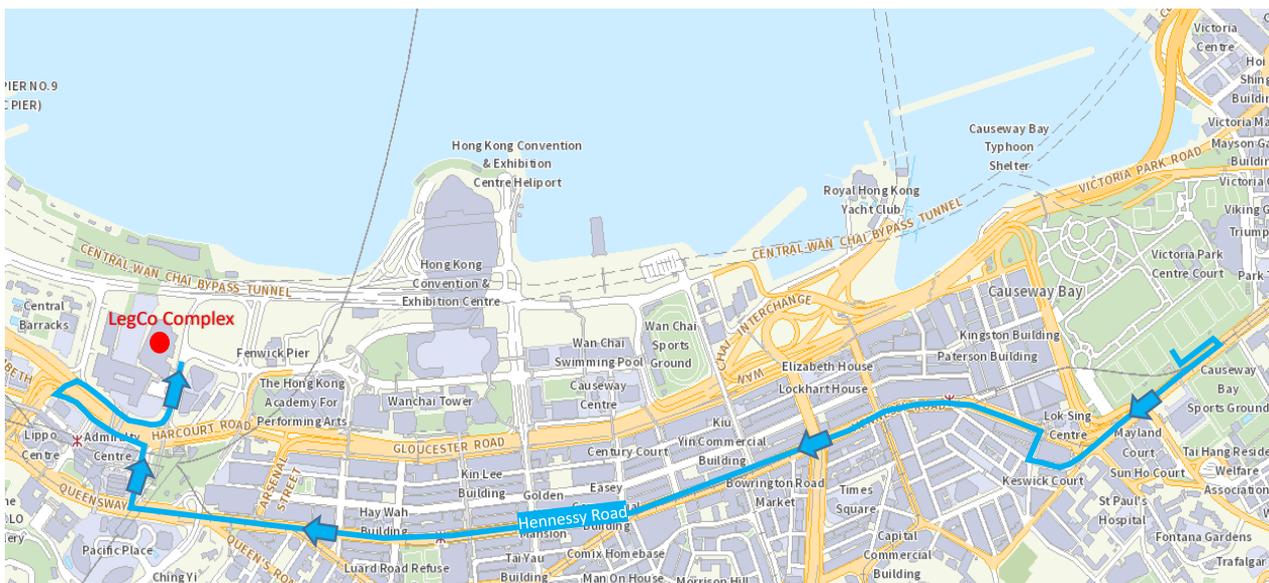
⁴ The legislative procedure was “unusual” as the Fugitive Offenders Bill would be processed on a fast-track arrangement without the usual scrutiny in committee before being tabled for a Second Reading in Council.

⁵ It was widely reported by the local media that CHRF was the organiser of the public procession and meeting on 9 June. However, the relevant “Letter of No Objection” issued by the Police was addressed to the Office of LegCo Member AU Nok-hin and his Office is a member-organisation of CHRF.

⁶ The destination of the procession was at Tim Mei Avenue and Legislative Council Road.



Map 7-1: Major roads around the LegCo Complex
(Source of base map: Lands Department)



Map 7-2: Public procession route on 9 June
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

7.4 According to the Police, prior to 9 June, there were appeals on the internet inciting people to throw water bottles, bricks, stones and petrol bombs during the POEs that day. Two political groups, namely Hong Kong Independence Union and Studentlocalism, had uploaded messages on the Facebook that there would be an important announcement after the procession on 9 June and asked supporters to stay behind at CGC area. These two groups were established among younger people after the Occupy Movement (OCM) in 2014 to fight for political reform in Hong Kong.

7.5 The Police was aware of the information disseminated on the internet. In anticipation of possible violent opposition at the LegCo Complex, the Police formulated an operational contingency plan on 8 May 2019, known as “Operation TIDERIDER”, to protect CGC area including the LegCo Complex. The policing objectives were to safeguard the integrity of the CGC area and to ensure safe access for LegCo Members and Government officials to and from the premises. Unauthorised entry and violent or illegal acts to impair the functioning of these two complexes would not be tolerated. The general policing philosophy, according to the Police management, was to prevent the preventable, manage the unpreventable and engage the unacceptable.

7.6 CGC, together with the LegCo Complex and Tamar Park, formed a cluster across the Central Promenade. On its south side is Harcourt Road, a trunk road linking the east and west of Hong Kong Island North, and connecting Gloucester Road in the east. On its north side is Lung Wo Road, an alternative road of Harcourt Road. On its east side is a roundabout with three exits for Legislative Council Road to the north, Tim Mei Avenue to the south, and Lung Wui Road to the east towards Wan Chai. On its west side is Tim Wa Avenue. The open areas at these roads and the Tamar Park can accommodate a large assembly and render crowd dispersal difficult.

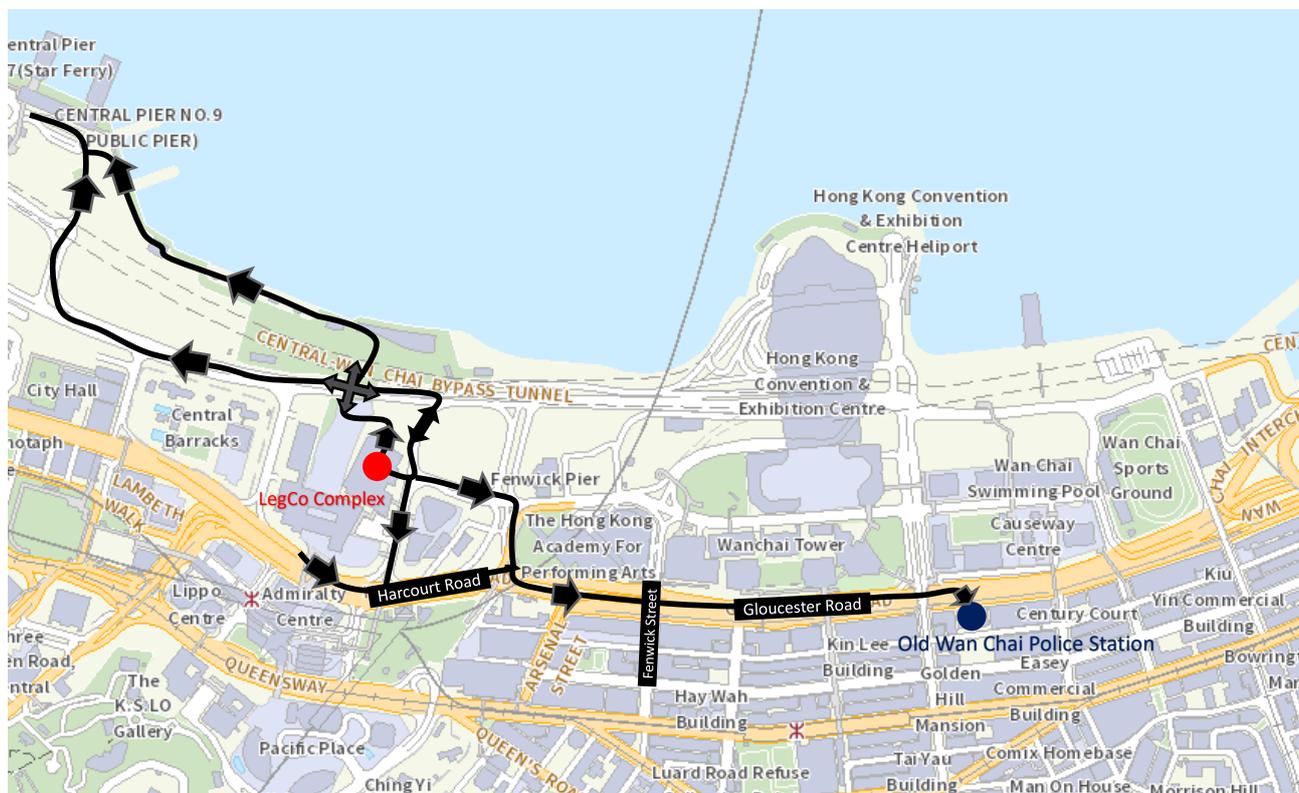
7.7 On 9 June, the Police adopted a three-tier command structure at first, with Headquarters Command and Control Centre (HQCCC) being the highest level from Police Headquarters, the Regional High Command at the second level giving instructions to the Forward Command Post (FCP) at ground level. This three-tier command structure was changed to two tiers after midnight clashes broke out with protesters blocking Lung Wo Road. At this point, HQCCC started giving orders to FCP direct. In the operation, the Police deployed a total of 3 197 officers, with 2 083 handling the public procession and 636 staying on guard at the public meeting at the procession destination outside the LegCo Complex. There were also 852 officers on contingency reserve duty for eventualities that day.⁷

⁷ The Police deployed a total of 3 197 police officers to manage the events between 05:00 on 9 June to 05:00 on 10 June. As some units were deployed for policing multiple events, the sum of manpower number deployed for different events is more than 3 197 because those units with multiple tasks are counted more than once.

7.8 The Police had issued a Letter of No Objection (LoNO) for the public procession and the following public meeting up until 23:59. The public procession was scheduled to start from Victoria Park at 15:00. Given the large turnout at the starting point, however, it kicked off early at 14:22. CHRF estimated that over one million took part in the procession while the Police counted 240 000 at the time with the largest turnout. The procession was generally peaceful and orderly, but the Police was forced to open the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road at 16:30 in order to accommodate the large number of protesters. As mentioned earlier, CHRF, Demosistō⁸, Studentlocalism and Hong Kong Independence Union had called for the protesters to stay behind at the CGC area after the procession to rehearse laying siege to the LegCo Complex. Hundreds of protesters did so accordingly while a few hundred others gathered at Harcourt Road, outside Admiralty Centre.

7.9 At 23:09, the Government issued a press release acknowledging the large turnout of the march and announcing the Second Reading debate on the Fugitive Offenders Bill to be on 12 June. This message changed the atmosphere at the LegCo Complex and protests began to intensify, to a point around midnight with hundreds of violent protesters charging on the police cordon line at the designated demonstration area of the LegCo Complex. They threw iron rods, metal barriers, water bottles and other hard objects at the police officers. In response, the police officers used batons, OC foam (i.e. pepper spray) and PAVA solution (i.e. pepper liquid) to hold back the violent protesters. More police officers were deployed for dispersal action. Some of the protesters fled to Tim Mei Avenue, Lung Wui Road and Lung Wo Road, blocking these roads. Some other protesters spilled onto Gloucester Road. Around 02:50, the Police concluded dispersal action with 358 protesters hemmed in outside old Wan Chai Police Station. These 358 protesters were allowed to leave after being searched and their personal particulars recorded by the Police (see Map 7-3 for the major dispersal routes of protesters).

⁸ Demosistō, established in April 2016, is a pro-democracy and young activist group.



Map 7-3: Major routes protesters dispersed on 10 June
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

7.10 A chronology of the POEs of this day appears as Annex to this Chapter.

7.11 The violence from the protesters on 9 June was much less in comparison with that in the clashes that followed in subsequent incident days. The gear worn or used by both the protesters and the police officers on 9 June was comparatively light. News footage showed that only about half of the protesters had put on surgical masks and only a few were in black outfits with masks, goggles and helmets. The police officers at the cordon line were in standard uniform. Even the officers deployed to the scene later on were not in full riot gear.

7.12 A total of eight police officers were injured on 9 June, including one with serious eye injuries. The Hospital Authority (HA) at various hospitals treated a total of 72 persons related to the incident on 9 June.

7.13 As at 29 February 2020, the Police had arrested 33 persons (31 male and two female) in connection with the incident on 9 June for various offences, including “Unlawful Assembly”, “Assaulting on Police Officer”, “Obstructing Police Officer”, “Possession of Dangerous Goods and Others” and “Possession of Offensive Weapons”. Among them, 15 persons had been charged in Court, including one convicted for “Assault on Police Officer” and 14 pending trial, 13 were under police investigation whereas five had been released.

7.14 What happened on 9 June has raised public concern over the following issues:

- (a) Police opening eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road for the procession;⁹
- (b) Police use of force in dispersing protesters; and
- (c) Police handling of reporters.

Sources of Information

7.15 For the purpose of its study of the events on 9 June, the IPCC has scrutinised the following materials:

- (a) Documents provided by the Police in respect of police deployment and operation, prior intelligence received, use of police weapons and casualties incurred on the incident day.
- (b) Operational Orders for Operation TIDERIDER provided by the Police.
- (c) Information obtained from meetings with the Police.
- (d) Footage recorded by the Police pertaining to the 9 June operations. A total of 33 video clips of 6 hours 38 minutes long were viewed.
- (e) News reports and news footage produced by different television companies, newspapers and media. A total of 171 news reports¹⁰ and 53 video reports of 48 hours long were examined.
- (f) Photos and footage provided by the public in response to IPCC's appeal.
- (g) Press statements obtained from the website of the Information Services Department (*news.gov.hk* and *info.gov.hk*), the Police (*police.gov.hk*) and LegCo (*legco.gov.hk*) concerning the clashes on 9 June.
- (h) Information provided by the HA on the number of persons receiving medical treatment as a result of the incident on 9 June.

⁹ Apple Daily reported on 10 June 2019 that CHRF convener, Jimmy SHAM, criticised the Police crowd management on 9 June procession was “irresponsible and lacked foresight”. [*Apple Daily* (10 June 2019). 警拒開放東行線塞到爆]

¹⁰ This figure counts the paper media, while the IPCC has also viewed mainstream online media/sources including but not limited to HK01, Stand News, Hong Kong Free Press, and Hong Kong In-media etc.

The Events

7.16 The events on 9 June can be divided into two phases, the first phase from 14:22 to 22:30 covering the public procession and the second phase from 22:30 to 03:00 the following day covering incidents after the procession including the clash at midnight.

Phase I – The Public Procession from 14:22 to 22:30

Commencement of Procession at 14:22

- The procession was originally scheduled to commence at 15:00 to walk from Victoria Park to Tim Mei Avenue and Legislative Council Road outside CGC (see Map 7-2 for the procession route) (source: HKPF). Due to the large turnout at Victoria Park before the commencement time, CHRF kicked off the procession at 14:22. When the head of the procession arrived at CGC at 15:53, CHRF asked the protesters to stay behind to join the assembly there (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).

Opening of Hennessy Road Eastbound Lanes at 16:30

- There was a massive turnout at the procession. CHRF estimated 1.03 million had taken part in the procession while the Police counted 240 000 at the highest turnout (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage). During the procession, many protesters were jammed at the junction of Hennessy Road and Canal Road (see Image 7-1). These protesters demanded the Police to open the eastbound lanes on Hennessy Road. At 16:02, some protesters tried to cross the police cordon line to get to the eastbound lanes (source: media reports and live video footage). The police officers then raised the red flag warning them to “*Stop Charging or We Use Force*” (see Image 7-2) (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage). The protesters, however, demanded that more roads be opened for the procession (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 7-1: An aerial view of the procession at the junction of Hennessy Road and Canal Road before the eastbound lanes were opened
(Image source: HK01)



Image 7-2: Police raised the red flag warning protesters not to charge forward
(Image source: Ming Pao)

- At 16:30, several protesters broke through the police cordon line and the crowd spilled to the eastbound lanes (see Image 7-3). The Police then opened the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 7-3: Some protesters tried to cross the police cordon line to the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road

(Image source: HK01)

Use of OC Foam at 19:25

- The procession continued smoothly after the opening of the eastbound lanes. However, at 19:25 in Admiralty, six protesters dashed out from the procession to Harcourt Road outside Admiralty Centre and tried to block the westbound traffic with metal barriers (source: HKPF and media reports). The police officers on that spot caught one of the protesters (see Image 7-4). Immediately, around ten persons rushed out from the procession and successfully grabbed that protester from the Police. A police officer therefore used OC foam on those ten persons who then ran off (see Image 7-5) (source: media reports).



Images 7-4 (top) and 7-5 (bottom): At 19:25, the Police used OC foam to disperse people at Harcourt Road outside Admiralty Centre
(Image source: SCMP)

Procession Concluded at 22:30

- At 22:30, CHRF announced the conclusion of the public procession with a total participants of 1.03 million. From 20:20 onwards, members of Demosistō, Hong Kong Independence Union and Studentlocalism called for protesters to join them and stay behind at the LegCo Complex (source: HKPF and media reports).

Phase II – Clashes after the End of the Procession

Hundreds of Protesters Gathering at LegCo Complex and Harcourt Road

- After the conclusion of the procession at 22:30, hundreds of protesters gathered outside the LegCo Complex and at Harcourt Road outside Admiralty Centre, blocking the westbound traffic of Harcourt Road. At 23:40, police officers formed a cordon line and called with loud hailers for the several hundred protesters outside Admiralty Centre to disperse, but the protesters refused to leave. A stand-off between the Police and the protesters lasted until 01:00 when most of the protesters on Harcourt Road left the spot and the police officers dispersed the few remaining protesters back to the pavement (source: media reports, live video footage).
- At 22:47, members of Studentlocalism and Hong Kong Independence Union announced that they would stay at Tim Mei Avenue until 12 June (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage) and take the protest to a higher level if the Government did not withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill (source: media reports and live video footage).
- At 23:09, the Government released a statement acknowledging the high turnout of the procession and announcing the Second Reading debate on 12 June (source: Information Services Department).

Clashes at 00:01

- At 00:01 on 10 June, several hundred protesters began to charge on the police cordon line at the designated demonstration area (the “Drum” area) at the LegCo Complex (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage). According to the guidelines dated 27 November 2018 issued by Legislative Council Secretariat, the designated demonstration area is open to the public for staging petitions or demonstrations from 07:00 to 23:00 daily (source: Legislative Council Secretariat website). At 00:01 when the protesters began charging on the police cordon line, it was outside the opening hours. The Police raised the red warning flag to indicate “*Stop Charging or We Use Force*”. The situation intensified as some violent protesters pushed metal barriers towards the cordon line and

threw various objects at the police officers (see Image 7-6). The protesters dismantled the roadside railings for metal rods, or took large objects readily available on the streets such as litterbins or traffic cones for the clash with the police officers. In order to hold the cordon line, the police officers responded with baton strikes and sprayed OC foam (see Images 7-6 and 7-7). Some protesters fled to Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).



Images 7-6 (top) and 7-7 (bottom) : Clash scenes at the LegCo Complex Drum” area
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page and Sing Tao Daily)

- At 00:15, a police officer was seen attacked by some violent protesters and was injured in the eyes. The injured police officer was then seen hit by a flying iron rod taken off a metal barrier. Other police officers immediately took him into the LegCo Complex (see Image 7-8). Some protesters at Tim Mei Avenue took the metal barriers there to block Lung Wo Road. Around 00:26, about 200 protesters were gathering at Lung Wo Road and Lung Wui Road (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).

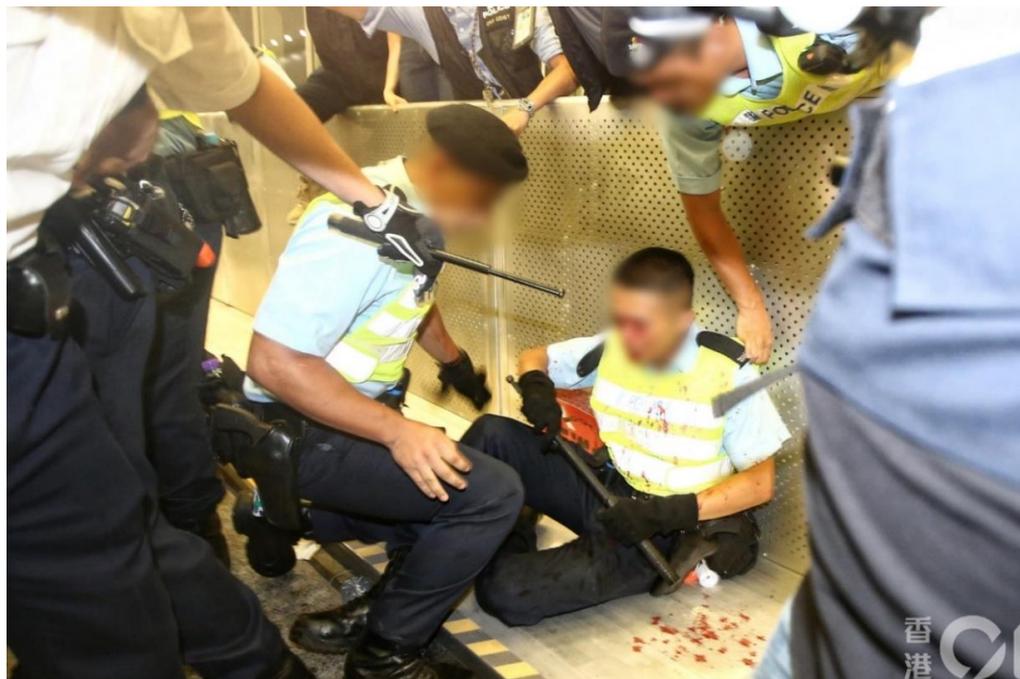


Image 7-8: A police officer was injured in his eyes and was then hit by a thrown iron rod during the clash at the LegCo Complex “Drum” area

(Image source: HK01)

- Around this time, seven platoons of Emergency Unit officers, supported by Special Tactical Contingent (STC) officers, arrived at the LegCo Complex as reinforcement (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).
- At 01:00, more protesters went to Lung Wo Road and used metal barriers, bulk litter containers and other objects to block the road and the underpass there. At 01:32, about 550 police officers in riot gear were deployed to disperse the protesters from Legislative Council Road towards Tamar Park and Lung Wo Road to the west, and along Tim Mei Avenue and Harcourt Road to the east. The Police saw some protesters holding fire extinguishers and digging up bricks from the pavements in CGC area. News footage showed some police officers pushing some reporters with their shields during the sweeping action for crowd dispersal and shouting for them to leave (see Image 7-9) (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).



Image 7-9: Reporters were also dispersed during the police sweeping
(Image source: Reuters)

- At 02:05, the group of protesters who were dispersed to Fenwick Street walked towards Wan Chai via Gloucester Road eastbound lanes and blocked Gloucester Road with mills barriers, bus stop stands and litterbins (see Image 7-10). The other group dispersed at Tamar Park walked towards the Central Pier (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).



Image 7-10: Protesters used bus stop stands and litterbins to block Gloucester Road
(Image source: HK01)

- At 02:19, two platoons of Police Tactical Unit (PTU) officers formed a cordon line to disperse the crowd at Gloucester Road outside Immigration Tower (see Image 7-11). Two other platoons dispersed the crowd outside Admiralty Centre (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).



Image 7-11: Police dispersing the crowd on Gloucester Road, Wan Chai
(Image source: *From Stand News Facebook public page*)

- At 02:50, the Police surrounded 358 protesters outside old Wan Chai Police Station (see Images 7-12 and 7-13). By this time, most of the protesters had been dispersed and the Police had reopened Gloucester Road (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).
- At 06:00, the Police had finished searching the 358 protesters and recording their particulars. They were then released (source: HKPF and media reports).



Images 7-12 (top) and 7-13 (bottom): At 02:50, the Police surrounded 358 protesters outside old Wan Chai Police Station
(Image source: HK01)

Complaints against Police

7.17 As at 29 February 2020, 23 RCs and five NCs against Police action on 9 June 2019 have been received. The nature of the 23 RCs is as follows:

- Two complaints were made by civilians against police officers' impoliteness and use of foul language.
- Eight complaints were made by civilians against police officers for -
 - (a) Pushing, pulling, and dragging protesters; and
 - (b) Assaulting protesters with baton.
- 13 complaints were lodged by reporters against police officers for -
 - (a) Using shields and flashlights to block them from taking photos, filming and reporting the incident;
 - (b) Pushing them with shields and impolitely dispersing them; and
 - (c) Using batons against them.

Police Response

7.18 In response to the events of this day, Police management has made various observations to the IPCC, as set out below:

Intelligence Collected by the Police Prior 9 June

7.19 Some netizens proposed online to throw water bottles, bricks, stones and petrol bombs during the event.

7.20 Hong Kong Independence Union and Studentlocalism appealed to supporters on Facebook to stay behind for an important announcement upon completion of the public procession.

Operational Planning

First Relevant Operational Order for Operation TIDERIDER

7.21 The document was issued on 8 May 2019 as the Police foresaw problems since the Fugitive Offenders Bill had faced massive opposition and a series of POEs (mostly peaceful processions) had already taken place.

7.22 The policing objectives of the operation were to safeguard the integrity of CGC and

ensure the safe passage of LegCo Members and Government officials to and from CGC in a safe and uninterrupted manner, as intelligence revealed that some protesters might use violence to cause disruption to CGC and prohibit LegCo Members and Government officials from accessing the CGC.

Police Contingents

7.23 After the OCM in 2014, the “police contingents” concept was established for better management of manpower and the chain of evidence involving arrest. When handling POEs, the Police would rearrange its manpower to form the police contingents. Currently, the Police Force has a total of one Headquarters Response Contingent and five Regional Response Contingents (RRCs), consisting of around 3 000 officers.

7.24 Each contingent comprised 500 officers, commanded by a Chief Superintendent of Police. The composition of a RRC included (1) frontline element consisting of Tier I and II officers, i.e. uniformed branch officers who had all received recent PTU training to handle aggressive riot situations; (2) crime investigation arm to handle arrests and filming; and (3) administrative staff for support and logistic duties.

7.25 Based on police experience in the OCM where protesters had put up fierce resistance during arrests, STC was formally established in April 2015. The purpose of STC is to provide tactical capabilities in making quick arrests at incidents which involve or are anticipated to involve exceptional levels of public disorder (e.g. serious or prolonged periods of unlawful occupation or physical obstruction to roads, serious threats to public safety, violence against Police.) They are deployed as being necessary to augment PTU contingents in such situations.

Police Deployment in 9 June Incident

7.26 Police deployed a total of 3 197 officers to manage the events throughout the day from 05:00 on 9 June to 05:00 on 10 June.

Police Handling of 9 June Incident

7.27 A LoNO was issued for the POE for 9 June which was scheduled to run from 14:30 at Victoria Park, Causeway Bay, to Tim Mei Avenue, Central, at 23:59. The anticipated number of participants was 5 000 persons, according to the event organiser. Police figure recorded the peak number of protesters at 240 000 persons (while CHRF claimed to have 1.03 million participants).

7.28 The public meetings and public procession were conducted in a peaceful manner on the whole. However, some of the protesters turned violent after the organiser announced the event was concluded. After the conclusion of the event at 22:00, several hundred radical protesters refused to leave the LegCo Complex. They charged police cordon line and attempted to block and occupy the main roads nearby by placing various objects on the road. Subsequently, Legislative Council Road, Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road were illegally occupied.

7.29 The radical protesters then dismantled mills barriers which were used for setting up Designated Public Assembly Area of the LegCo Complex and used them to charge on the building and police cordon line. The protesters further escalated violence by throwing iron bars, metal barriers and bottles at police officers.

7.30 Having given repeated warnings but in vain, more police officers were deployed to reinforce the defense of the LegCo Complex and conduct sweeping to disperse the protesters. At 02:53, most of the protesters dispersed from Gloucester Road, and the overall situation resumed normal.

Use of Force

7.31 During the 9 June Incident, the Police had used batons, OC foam and PAVA solution to disperse the protesters.

Media Handling

7.32 On 9 June, 42 members of Force Media Liaison Cadre (FMLC) were deployed to provide liaison support on Hong Kong Island.

7.33 The Police had encountered difficulties in the handling of media in POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The presence of a sizeable number of reporters on the operational ground hindered the effective execution of police duties. Some had intentionally positioned themselves right in front of the police cordon line, establishing a zero distance between the Police and hence separated the protesters and the Police so that the action taken by the Police was less effective with their presence in the middle. It caused severe difficulties to the Police in the due execution of their duties. The deployment of FMLC officers on the ground was not able to fully control the big crowd of reporters and media at all times.

7.34 The authentic identity of the press and media was an area of concern. There is no single organisation that the existing media agencies could subscribe to so that their identity can be verified. The Police believes it was the “fake media” who positioned themselves at the

zero distance as a strategy of the protesters to hinder or delay Police action intentionally. There is also a trend for an increasing number of reporters to claim themselves as “net media” whose identity could not be verified by a proper channel. It is arguable as to whether they should be considered as “formal media”.

7.35 The Force had been facilitating the work of the news media as much as possible and accorded consideration and courtesy for media representatives. FMLC is in a position to verify the authentic identity of the press on the ground.

IPCC Observations

7.36 The facts surrounding these events give grounds for IPCC observations on the following issues:

- (a) Police handling in relation to the opening of Hennessy Road eastbound lanes for the procession;
- (b) Police use of force in dispersing protesters; and
- (c) Police handling of reporters.

Opening of Hennessy Road Eastbound Lanes for the Procession

7.37 Bearing in mind the right to peaceful POE, the policing policy is to facilitate such POE, which would inevitably cause inconvenience to other road users. Whenever a public procession is to walk through Hennessy Road (normally starting from Victoria Park) and to finish in either Wan Chai, Admiralty or Central, the Police and event organiser would always discuss whether Hennessy Road eastbound lanes should be opened for the procession.

7.38 The Police had previously stated that they had a number of considerations. First, if the entire Hennessy Road is used by a procession, it would impact adversely on the traffic conditions in the vicinity. Second, the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road serve as the Emergency Vehicle Access. Third, Wan Chai Fire Station is located at the junction of Hennessy Road and Canal Road. If the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road are taken up by a procession, emergency services from the fire station would be severely affected. The IPCC fully understands the Police concern.

7.39 On the other hand, the procession organiser wants the eastbound lanes to be opened for the procession so that more people can participate. In case of a large turnout, the flow of people can be adjusted. Not only would the time for the procession be shortened, but also the risk of accidents reduced, say, from stampeding. The IPCC also appreciates the stance of the organiser.

7.40 Whether or not the eastbound lanes should be opened depends on the actual situation on the ground at the time. A number of factors have to be taken into account, such as the number of protesters, the pace of the procession, the potential for accidents or unusual incidents raising safety concern. When the number of participants in a procession is not high and the procession progresses in regular pace, the Police considerations prevail. However, when the turnout is large and the pace of the procession sluggish, the safety of the protesters must be accorded priority. There is no absolute formula for making a decision to open up a road entirely. It calls for judgement to be made by the Police after having considered all the factors in communication with the organiser.

7.41 As to the public assembly on 9 June, CHRF, as the organiser, initially estimated that 5 000 would participate. This number certainly did not warrant the use of eastbound lanes. Even when Victoria Park was so crowded with protesters that the organiser had to kick start the procession 40 minutes earlier than scheduled, opening the eastbound lanes might still not be necessary. However, at 16:02 when the turnout at the junction of Hennessy Road and Canal Road was so large that many protesters had spilled over to the eastbound lanes, the Police should have reviewed the situation to consider opening the eastbound lanes. The decision of raising the red flag to warn the protesters could have an adverse effect on the crowd dynamics and could have potentially created incidents in an originally peaceful procession. Finally at 16:30, the Police did open the eastbound lanes. The IPCC notes that later the Police had learnt from this experience and adopted a more flexible approach in considering the opening of the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road. In fact, the Police opened that section of the road for the procession as early as at 15:00 on Sunday 16 June, and at 15:11 on Monday 1 July.

Police Use of Force in Dispersing Protesters

7.42 The media reported that the procession on 9 June was generally peaceful. Some news reports denounced the protesters for using violence to charge on the police cordon line at the LegCo Complex after midnight.¹¹ News footage recorded the violence of some protesters. At the clashes outside the LegCo Complex, a police officer was seen assaulted by some violent

¹¹ Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-11). 狂徒暴力衝擊立會 8 警受傷 警方指有組織有預謀有準備.
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-11). 警疑凌晨衝擊有預謀 拘 12 人.
 Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-10). 遊行後夜襲立會 暴徒衝擊警防線.
 Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 煽動群眾衝擊 堵立會搞佔領.
 Sing Pao (2019-06-10). 立會門外 龍和道午夜爆衝突 盧偉聰：強烈譴責 數百神秘口罩人擲鐵馬長竹藏刀圖刺警.
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 示威者疑製造催淚彈假像.
 Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-10). 亂港派縱火堵路衝擊立會 多名警員受傷 遊行變暴亂 通宵大混亂.
 Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-11). 暴徒衝立會 團體齊譴責.
 Wen Wei Pao (2019-06-10). 暴徒夜襲立會 衝防線傷警員 「獨人」現場策劃 持鐵馬攻擊 警胡椒噴霧控制場面.

protesters and was seriously injured in his eyes. Immediately after that, he was further hit by a flying iron rod apparently taken off from a mills barrier. There were news reports that the Police had seized from the protesters weapons and equipment, such as goggles, masks, cable ties, scissors, cutters and a large number of lighters. Spears, electric saws and hammers were also found in the planters at the LegCo Complex.¹² These indicated the clash that night was pre-meditated by at least some of the violent protesters.

7.43 Some news reports, nonetheless, criticised the Police for using excessive force to disperse the protesters and the people who remained in the vicinity of CGC after the procession. News footage captured images of some police officers subduing protesters or dragging them on the ground.¹³ Information from the Police confirmed that in the clash on 9 June, police officers had used batons, OC foam and PAVA solution to disperse the protesters. The issue of concern is whether the use of force in the circumstances was reasonable, necessary and proportionate to the threat posed by the protesters.

7.44 Police internal guidelines prescribe the principles governing the use of force. Only the minimum force should be used to achieve a purpose and once that purpose is achieved, the use of such force must stop. The force used should be reasonable in the circumstances. The appropriate level of force depends on the level of resistance of the subject, the officer's own perception of the threat and his ability for self-protection. To control a subject effectively, the officer is justified to use a level of force greater than the resistance of the subject. The officer, when circumstances permit, shall give a warning of the intention to use force and of the nature and degree of force which it is intended to use. Meanwhile, that subject shall be given the opportunity, wherever practicable, to obey police orders before force is used and the force used should cease immediately when the objective has been achieved.

7.45 The Police guidelines on use of force allow officers to use OC foam and PAVA solution when facing active resistance, i.e. physical action to prevent control that might cause injury to oneself or others; and batons in a situation of aggressive assault, i.e. physical assault to cause or likely to cause bodily injury. It is, however, the officer's own judgement as to what level of force is justified, and that officer will be held accountable for his own action. The use of force, under the current legal regime, is therefore a matter of personal responsibility of each police officer who is held accountable to uphold the law and comply with the rules of the Police Force.

¹² Ming Pao (2019-06-11). 留守衝突 19 示威者被捕 358 摘名 八成被記身份者 16 至 25 歲 警:日後或檢控. Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-11). 梁君彥展示長矛電鋸圖片證暴力.

¹³ am730 (2019-06-11). 立法會外午夜起衝突 19 人被捕多人受傷. USP United Social Press (2019-06-10). 立法會示威區清場其間，有示威者被警員制服後，頭部被撞向金屬防護欄，再被扔至防護欄後方地上昏迷. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/UnitedSocialPress/videos/vb.579827748716829/2066539676808123>

7.46 Whether the force used was unnecessary or excessive depended on the actual circumstances of the individual incident, in particular the cause of the incidents, the actions of the protesters and the judgement of the police officers. It is a practice of the Police to conduct a review after each deployment to ensure that all officers abide by the relevant guidelines and procedures, and to learn from the experience. It is expected that the Police Force will review all incidents and, if justified, to bring to book any officer who did not follow Police guidelines and the laws in their handling of the POEs. If the Police Force finds any officer having exceeded the bounds imposed by the law and Police regulations, the IPCC, and indeed the community, would expect the Police Force to take timely action to prosecute or discipline the officer concerned. On 2 and 7 March 2020, the Commissioner disclosed publicly that the Police management had taken immediate action to admonish 21 officers for probable misconduct in the handling of these POEs against the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The Commissioner had further stated that this did not mean that no further investigation would be undertaken. There are a number of RCs in relation to these incidents. The IPCC will follow up these complaints in the usual manner.

Police Handling of Reporters

7.47 According to Police internal guidelines, the principle of Police media handling is to build a long-term constructive relationship with the media. Police Public Relations Branch (PPRB) is to perform a mediating role to resolve competing demands, minimise misunderstanding and avoid conflicts with the media. Officers at the scene shall facilitate the work of the news media as much as possible and accord media representatives consideration and courtesy and shall not block camera lenses. The role of PPRB is particularly important in the context of POEs.

7.48 The Police Force has established Media Liaison Teams¹⁴ to serve as a bridge between the Police and the media to facilitate the work of both sides as far as practicable without compromising operational efficiency and deployment. The Media Liaison Teams arrange for FMLC officers, volunteers drawn from different police districts, to go to the scene to facilitate and assist the media work on the ground, to engage the media and to deal with issues arising from press activities. FMLC officers relieve frontline officers from media liaison, so that frontline officers can focus on their operational duty.

7.49 On 9 June 2019, the Police deployed 42 FMLC officers to liaise with the press. As at 29 February 2020, the events that day had given rise to 13 complaints from reporters against police officers for:

¹⁴ The Media Liaisons Teams were first mobilised and deployed on the ground in the Sixth World Trade Organisation's Ministerial Conference in 2005.

- (a) Using shields and flashlights to block them from taking photos, filming and reporting the incident;
- (b) Pushing them with shields and impolitely dispersing them; and
- (c) Using batons against them.

Some of the incidents giving rise to complaints were captured on news footage. These complaints will be dealt with in accordance with the established complaints handling procedures.

7.50 The IPCC recognises the importance for the Police to build a long-term constructive relation with the media. The IPCC fully appreciates the work of reporters on the ground as it is their duty to get the best news coverage possible. At the same time, the IPCC is aware that reporters may risk their safety and hinder the frontline police officers in action. Freedom of the press is important, but it must be balanced with the safety of the reporters themselves, the protesters, and the police officers. The maintenance of law and order is equally important. The IPCC notes that PPRB does not have a list of DOs and DON'Ts to advise reporters at the scene of POEs.

Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance

7.51 Based on the facts available, it is apparent that the Police use of force was not proactive at the outset. The Police had reacted with the use of force in the face of the violence of some violent protesters. However, this account of the events does offer lessons for the Police management in applying their policing philosophy of preventing the preventable, managing the unpreventable, and engaging the unacceptable. The evidence from these events is that peaceful POE could morph into violent attack by radical elements. The events of 9 June were just the beginning of this metamorphosis.

7.52 The 13 complaints received from the reporters stemmed from the incident on 9 June clearly indicate there is room for improvement in the Police communication and coordination with members of the press.

7.53 As to the opening of the Hennessy Road eastbound lanes for a procession, there is no magic formula for making a decision. The IPCC notes that the Police has learnt from the experience on 9 June and subsequently adopted a proactive and flexible approach in managing the procession on 16 June and 1 July.

7.54 The IPCC is of the view that this account of the events of 9 June will assist the Police management in deriving lessons to be learnt when reviewing policing strategies and tactics for similar circumstances in future. In this connection, the IPCC recommends that the Police

management conduct the following reviews:

- (a) Review how best to ensure individual officers strictly follow the guidelines on the use of force, including revising the training regime for meeting situations similar to recent events.
- (b) Review the need for engaging media representatives to draw up a Code of Practice for meeting both Police and media interests in their respective duties to the community and for ensuring safety of all concerned. The Code of Practice should at least cover the following:
 - (i) Clear identification of reporters;
 - (ii) Voluntary update of reporters list by media organisations;
 - (iii) Regulations on safe distance between the Police and media; and
 - (iv) Publicity for the Code of Practice.
- (c) Establish at the senior management level a procedure for monitoring and reviewing the progress of a procession in order to proactively decide whether, or not, to open further road(s) for a procession. In particular, the Police should review their counting methodology to facilitate making prompt decisions on which road(s) should be opened taking into sufficient account of the changes in the number of participants as the procession progresses and develops.

7.55 The above recommendations should be read in conjunction with the IPCC's recommendations in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing.

CHRONOLOGY – SUNDAY 9 JUNE 2019**Key Incidents**

- A. 14:22 – 22:30 Phase I – The Public Procession from 14:22 to 22:30
 B. 22:30 – 03:00 Phase II – Clashes after the End of the Procession

Detailed Chronology of Events**A. Phase I – The Public Procession from 14:22 to 22:30**

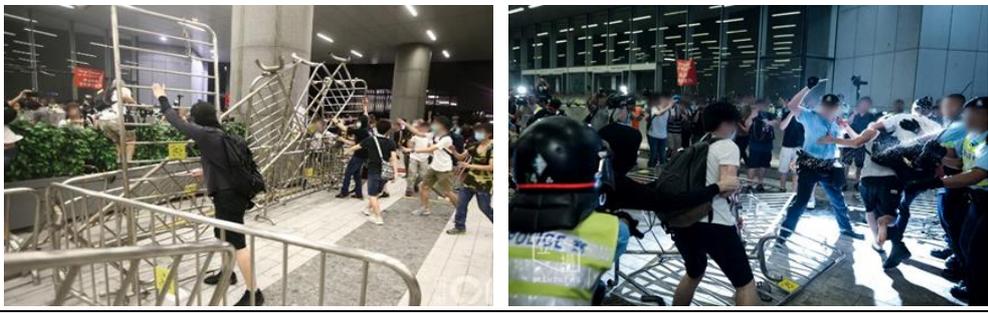
Time (Approx.)	Incident
11:30 9 Jun	HQCCC of the Police was activated (source: HKPF).
14:22 9 Jun	<p>Due to the large number of people gathered at the Victoria Park, the Organiser, CHRF, started the public procession earlier than the originally planned 15:00 (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage¹).</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
15:53 9 Jun	When the head of the procession arrived at CGC, CHRF asked the protesters to stay behind to join the assembly thereat (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage ²).
16:02 9 Jun	Many protesters jammed at the junction of Hennessy Road and Canal Road demanding the Police to open the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road (source: media reports and live video footage ³).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>Some protesters tried to cross the police cordon line to get to the eastbound lanes and the Police raised the red flag warning “<i>Stop Charging or We Use Force</i>” (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage³). The protesters, however, demanded the Police to open more roads for the procession (source: media reports and live video footage³).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">    </div> <p><i>(Image source: HK01 and Ming Pao)</i></p>
<p>16:30 9 Jun</p>	<p>Several protesters broke through the police cordon line and the crowd spilled over to the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road. The Police retreated and opened the eastbound lanes of Hennessy Road for the procession (source: media reports and live video footage⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
17:05 9 Jun	At the procession destination, CHRF led protesters to rehearse the besieging of LegCo Complex (source: HKPF and media reports ⁵).
19:25 9 Jun	<p>Six protesters dashed out to Harcourt Road outside Admiralty Centre and tried to block the westbound traffic with metal barriers (source: HKPF and media reports⁶). They fled when the Police arrived but a protester was caught by around six uniformed police officers. About ten odd protesters rushed forward from the procession and grabbed the protester from the Police. A police officer therefore used OC foam on those ten persons who then ran off (source: media reports⁷).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: SCMP)</i></p>
20:20 9 Jun	Demosistō called for protesters to stay behind to join them to stay at the LegCo Complex (source: HKPF and media reports ⁸).
22:30 9 Jun	CHRF announced the procession ended with 1.03 million people took part in it. The Police put the figure at 240 000 at its peak. Another source from economist Francis LUI, who was commissioned by a pro-establishment research institute Hong Kong Institute for Development to give an estimated figure, counted it at around 200 000 (source: media reports ⁹).

B. Phase II – Clashes after the End of the Procession

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:30 9 Jun	The tail of procession reached the vicinity of CGC (source: HKPF). Several hundred protesters stayed outside the LegCo Complex and at Harcourt Road outside Admiralty Centre, blocking the westbound traffic of Harcourt Road (source: media reports and live video footage ¹⁰).
22:47 9 Jun	Members of Studentlocalism and Hong Kong Independence Union announced that they would stay at Tim Mei Avenue until 12 Jun (source: HKPF, media reports, live video footage ¹¹) and stated that they would take the protest to a higher level if the

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	Government did not withdraw the Bill (source: media reports and live video footage ¹²).
23:09 9 Jun	The Government made a statement acknowledging the high turnout of the procession earlier in the afternoon and announcing the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill would continue on 12 Jun 2019 (source: Information Services Department ¹³).
23:40 9 Jun	Police officers formed a cordon line and attempted to disperse the several hundred protesters outside Admiralty Centre but the protesters refused to leave. A stand-off between the Police and the protesters remained there until 01:00 when most of the protesters on Harcourt Road left the spot and police officers dispersed the remaining protesters back to the pavement (source: media reports and live video footage ¹⁴).
00:01 10 Jun	<p>Several hundred protesters began to charge on the police cordon line at the designated demonstration area at the LegCo Complex (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage¹⁵). At first, it was just push and pull. Later, some protesters sporadically threw objects like water bottles, slippers and traffic cones at the police officers. The Police raised the red warning flag to indicate “<i>Stop Charging or We Use Force</i>”.</p> <p>The situation intensified as some violent protesters pushed metal barriers towards the cordon line and continued to throw objects at the police officers. The protesters also dismantled the roadside railings for metal rods, or took large objects readily available on the streets such as litterbins or traffic cones for the clash with the police officers. The police officers responded with baton strikes and sprayed OC foam (source: media reports and live video footage¹⁶).</p> <div>  </div>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page, Sing Tao Daily and HK01)</i></p>
00:13 10 Jun	Some protesters fled to Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road (source: HKPF).
00:15 10 Jun	<p>At the LegCo Complex, the protesters continued to push metal barriers towards the police cordon line. Some of them threw metal rods at the police officers. In response, police officers, as seen from the news footage, dispersed the protesters by striking them with batons and using OC foam in closed range. During the process, some subdued protesters were dragged or pulled on the ground. New footage also captured a police officer being attacked by some violent protesters and was injured in the eyes. The injured police officer was then seen hit by a flying iron rod taken off a metal barrier. Other police officers immediately took him into the LegCo Complex (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage¹⁷).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
00:18 10 Jun	Seven platoons of EU officers (around 250 officers in riot gear previously stationed at Police Headquarters), equipped with PAVA solution (pepper liquid), supported by STC officers, arrived at the LegCo Complex as reinforcement (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage ¹⁸).
00:19 10 Jun	Protesters took metal barriers from Tim Mei Avenue. They then fled to Lung Wo Road and took metal barriers from there (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage ¹⁹).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
00:26 10 Jun	Around 200 protesters fled and gathered at Lung Wo Road and Lung Wui Road (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage ²⁰).
01:00 10 Jun	<p>A few hundred protesters blocked off Lung Wo Road with metal barriers. They also threw bulk litter containers and different objects to Lung Wo Road underpass from height. The Police dispersed the crowd with PAVA solution. Many protesters stayed at Tamar Park (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage²¹).</p> <div style="text-align: center;"> </div> <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
01:32 10 Jun	<p>About 550 police officers in riot gear were deployed to disperse the protesters from Legislative Council Road towards Tamar Park and Lung Wo Road to the west; and along Tim Mei Avenue and Harcourt Road to the east. According to the Police, some protesters were seen holding fire extinguishers at Legislative Council Road and some were digging up bricks from the pavements in the area, and their act had caused significant threat to the people at the scene. As such, the Police had to conduct dispersal and demanded all the people at scene, including protesters and reporters, to leave the scene as soon as possible to restore public order (source: HKPF).</p> <p>During the police sweeping (i.e. crowd dispersal action), news footage captured that some police officers, along the Central and Western District Promenade near Tamar Park, pushed some reporters with their shields and told them to move forward or leave the scene even when the reporters were pleading to the Police that there was no room for movement (source: media reports and live video footage²²).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: HK01, Reuters)</i></p>
<p>02:05 10 Jun</p>	<p>The group of protesters who were dispersed to Fenwick Street walked towards Wan Chai via Gloucester Road eastbound lanes and blocked Gloucester Road with mills barriers, bus stop stands and litterbins. The other group dispersed at Tamar Park walked towards the Central Pier (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage²³).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
02:19 10 Jun	<p>Two PTU platoons were deployed to form a cordon line to disperse the crowd at Gloucester Road outside Immigration Tower. Another two PTU platoons were deployed to outside Admiralty Centre to disperse the crowd (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage²⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)</i></p>
02:20 10 Jun	<p>The Police set up a Temporary Holding Area at Sau Mau Ping Police Station, Kwun Tong (source: HKPF).</p>
02:50 10 Jun	<p>The Police surrounded 358 protesters outside the old Wan Chai Police Station. By this time, most of the protesters had already been dispersed and the Police had reopened Gloucester Road (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage²⁵).</p>
03:00 10 Jun	<p>The Police conducted stop and search on the 358 protesters, over 80% were aged between 16 and 25, outside old Wan Chai Police Station. These protesters were allowed to leave after the Police had recorded their particulars (source: media reports and live video footage²⁶).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
06:00 10 Jun	<p>Police operation ended (source: HKPF and media reports²⁷).</p>

- ¹ HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
- Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>
- HK01 (2019-06-09). 【反逃犯條例遊行】高空圖對比 遊行起步媲美 2003 年七一?. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/338474/反逃犯條例遊行-高空圖對比-遊行起步媲美 2003 年七一>
- BBC (2019-06-09). 逃犯條例爭議：破紀錄百萬人遊行後 警員與示威者爆發衝突. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/zhongwen/trad/chinese-news-48571676>
- SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】遊行實時報道：晚上 10 時遊行結束 遊行人士聚集立法會外空地. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190609/special/1560061705615>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-10). 市民為遊行花四個半鐘
- am730 (2019-06-10). 港鐵封站巴士改道 各出奇謀到維園
- Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 上街反修例人數破紀錄 大會：103 萬 警方：24 萬
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 反修逃犯例大遊行 民陣：103 萬人 警：24 萬 政府回應 尊重市民有不同意見 周三仍恢復二讀.
- Metro Daily (2019-06-10). 反「逃犯」修例大遊行 逼爆港心臟 民陣：103 萬人 雷鼎鳴：20 萬人 警方：24 萬人.
- Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 10 人送院 有小孩暈倒.
- Sing Pao (2019-06-10). 市民怒吼 促撤回《逃犯條例》 反修例百萬行
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬.
- News video footage of Apple Daily, Stand News and Cable TV.
- ² HK01 (2019-06-09). 【反逃犯條例】民陣呼籲遊行後留步：預演包圍立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338536/反逃犯條例-民陣呼籲遊行後留步-預演包圍立法會>
- Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>
- RTHK (2019-06-09). 民陣遊行隊伍預演包圍立法會. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1461697-20190609.htm>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 民陣促撤修訂 預演包圍立會.
- News video footage of Apple Daily and Cable TV.
- ³ HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-09). 【反修例遊行】隊頭已到達政總 遊行路線沿途塞滿人. Retrieved from <http://std.sheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1018633/即時-香港-反修例遊行-隊頭已到達政總-遊行路線沿途塞滿人>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】遊行實時報道：晚上 10 時遊行結束 遊行人士聚集立法會外空地. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190609/special/1560061705615>
- SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
- Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 揮港獨旗人士推撞叫開路 警兩度舉紅旗. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190610/00176_011.html
- Apple Daily (2019-06-10). 【反修例大遊行】 民陣：103 萬人 警方：高峰 24 萬人 百萬人上街 震撼超 03 年
- Apple Daily (2019-06-10). 警拒開放東行線塞到爆.
- Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 封鎖線被衝越 警拘七示威者.

- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 反修逃犯例大遊行 民陣：103 萬人 警：24 萬 政府回應 尊重市民有不同意見 周三仍恢復二讀。
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-10). 遊行後夜襲立會 暴徒衝擊警防線
- Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 白衣同行 塞爆港鐵 5 站 一度飛站不停天后 市民炮台山「起步」 政府：繼續解說 周三恢復二讀 凌晨警民衝突 口罩人擲鐵馬。
- Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 揮港獨旗人士推撞叫開路 警兩度舉紅旗。
- Sing Pao (2019-06-10). 立會門外 龍和道午夜爆衝突 盧偉聰：強烈譴責 數百神秘口罩人擲鐵馬長竹藏刀圖刺警。
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬。
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-10). 蠻推鐵馬佔路各界譴責擾民。
- News video footage of Apple Daily and Stand News.
- 4 HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
- HK01 (2019-06-09). 【反逃犯條例遊行】高空圖對比 遊行起步媲美 2003 年七一？. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/338474/反逃犯條例遊行-高空圖對比-遊行起步媲美 2003 年七一>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】遊行實時報道：晚上 10 時遊行結束 遊行人士聚集立法會外空地。 Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190609/special/1560061705615>
- SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 上街反修例人數破紀錄 大會：103 萬 警方：24 萬
- Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 白衣同行 塞爆港鐵 5 站 一度飛站不停天后 市民炮台山「起步」 政府：繼續解說 周三恢復二讀 凌晨警民衝突 口罩人擲鐵馬。
- Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 「被困」遊行隊伍 司機：不介意。
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬。
- Sky Post (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬。
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-10). 蠻推鐵馬佔路各界譴責擾民。
- 5 HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
- Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>
- 6 HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
- Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】遊行實時報道：晚上 10 時遊行結束 遊行人士聚集立法會外空地。 Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190609/special/1560061705615>
- RTHK (2019-06-09). 個別人士逗留夏慤道與警員衝突 警方施放胡椒噴霧。 Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1461753-20190609.htm>
- Oriental Daily News (2019-06-09). 夏慤道海富中心外爆衝突 警施放胡椒噴霧。 Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190609/bkn-20190609201445111-0609_00822_001.html
- HK01 (2019-06-09). 【反逃犯條例遊行】金鐘有人欲衝出夏慤道 警方出動胡椒噴霧。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/338606/反逃犯條例遊行-金鐘有人欲衝出夏慤道-警方出動胡椒噴霧>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-09). 金鐘有人欲衝出夏慤道 警方施放胡椒噴霧。 Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2158167/金鐘有人欲衝出夏慤道+警方施放胡椒>

噴霧

SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>

Apple Daily (2019-06-10). 【反修例大遊行】民陣：103 萬人 警方：高峰 24 萬人 百萬人上街 震撼超 03 年

Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 激進派夜圍政總爆衝突 警龍和道添美道驅趕

Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 示威者夜圍政總 警噴椒驅口罩男.

Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-10). 遊行釀混亂警拉 7 人.

Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 示威者立會外與警爆衝突

Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-10). 遊行後夜襲立會 暴徒衝擊警防線

Metro Daily (2019-06-10). 反「逃犯」修例大遊行 逼爆港心臟 民陣：103 萬人 雷鼎鳴：20 萬人 警方：24 萬人.

Metro Daily (2019-06-10). 扶老攜幼大遊行 警民衝突噴胡椒.

Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 煽動群眾衝擊 堵立會搞佔領

Sing Pao (2019-06-10). 立會門外 龍和道午夜爆衝突 盧偉聰：強烈譴責 數百神秘口罩人擲鐵馬長竹藏刀圖刺警.

Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 「速龍小隊」鎮暴清場 激進示威者衝擊立會圖佔龍和道.

Sky Post (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬.

SCMP (2019-06-10). SOLIDARITY AND DEFIANCE.

Wen Wei Po (2019-06-10). 蠻推鐵馬佔路各界譴責擾民.

East Week (2019-06-12). 港獨派圖借反《逃犯例》翻生 警方 激進分子 16 小時攻防戰.

News video footage of Cable TV and RTHK.

- 7 HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>

Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>

Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】遊行實時報道：晚上 10 時遊行結束 遊行人士聚集立法會外空地. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190609/special/1560061705615>

RTHK (2019-06-09). 個別人士逗留夏慤道與警員衝突 警方施放胡椒噴霧. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1461753-20190609.htm>

Oriental Daily News (2019-06-09). 夏慤道海富中心外爆衝突 警施放胡椒噴霧. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190609/bkn-20190609201445111-0609_00822_001.html

HK01 (2019-06-09). 【反逃犯條例遊行】金鐘有人欲衝出夏慤道 警方出動胡椒噴霧. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/338606/反逃犯條例遊行-金鐘有人欲衝出夏慤道-警方出動胡椒噴霧>

Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-09). Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2158167/金鐘有人欲衝出夏慤道+警方施放胡椒噴霧>

SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>

Apple Daily (2019-06-10). 【反修例大遊行】民陣：103 萬人 警方：高峰 24 萬人 百萬人上街 震撼超 03 年

Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 激進派夜圍政總爆衝突 警龍和道添美道驅趕

Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 示威者夜圍政總 警噴椒驅口罩男.

Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-10). 遊行釀混亂警拉 7 人.

Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 示威者立會外與警爆衝突

Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-10). 遊行後夜襲立會 暴徒衝擊警防線

Metro Daily (2019-06-10). 反「逃犯」修例大遊行 逼爆港心臟 民陣：103 萬人 雷鼎鳴：20 萬人 警方：24 萬人.

Metro Daily (2019-06-10). 扶老攜幼大遊行 警民衝突噴胡椒.

Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 煽動群眾衝擊 堵立會搞佔領

- Sing Pao (2019-06-10). 立會門外 龍和道午夜爆衝突 盧偉聰：強烈譴責 數百神秘口罩人擲鐵馬長竹藏刀圖刺警。
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 「速龍小隊」鎮暴清場 激進示威者衝擊立會圖佔龍和道。
- Sky Post (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬。
- SCMP (2019-06-10). SOLIDARITY AND DEFIANCE.
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-10). 蠻推鐵馬佔路各界譴責擾民。
- East Week (2019-06-12). 港獨派圖借反《逃犯例》翻生 警方 激進分子 16 小時攻防戰。
- News video footage of Cable TV and RTHK.
- ⁸ HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
- Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>
- SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
- ⁹ HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
- Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>
- In-media (2019-06-09). 民陣：103 萬人參與反送中遊行。 Retrieved from <https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1064613>
- RTHK (2019-06-09). 民陣公布有 103 萬人參與遊行 警方：高峰時有 24 萬。 Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1461743-20190609.htm>
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例】民陣公布 103 萬人參加反修例遊行 警方：最高峰 24 萬人。 Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2372318/> 【逃犯條例】民陣公布 103 萬人參加反修例遊行警方：最高峰 24 萬人
- Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】雷鼎鳴估算：平均人數 19.9 萬。 Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190609/s00001/1560068653712/【逃犯條例-反修例遊行】雷鼎鳴估算-平均人數 19-9 萬>
- SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 上街反修例人數破紀錄 大會：103 萬 警方：24 萬
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 反修逃犯例大遊行 民陣：103 萬人 警：24 萬 政府回應 尊重市民有不同意見 周三仍恢復二讀。
- Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 白衣人海反修例 民陣稱 103 萬 警稱高峰 24 萬。
- Sing Pao (2019-06-10). 市民怒吼 促撤回《逃犯條例》 反修例百萬行
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬。
- Sky Post (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬。
- SCMP (2019-06-10). SOLIDARITY AND DEFIANCE.
- Metro Daily (2019-06-11). 修訂《逃犯條例》風波 林鄭堅決繼續修例 民陣周三再集會。
- ¹⁰ Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】遊行實時報道：晚上 10 時遊行結束 遊行人士 聚集立法會外空地。 Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190609/special/1560061705615>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-09). 學生動源及學生獨立聯盟發起添美道留守。 Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2158220/學生動源及學生獨立聯盟發起添美道留守>
- SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>

- Stand News (2019-06-09). 【6.9 大遊行】學生動源、香港獨立聯盟：和平留守添美道至 6.12 到時考慮行動升級. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/6-9-大遊行-學生動源等獨派組織-和平留守添美道至-6-12-但必要時武力抗爭/>
News video footage of Apple Daily.
- 11 HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>
Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-09). 學生動源及學生獨立聯盟發起添美道留守. Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2158220/學生動源及學生獨立聯盟發起添美道留守>
SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
Stand News (2019-06-09). 【6.9 大遊行】學生動源、香港獨立聯盟：和平留守添美道至 6.12 到時考慮行動升級. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/6-9-大遊行-學生動源等獨派組織-和平留守添美道至-6-12-但必要時武力抗爭/>
Now TV (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】民陣反修例遊行現場（二）. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351070>
Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 警民同料遊行人多 警力增至 2000 民陣籲開放更多車路 眾志預告有「重要呼籲」.
Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-09). 亂港派今謀再佔 推市民犯法 遊行風險高 盧偉聰：表達意見應和平守法.
Wen Wei Po (2019-06-09). 謀集會後強留包圍立會 激進派煽紮營 圖演「二次佔中」.
Apple Daily (2019-06-10). 群眾夜攻立會與警血戰.
Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 示威者夜圍政總 警噴椒驅口罩男.
Metro Daily (2019-06-10). 扶老攜幼大遊行 警民衝突噴胡椒.
Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 白衣人海反修例 民陣稱 103 萬 警稱高峰 24 萬.
Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 眾志學生動源 留守添美道.
Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 煽動群眾衝擊 堵立會搞佔領
Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-10). 亂港派縱火堵路衝擊立會 多名警員受傷 遊行變暴亂 通宵大混亂
Headline Daily (2019-06-11). 立會衝突 鼓動學生參與社會抗爭 「學獨」陳家駒被捕後獲釋.
News video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV, RTHK and TVB.
- 12 HK01 (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·6.9 局勢全覽】民陣：103 萬人遊行 警方：高峰期 24 萬. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338451/逃犯條例-6-9 局勢全覽-民陣-103 萬人遊行-警方-高峰期 24 萬>
Stand News (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】6.9 大遊行現場 香港人反擊戰. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-6-9-大遊行現場-香港人反擊戰/>
Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-09). 學生動源及學生獨立聯盟發起添美道留守. Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2158220/學生動源及學生獨立聯盟發起添美道留守>
SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
Stand News (2019-06-09). 【6.9 大遊行】學生動源、香港獨立聯盟：和平留守添美道至 6.12 到時考慮行動升級. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/6-9-大遊行-學生動源等獨派組織-和平留守添美道至-6-12-但必要時武力抗爭/>
Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 警民同料遊行人多 警力增至 2000 民陣籲開放更多車路 眾志預告有「重要呼籲」.
Now TV (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】民陣反修例遊行現場（二）. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351070>
Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-09). 亂港派今謀再佔 推市民犯法 遊行風險高 盧偉聰：表達意見應和平守法.
Wen Wei Po (2019-06-09). 謀集會後強留包圍立會 激進派煽紮營 圖演「二次佔中」.

- Apple Daily (2019-06-10). 群眾夜攻立會與警血戰.
 Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 示威者夜圍政總 警噴椒驅口罩男.
 Metro Daily (2019-06-10). 扶老攜幼大遊行 警民衝突噴胡椒.
 Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 白衣人海反修例 民陣稱 103 萬 警稱高峰 24 萬.
 Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 眾志學生動源 留守添美道.
 Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 煽動群眾衝擊 堵立會搞佔領
 Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-10). 亂港派縱火堵路衝擊立會 多名警員受傷 遊行變暴亂 通宵大混亂
 Headline Daily (2019-06-11). 立會衝突 鼓動學生參與社會抗爭 「學獨」陳家駒被捕後獲釋.
 News video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV, RTHK and TVB.
- ¹³ HKSAR (2019-06-09). The Government response to procession. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/09/P2019060900587.htm>
- ¹⁴ Now TV (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】民陣反修例遊行現場（二）. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351070>
 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
 News video footage of RTHK, Stand News and Cable TV.
- ¹⁵ Now TV (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】民陣反修例遊行現場（二）. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351070>
 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
 HK01 (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·持續更新】百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>
 SCMP (2019-06-10). Why did Hongkongers join million-strong march to protest extradition bill? It's about protecting freedom, and it's in their DNA. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013758/why-did-hundreds-thousands-hongkongers-take-streets-protest>
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 【反修例遊行】示威者衝擊立法會示威區 警方施放催淚彈 (00:40). Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1018900/即時-香港-反修例遊行-示威者衝擊立法會示威區-警方施放催淚彈>
 Stand News (2019-06-10). 【6.10 警民衝突】示威者圍衝擊立法會 警出動胡椒噴霧棍毆 群眾被驅至灣仔. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/6-9-大遊行-示威者圍衝突立法會-警出動胡椒噴霧/>
 Now TV (2019-06-10). 有示威者以鐵馬作擋箭牌試圖衝向立法會. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351106>
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 示威者立會外與警爆衝突
 Headline Daily (2019-06-11). 拘 19 人檢長矛 千警周三佈防 衝擊立會 警轟有預謀.
 Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-11). 狂徒暴力衝擊立會 8 警受傷 警方指有組織有預謀有準備
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-11). 警疑凌晨衝擊有預謀 拘 12 人.
 Oriental Daily News (2019-06-11). 涉非法集會者 向警出示偽造記者證.
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 示威者疑製造催淚彈假像.
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 鐵欄作武器 暴徒襲警堵路.
 SCMP (2019-06-11). Police faced 'organised, armed and prepared radical individuals'.
 News video footage of HK01, Ming Pao, RTHK, SCMP and Stand News.
- ¹⁶ Now TV (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】民陣反修例遊行現場（二）. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351070>
 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
 HK01 (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·持續更新】百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>

- SCMP (2019-06-10). Why did Hongkongers join million-strong march to protest extradition bill? It's about protecting freedom, and it's in their DNA. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013758/why-did-hundreds-thousands-hongkongers-take-streets-protest>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 【反修例遊行】示威者衝擊立法會示威區 警方施放催淚彈 (00:40). Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1018900/即時-香港-反修例遊行-示威者衝擊立法會示威區-警方施放催淚彈>
- Stand News (2019-06-10). 【6.10 警民衝突】示威者圍衝擊立法會 警出動胡椒噴霧棍毆 群眾被驅至灣仔. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/6-9-大遊行-示威者圍衝突立法會-警出動胡椒噴霧/>
- Now TV (2019-06-10). 有示威者以鐵馬作擋箭牌試圖衝向立法會. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351106>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 示威者立會外與警爆衝突
- Headline Daily (2019-06-11). 拘 19 人檢長矛 千警周三佈防 衝擊立會 警轟有預謀.
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-11). 狂徒暴力衝擊立會 8 警受傷 警方指有組織有預謀有準備
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-11). 警疑凌晨衝擊有預謀 拘 12 人.
- Oriental Daily News (2019-06-11). 涉非法集會者 向警出示偽造記者證.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 示威者疑製造催淚彈假像.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 鐵欄作武器 暴徒襲警堵路.
- SCMP (2019-06-11). Police faced 'organised, armed and prepared radical individuals'. News video footage of HK01, Ming Pao, RTHK, SCMP and Stand News.
- 17 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
- SCMP (2019-06-10). Protesters, police fight pitched battles after historic 'million-strong' march against Hong Kong's controversial extradition bill turns violent. Retrieved at <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3013761/protesters-police-fight-pitched-battles-after-peaceful>
- Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-10). In Pictures: Violent clashes as Hong Kong police clear protesters following anti-extradition bill demo. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/10/pictures-violent-clashes-hong-kong-police-clear-protesters-following-anti-extradition-bill-demo/>
- Stand News (2019-06-10). 【圖輯】6.10 凌晨的衝擊與驅散. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/圖輯-6-10-凌晨的衝擊與驅散/>
- HK01 (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·持續更新】百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 香港黑夜爆警民衝突 鐵馬鐵枝警棍齊飛濺血 帶口罩者兩衝立會 警方制服逾 200 人. Retrieved from http://www.mingpaocanada.com/tor/htm/News/20190610/taa1_r.htm
- Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 【一片睇晒】示威者扔鐵馬圍衝入立法會 警方施胡椒噴霧驅趕. https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190610/bkn-20190610033139512-0610_00822_001.html
- United Social Press (2019-06-10). 2019.06.10 立法會示威區清場其間，有示威者被警員制服後，頭部被撞向金屬防護欄，再被扔至防護欄後方地上昏迷。 Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/UnitedSocialPress/videos/vb.579827748716829/2066539676808123>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-10). 群眾夜攻立會與警血戰.
- Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 激進派夜圍攻總爆衝突 警龍和道添美道驅趕.
- Metro Daily (2019-06-10). 扶老攜幼大遊行 警民衝突噴胡椒.
- Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 白衣人海反修例 民陣稱 103 萬 警稱高峰 24 萬.
- Sing Pao (2019-06-10). 立會門外 龍和道午夜爆衝突 盧偉聰：強烈譴責 數百神秘口罩人擲鐵馬長竹藏刀圍刺警.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 「速龍小隊」鎮暴清場 激進示威者衝擊立會圍佔龍和道.
- Sky Post (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬.
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-10). 亂港派縱火堵路衝擊立會 多名警員受傷 遊行變暴亂 通宵大混亂
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-10). 暴徒夜襲立會 衝防線傷警員 「獨人」現場策劃 持鐵馬攻擊 警胡椒噴霧控制場面.
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-10). 盧偉聰：譴責暴力果斷執法.
- Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 示威未散即公佈如期二讀 警民衝突「特首需負全責」.

- am730 (2019-06-11). 立法會外午夜起衝突 19 人被捕多人受傷。
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-11). 警疑凌晨衝擊有預謀 拘 12 人。
 Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-11). 暴力衝突拘 19 人 警明評估調配人手
 Oriental Daily News (2019-06-11). 警檢自製長矛鐵錘電鋸石屎槍 歹獨武器勁攞命。
 Oriental Daily News (2019-06-11). 八警受傷 PTU 爆眼角恐毀容。
 Sing Pao (2019-06-11). 八名警務人員受傷 爆眼角縫 15 針。
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 警譴責暴力示威誓追究到底 衝擊立會有預謀 八警傷 19 人被捕。
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 鐵欄作武器 暴徒襲警堵路。
 SCMP (2019-06-11). Police faced 'organised, armed and prepared radical individuals'.
 Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-11). 檢獲大量攻擊性武器民陣遊行後暗派物資 暴亂早有預謀暴徒圖搶槍攞命。
 Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-11). 前排架鐵馬攻擊後排替補兼擲磚 300 餘暴徒襲警有明確分工。
 East Week (2019-06-12). 港獨派圖借反《逃犯例》翻生 警方 激進分子 16 小時攻防戰。
 News video footage of HK01, RTHK and Stand News.
- 18 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
 HK01 (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·持續更新】百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>
 Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】警立法會大樓外清場 宣布非法集結 示威者走往龍和道. Retrieved from <https://m.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190610/s00001/1560096945249/>
 【逃犯條例-反修例遊行】警立法會大樓外清場-宣布非法集結-示威者走往龍和道
 Sky Post (2019-06-10). 反修例遊行大逼爆 民陣：103 萬人參與 警：最高峰 24 萬。
 am730 (2019-06-11). 立法會外午夜起衝突 19 人被捕多人受傷。
 Headline Daily (2019-06-11). 拘 19 人檢長矛 千警周三佈防 衝擊立會 警轟有預謀。
 Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-11). 狂徒暴力衝擊立會 8 警受傷 警方指有組織有預謀有準備
 Ming Pao (2019-06-11). 消息：警早料留守 沒料爆衝突。
 Ming Pao (2019-06-11). 留守衝突 19 示威者被捕 358 摘名 八成被記身分者 16 至 25 歲 警：日後或檢控。
 Oriental Daily News (2019-06-11). 防暴警軟硬兼施 鐵腕清場 速龍小隊特別戰術平亂。
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 鐵欄作武器 暴徒襲警堵路。
 Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-11). 前排架鐵馬攻擊後排替補兼擲磚 300 餘暴徒襲警有明確分工。
 East Week (2019-06-12). 港獨派圖借反《逃犯例》翻生 警方 激進分子 16 小時攻防戰。
 News video footage of HK01, Ming Pao and Stand News.
- 19 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
 HK01 (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·持續更新】百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>
 News video footage of HK01, RTHK, Apple Daily, Cable TV and Stand News.
- 20 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
 Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】警立法會大樓外清場 宣布非法集結 示威者走往龍和道. Retrieved from <https://m.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190610/s00001/1560096945249/>
 【逃犯條例-反修例遊行】警立法會大樓外清場-宣布非法集結-示威者走往龍和道
 News video footage of HK01, RTHK, Apple Daily and Cable TV.
- 21 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
 Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】警立法會大樓外清場 宣布非法集結 示威者走

- 往龍和道。 Retrieved from <https://m.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190610/s00001/1560096945249/>
【逃犯條例-反修例遊行】警立法會大樓外清場-宣布非法集結-示威者走往龍和道
 Now TV (2019-06-09). **【不斷更新】**民陣反修例遊行現場(二)。 Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351070>
 SCMP (2019-06-10). Protesters, police fight pitched battles after historic ‘million-strong’ march against Hong Kong’s controversial extradition bill turns violent. Retrieved at <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3013761/protesters-police-fight-pitched-battles-after-peaceful>
 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-10). In Pictures: Violent clashes as Hong Kong police clear protesters following anti-extradition bill demo. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/10/pictures-violent-clashes-hong-kong-police-clear-protesters-following-anti-extradition-bill-demo/>
 HK01 (2019-06-10). **【逃犯條例·持續更新】**百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底 (00:19). Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>
 Headline Daily (2019-06-10). 激進派夜圍政總爆衝突 警龍和道添美道驅趕
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 示威者立會外與警爆衝突
 Sing Pao (2019-06-10). 立會門外 龍和道午夜爆衝突 盧偉聰：強烈譴責 數百神秘口罩人擲鐵馬長竹藏刀圖刺警。
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-10). 「速龍小隊」鎮暴清場 激進示威者衝擊立會圖佔龍和道。
 Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-10). 亂港派縱火堵路衝擊立會 多名警員受傷 遊行變暴亂 通宵大混亂
 Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 示威未散即公佈如期二讀 警民衝突「特首需負全責」。
 Headline Daily (2019-06-11). 拘19人檢長矛 千警周三佈防 衝擊立會 警轟有預謀。
 Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-11). 狂徒暴力衝擊立會 8警受傷 警方指有組織有預謀有準備
 Metro Daily (2019-06-11). 警清場拘19人 搜出火機剪刀。
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 鐵欄作武器 暴徒襲警堵路。
 News video footage of HK01, RTHK, SCMP, Apple Daily, Cable TV and Stand News.
- 22 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
 Stand News (2019-06-10). **【圖輯】**6.10 凌晨的衝擊與驅散。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/圖輯-6-10-凌晨的衝擊與驅散/>
 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-10). In Pictures: Violent clashes as Hong Kong police clear protesters following anti-extradition bill demo. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/10/pictures-violent-clashes-hong-kong-police-clear-protesters-following-anti-extradition-bill-demo/>
 HK01 (2019-06-10). **【逃犯條例·持續更新】**百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>
 Now TV (2019-06-10). 示威者霸佔灣仔及中環路面 多人被捕。 Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351105>
 am730 (2019-06-11). 記協譴責暴力對待記者警：警員盡量協助採訪。
 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-12). Hong Kong’s journalism watchdog says police ‘trampled on reporters’ rights’ during extradition protest clashes. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/12/hong-kongs-journalism-watchdog-says-police-trampled-reporters-rights-extradition-protest-clashes/>
 Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 示威未散即公佈如期二讀 警民衝突「特首需負全責」。
 Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 警閃燈阻拍攝 辱罵記者「垃圾」。
 am730 (2019-06-11). 立法會外午夜起衝突 19人被捕多人受傷。
 Headline Daily (2019-06-11). 拘19人檢長矛 千警周三佈防 衝擊立會 警轟有預謀。
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-11). 採訪遭驅趕 記協抗議促嚴查。
 Metro Daily (2019-06-11). 警清場拘19人 搜出火機剪刀。
 Ming Pao (2019-06-11). 連發20帖 七見傳媒 警即時回應遊行鬧謠。
 Sing Pao (2019-06-11). 驅散現場混亂 難識別記者身分。
 East Week (2019-06-12). 港獨派圖借反《逃犯例》翻生 警方 激進分子 16小時攻防戰。
 News video footage of HK01, Hong Kong Free Press, RTHK, SCMP, Apple Daily, Cable TV and Stand News.
- 23 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>

- crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against
HK01 (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·持續更新】百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>
Ming Pao (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】警立法會大樓外清場 宣布非法集結 示威者走往龍和道. Retrieved from <https://m.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190610/s00001/1560096945249/>
【逃犯條例-反修例遊行】警立法會大樓外清場-宣布非法集結-示威者走往龍和道
Now TV (2019-06-09). 【不斷更新】民陣反修例遊行現場（二）. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351070>
Now TV (2019-06-10). 示威者霸佔灣仔及中環路面 多人被捕. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351105>
Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-11). 警疑凌晨衝擊有預謀 拘 12 人.
Ming Pao (2019-06-11). 留守衝突 19 示威者被捕 358 摘名 八成被記身分者 16 至 25 歲 警：日後或檢控.
Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-11). 檢獲大量攻擊性武器民陣遊行後暗派物資 暴亂早有預謀暴徒圖搶槍斃命.
Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-11). 前排架鐵馬攻擊後排替補兼擲磚 300 餘暴徒襲警有明確分工.
News video footage of Apple Daily and Now TV.
- 24 SCMP (2019-06-09). As it happened: How Hong Kong's protest march against the extradition bill turned ugly. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3013725/hong-kong-edge-crowds-gather-ultimate-showdown-against>
HK01 (2019-06-10). 【逃犯條例·持續更新】百人衝擊立法會 盧偉聰：搜證追究到底. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/338634/逃犯條例-持續更新-百人衝擊立法會-盧偉聰-搜證追究到底>
In-media (2019-06-10). 反送中遊行後 示威者衝擊立法會 游走港島抗爭. Retrieved from <https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1064618>
Stand News (2019-06-11). 【不散者們】被圍堵、被拘捕 年輕人的說法：我們為何仍在前線抗爭. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不散者們-上-被圍堵被拘捕-年輕人的說法-我們為何仍在前線抗爭/>
Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 示威未散即公佈如期二讀 警民衝突「特首需負全責」.
News video footage of RTHK, Apple Daily, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- 25 SCMP (2019-06-10). Protesters, police fight pitched battles after historic 'million-strong' march against Hong Kong's controversial extradition bill turns violent. Retrieved at <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3013761/protesters-police-fight-pitched-battles-after-peaceful>
HK01 (2019-06-10). 一文盡覽逃犯條例夜戰 警棍流血衝突關鍵：政府堅持恢復二讀. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/338654/一文盡覽逃犯條例夜戰-警棍流血衝突關鍵-政府堅持恢復二讀>
Now TV (2019-06-10). 示威者霸佔灣仔及中環路面 多人被捕. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351105>
Truth Media Hong Kong (2019-06-10). 數十示威者舊灣仔警署外被警員包圍 學生獨立聯盟召集人陳家駒被捕. Retrieved from <https://tmhk.org/2019/06/10/數十示威者舊灣仔警署外被警員包圍-學生獨立聯盟/>
Stand News (2019-06-10). 【圖輯】6.10 凌晨的衝擊與驅散. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/圖輯-6-10-凌晨的衝擊與驅散/>
News video footage of RTHK, SCMP, Apple Daily, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- 26 Stand News (2019-06-10). 【6.10 警民衝突】逾百示威者被驅至舊灣仔警署外 搜身、攝錄後獲放行. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/6-10-警民衝突-逾百示威者被驅至舊灣仔警署外-搜身-攝錄後獲放行>
Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 【圖輯】示威者一度佔領告士打道 警方凌晨清場. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190610/bkn-20190610031507748-0610_00822_001.html
Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-10). 舊灣仔警署外示威者 警逐一搜身並押解放行. Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2158401/舊灣仔警署外示威者+警逐一搜身並押解>
Stand News (2019-06-11). 【不散者們】被圍堵、被拘捕 年輕人的說法：我們為何仍在前線抗爭.

Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不散者們-上-被圍堵被拘捕-年輕人的說法-我們為何仍在前線抗爭/>

Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 示威未散即公佈如期二讀 警民衝突「特首需負全責」.

am730 (2019-06-11). 立法會外午夜起衝突 19 人被捕多人受傷.

Headline Daily (2019-06-11). 拘 19 人檢長矛 千警周三佈防 衝擊立會 警轟有預謀.

Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-11). 狂徒暴力衝擊立會 8 警受傷 警方指有組織有預謀有準備

Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-11). 警疑凌晨衝擊有預謀 拘 12 人.

Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-11). 暴力衝突拘 19 人 警明評估調配人手

Metro Daily (2019-06-11). 警清場拘 19 人 搜出火機剪刀.

Ming Pao (2019-06-11). 留守衝突 19 示威者被捕 358 摘名 八成被記身分者 16 至 25 歲 警：日後或檢控.

Oriental Daily News (2019-06-11). 涉非法集會者 向警出示偽造記者證.

Sing Pao (2019-06-11). 企圖衝擊立法會 358 人被查問 18 至 22 歲佔最多 有組織有預謀暴力事件 19 人被捕.

Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 警譴責暴力示威誓追究到底 衝擊立會有預謀 八警傷 19 人被捕.

Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 358 人被記錄資料 少女佔三分之一.

Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 鐵欄作武器 暴徒襲警堵路.

Sky Post (2019-06-11). 民陣明再集會反修例 警方有信心應對 昨凌晨衝突拘 19 男女 或追究 358 人.

SCMP (2019-06-11). Police faced 'organised, armed and prepared radical individuals'.

Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-11). 檢獲大量攻擊性武器民陣遊行後暗派物資 暴亂早有預謀暴徒圖搶槍擲命.

Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-11). 前排架鐵馬攻擊後排替補兼擲磚 300 餘暴徒襲警有明確分工.

East Week (2019-06-12). 港獨派圖借反《逃犯例》翻生 警方 激進分子 16 小時攻防戰.

News video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV, Now TV, SCMP, Stand News.

²⁷ Ming Pao (2019-06-09). 【逃犯條例·反修例遊行】暴力衝突警拘 19 人 舊灣仔警署外 358 人或遭檢控. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190610/s00001/1560157793902/> 【逃犯條例-反修例遊行】暴力衝突警拘 19 人-舊灣仔警署外 358 人或遭檢控

Oriental Daily News (2019-06-10). 逃犯末路：警拘 19 示威者 358 人受查. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190610/bkn-20190610162005487-0610_00822_001.html

Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 警錄 358 人資料 勢秋後算賬. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190611/20701002>

Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 示威未散即公佈如期二讀 警民衝突「特首需負全責」.

Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-11). 鐵欄作武器 暴徒襲警堵路.

CHAPTER 8

INCIDENT DAY – WEDNESDAY 12 JUNE 2019

Introduction

8.1 This Chapter deals with the events on 12 June 2019, the day scheduled for the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill at a Legislative Council (LegCo) meeting at 11:00. Not only was the LegCo meeting cancelled as a result of tens of thousands of protesters gathering in the vicinity of Central Government Complex (CGC), beginning in the early hours of that day, violent clashes also broke out when hundreds of violent protesters charged on the police cordon lines at the CGC area at 15:00, the time given in the protesters' ultimatum for the Government to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The violent protesters hurled bricks, iron rods and other hard objects at the police officers on the cordon lines, who in response initially defended with batons, OC Foam / OC Gel and PAVA solution but eventually fired tear gas and less-lethal projectiles (including rubber rounds, super sock rounds and react rounds) to disperse the protesters as the situation deteriorated. The turmoil continued until midnight. Police action on 12 June aroused public concern and attracted 27 Reportable Complaints (RCs) and 33 Notifiable Complaints (NCs) in total (see paragraphs 8.22-8.28 for details). These complaints are investigated by CAPO and each RC will be monitored by the IPCC assigning observer(s) to attend interview(s) and observe the collection of evidence conducted by CAPO. The purpose of this Chapter is to enable the IPCC to inform itself of the facts of the incidents giving rise to these complaints and the context in which these incidents took place, so that the IPCC is in a better position to undertake its function under section 8(1)(a) of the IPCC Ordinance in monitoring and reviewing the investigations of the individual complaints by CAPO. At the same time, the opportunity is taken to make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) under section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance so that complaints from future Police operations may be prevented.

Events leading to the incidents on Wednesday 12 June 2019

8.2 With the protests followed by violent clashes outside the LegCo Complex on 9 June after the Government's announcement that the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill would proceed on 12 June, those opposing the Fugitive Offenders Bill urged others to join in the protest that day. Calls for escalation of protest against the Fugitive Offenders Bill continued to circulate on the internet. On 10 June, there were calls on the internet for all to "picnic" at the Tamar Park starting from 11 June, a general strike on 12 June in different business sectors and a boycott on classes on the same day. Civil Human Rights Front (CHRF)

also announced their plan to host public meetings against the Fugitive Offenders Bill,¹ starting from 10:00 of 12 June until the end of the Second Reading debate, scheduled by LegCo President to conclude by 20 June.² There were also calls on the internet to escalate the level of violence, including storming of the LegCo Complex on 12 June, to oppose the Fugitive Offenders Bill.

8.3 The events on the evening of 9 June, as detailed in Chapter 7, included the siege of the LegCo Complex and clashes with the police officers at police cordon line in the small hours of 10 June. Violent protesters hurled hard objects at police officers, and blocked the roads at the CGC area, paralysing the traffic in the area. On the internet, these events were described as a rehearsal for besieging LegCo Complex on 12 June. It was therefore envisaged that on 12 June, protesters would again lay siege to the LegCo Complex to obstruct LegCo Members' entrance into the building to disrupt the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill and would again resort to violence.

8.4 The Police had received intelligence of the protesters' plan for 12 June and foresaw violent opposition from them. The policing objectives on 12 June were the same as those in the operation on 9 June, which were to safeguard the integrity of CGC and LegCo Complex, to ensure that the buildings could function as intended and to protect the safety of the buildings users. These policing objectives would be implemented under the general policing philosophy of aiming to prevent the preventable, to manage the unpreventable and to engage the unacceptable. The Police planned to adopt a proactive approach to crowd management, traffic management and protest activities management, and to take resolute action against any activities that threatened public order and safety. The Police objective was that unauthorised entry into the buildings and violent or illegal acts to impair the functioning of the buildings would not be tolerated.

8.5 In terms of its physical environment, the locations of CGC and LegCo Complex in Admiralty are vulnerable, being surrounded by major traffic routes and plentiful open space, much of which was paved with bricks and lined with metal railings. The Police intelligence received was that they would face not only the same challenges as those on 9-10 June, but also that there would most likely be an escalation of those challenges. What made the Police operation even more difficult was the presence of construction sites at the CGC area, where

¹ On 10 June 2019, CHRF announced that they planned to hold a public meeting against the Fugitive Offenders Bill at the LegCo Complex "Drum" area on 12 June. On 11 June, LegCo, after consultation with the Police on the security arrangement, closed the LegCo Complex "Drum" area until further notice. The CHRF assembly eventually took place on the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road on 12 June as per the LoNO of the Police.

² According to LegCo's press release on 11 June 2019, LegCo President announced that 66 hours were reserved from 12 June to 20 June for the Second Reading debate of the Fugitive Offenders Bill. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/chinese/press/pr20190611-2.html> (Chinese only)

there were supplies of iron bars and other hard and sharp objects, which could be used (and indeed were used) by violent protesters to attack police officers. As dawn broke on 12 June, the Police knew that they had a difficult situation on their hands.

8.6 The night before 12 June, the Police began to adopt a high-profile presence and conducted stop and search operation in Admiralty. The Police also set up mill barriers around the LegCo Complex and commenced deploying officers outside the LegCo Complex.

8.7 It was against this background that the events on 12 June unfolded. A Chronology of the events on this day appears as Annex to this Chapter.

Events on 12 June

8.8 For the operation on 12 June, 189 officers were deployed to stand guard inside CGC and LegCo Complex and 2 248 officers were deployed outside. An additional 1 478 officers were put on contingency reserve duty to handle possible contingent events. 52 officers were assigned to provide media liaison support on-site. 64 officers were assigned to handle duties at Police Headquarters (PHQ).

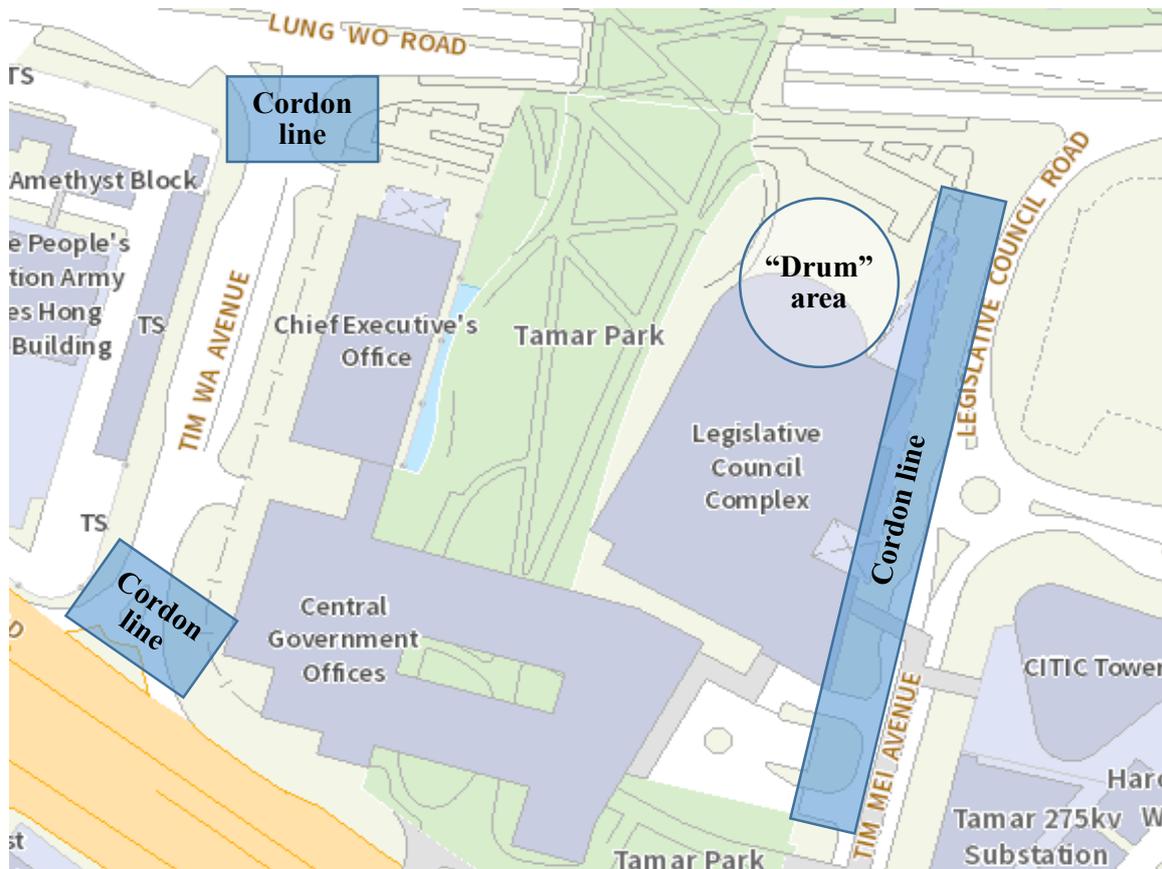
8.9 On 12 June, the Police adopted a two-tier command structure which had been used for handling the clashes at the LegCo Complex on 10 June. In the two-tier command, Headquarters Command and Control Centre (HQCCC), under the command of the Police management and other senior officers from the Operations Wing, gave instructions direct to the Forward Command Posts (FCPs) deployed at the CGC area. The FCPs were commanded by the Central District Commander and five Regional Response Contingent Commanders on the ground.

8.10 Even before dawn, protesters had started streaming into the vicinity of CGC. In the early morning, hundreds of protesters had set up barricades at Lung Wo Road and Harcourt Road, stopping traffic around the CGC area and impeding LegCo Members and other users from entering CGC and LegCo Complex. A number of vehicles were trapped at Lung Wo Road underpass, including a Government vehicle with a Principal Official of the Government on board. By 10:00, according to the Police estimates, about 46 000 people were gathering around CGC. At 10:50, the LegCo announced that the meeting scheduled for 11:00 would be postponed to a time to be determined by the LegCo President. Large numbers of protesters continued to remain at Lung Wo Road and Harcourt Road. Some protesters later also occupied Queensway, bringing the traffic in the Admiralty area to a standstill.

8.11 Tension at the CGC area continued to build up that morning, with some protesters prying up bricks from the pavements, taking away iron bars from the nearby construction sites

and dismantling iron rods from the pavement railings. From time to time, some protesters charged on the police cordon line at the junction of Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road (see Map 8-1 below).

8.12 An ultimatum also appeared on the social media that if the Government did not withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill by 15:00 on 12 June, protest action would be escalated, including storming of the LegCo Complex. When the time reached the deadline of 15:00 set by the protesters for the Government to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill, some violent protesters wearing helmets, masks, goggles and other protective gear began pushing the mills barriers at police cordon lines at the CGC area and hurling bricks, water bottles, umbrellas, helmets and other hard objects at the police officers holding these lines (see Map 8-1 below). At 15:30, HQCCC declared to all frontline officers the situation as a “riot”. To defend the cordon lines, police officers used shields, OC Foam / OC Gel, PAVA solution, batons and less-lethal projectiles. The police officers eventually retreated and used tear gas to disperse the protesters at the LegCo Complex “Drum” area and Tim Wa Avenue, preventing violent protesters from storming CGC and LegCo Complex again where people were working inside.



Map 8-1: Police cordon lines at CGC area
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

8.13 Around 16:00, HQCCC gave instructions to conduct sweeping action at the CGC area to disperse protesters in the directions from east to west and then from north to south.

8.14 At that time, an assembly organised by CHRF with a Letter of No Objection (LoNO) issued by the Police was being held outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower at Lung Wui Road with hundreds in attendance. After the clashes at the LegCo Complex “Drum” area, some violent protesters dispersed by the Police might have fled to that spot and stayed there with the assembly participants. When the Police continued sweeping operation with tear gas, most people on Lung Wui Road dashed into CITIC Tower, while some left via Tim Mei Avenue. This episode, which lasted for about 15-20 minutes, is hereinafter referred to as the “CITIC Tower Incident”.

8.15 After sweeping protesters from the roads around CGC and LegCo Complex into Harcourt Road, the Police continued to disperse protesters in the southern part of Admiralty such as Harcourt Road and Queensway. According to the Police, the last tear gas was fired between 21:00 and 22:00 at the junction of Queensway and Justice Drive. During the sweeping action, many protesters dispersed to Wan Chai and Central until midnight.

8.16 In the operation on 12 June, the Police used 240 tear gas rounds, 19 rubber rounds (i.e. rubber baton rounds and rubber slugs), three super sock (bean bag) rounds and 33 react rounds. Batons, OC Foam, OC Gel, PAVA solution and pepper balls were also used.

8.17 According to the Police, a total of 23 police officers were injured during the operation on 12 June, including 16 injured by bricks, iron bars or other objects hurled at them. The Hospital Authority (HA) at various hospitals treated a total of 81 persons related to the public order events (POEs) on 12 June.

8.18 As at 29 February 2020, the Police had arrested 39 persons in connection with the incident on 12 June for various offences, including “Riot”, “Disorder in Public Place”, “Unlawful Assembly”, “Assault on Police Officer”, “Obstructing Police Officer”, “Resisting Police Officer”, “Loitering”, “Possession of Dangerous Drugs”, “Possession of Instrument Fit for Unlawful Purpose”, and “Possession of Offensive Weapons”. Among them, ten had been charged³ in Court pending trial, 11 were still under investigation whereas 18 had been released.

³ Charged offences were “Unlawful Assembly”, “Taking Part in a Riot”, “Assault on Police Officer”, “Resisting Police Officer” and “Possession of Dangerous Drugs”.

8.19 What happened on 12 June has raised public concern about the following issues:

- (a) Police use of force;
- (b) The CITIC Tower Incident;
- (c) Police declaration of riot;
- (d) Police handling of reporters; and
- (e) Police plan for the operation on 12 June.

Sources of Information

8.20 For the purpose of its study of the events of 12 June, the IPCC has scrutinised the following materials:

- (a) Documents provided by the Police in respect of police deployment and operation, prior intelligence received, police weapons used and casualties involved on 12 June;
- (b) Operational Orders related to “Operation TIDERIDER” provided by the Police;
- (c) Information obtained from meetings with the Police;
- (d) Footage recorded by the Police pertaining to the operations on 12 June. A total of 40 video clips of seven hours long were viewed;
- (e) News reports and news footage produced by different television companies, newspapers and media outlets. A total of 318 news reports and 281 video reports of 163 hours long;
- (f) Photos and footage provided by the public upon the IPCC’s appeal concerning the incident on 12 June;
- (g) CITIC Tower CCTV footage provided by the property management of CITIC Tower. 134 hours of footage in relation to 12 June;
- (h) Press statements obtained from the website of the Information Services Department (*news.gov.hk* and *info.gov.hk*), the Police (*police.gov.hk*) and LegCo (*legco.gov.hk*) concerning the incident on 12 June; and
- (i) Information provided by the HA on the number of persons receiving medical

treatment as a result of the incident on 12 June.

The Events

8.21 The events on 12 June can be divided into three phases, the first phase from the night of 11 June to 14:59 on 12 June covering protesters' acts and the Police action before the afternoon clashes at the CGC area, the second phase from 15:00 to 15:49 on 12 June covering the clashes at the CGC area, and the third phase from 15:50 to 23:59 on 12 June covering the Police sweeping action in Admiralty during which the CITIC Tower Incident took place.

Phase I: Protesters' Acts and the Police Action before the Afternoon Clashes at the CGC Area (from the night of 11 June to 14:59 of 12 June)

- Since the night of 11 June, people started to gather around CGC to protest against the Fugitive Offenders Bill (see Image 8-1) (source: media reports). At 07:15 on 12 June, around 1 600 and 900 persons gathered outside CGC and at Tamar Park respectively (source: HKPF).



Image 8-1: Outside LegCo Complex on the night of 11 June

(Image source: HK01)

- At 07:45, hundreds of protesters dashed to Lung Wo Road and trapped a number of vehicles, including three police vehicles with only drivers on board, and a Government car with a Principal Official on board, at Lung Wo Road underpass with mills barriers (see Image 8-2) (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage). At 08:10, HQCCC informed all duties on the ground to put shift-change on hold (source: HKPF).



Image 8-2: Lung Wo Road at about 08:00
(Image source: TVB)

- At 08:25, hundreds of protesters originally gathered on Tim Mei Avenue and Rodney Street also dashed to Harcourt Road and blocked the road with mills barriers, traffic cones and other objects (see Image 8-3). At Harcourt Road, some police officers attempted to stop the protesters by using PAVA solution but were unsuccessful. Harcourt Road was eventually occupied by thousands of protesters (source: media reports and live video footage). At 08:45, HQCCC instructed that police officers could maintain a safe distance from protesters as the crowd size was expanding rapidly and some protesters were becoming increasingly emotional and violent (source: HKPF).



Image 8-3: Harcourt Road at 08:30
(Image source: Now TV)

- At 08:46, the Police urged the protesters via social media to leave Lung Wo Road; otherwise, the Police would have to use force to save the vehicles and the people trapped there. The Police stressed that it would not be a clearing action. The Police eventually did not conduct sweeping on Lung Wo Road but deployed members of the Police Negotiation Cadre at 09:15 to negotiate with the protesters at Lung Wo Road for the release of the people and vehicles trapped there. The negotiation was unsuccessful. The vehicles and the people on board remained there until the Police conducted rescue operation at 15:50 (source: HKPF).
- By 09:00, the roads at the CGC area, namely Legislative Council Road, Tim Mei Avenue, Lung Wui Road, Lung Wo Road and Harcourt Road were flooded with protesters. Access to the LegCo Complex was obstructed (see Image 8-4) (source: media reports and live video footage). At 10:00, according to the Police estimates, about 46 000 gathered in the CGC area, 11 000 at Tim Mei Avenue, 22 000 at Harcourt Road, 10 000 at Lung Wo Road, 2 000 at Tamar Park and 1 000 at Lung Wui Road (source: HKPF).



Image 8-4: CGC area at 10:10

(Image source: HK01)

- At 08:30, some protesters started collecting and preparing various materials at the CGC area, such as prying up bricks from the pavements (see Image 8-5), taking away iron bars from construction sites, dismantling iron railings and using plastic strings to tie mills barriers together. They also distributed these materials at the area (see Image 8-6) (source:

media reports and live video footage). At 09:18, HQCCC gave instructions that officers should take their personal safety as the top priority and avoid triggering off confrontation on any action by the Police. At 12:30, the Police warned protesters via social media not to hurl bricks, which could cause serious injury to others (source: HKPF).



Image 8-5: Bricks pried up from Lung Wo Road pavement
(Image source: HK01)



Image 8-6: Iron bars and water-filled barriers conveyed along Tim Mei Avenue
(Image source: Cable TV)

- At 10:56, hundreds of protesters gathered at the junction of Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road. Some of them charged on the police cordon line, pushed barricades against the police cordon line and hurled objects at police officers (see Map 8-1 above) (source: live video footage and media reports). At 10:57, HQCCC gave instructions that the officers at Tim Wa Avenue should defend CGC as far as possible; if the situation deteriorated and became out of control, officers should retreat to indoor areas to ensure their personal safety (source: HKPF). Police officers used PAVA solution, OC Foam / OC Gel, batons and shields to defend the cordon line. The clash stopped at about 11:06 (source: live video footage and media reports).
- At 10:50, LegCo President announced that the LegCo meeting for the Fugitive Offenders Bill, scheduled for 11:00, would be postponed to a time to be decided by him (source: LegCo website). The protesters did not leave the Admiralty area and maintained their demand that the Government withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill (source: live video footage and media reports). In view that some protesters had charged on police cordon lines and collected construction materials at the CGC area and the situation was deteriorating, HQCCC at 11:17 instructed the field commanders that they should consider the use of force level in life-saving situations if sweeping had to be conducted (source: HKPF).
- Starting from 09:35, some vehicles moved slowly or stopped on the roads of Admiralty, Wan Chai and Central, causing traffic obstruction. At 10:40, the Police, through social media, stated that there were vehicles deliberately blocking Queensway and Cotton Tree Drive and requested other drivers to avoid driving to the affected areas (source: media reports). At 11:28, some police traffic officers requested reinforcement at Queensway and Cotton Tree Drive, but no spare manpower could be deployed (source: HKPF). At about 12:00, some protesters blocked Queensway with mills barriers and other barricades (see Image 8-7). Traffic in the Admiralty area came to a standstill (source: media reports).



Image 8-7: Queensway at 11:52

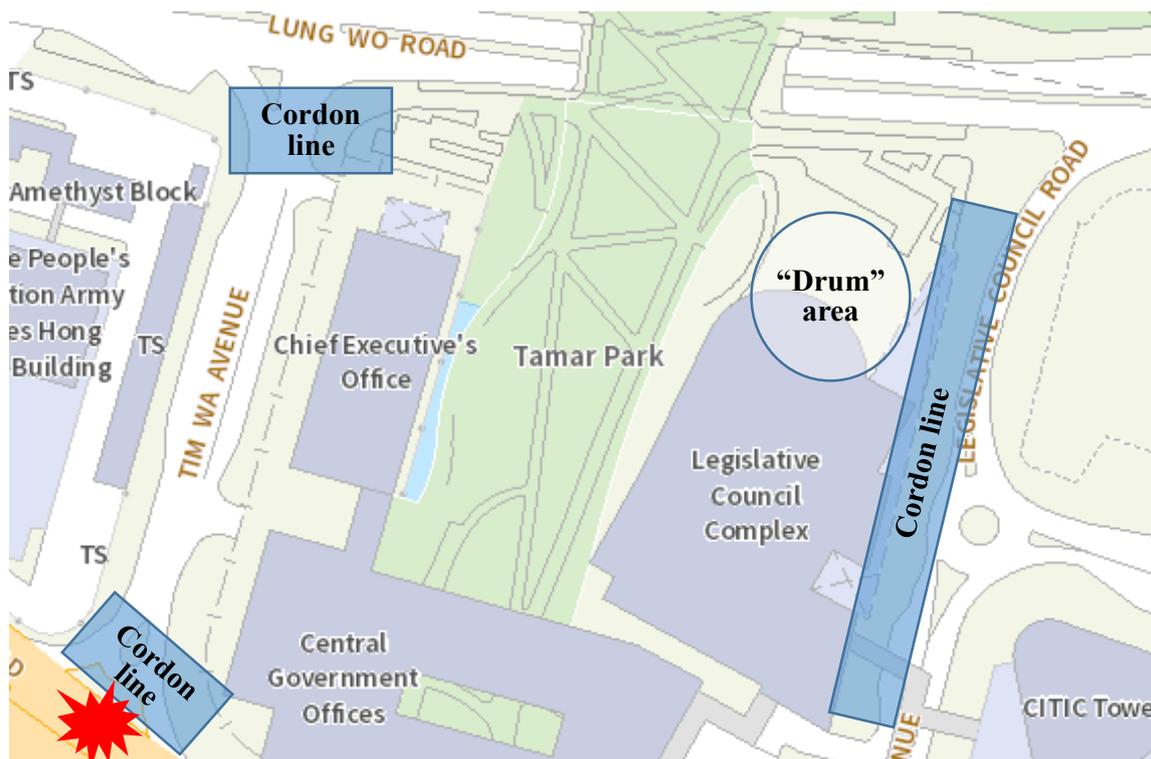
(Image source: HK01)

- CHRF was allowed to hold an assembly with a LoNO issued by the Police at the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road to protest against the Fugitive Offenders Bill between 10:00 and 23:59 for three consecutive days from 12 June to 14 June.⁴ As stated in the LoNO, CHRF estimated that the attendance would be around 500 (source: HKPF). Before noon, a stage for the CHRF's assembly was set up outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower at the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road. Hundreds of protesters were seen on Lung Wui Road and multiple layers of mills barriers were placed by protesters at the eastern end of Lung Wui Road, near the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue (source: media reports and live video footage). At about 14:00, some political figures spoke on the stage of the assembly and hundreds of protesters gathered outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower on Lung Wui Road (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, media reports and live video footage).
- At 14:00, HQCCC gave instructions that frontline officers should retreat if they could not hold cordon lines upon attack by protesters and should not fire tear gas (source: HKPF).

⁴ At about 22:00 on 12 June 2019, CHRF told the press that the Police had objected to the holding of assembly on the following day (source: media reports).

Phase II: The Afternoon Clashes at the CGC Area (from 15:00 to 15:49 of 12 June)

- 15:00 was the protesters' deadline for the Government to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill (source: media reports). At 15:00, HQCCC instructed all frontline officers to prepare for possible attack from protesters and to equip themselves with full gear (source: HKPF).
- At 15:03, at the junction of Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road (the western side of CGC) (see Map 8-2 below), hundreds of violent protesters holding umbrellas and wearing facemasks, helmets and other protective gear started to push mills barriers towards the police cordon line and hurl umbrellas, traffic cones and other objects at the police officers. At the beginning, the police officers defended with PAVA solution, OC Foam / OC Gel, batons and shields behind the mills barriers. A group of police officers later moved past the mills barriers and used batons to disperse the protesters in the front. After the protesters had retreated, the police officers returned to the police cordon line behind the mills barriers (source: media reports and live video footage).



Map 8-2: Clash at the junction of Harcourt Road and Tim Wa Avenue

(Source of base map: Lands Department)

- At 15:25, while the clash at Tim Wa Avenue (the western side of CGC) was ongoing, many protesters wearing facemasks, helmets and other protective gear also prepared to charge on the police cordon line at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex on Legislative Council Road (the eastern side of CGC) (see Map 8-3 below). They used plastic strings

to tie metal barriers together and pushed them towards the cordon line (see Image 8-8) (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 8-8: Legislative Council Road at 15:26
(Image source: HK01)

- At 15:30, HQCCC declared to all frontline officers the situation as a “riot” (source: HKPF).
- At 15:32, violent protesters charged on the cordon line at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex (see Map 8-3 below). They protected themselves with umbrellas and other protective gear and hurled various hard objects at the police officers. Those in the front used iron bars and umbrellas to attack the police officers (see Image 8-9). The police officers defended with PAVA solution, OC Foam / OC Gel, batons and shields. About a minute later, the protesters briefly moved back but kept hurling objects at the police officers (source: media reports and live video footage).



Map 8-3: Clash at Legislative Council Road
(Source of base map: Lands Department)



Image 8-9: Vehicular entrance of LegCo Complex at 15:33
(Image source: Now TV)

- At 15:34 and 15:37, HQCCC instructed that all officers guarding CGC and LegCo Complex could retreat if they could not resist the attacks from the protesters (source: HKPF).
- At 15:37, police officers at Tim Wa Avenue started to retreat from the cordon lines to the entrance of Central Government Offices (CGO) (source: media reports and live video footage).
- At 15:39, the violent protesters at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex charged on the cordon line again, hurled bricks and other objects at the police officers and shoved the mills barriers (see Image 8-10) (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 8-10: Vehicular entrance of LegCo Complex at 15:40
(Image source: Now TV)

- At 15:41, the police officers at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex, after firing less-lethal projectiles, started to retreat into the LegCo Complex “Drum” area. Meanwhile, the police officers guarding the cordon lines at Tim Wa Avenue were also retreating to the entrance of CGO. The violent protesters at both Tim Wa Avenue and Legislative Council Road continued to hurl various objects including bricks at the retreating officers and pushed away the mills barriers erected on the police cordon lines. The protesters then entered Tim Wa Avenue and the LegCo Complex “Drum” area respectively (source: live video footage and media reports).
- At 15:42, HQCCC instructed that tear gas could be used for tactical retreat (source: HKPF). The violent protesters, after entering the LegCo Complex “Drum” area, kept moving

forward, hurling various objects and pushing mills barriers towards the retreating officers. The officers then fired less-lethal projectiles and used PAVA solution in response. Between 15:46 and 15:48, the police officers who had retreated to the Public Entrance 1 of LegCo Complex (at the “Drum” area) fired tear gas at the “Drum” area (see Image 8-11). At 15:49, the police officers successfully dispersed the protesters from the LegCo Complex “Drum” area and re-established a cordon line at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex (source: media reports and live video footage).

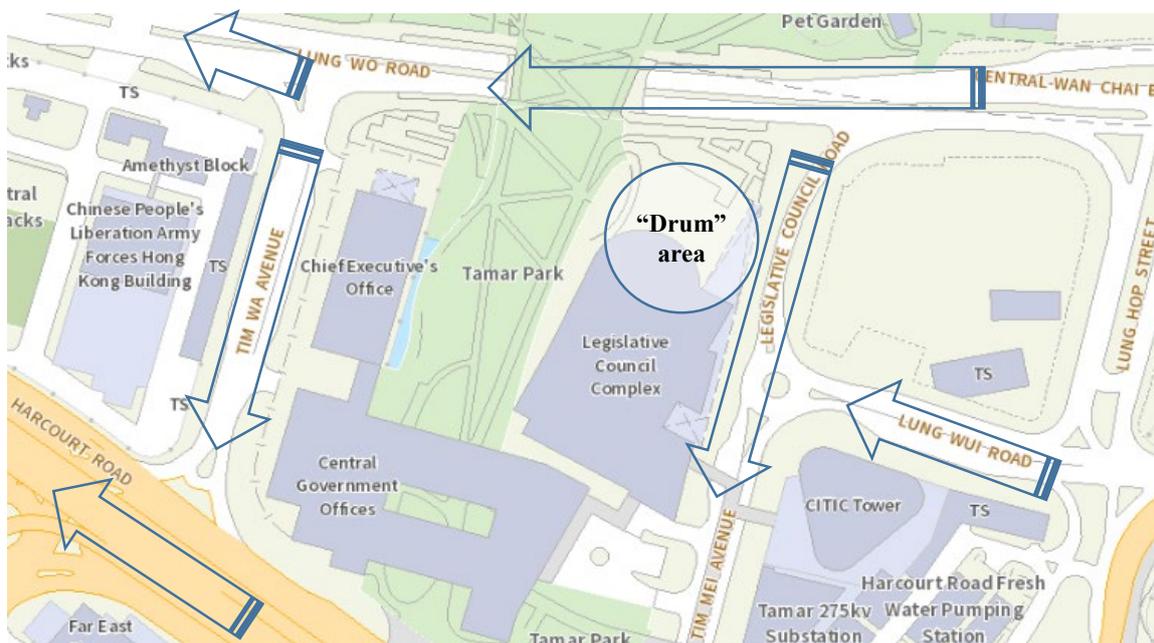
- As to the clash at Tim Wa Avenue, tear gas was fired at 15:47 on Tim Wa Avenue near the junction with Harcourt Road while the police officers on Tim Wa Avenue were retreating to CGO entrance (see Image 8-11) (source: media reports and live video footage). At 15:50, police officers retreated into CGO and closed the gates at CGO (source: HKPF). After tear gas had gradually dissipated, some protesters returned to Tim Wa Avenue from Harcourt Road and Lung Wo Road. Tear gas was fired on Tim Wa Avenue between 16:00 and 16:20. All protesters on Tim Wa Avenue were eventually dispersed to Harcourt Road and the cordon lines at Tim Wa Avenue were re-established around 16:20 (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 8-11: Tear gas at Tim Wa Avenue (left) and LegCo Complex “Drum” area (right) at 15:47
(Image source: Cable TV)

Phase III: Police Sweeping Action in Admiralty (from 15:50 to 23:59 of 12 June)

- At 15:50, HQCCC instructed that all police officers on the ground could escalate the use of force if their lives were threatened. At the same time, a group of police officers at the junction of Lung Wo Road and Lung Hop Street was instructed to conduct an operation to rescue the vehicles with their passengers trapped at Lung Wo Road underpass (source: HKPF). These officers moved westward along Lung Wo Road and fired tear gas at Lung Wo Road to disperse the protesters westwards and help the vehicles leave the spot (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).
- At 16:03, HQCCC gave instructions to all field commanders to disperse the protesters in the vicinity of CGC, by sweeping operation in the directions from east to west and then from north to south (see Map 8-4 below) (source: HKPF). In the course of the sweeping operation, the “CITIC Tower Incident” happened during which police officers had fired tear gas and pepper balls outside CITIC Tower when the CHRF’s assembly was ongoing. (Remark: the chronology of the CITIC Tower Incident is separately given below.)



Map 8-4: Police sweeping directions

(Source of base map: Lands Department)

- At about 16:20, the police officers on Tim Wa Avenue, having dispersed all protesters from Tim Wa Avenue to Harcourt Road, formed a cordon line at the junction of Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road. Meanwhile, the police officers on or near Lung Wui Road dispersed the crowd outside CITIC Tower to Tim Mei Avenue and continued to conduct sweeping along Tim Mei Avenue, dispersing the crowd to Harcourt Road. At 17:00, another group

of police officers started dispersing those staying at Harcourt Road near Admiralty Centre and Far East Finance Centre. The protesters were dispersed westwards and southwards. Eventually, they moved to the Harcourt Road flyover and other roads in the southern part of Admiralty, such as Rodney Street, Drake Street, Tamar Street and Queensway (source: media reports and live video footage).

- At 16:25, the Commissioner spoke to the press in Chinese, “...目前已是騷亂的情況...” (IPCC translation: “...the situation is a civil disturbance...”).⁵ At 17:42, the Police issued a press release entitled “Police take action to stop riot”, explaining the situation and the Police action in Admiralty since that morning (source: Government website and HKPF). At 20:50, the Chief Executive condemned the protest, speaking in Chinese “...這已經不是和平集會，而是公然、有組織地發動暴動...” (official translation: “...this is no longer a peaceful assembly but a blatant, organised riot...”) (source: Government website).
- At 18:00, LegCo announced that no meeting would be convened that day (source: LegCo website). Thousands of protesters did not leave but caused obstruction to different roads in Admiralty, Central and Wan Chai. The Police continued to use force including tear gas and less-lethal projectiles to disperse the protesters in Admiralty (source: media reports and live video footage). At 22:13, a burning object (suspected petrol bomb) was thrown on the ground of Harcourt Road near Hutchison House. No one was hit or injured (source: media reports).
- Police dispersal action in Admiralty, Central and Wan Chai continued until most of the protesters eventually left those areas shortly after midnight (source: media reports and live video footage). According to the Police, 240 tear gas rounds, 19 rubber rounds (i.e. rubber baton rounds and rubber slugs), three super sock (bean bag) rounds and 33 react rounds were used in the operation on 12 June. Batons, OC Foam, OC Gel, PAVA solution, and pepper balls were also used (source: HKPF).

The CITIC Tower Incident

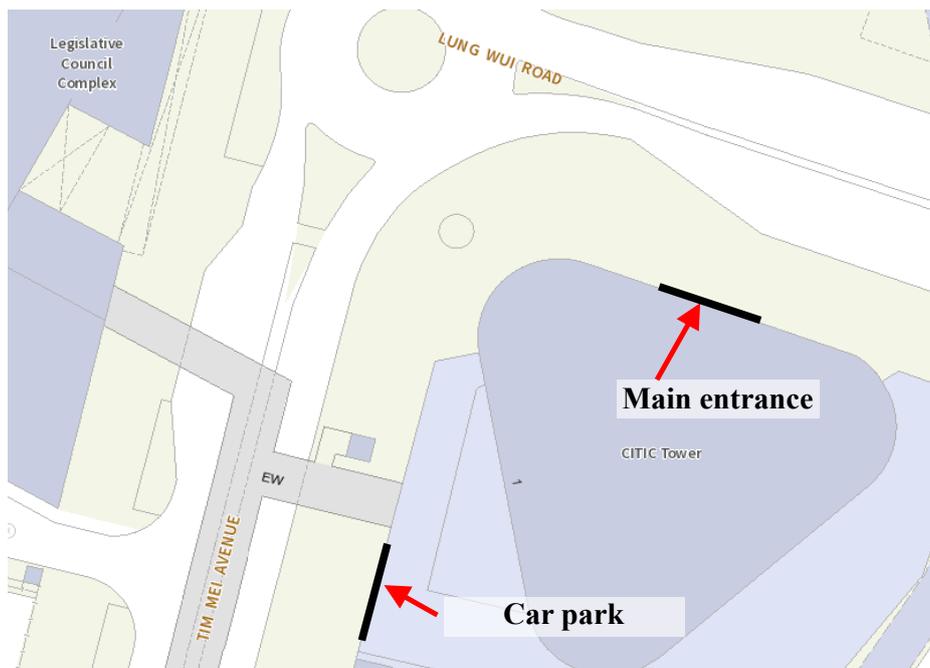
- After regaining control of LegCo Complex “Drum” area at 15:49, police officers guarding LegCo Complex re-established a cordon line at the vehicular entrance of LegCo Complex on Legislative Council Road. Hundreds of protesters remained on Legislative Council

⁵ On 13 June 2019, the Commissioner of Police stated in a press conference that the Police declared the situation as a “riot” at 15:30 on 12 June 2019 and he meant to say “riot” instead of “civil disturbance” on 12 June. On 17 June 2019, the Commissioner clarified that his comments about “riot” only referred to those whose behaviour amounted to riotous acts and assured the public that those who took part only in the POEs that day but not in the violent acts needed not worry that they had committed riot offences.

Road and some of them hurled objects at the cordon line. The police officers then fired tear gas on Legislative Council Road between 15:53 and 15:55 (see Image 8-12). The protesters were dispersed to the adjacent Lung Wo Road, Lung Wui Road and Tim Mei Avenue (source: media reports and live video footage). Those on Tim Mei Avenue either moved to the direction of Harcourt Road or entered CITIC Tower via its car park entrance (see Map 8-5 and Image 8-13 below) (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).



Image 8-12: Legislative Council Road at 15:54
(Image source: Now TV)



Map 8-5: Main entrance and car park entrance of CITIC Tower
(Source of base map: Lands Department)



Image 8-13: Tim Mei Avenue at 15:55

(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)

- At the same time, CHRF was holding an assembly covered by LoNO, with a stage erected outside CITIC Tower at the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road. The width of the stage was about half of the width of the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road (source: media reports and live video footage).
- Meanwhile, other police officers were conducting sweeping action westward along Lung Wo Road with the use of tear gas as abovementioned. At 15:57, tear gas was fired at the junction of Lung Wo Road and Legislative Council Road (see Image 8-14). Most of the protesters there moved to Lung Wui Road and the rest moved to Tim Mei Avenue (see Image 8-15). At 16:01, the police officers marching from Lung Wo Road reached Legislative Council Road and fired tear gas on Legislative Council Road and at the adjacent roundabout. The protesters dispersed to either Lung Wui Road or Tim Mei Avenue (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 8-14: Junction of Legislative Council Road and Lung Wo Road at 15:57
(Image source: Now TV)



Image 8-15: Most of the protesters moved to Lung Wui Road at 15:58
(Image source: Now TV)

- At 16:03, following HQCCC’s instructions of the sweeping plan as abovementioned, police officers continued to disperse the crowd from east to west and from north to south. According to the sweeping plan, the protesters outside the LegCo Complex would be dispersed to Harcourt Road via Tim Mei Avenue as an escape route (see Map 8-6 below) (source: HKPF).
- At that time, police officers formed two cordon lines in the vicinity of Lung Wui Road, one with about 90 officers near the roundabout of Legislative Council Road and the other with about 170 officers at the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue which was behind the multiple layers of mills barriers placed by protesters (see Map 8-6 below) (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).



Map 8-6: Police cordon lines and sweeping directions at 16:03

(Source of base map: Lands Department)

- Between 16:03 and 16:04, police officers near the roundabout shot pepper balls and threw tear gas grenades on/near the western end of Lung Wui Road (see Image 8-16) (source: media reports and live video footage). Tear gas was also seen on the pavement at the corner of Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).



Image 8-16: Tear gas at the western end of Lung Wui Road at 16:04
(Image source: Now TV)

- At that time, there were hundreds of people gathered outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower. People right outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower moved into the building through an open glass door entrance, the only one open at that time (see Image 8-17) (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).

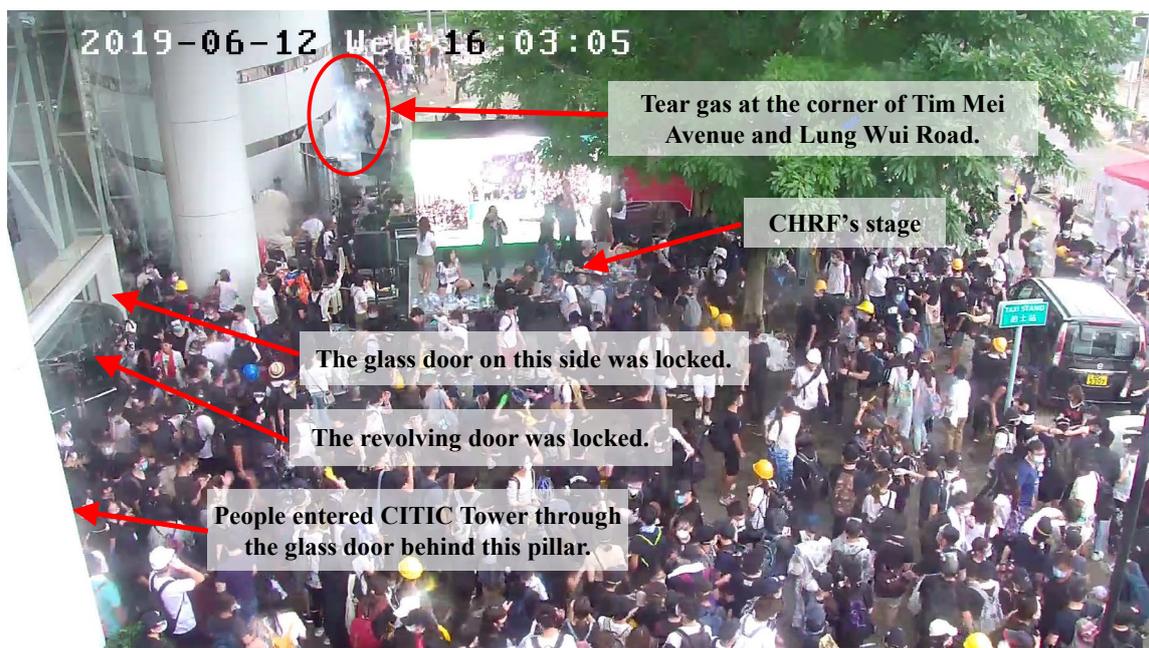


Image 8-17: CITIC Tower main entrance at 16:03

(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)

- At 16:04, a female voice could be clearly heard on video footage speaking from a loud amplified source, “慢慢嚟，上返行人路...請大家向演藝方向” (IPCC translation: “slow down, return to pavement, everyone to move to the direction of [the Academy for] Performing Arts”). (Remarks: the Hong Kong Academy for Performing Arts is situated in the east of Lung Wui Road. There was no tear gas fired from the police officers guarding the east of Lung Wui Road at that moment.) At 16:05, a female voice and a male voice spoke from a loud amplified source, “大家向添美道方向”, “大家hold住，hold住” (IPCC translation: “everyone to move to the direction of Tim Mei Avenue”, “everyone holds on, holds on”) (source: live video footage).
- Between 16:06 and 16:07, a female voice and a male voice spoke from a loud amplified source, “頭盔傳去後面”, “反惡法 反送中”, “需要生理鹽水可以嚟到台邊，台前亦都有口罩” and “大家過嚟呢度擺水” (IPCC translation: “pass helmets to the back”, “no draconian law, no Fugitive Offenders Bill”, “come to the stage if [you] need masks and saline” and “come here to get water”) (source: live video footage).
- At about 16:09, while people at Lung Wui Road were moving into CITIC Tower and tear gas was being fired at the eastern end of Lung Wui Road, a male voice and a female voice heard on video footage said from a loud amplified source, “香港人不打香港人 ... 警察克制”, “各位市民慢慢入中信 ... 淋熄催淚彈 ... 大家入中信” (IPCC translation: “Hong Kong people don’t hit Hong Kong people ... Police be restrained”, “everyone to enter CITIC [Tower] slowly ... put out tear gas with water ... everyone to enter CITIC

[Tower]”) (source: media report and live video footage). (Remarks: see also paragraphs 8.40 and 8.41, Police Response.)

- At 16:09, some people on Tim Mei Avenue moved to the direction of the roundabout at the junction with Legislative Council Road (see Image 8-18) (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).
- Between 16:09 and 16:14, tear gas was seen at different spots on Lung Wui Road, the adjacent roundabout and Tim Mei Avenue. A large crowd was seen attempting to enter CITIC Tower via its main entrance (see Images 8-18 to 8-24) (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, media reports and live video footage).



Image 8-18: Lung Wui Road at 16:09
(Image source: Now TV)



Image 8-19: Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road at 16:10
(Image source: TMHK)



Image 8-20: Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road at 16:11
(Image source: TMHK)



Image 8-21: Lung Wui Road at 16:11
(Image source: Now TV)



Image 8-22: Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road at 16:12
(Image source: TMHK)



Image 8-23: Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road at 16:13
(Image source: TMHK)



Image 8-24: Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road at 16:14
(Image source: TMHK)

- Meanwhile, tear gas was seen amid the crowd outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower on Lung Wui Road for the periods between 16:10:33 and 16:11:14 and between 16:12:55 and 16:13:25 (see Images 8-25 and 8-26) (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, media reports and live video footage).



Image 8-25: Tear gas was seen at CITIC Tower main entrance from 16:10:33 to 16:11:14
(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)



Image 8-26: Tear gas was seen at CITIC Tower main entrance from 16:12:55 to 16:13:25
(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)

- Some people could move to Tim Mei Avenue but most of the people attempted to enter CITIC Tower via the open glass door at the main entrance. Those on Tim Mei Avenue either moved to the direction of Harcourt Road or entered CITIC Tower via its car park entrance on Tim Mei Avenue. Several people inside CITIC Tower attempted to use mills barriers and other hard objects to break the glass doors at the main entrance that were

locked but did not succeed (see Image 8-27). Some tear gas got inside CITIC Tower and some people inside appeared to be unwell (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, media reports and live video footage).

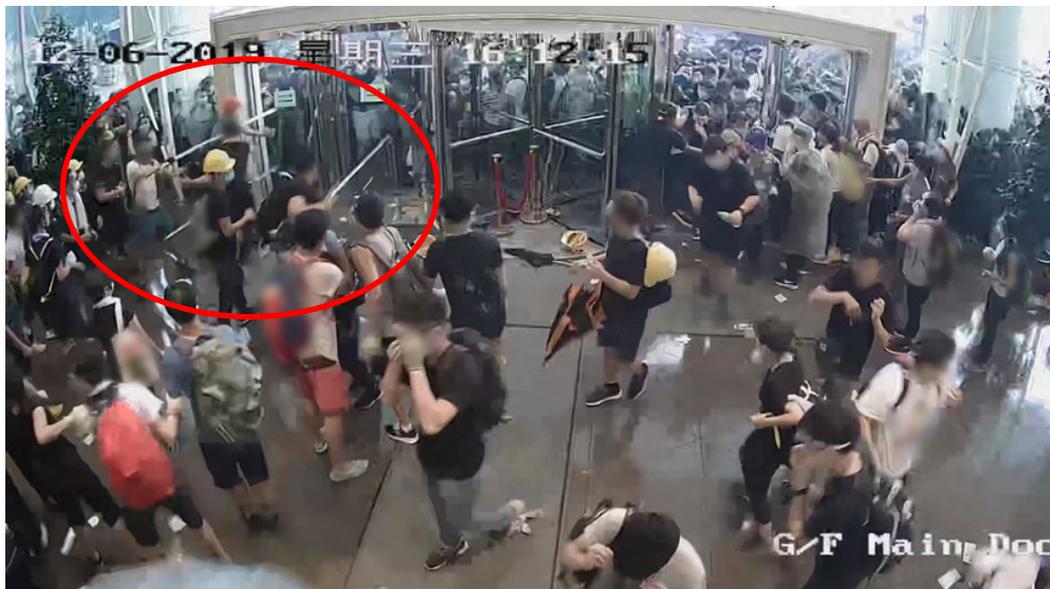


Image 8-27: People used mills barriers to hit the glass door of CITIC Tower main entrance
(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)

- At 16:14, the originally locked glass doors at the main entrance of CITIC Tower were opened by a property management staff of CITIC Tower. With more open doors, people then entered CITIC Tower more quickly (see Image 8-28). At the same time, some people continued to leave via Tim Mei Avenue (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).



Image 8-28: CITIC Tower main entrance at 16:14
(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)

- At 16:17, only about one hundred people remained outside CITIC Tower main entrance. At 16:19, a group of police officers reached the main entrance of CITIC Tower and handled ten-odd persons remaining there. Meanwhile, some people left CITIC Tower via its car park entrance to enter Tim Mei Avenue (see Image 8-29) (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, media reports and live video footage).



Image 8-29: Tim Mei Avenue at 16:19
(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)

- Police officers approached CHRF’s representatives and requested them to stop using the public announcement system or surrender it as it was hindering the police dispersal operation due to its high volume drowning out police announcements. Subsequently, a police officer seized the microphone (source: HKPF).
- Between 16:38 and 17:13, about six ambulancemen entered CITIC Tower via its main entrance and conveyed four persons out from the building on stretchers (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).

Complaints against Police

8.22 As at 29 February 2020, there was a total of 27 RCs and 33 NCs stemming from the Police action on 12 June 2019.

Police Use of Force

8.23 24 of the 27 RCs were about the Police use of force. The natures of allegations⁶ are as follows:

- 13 concerned the firing of tear gas on complainants;
- Four concerned the use of batons on complainants;
- Two concerned pushing and kicking complainants;
- Five concerned the use of OC Foam / OC Gel and PAVA solution on complainants; and
- Three concerned the firing of less-lethal projectiles on complainants.

8.24 13 of the 33 NCs were about the Police use of force. The natures of allegations⁷ are as follows:

- Seven concerned assaulting, pushing, pulling and dragging protesters or other citizens;
- Three concerned the use of OC Foam / OC Gel and PAVA solution on protesters or other citizens;
- Three concerned the firing of tear gas on protesters or other citizens; and
- Two concerned the firing of less-lethal projectiles on protesters or other citizens.

Police Handling of Reporters

8.25 15 of the 27 RCs were lodged by reporters about the handling of reporters.⁸ The reporters made 16 allegations against police officers in relation to the use of force, such as spraying OC Foam / OC Gel and firing tear gas and less-lethal projectiles on them unreasonably, two allegations of impoliteness to them, and one allegation concerning failure to display warrant card. The 15 RCs were collectively lodged via the Hong Kong Journalists Association.

⁶ One RC may concern more than one aspect of the use of force.

⁷ One NC may concern more than one aspect of the use of force.

⁸ As the cut-off date was on 29 February 2020, the 15 RCs made by reporters do not include a complaint which was jointly lodged by a reporter and a cameraman on 21 February 2020 and registered by CAPO as RC on 4 March 2020.

8.26 Two of the 33 NCs were about media handling. One alleged police officers hindering reporting work while the other concerned the use of excessive force on journalists.

Display of Police Identity

8.27 Two of the 27 RCs concerned the failure to display police warrant card by unidentified officers.

8.28 Two of the 33 NCs concerned the display of police identification.

Police Response

8.29 In response to the events of this day, the Police has made various observations to the IPCC, as set out below:

Police Use of Force

8.30 The rationale behind the instructions given by HQCCC before the afternoon clash was to avoid confrontation with the protesters in order not to cause any injuries to the protesters or the police officers. In that morning, the Police initially prepared to conduct a sweeping operation to rescue the vehicles and the persons trapped at the Lung Wo Road underpass. In the public announcement, the Police stressed that it would not be a clearing action to avoid any misunderstanding or deterioration of the situation. Having considered that there was yet any sign of imminent danger and sweeping action might result in escalation of violence by protesters and deterioration of the situation that this would endanger the safety of the Government officials and police officers trapped in the vehicles, the Police changed their plan to deploy Police Negotiation Cadre to the scene, with a view to de-escalating the situation and resolving the confrontation peacefully. The Police negotiation with protesters, however, met with limited success.

8.31 The Police did not take any early action to deter protesters from digging up bricks or collecting construction materials in the vicinity before the afternoon clash because there were many incidents taking place all at once, e.g. some protesters trapped and surrounded police vehicles and the Government vehicle with a Principal Official on board at Lung Wo Road, others charged at the police cordon lines at the LegCo “Drum” area and the junction of Harcourt Road and Tim Wa Avenue.

8.32 The Police also tried to avoid using tear gas as they were aware that the public was highly critical of its use. The Police information revealed that protesters might attack LegCo Complex at around 15:00 if the Government did not accede to the demand of the protesters.

Hence, at 14:00, HQCCC reminded the ground duties of possible alternatives upon confrontation, such as tactical retreat, and instructed that the use of tear gas should be avoided as far as practicable.

8.33 During the afternoon clashes at the CGC area, some protesters fiercely charged on police cordon lines and hurled bricks and mills barriers at the police officers. Based on the police experience in the previous operation, HQCCC instructed at 15:42 to use tear gas to minimise the threats when police officers were retreating into CGC and LegCo Complex.

8.34 In response to the continuing attack from the violent protesters remaining outside CGC and LegCo Complex, HQCCC, at 15:50, instructed that all officers on the ground could escalate the use of force if their lives were threatened, and then at 16:03, gave instructions for the sweeping plan. Police officers had to use force in the sweeping action to prevent the violent protesters from storming LegCo Complex again and to protect those working inside CGC and LegCo Complex.

The CITIC Tower Incident

8.35 The Police plan was that the police officers near the roundabout of Legislative Council Road would stand guard on the north and the west of the roundabout to prevent protesters from charging back to LegCo Complex while the officers at the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue would march forward to drive the protesters off Lung Wui Road via Tim Mei Avenue.

8.36 In the Police plan, Tim Mei Avenue was the “escape route” for the protesters to leave Lung Wui Road. Tim Mei Avenue (in particular the western pavement which was not affected by tear gas) was at all times unobstructed and the protesters were seen leaving through Tim Mei Avenue steadily. The officers had repeatedly instructed the protesters with loudhailers and body gestures to leave Lung Wui Road via Tim Mei Avenue instead of going into CITIC Tower. In the course of the sweeping action outside CITIC Tower, the police officers near the roundabout of Legislative Council Road noticed that some protesters wore protective equipment and were potentially armed with offensive weapons including bricks and construction materials. The officers used force including tear gas and pepper balls near the roundabout and on Tim Mei Avenue to defend the cordon line as they were under attack with objects being hurled by protesters or they had identified threats which they had to take action to neutralise.

8.37 As to the police officers at the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue, they were not aware that the assembly outside CITIC Tower was still ongoing when they marched forward to Lung Wui Road. They noticed that multiple layers of mills barriers

were erected by the protesters on the eastern end of Lung Wui Road, blocking their way to Lung Wui Road. They also noticed that the protesters used umbrellas and protective equipment to protect themselves and some of them hurled objects at the officers. The officers repeatedly instructed the protesters with loudhailers and body gestures to leave via Tim Mei Avenue. However, the crowd remained on Lung Wui Road. The officers then fired a few shots of tear gas at the eastern end of Lung Wui Road as they considered tear gas as the only minimum and appropriate type of force to be used to disperse the protesters, and the officers needed to maintain a distance with the protesters before the officers bypassed and dismantled the multiple layers of mills barriers placed by the protesters. The officers guarding the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue had fired less than 10 rounds of tear gas on Lung Wui Road during the sweeping action on Lung Wui Road.

8.38 On media footage, some tear gas was seen amid the crowd and some people right outside the CITIC Tower main entrance panicking, desperate to get into the building. The police officers either near the roundabout of Legislative Council Road or at the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue could not see the situation right outside the CITIC Tower at the beginning of the sweeping action on Lung Wui Road as their view at eye level was blocked by the crowd at the main entrance of the building. HQCCC also did not notice what was happening outside CITIC Tower on Lung Wui Road.

8.39 As to the tear gas amid the crowd, it was possible that when the police officers fired tear gas cartridges at a low angle in front of the crowd, some of the tear gas sub-munitions might have bounced into the crowd after hitting the ground. Later, the officers at the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue noticed the chaotic situation at the building entrance and ceased firing tear gas on Lung Wui Road. These officers then made efforts to coordinate the orderly dispersal of the crowd on Lung Wui Road.

8.40 Although the Police plan was to let the crowd leave via Tim Mei Avenue (i.e. the “escape route”), many in the crowd did not do so. Most of the protesters gathered on the pavement outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower and sought to gain entrance into CITIC Tower as per CHRF’s instructions through a powerful public announcement system. The CHRF’s stage also blocked the view of the protesters gathered there. As a result, some of the protesters were unable to see that Tim Mei Avenue was fully unobstructed and available as an escape route for them. They thus sought to gain entrance into CITIC Tower instead of leaving via Tim Mei Avenue.

8.41 The police officers later noticed that CHRF had been addressing the protesters at the assembly through audio amplifier and telling them to enter CITIC Tower. The protesters could not hear the police officers’ instructions to leave via Tim Mei Avenue. The police officers then approached CHRF’s representatives and requested them to stop using or surrender the public

announcement system which was hindering the police dispersal operation due to its high volume drowning out the police announcements. As CHRF representatives refused to do so, a police officer seized the microphone in accordance with section 10 of the Police Force Ordinance and sections 17(2) and 6(2) of the Public Order Ordinance (POO). After that, they were able to direct the protesters to leave via Tim Mei Avenue.

8.42 In accordance with the conditions stated on the LoNO, CHRF should ensure good order and public safety throughout the event and maintain communication with the Police and assist the Police to communicate with the participants. CHRF originally anticipated only 500 participants in its application of the assembly at the specified location. The Police considered that before the commencement of the assembly, CHRF had actively incited and encouraged protesters in a press stand-up on 11 June to besiege the LegCo Complex and turn out in a large number to fully occupy the Admiralty area. The Police pointed out that CHRF's Facebook posts on 12 June contained some photos of people occupying Harcourt Road and some maps indicating the locations of first aid and material supply counters. The Police considered that CHRF had breached the condition of the LoNO regarding the location of the assembly as it had spilled onto the vehicular lanes of Lung Wui Road and the number of participants had exceeded the notified number of 500 participants.

8.43 The Police also pointed out that before the commencement of the sweeping action on Lung Wui Road, a police community relations officer had advised a representative of CHRF to leave if there was any danger. CHRF should have been aware of the chaotic situation outside the LegCo Complex and should have concluded or terminated the assembly earlier on their own judgment, instead of providing the protesters with helmets and saline which could encourage them to remain there.

Police Declaration of Riot

8.44 At 15:30, HQCCC declared to all frontline officers the situation as a "riot". Declaring the situation as a riot was to remind frontline officers to understand the situation they were dealing with. The implication was that the related Police use of force guidelines could be applied and appropriate level of force could be used when necessary to achieve the lawful purposes.

Police Handling of Reporters

8.45 On 12 June, the Police deployed 52 Force Media Liaison Cadre officers to provide media liaison support to the reporters at the CGC area. The Police response on their handling of reporters on 12 June was given in the previous Chapter on 9 June Incident.

Police Plan for the Operation on 12 June

8.46 The Police were somewhat caught off guard on the early morning of 12 June by the early and large turnout of protesters. Shift-changing was thus affected in the morning.

IPCC Observations*Police Use of Force*

8.47 It is clear from the instructions given in the morning that frontline officers should not take the initiative to take action against the protesters and force should only be used for defending CGC and LegCo Complex and saving lives. If frontline officers could not hold their cordon lines, they should retreat.

8.48 No dispersal action was taken against the protesters when they blocked major roads around CGC and stocked up bricks, iron rods and other hard objects, until some of them launched their violent attacks on the police cordon lines at about 15:00. To rescue the persons and vehicles trapped by protesters at the Lung Wo Road underpass, the Police did not use any force but only sent members of the Police Negotiation Cadre to negotiate with the protesters.

8.49 When the violent protesters wearing facemasks, helmets and other protective gear mounted ferocious attacks on the police cordon lines at Tim Wa Avenue on the west side of CGC at 15:03 and at Legislative Council Road on the east side of CGC at 15:32, hurling bricks, iron bars and other hard objects, the police officers defended with shields, OC Foam / OC Gel, PAVA solution, batons and less-lethal projectiles. Tear gas was not fired at that moment. Police officers started to retreat to the entrance of CGO at 15:37 and to the LegCo Complex “Drum” area at 15:41. The violent protesters continued to hurl various objects at the retreating officers. It was under these circumstances that at 15:42, HQCCC decided that tear gas could be fired for tactical retreat. The police officers who had retreated to the LegCo Complex “Drum” area fired tear gas at 15:46, while the police officers who were retreating to the entrance of CGO fired tear gas at 15:47. It was observed that the Police action up to this point of time was reactive.

8.50 At 15:50, HQCCC instructed frontline officers to escalate their use of force if their lives were threatened. At 16:03, HQCCC instructed to conduct sweeping at the CGC area. From then on, clashes occurred at different spots at the CGC area when police officers dispersed the protesters from the area by using different levels of force, such as tear gas, less-lethal projectiles, PAVA solution, OC Foam / OC Gel and baton. The protesters then dispersed to different locations in Admiralty, Wan Chai and Central and remained there until midnight. It was this latter part of the Police operation that attracted the bulk of criticism.

8.51 As at 29 February 2020, the Police action on 12 June gave rise to 24 RCs concerning the use of force. Some media pointed out that it was an organised riot in which the violent protesters had used various hard and sharp objects to attack police officers at the CGC area.⁹ Others raised discussions or questions as to whether the Police had used force excessively or inappropriately, in particular tear gas and other police weapons, in their dispersal action, and had failed to distinguish violent protesters from non-violent protesters, subjecting the latter to unnecessary force.¹⁰ Some news reports, footage and photos on the internet captured images

- ⁹ Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 【多圖】立法會推遲開會 激進示威者包圍立法會. Retrieved from https://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142571.html
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-13). 社評: 暴力無補於事 唯盼香港平安. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/社評/article/20190613/s00003/1560365273945/社評-暴力無補於事-唯盼香港平安>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 旺暴翻版 警開火無得揀. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_011.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 暴動有組織策劃 殺傷力超佔中. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018479/日報-港聞-暴動有組織策劃-殺傷力超佔中>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 示威必須守法 不容暴動害港. URL <http://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018551/日報-社論-示威必須守法-不容暴動害港>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-13). 暴動再演佔「鐘」 亂港黑手再現. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com/hk/news/232109/2019/06/13/302442.html>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-13). 暴徒施襲傷香江 警察浴血護安寧. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/06/13/YO1906130001.htm>
- ¹⁰ Apple Daily (2019-06-12). 「克制容忍」. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/hk.nextmedia/videos/756665958097446/>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 警違法用武 多人頭中彈. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702862>
- Cable TV (2019-06-15). 新聞刺針【橡膠子彈的安全指引?】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/news.lancet/videos/橡膠子彈的安全指引/420007295254327/>
- HK01 (2019-06-16). 【逃犯條例·6.12 清場紀錄】警武力驅散實錄四行為涉違反指引. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/340813/逃犯條例-6-12 清場紀錄-警武力驅散實錄-四行為涉違反指引>
- HK01 (2019-06-21). 為甚麼我們需要獨立委員會徹查 612 清場行動. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/01 觀點/342764/為甚麼我們需要獨立委員會徹查 612 清場行動>
- Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-18). Video: Level of force used by Hong Kong police to clear protests questioned, as video clips go viral. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/18/video-level-force-used-hong-kong-police-clear-protests-questioned-video-clips-go-viral/>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-13). 社評: 暴力無補於事 唯盼香港平安. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/社評/article/20190613/s00003/1560365273945/社評-暴力無補於事-唯盼香港平安>
- Now TV (2019-07-01). 【經緯線】金鐘 612. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MHBXgRhXQ8M>
- RTHK (2019-07-22). 【612/721 的傷口】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/rthk.HKConnection/videos/612721 的傷口/473278580137655/>
- SCMP (2019-06-14). In Hong Kong protests, did police use excessive force or issue a proportional response? Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014432/officers-used-excessive-force-contain-hong-kong-extradition>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612 之後>

of some police officers using force, including less-lethal projectiles (i.e. rubber rounds, super sock rounds or react rounds), batons, tear gas, pepper balls, OC Foam / OC Gel / PAVA solution, shields and barehanded force, on those who did not pose obvious threat to the police officers, or on those whom they had seemingly subdued. Some video footage and photos showed that some protesters sustained injuries on head / face or other parts of their bodies, allegedly caused by the Police use of force. The public was concerned whether the use of force by these police officers was justified.

8.52 The IPCC notes that most instances of the use of force by the Police causing public concern took place after 15:50.¹¹ It was at 15:50 that HQCCC instructed that all officers could escalate the use of force if their lives were threatened and at 16:03, HQCCC instructed to conduct sweeping at the CGC area. Earlier at 15:30, HQCCC had declared to the frontline officers that the situation was a riot.

8.53 As pointed out in Chapter 7, the Police internal guidelines provide the principles governing the use of force. Only the minimum force should be used to achieve a purpose and once that purpose is achieved, the use of such force must stop. The force used should be reasonable in the circumstances. Whether the level of force used is appropriate depends on the level of resistance of the subject, the officer's own ability and perception of the threat. According to the Police guidelines, to exercise control over a subject effectively, it is justified for the officer to use a level of force sufficient to overpower the resistance of the subject; otherwise, the intervention would not succeed. The subject should, however, be given the opportunity to obey police orders before force is used and such force should cease immediately when the objective is achieved. In addition, there are internal guidelines for the use of irritant agent devices and less-lethal weapons based on different levels of resistance encountered by police officers.

8.54 According to the Police latest guidelines on the use of force, irritant agent devices such as OC Foam, OC Gel, PAVA solution, tear gas and pepper ball could be used when confronted with active resistance (i.e. physical action to prevent control which might cause injury to oneself or others). In the face of aggressive assault (i.e. physical assault to cause or likely to cause bodily injury), less-lethal weapons include batons, rubber rounds, react rounds and super sock rounds could be used, in addition to irritant agent devices. It is the officer's own judgement to determine what level of force is justified, and the officer will be held accountable for his own action. The use of force under the current legal regime is, therefore, a matter of personal responsibility of each police officer who is held accountable to uphold the law and comply with the rules of the Police Force.

¹¹ Based on the CAPO's information thus far, among the 24 RCs concerning the use of force, 21 of them were about the incidents taken place after 15:50 and the remaining three were about the incidents between 15:00 and 15:49.

8.55 Whether the force used was excessive depended on the actual circumstances and their individual merits, in particular the cause of the incidents, the acts of the protesters and the judgement of the police officers. Before a conclusion can be drawn, investigation has to be conducted with the police officers and the protesters involved; the witnesses of the incident have also to be interviewed to ascertain what triggered the use of force.

8.56 It is a practice of the Police to conduct a review after each deployment to ensure that all officers abide by the relevant guidelines and procedures, and to learn from the experience. It is expected that the Police Force will review all incidents and, if justified, to bring to book any officer who did not follow the Police guidelines and the laws in their handling of the protests. If the Police Force finds any officer having exceeded the bounds imposed by the law and the Police regulations, the IPCC, and indeed the community, would expect the Police Force to take necessary action to prosecute or discipline the officer concerned. On 2 and 7 March 2020, the Commissioner disclosed publicly that the Police management had taken immediate action to admonish 21 officers for probable misconduct in the handling of these POEs against the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The Commissioner had further stated that this did not mean that no further investigation would be undertaken. There are a number of RCs in relation to these incidents. IPCC will follow up these complaints in the usual manner.

The CITIC Tower Incident

8.57 The CITIC Tower Incident on 12 June has received substantial public attention. Some media criticised the Police for firing tear gas indiscriminately on innocent people taking part in the assembly outside CITIC Tower covered by LoNO and for almost causing a stampede.

12

¹² Apple Daily (2019-06-18). 【引渡惡法】中信圍困真相！警狂轟催淚彈暴力驅散數百人 空拍證險釀人踩人慘劇. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190618/59730220>
 Cable TV (2019-06-19). 新聞刺針【中信大廈外的催淚彈】. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/news.lancet/posts/1241829905990048?comment_id=1241848259321546&comment_tracking=%7B%22tn%22%3A%22R%22%7D
 CitizenNews (2019-06-21). 【612 催淚彈清場】重組圍困中信驚恐 35 分鐘 集會者：險窒息、人踩人形同「集體謀殺」。 Retrieved from <https://www.hknews.com/article/21488/612-金鐘大衝突-中信大廈-逃犯條例-21498/>
 HK01 (2019-06-14). 【逃犯條例】警簽發民陣和平大台 無衝擊無警告示威者硬食催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社區專題/340824/逃犯條例-警簽發民陣和平大台-無衝擊無警告示威者硬食催淚彈>
 HK01 (2019-06-18). 【逃犯條例】催淚煙困中信大廈 中年男憶千人「生死一刻」。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/341093/逃犯條例-催淚煙困中信大廈-中年男憶千人-生死一刻>
 HK01 (2019-06-21). 為甚麼我們需要獨立委員會徹查 612 清場行動. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/01-觀點/342764/為甚麼我們需要獨立委員會徹查-612-清場行動>

8.58 After the clash at LegCo Complex, the Police regained control of the LegCo Complex “Drum” area at 15:49. In order to prevent the violent protesters from storming the LegCo Complex again, the Police continued to use tear gas on Legislative Council Road to disperse the protesters remaining there. After the use of tear gas, most of the protesters on Legislative Council Road moved to Lung Wui Road and the rest moved to Tim Mei Avenue. At that time, the CHRF assembly with hundreds of participants was ongoing at the main entrance of CITIC Tower (see Map 8-6 above). At 16:03, the police officers moving from Lung Wo Road reached the roundabout at the junction of Legislative Council Road, Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road and fired pepper balls and tear gas on/near the western end of Lung Wui Road. At 16:09, the officers guarding the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue started to use tear gas to disperse the protesters who gathered outside CITIC Tower on Lung Wui Road. Based on the live footage from the media, tear gas was seen at different spots of Lung Wui Road, the adjacent roundabout and Tim Mei Avenue between 16:09 and 16:14. The issue is whether the firing of tear gas was necessary and proper under the circumstances.

8.59 Police guidelines on the use of tear gas stipulate that police officers must consider a number of factors before using tear gas. Among them are:

- (a) Weather conditions, e.g. wind direction will determine how the smoke will disseminate, and wind speed is important in determining how long the smoke will remain in the atmosphere over and around the target;
- (b) The risk of exposing innocent persons to heavy concentration of tear gas; and
- (c) Presence of an escape route, without which the crowd would panic.

HK01 (2019-06-25). 【逃犯條例】美法防暴專家評 6.12 中信事件 美專家：是策略性失誤。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/344307/逃犯條例-美法防暴專家評 6-12 中信事件-美專家-是策略性失誤>

Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-18). Video: Level of force used by Hong Kong police to clear protests questioned, as video clips go viral. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/18/video-level-force-used-hong-kong-police-clear-protests-questioned-video-clips-go-viral/>

New York Times (2019-06-30). Did Hong Kong Police Abuse Protesters? What Videos Show. Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/06/30/world/asia/did-hong-kong-police-abuse-protesters-what-videos-show.html>

Now TV (2019-07-01). 【經緯線】金鐘 612. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MHBXgRhXQ8M>

Stand News (2019-06-20). 【6.12 再定性·3】重組中信圍困噩夢 一群「和理非」如何被警暴所傷。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/612redefine/>

TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612之後>

8.60 According to the “United Nations Human Rights Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement”,

*“Law enforcement officials should respect and protect the right of peaceful assembly, without discrimination and in accordance with international law. The fundamental human rights of the participants shall be respected and protected, even if an assembly is considered unlawful by the authorities. Appropriate de-escalation techniques should be used to minimize the risk of violence. Law enforcement officials should recall that heavy displays of less-lethal equipment may escalate tensions during assemblies. Where force is proportionate and is necessary to achieve a legitimate law enforcement objective, all possible precautionary steps shall be taken to avoid, or at least minimize, the risk of injury or death.”*¹³

*“In an assembly in which certain individuals are behaving violently, law enforcement officials have a duty to distinguish between those individuals and the rest of the assembly participants, whose individual right to peaceful assembly should be unaffected. If it is decided that less-lethal weapons are an appropriate means of addressing individual acts of violence, due care should be given to the likely proximity of third parties and bystanders.”*¹⁴

*“The use of less-lethal weapons to disperse an assembly should be considered a measure of last resort. Before approving dispersal, law enforcement agencies should seek to identify any violent individuals and isolate them from the other participants. This may enable the main assembly to continue. If these targeted interventions are ineffective, law enforcement officials may employ weapons that target groups rather than individuals (such as water cannons or tear gas) after having issued an appropriate warning, unless giving the warning would cause a delay that would either risk causing serious injury or, in the circumstances, be futile. In addition, participants in the assembly should be given time to obey the warning and a safe space or route for them to move to shall be ensured.”*¹⁵

“The use of firearms to disperse an assembly is always unlawful. In situations where some force is necessary, only less-lethal weapons may be used. In such situations, less-lethal weapons that can be individually aimed shall target only

¹³ *United Nations Human Rights Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement* (Advance edited version, 2020), paragraph 6.3.1.

¹⁴ *Ibid*, paragraph 6.3.2.

¹⁵ *Ibid*, paragraph 6.3.3.

individuals engaged in acts of violence. Weapons such as chemical irritants dispersed at a distance (tear gas) should be targeted at groups of violent individuals unless it is lawful in the circumstances to disperse the entire assembly. Such use should accord due consideration to the impact on other, non-violent participants or bystanders. In addition, when the use of any less-lethal weapons or related equipment against assembly participants is envisaged, due attention should be paid to the potential for panic in a crowd, including the risk of a stampede ...”¹⁶

8.61 The IPCC notes the Police response set out in paragraphs 8.35-8.43 in relation to the handling of the dispersal operation near the CITIC Tower. It will be fully taken into account when the IPCC considers the related RCs now under investigation by CAPO.

8.62 Besides, a representative of CHRF and a participant of the assembly have applied for leave for a Judicial Review in relation to the CITIC Tower Incident.¹⁷ As the judicial procedures and the complaint handling procedures are ongoing, the IPCC is not in a position to make any judgement whether the action taken by the Police in the CITIC Tower Incident was proper or not. The IPCC, nonetheless, have examined the episode to identify areas for improvement and make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police under section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance (see paragraph 8.77).

Police Declaration of Riot

8.63 HQCCC declared to the frontline officers the situation as a riot at 15:30. According to the Police internal guidelines, live rounds could be used to quell a riot, provided that no lesser degree of force can achieve the purpose. HQCCC, nonetheless, was cautious about using force, in particular tear gas, to deal with the protesters although some of them had used bricks, iron rods and other hard objects for attack at 15:00 when their ultimatum expired. HQCCC, when declaring riot to the frontline officers, did not give instructions to allow the police officers to fire live rounds or tear gas or escalate the use of force. It was for the frontline officers to judge individually, according to the Police internal guidelines, which level of force should be used to counter the violence or resistance.

8.64 When HQCCC eventually allowed the firing of tear gas, it was only for the purpose of tactical retreat. At 15:50 and 16:03, HQCCC instructed to escalate the use of force and to conduct sweeping action. During the sweeping action, less-lethal weapons and tear gas were used to prevent the violent protesters from storming LegCo Complex again and to protect those

¹⁶ Ibid, paragraph 6.3.4.

¹⁷ HCAL 2670 / 2019

working inside CGC and LegCo Complex. Again, the frontline officers had to judge individually which level of force should be used during the sweeping action.

8.65 The Police internal guidelines state that (i) riots spread quickly and any success gained by rioters at the expense of authority or any apparent reluctance to quell riot immediately would embolden the forces of disorder; (ii) it is, therefore, imperative that the start of a disturbance be swiftly curbed, regardless of the merits of civil or political causes and the issue itself; and (iii) it is the field commander's responsibility to judge what action has to be taken to quell the disturbance. However, declaration of "riot" on 12 June 2019 apparently did not make much difference to the action of the frontline officers as they had to judge individually which level of force should be used in response to the violence of some protesters.

8.66 As to the declaration of riot to the public, it is noted that at 16:25 that day, the Commissioner of Police spoke to the press in Chinese, "...目前已是騷亂的情況..."(IPCC translation: "...the situation is a civil disturbance..."). At 17:42, the Police issued a press release entitled "Police take action to stop riot (警方採取行動制止暴動)", explaining the situation and the Police action in Admiralty since that morning. At 20:50, the Chief Executive condemned the protest, speaking in Chinese "...這已經不是和平集會，而是公然、有組織地發動暴動..." (official translation: "...this is no longer a peaceful assembly but a blatant, organised riot...").

8.67 Regarding the declaration of riot, the IPCC notes that the Police internal guidelines do not make any reference to sections 18 and 19 of the POO, nor do they define what circumstances would be declared a riot, what considerations are to be taken into account, what purpose such a declaration serves, who has the authority to declare and whether the declaration should be made public, when and how. This will be addressed in the Recommendations (see paragraph 8.77).

8.68 Declaring the situation on 12 June as a "riot" without specifying which part was a riot and on what grounds it was a riot aroused public concern, particularly whether those who had participated only in the peaceful protest that day without being involved in the violent acts would also be viewed as rioters. On 16 June, CHRF launched another public procession and estimated participants to be around two million. The Police estimated that 338 000 participated in the procession on its designated route at the peak period of the procession. The first version of the "Five Demands" was chanted by some protesters in that procession. One of the demands was to remove the characterisation of "riot" for the events on 12 June.

8.69 On 17 June, the Commissioner clarified that his comments on 12 June referred only to those whose behaviour amounted to riotous acts. He assured the public that those who took part only in the POEs that day but not in the violent acts need not worry that they had committed

riot offences (“我當日所說，其實是指某些人的行為已經涉嫌干犯暴動罪，所以當日參與公眾活動的其他示威人士，如沒參加過任何暴力行為，他們不用擔心會觸犯暴動罪。”).¹⁸

8.70 The offence of “riot” is defined under sections 18 and 19 of the POO. According to section 19, “*When any person taking part in an assembly which is an unlawful assembly by virtue of section 18(1) commits a breach of the peace, the assembly is a riot and the persons assembled are riotously assembled.*” Section 18(1) states that “*When 3 or more persons, assembled together, conduct themselves in a disorderly, intimidating, insulting or provocative manner intended or likely to cause any person reasonably to fear that the persons so assembled will commit a breach of the peace, or will by such conduct provoke other persons to commit a breach of the peace, they are an unlawful assembly.*” A “riot” exists when someone commits a “breach of the peace” during an “unlawful assembly”. Which part of an unlawful assembly is a riot, however, is not a simple question of geography and must be determined by evidence in accordance with the law. The same applies in determining who is a rioter. In November 2018, the Court of First Instance had clarified the elements of the offences of “unlawful assembly” and “riot” (*HKSAR v Leung Tin Kei and Others* [2018] HKCFI 2715). In particular, the Court took the view that in proving the offences of unlawful assembly and riot, the prosecution needs to prove that the participants shared a “common purpose”.¹⁹ A person’s mere presence in the vicinity of a riot scene does not make that person a rioter. Only those who had committed a breach of the peace that day and those who had assembled in the riot would be rioters.

8.71 Handing down judgment on 29 April 2020, the Court of Appeal having heard the appeal of *Leung Tin Kei and others*, further explained what “common purpose” meant.²⁰ The Court of Appeal held that “common purpose” meant no more than the getting together of the accused persons to commit the acts prescribed in section 18(1) of the POO. This explanation of “common purpose”, the Court of Appeal explained, is derived from the Common Law, the principles of which were incorporated into section 18(1) of the POO.²¹ In dealing with the appeal against sentence in the same judgment, the Court of Appeal reiterated the following dictum of Macrae VP in *HKSAR v. Tang Ho-yin* [2019] 3 HKLRD 502²²:

¹⁸ Information Services Department (2019-06-17). Police chief clarifies “riot” term. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/06/20190617/20190617_224726_031.html

¹⁹ *HKSAR v. Leung Tin Kei and Others* (21/12/2018, HCCC408/2016) [2018] HKCFI 2715, paragraphs 44-45 (https://legalref.judiciary.hk/lrs/common/ju/ju_frame.jsp?DIS=125716)

²⁰ CACC 164/2018

²¹ *Ibid*, Para. 61

²² *Ibid*, Para. 68

“22. *For any society that has as its cornerstone the rule of law, public order is an essential constituent element which serves to promote the safe, equitable and lawful functioning of that society. That is not to say that its citizens cannot articulate their views, ventilate their grievances and demonstrate their objections emphatically and openly within the law. However, if they transgress the law in so doing and imperil that essential constituent element, then the rule of law will inevitably suffer. As the English Court of Appeal in Caird declared, in the context of a case of a riot in Cambridge in 1970:*

‘... this Court feels it necessary to advert to the clear line that exists between the freedom of citizens to assemble peaceably in a permissible place to express their views in a lawful manner, a right which the courts always safeguard, and the unlawful act of doing something which threatens a breach of the peace.’

The Court continued:

‘... it cannot be too plainly stated or too widely known that the moment when men join in an attempt to overpower the police who are performing their protective duties, that line has been considerably overstepped, and every person joining in the mob effort for that purpose is committing a grave crime even if he is not identified as having committed some specific assault or some specific piece of malicious damage.’

Police Handling of Reporters

8.72 After the operation on 12 June, 15 RCs were lodged by reporters. These RCs were mainly about police officers assaulting reporters with batons, using weapons (e.g. tear gas, OC Foam / OC Gel / PAVA solution and less-lethal projectiles) on reporters unnecessarily, and being impolite to or using offensive language at reporters. The IPCC will follow up these complaints in the usual manner. The IPCC’s observations on the Police handling of reporters on 12 June are given in Chapter 7 on 9 June Incident.

Police Plan for the Operation on 12 June

8.73 The Police management has stated that they were somewhat caught off-guard by the early and large turnout of protesters and the shift-changing in the morning was thus affected. Apparently, they did not fully anticipate the scale of the mass mobilisation and the timing of the protesters’ acts that morning.

8.74 In addition, the physical environment of the CGC area and the presence of construction sites at the area made the Police operational plan that day even more challenging.

To protect the integrity of CGC and LegCo Complex, the Police erected many mills barriers (about 1 meter high) to strengthen the cordon lines. Notwithstanding, there were clashes when the violent protesters hurled numerous objects and pushed mills barriers towards the frontline officers at the cordon lines. In the end, the frontline officers had to use higher level of force including tear gas and less-lethal projectiles for dispersal.

8.75 In some previous operations, such as those in 2011 to protect the then Vice-Premier Mr LI Keqiang during his visit to Hong Kong, the Police had set up water-filled barriers (about 2 meters high) which effectively separated protesters from the venue to be protected. The IPCC notes that the Police adjusted strategies and tactics as the protests against the Fugitive Offenders Bill continued and later erected water-filled barriers to protect CGC, LegCo Complex, PHQ and various police stations (see Images 8-30 and 8-31).



Image 8-30: Water-filled barriers erected outside CGC since late July 2019
(Image source: RTHK)



Image 8-31: Water-filled barriers erected outside PHQ since late July 2019
(Image source: RTHK)

Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance

8.76 Based on the facts so far collected, the IPCC considers the Police action on and before the afternoon clashes was reactive to the attacks from violent protesters. In the clashes at the CGC area, the Police escalated their use of force in response to the violence of some protesters and the need to protect CGC and LegCo Complex and the people working inside. The escalation of use of force has, however, given rise to allegations of excessive use of force by individual officers on non-violent protesters and reporters. It has also raised questions about the justification for use of police weapons in the operation, especially in the CITIC Tower Incident.

8.77 The IPCC is of the view that lessons should be learnt from the events on 12 June and recommends that the Police management review those events to develop less confrontational strategy and tactics, taking reference from applicable international practices, so that future operations of similar magnitude would be better conducted and managed. IPCC recommends that:

The CITIC Tower Incident

- (a) The Police should review their use of tear gas during the CITIC Tower Incident, including assessment before and during its continuing use, the coordination among HQCCC and with frontline officers, the communication between the Police and the assembly organiser and participants, the accessibility of an escape route and the possibility of alternative tactics for future deployment.
- (b) When there is an ongoing assembly with LoNO, the Police should liaise with the assembly organiser to curtail the assembly when necessary. The Police should give sufficient time and instructions to the assembly organiser and participants to curtail the assembly and leave the assembly location via a viable escape route.
- (c) Communication with the assembly organiser is particularly important so that messages from the Police could be effectively relayed to assembly participants when necessary. The Police should deploy liaison officer(s) close to the assembly site to facilitate instant communication with the assembly organiser.
- (d) Effective coordination among different teams of frontline officers and between frontline officers and HQCCC is crucial. To minimise the possible risk during dispersal action, the Police should review how to enhance coordination among different teams if they consider it necessary to use irritant agent devices and less-lethal weapons when and where an assembly is ongoing with a large number of participants.

Police Declaration of Riot

- (e) The Police should include in the internal guidelines what action frontline officers can take when a situation is declared as a “riot”, how to differentiate rioters from non-rioters and what level of force and weapons to be used in a riot situation.
- (f) The Police should devise clear guidelines on riots and consider informing the public of the purpose, criteria and procedure of declaring a situation as a riot. When making a public announcement about a situation being a riot, the Police should clearly explain the purpose and reason for the declaration to minimise misunderstanding or speculation. This enhances transparency and prevents members of the public from participating in a riot unknowingly.

Police Plan for the Operation on 12 June

- (g) The Police should review their ability to collect, assess and apply the intelligence received since 9 June on the early and large turnout of protesters as well as their violent approach, and draw reference to enhance their ability to collect, assess and apply intelligence in the future.
- (h) The Police should review the events of 12 June and consider whether the preparation and subsequent action for defending CGC and LegCo Complex could have been adjusted to minimise confrontation with protesters and should review whether less confrontational strategies such as prior containment could be adopted in future operations for protecting public property such as LegCo Complex.
- (i) The Police should review their ability to mobilise and allocate manpower to deal with multiple clashes at different spots in a large-scale POE.
- (j) The Police should better utilise water-filled barriers (about 2 meters high) which are higher and stronger than mills barriers to reinforce police cordon lines and minimise clashes between frontline officers and violent protesters.

8.78 The above recommendations should be read in conjunction with the IPCC’s recommendations in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing and in Chapter 7 concerning Police handling of reporters.

ANNEX

CHRONOLOGY – WEDNESDAY 12 JUNE 2019**Key Incidents**

A.	11 June	15:00 – 23:59	Events before 12 June
B.	12 June	00:00 – 14:59	Events before the clashes at the CGC area
C.	12 June	15:00 – 15:49	Clashes at the CGC area
D.	12 June	15:50 – 23:59	Events after the clashes at the CGC area
E.	13 June	00:00 – 02:00	Events after 12 June

Detailed Chronology of Events**A. 11 June: 15:00 – 23:59 – Events before 12 June**

Time (Approx.)	Incident
15:00	LegCo Complex “Drum” area was temporarily closed from 15:00 on 11 Jun until further notice. LegCo requested the Police to stand by and patrol in the LegCo Complex “Drum” area to deal with unexpected incidents (source: LegCo website ¹).
18:00	The East Wing Forecourt of the CGO was temporarily closed from 18:00 on 11 Jun until further notice (source: Government website ²).
20:00	Police officers started to conduct stop-and-search at Admiralty area (source: media reports ³).

(Image source: HK01)

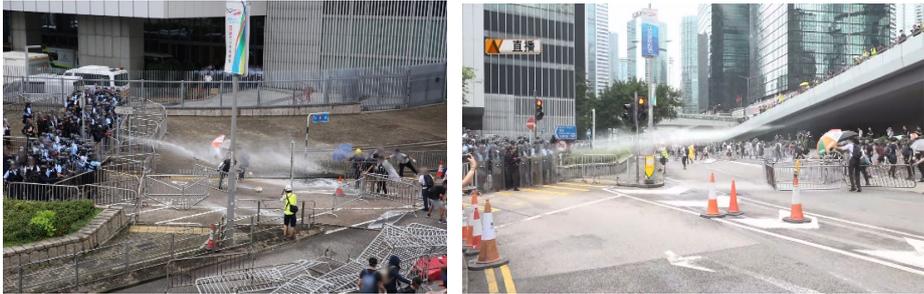
Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:00	<p>Upon the call online, thousands of protesters gathered in the vicinity of the LegCo Complex. Police officers erected mills barriers and patrolled at the perimeter of the LegCo Complex (source: media reports and LIHKG⁴).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>

B. 12 June: 00:00 – 14:59 – Events before the clashes at the CGC area

Time (Approx.)	Incident
00:00	LegCo issued an amber alert under which all persons entering the LegCo Complex were required to go through the security screening procedures (source: LegCo website ⁵). Police officers carrying weapons and equipment entered the LegCo Complex to strengthen its security (source: media reports ⁶).
00:00-07:00	More protesters streamed into and gathered at the CGC area including Tim Mei Avenue, Legislative Council Road and Tamar Park (source: media reports ⁷).
06:10	Vehicle Snap Check was conducted at Lung Wo Road (source: HKPF).
07:10	Police officers set up two cordon lines at Tim Wa Avenue, one at the junction with Harcourt Road and another one at the junction with Lung Wo Road (source: HKPF).
07:15	Around 1 600 and 900 persons gathered outside CGC and at Tamar Park respectively (source: HKPF).
07:25	The vehicular access to Tim Wa Avenue was blocked by some protesters (source: HKPF).
07:40	HQCCC requested field commanders to instruct police drivers who parked their police vehicles at Tim Wa Avenue to be ready for departure (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
07:45	<p>Hundreds of protesters dashed to Lung Wo Road and trapped a number of vehicles, including three police vehicles with only drivers on board, and a Government car with a Principal Official on board, at Lung Wo Road underpass with mills barriers (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage⁸).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>[Image source: TVB (left), Cable TV (right)]</i></p>
07:46	<p>HQCCC instructed the field commanders to maintain contact with the two organisers who were going to hold a public meeting at the CGC area (source: HKPF).</p>
08:10	<p>One person was arrested at the junction between Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road (source: HKPF).</p>
08:10	<p>HQCCC informed all duties on the ground to put shift-change on hold (source: HKPF).</p>
08:25	<p>Hundreds of protesters originally gathered on Tim Mei Avenue and Rodney Street dashed to Harcourt Road and blocked the road with mills barriers, traffic cones and other objects. At Harcourt Road, some police officers attempted to stop the protesters by using PAVA solution but were unsuccessful. Harcourt Road was eventually occupied by thousands of protesters (source: live video footage and media reports⁹).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
08:30-15:00	<p>Some protesters collected and prepared various materials at the CGC area, such as prying up bricks from pavements, taking away iron bars from construction sites, dismantling iron railings and using plastic strings to tie mills barriers together. They also distributed these materials at the area (source: live video footage and media reports¹⁰).</p>  <p><i>[Image source: HK01 (left), Cable TV (right)]</i></p>
08:30	LegCo Public Works Subcommittee meeting scheduled for 08:30 was cancelled (source: LegCo website ¹¹).
08:45	HQCCC instructed that police officers could maintain a safe distance from protesters at Harcourt Road as the crowd size was expanding rapidly and some protesters were becoming increasingly emotional and violent (source: HKPF).
08:46	The Police urged the protesters via social media to leave Lung Wo Road; otherwise, the Police would have to use force to save the vehicles and the people trapped there. The Police stressed that it would not be a clearing action. The Police eventually did not conduct sweeping on Lung Wo Road (source: HKPF ¹²).
09:00	The roads at the CGC area, namely Legislative Council Road, Tim Mei Avenue, Lung Wui Road, Lung Wo Road and Harcourt Road were flooded with protesters. Access to the LegCo Complex was obstructed (source: live video footage and media reports ¹³).
09:00	One person was arrested at the footbridge at Tim Mei Avenue (source: HKPF).
09:15	The Police deployed members of the Police Negotiation Cadre to negotiate with the protesters at Lung Wo Road for the release of the people and vehicles trapped there. The negotiation was unsuccessful. The vehicles and the people on board remained there until the Police conducted rescue operation at 15:50 (source: HKPF).
09:18	HQCCC gave instruction that officers should take their personal safety as the top priority and avoid triggering off confrontation on any action by the Police (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
09:30	<p>At the junction of Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road, police officers used PAVA solution to disperse protesters who attempted to sit on the ground near the cordon line or push mills barriers towards the cordon line (source: live video footage and media reports¹⁴).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">  </div> <p><i>[Image source: HK01 (left), Now TV (right)]</i></p>
09:35-12:30	<p>Some vehicles moved slowly or stopped on the roads of Admiralty, Wan Chai and Central, causing traffic obstruction (source: HKPF and media reports¹⁵).</p>
10:00	<p>There were around 46 000 protesters in the CGC area:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> - Harcourt Road 22 000 - Tim Mei Avenue 11 000 - Lung Wo Road 10 000 - Tamar Park 2 000 - Lung Wui Road 1 000 <p>(source: HKPF).</p> <div style="text-align: center;">  </div> <p><i>(Image source: HK01¹⁶)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
10:00	CHRF was allowed to hold an assembly with a LoNO issued by the Police at the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road to protest against the Fugitive Offenders Bill between 10:00 and 23:59 for three consecutive days until 14 Jun. ¹⁷ As stated in the LoNO, CHRF estimated that the attendance would be around 500 (source: HKPF). A stage for the assembly was set up outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower at the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road. The width of the stage was about half of the width of the southern pavement of Lung Wui Road. Hundreds of protesters were seen on Lung Wui Road (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, live video footage and media reports ¹⁸).
10:05	HQCCC instructed traffic officers to handle the vehicle obstruction at Harcourt Road and Cotton Tree Drive (source: HKPF).
10:10	As the access roads leading to CGO had been blocked and the Police had implemented traffic arrangements, all entrances of CGO were closed. Civil servants were advised to stay at their workplace or not to go to CGO until further notice (source: Government website ¹⁹).
10:15	HQCCC instructed frontline officers to prepare for possible attack from protesters and to equip themselves with full gear (source: HKPF).
10:40	The Police, through social media, stated that there were vehicles deliberately blocking Queensway and Cotton Tree Drive and requested other drivers to avoid driving to the affected areas (source: HKPF and media reports ²⁰).
10:50	LegCo President announced that the LegCo meeting for the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill, originally scheduled for 11:00, would be postponed to a time to be decided by him (source: LegCo website ²¹). The protesters did not leave the Admiralty area and maintained their demand that the Government withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill (source: live video footage and media reports ²²).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
10:56-11:06	<p>Hundreds of protesters gathered at the junction of Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road. Some of them charged on the police cordon line, pushed barricades against the police cordon line and hurled objects at police officers. Police officers used PAVA solution, OC Foam / OC Gel, batons and shields to defend the cordon line (source: live video footage and media reports²³).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
10:57	<p>HQCCC gave instructions that the officers at Tim Wa Avenue should defend CGC as far as possible; if the situation deteriorated and became out of control, officers should retreat to indoor areas to ensure their personal safety (source: HKPF).</p>
11:17	<p>In view that some protesters had charged on police cordon lines and collected construction materials at the CGC area and the situation was deteriorating, HQCCC instructed the field commanders that they should consider the use of force level in life-saving situations if sweeping had to be conducted (source: HKPF).</p>
11:28	<p>Some traffic officers requested reinforcement at Queensway and Cotton Tree Drive as some protesters were throwing objects onto the roads, but no spare manpower could be deployed (source: HKPF).</p>
12:00	<p>Some protesters blocked Queensway with mills barriers and other barricades. Traffic in the Admiralty area came to a standstill (source: live video footage and media reports²⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image Source: HK01)</i></p>
12:00	<p>Hundreds of protesters were seen on Lung Wui Road and multiple layers of mills barriers were placed by protesters at the eastern end of Lung Wui Road, near the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue (source: live video footage and media report²⁵).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
12:30	The Police warned protesters via social media not to hurl bricks which could cause serious injury to others (source: HKPF ²⁶).
12:34	Some protesters burnt objects emitting smoke at the junction of Harcourt Road and Tim Wa Avenue (source: HKPF).
12:40	The Chief Secretary for Administration asked protesters who occupied the roads to leave and stay calm. He reiterated that the Fugitive Offenders Bill was meant to target only offenders of serious crimes (source: Government website ²⁷ and media reports ²⁸).
14:00	Some political figures spoke on the stage of the assembly and hundreds of protesters gathered outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower on Lung Wui Road (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, live video footage and media reports ²⁹).
	 <p>(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)</p>
14:00	HQCCC instructed that frontline officers should retreat if they could not hold their cordon lines at the CGC area. Tear gas should not be used (source: HKPF).
14:49	Tens of thousands of people gathered on Harcourt Road, Lung Wo Road, Legislative Council Road, Tim Mei Road and Lung Wui Road (source: live video footage ³⁰).

C. 12 June: 15:00 – 15:49 – Clashes at the CGC area

Time (Approx.)	Incident
15:00	This was the deadline of the ultimatum set by protesters to the Government to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill (source: media reports and LIHKG ³¹).
15:00	HQCCC instructed all frontline officers to prepare for possible attack from protesters and to equip themselves with full gear (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.).	Incident
15:03-15:36	<p>At the junction of Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road (the western side of CGC), hundreds of violent protesters wearing facemasks, helmets and other protective gear started to push mills barriers towards the police cordon line and hurl umbrellas, traffic cones and other objects at police officers (source: live video footage and media reports³²). At the beginning, police officers defended with PAVA solution, OC Foam / OC Gel, batons and shields behind the mills barriers.</p>
	<p>A group of police officers later moved past the mills barriers and used batons to disperse the protesters in the front. After the protesters had retreated, the police officers returned to the police cordon line behind the mills barriers (source: live video footage and media reports³³).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">  </div> <p><i>[Image source: Cable TV (left), TVB (right)]</i></p>
15:16	<p>HQCCC informed field commanders that some protesters charged on the police cordon lines at CGC with open umbrellas (source: HKPF).</p>
15:25	<p>While the clash at Tim Wa Avenue (the western side of CGC) was ongoing, many protesters wearing facemasks, helmets and other protective gear also prepared to charge on the police cordon line at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex on Legislative Council Road (the eastern side of CGC). They used plastic strings to tie mills barriers together and pushed them towards the cordon line (source: live video footage and media reports³⁴).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">  </div> <p><i>[Image source: HK01 (left), Now TV (right)]</i></p>
15:30	<p>HQCCC declared to all frontline officers the situation as a “riot” (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
15:32	<p>Violent protesters charged on the cordon line at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex. They protected themselves with umbrellas and other protective gear and hurled various hard objects at the police officers. Those in the front used iron bars and umbrellas to attack the police officers. The police officers defended with PAVA solution, OC Foam / OC Gel, batons and shields. About a minute later, the protesters briefly moved back but kept hurling objects at the police officers (source: live video footage and media reports³⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
15:34 & 15:37	<p>HQCCC instructed that officers at Tim Wa Avenue and Tim Mei Avenue could retreat if they could not resist the protesters' attack (source: HKPF).</p>
15:37	<p>Police officers at Tim Wa Avenue started to retreat from the cordon lines to the entrance of CGO (source: live video footage and media reports³⁶).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
15:39	<p>The violent protesters at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex charged on the cordon line again, hurled bricks and other objects at the police officers and pushed away the mills barriers (source: live video footage and media reports³⁷).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
15:41	<p>The police officers at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex, after firing less-lethal projectiles, started to retreat into the LegCo Complex “Drum” area. Meanwhile, the police officers guarding the cordon lines at Tim Wa Avenue were also retreating to CGO. The violent protesters at both Tim Wa Avenue and Legislative Council Road continued to hurl various objects including bricks at the retreating officers and pushed away the mills barriers erected on the police cordon lines. The protesters then entered Tim Wa Avenue and the LegCo Complex “Drum” area respectively (source: live video footage and media reports³⁸).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
15:42	<p>HQCCC instructed that tear gas could be used for tactical retreat (source: HKPF).</p>
15:42-15:45	<p>The violent protesters, after entering the LegCo Complex “Drum” area, kept moving forward, hurling various objects and pushing mills barriers towards the retreating officers. The officers then fired less-lethal projectiles and used PAVA solution in response (source: live video footage and media reports³⁹).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
15:45	<p>Protesters on Lung Wo Road pushed away the metal barriers, passed the police cordon line and entered Tim Wa Avenue (source: live video footage and media reports⁴⁰).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>[Image source: HK01 (left), Now TV (right)]</i></p>
15:46-15:48	<p>Police officers who had retreated to the Public Entrance 1 of LegCo Complex (at the “Drum” area) fired tear gas at the “Drum” area (source: live video footage and media reports⁴¹).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>[Image source: Now TV (left), Cable TV (right)]</i></p>
15:47-15:49	<p>Tear gas was fired on Tim Wa Avenue near the junction with Harcourt Road while police officers on Tim Wa Avenue were retreating to CGO entrance (source: live video footage and media reports⁴²).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>[Image source: Cable TV (left), TVB (right)]</i></p>
15:49	<p>Having fired tear gas and less-lethal projectiles at LegCo Complex “Drum” area, police officers successfully dispersed the protesters from the LegCo Complex “Drum” area and re-established a cordon line at the vehicular entrance of the LegCo Complex (source: live video footage and media reports⁴³).</p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

D. 12 June: 15:50 – 23:59 – Events after the clashes at the CGC area

Time (Approx.).	Incident
15:50	HQCCC instructed that all police officers on the ground could escalate the use of force if their lives were threatened (source: HKPF).
15:50	On Tim Wa Avenue, police officers retreated into CGO and closed the gates at CGO (source: HKPF).
15:50	A group of police officers at the junction of Lung Wo Road and Lung Hop Street was instructed to conduct an operation to rescue the vehicles and persons trapped at Lung Wo Road underpass (source: HKPF). These officers moved westward along Lung Wo Road and fired tear gas at Lung Wo Road to disperse the protesters westwards (source: live video footage and media reports ⁴⁴).
15:51	<p>Hundreds of protesters remained on Legislative Council Road and some of them hurled objects at the cordon line (source: live video footage⁴⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
15:53-15:55	<p>Police officers guarding LegCo Complex fired tear gas on Legislative Council Road. The protesters were dispersed to the adjacent Lung Wo Road, Lung Wui Road and Tim Mei Avenue (source: live video footage and media reports⁴⁶). Those on Tim Mei Avenue either moved to the direction of Harcourt Road or entered CITIC Tower via its car park entrance (source: CITIC Tower CCTV). At the same time, CHRF was holding an assembly covered by LoNO outside CITIC Tower main entrance on Lung Wui Road (source: live video footage⁴⁷).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>(Image source: Now TV (left), CITIC Tower CCTV (right))</i></p>
15:56	<p>Tear gas was seen at Tamar Park and Lung Wo Road (near Lung Hop Street) (source: live video footage and media report⁴⁸).</p>
15:57-15:58	<p>Police officers, who were conducting sweeping action westward along Lung Wo Road, fired tear gas at the junction of Lung Wo Road and Legislative Council Road. Most of the protesters there moved to Lung Wui Road while the rest left to Tim Mei Avenue (source: live video footage⁴⁹).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
16:00	<p>Hundreds of protesters moved to Tim Wa Avenue from Harcourt Road and Lung Wo Road and occupied Tim Wa Avenue completely (source: live video footage and media reports⁵⁰).</p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:00-16:20	<p>Police officers used tear gas on Tim Wa Avenue. Some police officers came to reinforce from Lung Wo Road and used force to disperse the crowd. After tear gas had gradually dissipated, some protesters attempted to enter Tim Wa Avenue again. Tear gas was fired again. All protesters on Tim Wa Avenue were eventually dispersed to Harcourt Road and the cordon lines at Tim Wa Avenue were re-established around 16:20 (source: live video footage and media reports⁵¹).</p> <div style="display: flex; flex-wrap: wrap;">     </div> <p><i>[Image source: Now TV (top left and right), Cable TV (bottom left and right)]</i></p>
16:01	<p>Some police officers marching from Lung Wo Road reached Legislative Council Road and fired tear gas on Legislative Council Road and at the adjacent roundabout. The protesters dispersed to either Lung Wui Road or Tim Mei Avenue (source: live video footage⁵²).</p> <div style="display: flex;">   </div> <p><i>(Image Source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:03	<p>HQCCC gave strategic direction to all field commanders to disperse the protesters the crowd from east to west and then from north to south, to sweep them out to Harcourt Road via Tim Mei Avenue as an escape route (source: HKPF). At that time, police officers formed two cordon lines in the vicinity of Lung Wui Road, one with about 90 officers near the roundabout of Legislative Council Road and the other with about 170 officers at the junction of Lung Hop Street and Performing Arts Avenue which was behind the multiple layers of mills barriers placed by protesters (source: live video footage⁵³).</p>
16:03-16:04	<p>Police officers near the roundabout shot pepper balls and threw tear gas grenades on/near the western end of Lung Wui Road. Tear gas was seen on the pavement at the corner of Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road near the pavement. At that time, there were hundreds of people outside CITIC Tower main entrance. People right outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower moved into the building through an open glass door entrance, the only one open at that time (source: CITIC Tower CCTV). At 16:04, a female voice could be clearly heard on video footage from a loud amplified source, “慢慢嚟，上返行人路...請大家向演藝方向” (IPCC translation: “slow down, return to pavement, everyone to move to the direction of (the Academy for) Performing Arts”) (source: live video footage and media reports⁵⁴). (Remarks: the Hong Kong Academy for Performing Arts is situated on the east of Lung Wui Road. There was no tear gas fired from the police officers guarding the east of Lung Wui Road at that moment.)</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around; margin-top: 10px;">  </div> <p><i>[Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV (top left), Now TV (top right and bottom)]</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:05	A female voice and a male voice could be heard on video footage from a loud amplified source, “大家向添美道方向”, “大家 hold 住, hold 住” (IPCC translation: “everyone to move to the direction of Tim Mei Avenue”, “everyone holds on, holds on”) (source: live video footage and media report ⁵⁵).
16:06-16:07	A female voice and a male voice spoke from a loud amplified source, “頭盔傳去後面”, “反惡法 反送中”, “需要生理鹽水可以嚟到台邊, 台前亦都有口罩” and “大家過嚟呢度擺水” (IPCC translation: “pass helmets to the back”, “no draconian law, no Fugitive Offenders Bill”, “come to the stage if (you) need masks and saline” and “come here to get water”). At that time, the main entrance of CITIC Tower was congested with hundreds of people (source: CITIC Tower CCTV and live video footage ⁵⁶).
16:09	<p>While people at Lung Wui Road were moving into CITIC Tower and tear gas was being fired at the eastern end of Lung Wui Road, a male voice and a female voice heard on video footage said from a loud amplified source, “香港人不打香港人 ... 警察克制”, “各位市民慢慢入中信 ... 淋熄催淚彈 ... 大家入中信” (IPCC translation: “Hong Kong people don’t hit Hong Kong people ... Police be restrained”, “everyone to enter CITIC (Tower) slowly ... put out tear gas with water ... everyone to enter CITIC (Tower)”) (source: live video footage and media report⁵⁷).</p>  <p>(Image source: CitizenNews)</p>
16:09	<p>Some people on Tim Mei Avenue were moving to the direction of the roundabout at the junction with Legislative Council Road (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).</p>  <p>(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)</p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:09-16:14	<p>Tear gas was seen at different spots on Lung Wui Road, the adjacent roundabout and Tim Mei Avenue. A large crowd was seen in the middle of Lung Wui Road, attempting to enter CITIC Tower via its main entrance (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, live video footage and media reports⁵⁸).</p>  <p>[Image source: Now TV (top left and 2nd row right), TMHK (top right, 2nd row left, 3rd row left and right, and bottom)]</p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:10-16:13	<p>Tear gas was seen amid the crowd outside the main entrance of CITIC Tower on Lung Wui Road for the periods between 16:10:33 and 16:11:14 and between 16:12:55 and 16:13:25. Some people could move to Tim Mei Avenue but most of the people attempted to enter CITIC Tower via the open glass door. Those on Tim Mei Avenue either moved to the direction of Harcourt Road or entered CITIC Tower via its car park entrance on Tim Mei Avenue (source: CITIC Tower CCTV and media reports⁵⁹).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)</i></p>
16:10-16:13	<p>Several people inside the CITIC Tower attempted to use mills barriers and other hard objects to break the glass doors of the main entrance that were locked but did not succeed. Some tear gas got inside the CITIC Tower and some people appeared to be unwell (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, live video footage and media reports⁶⁰).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>[Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV (left), Now TV (right)]</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:14	<p>Some originally locked glass doors at the main entrance of CITIC Tower were opened by a property management staff of CITIC Tower. With more open doors, people entered CITIC Tower more quickly. At the same time, some people continued to leave via Tim Mei Avenue (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)</i></p>
16:17	<p>Only about one hundred people remained outside CITIC Tower main entrance (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:19-16:22	<p>A group of police officers reached the main entrance of CITIC Tower at Lung Wui Road and handled ten-odd persons remaining there. Meanwhile, some people left CITIC Tower via its car park entrance to enter Tim Mei Avenue (source: CITIC Tower CCTV, live video footage and media reports⁶¹). Police officers approached CHRF’s representatives and requested them to stop using the public announcement system or surrender it as it was hindering the police dispersal operation due to its high volume drowning out police announcements. Subsequently, a police officer seized the microphone (source: HKPF).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>[Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV (top left and right), Cable TV (bottom)]</i></p>
16:20	<p>Police officers dispersed all protesters on Tim Wa Avenue to Harcourt Road and formed a cordon line at the junction between Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road. Meanwhile, the police officers on or near Lung Wui Road dispersed the persons outside CITIC Tower to Tim Mei Avenue and continued to conduct sweeping along Tim Mei Avenue, dispersing the crowd to Harcourt Road (source: live video footage and media reports⁶²).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>[Image source: Cable TV(left), HK01 (right)]</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:25	<p>The Commissioner spoke to the press in Chinese, “...目前已是騷亂的情況...” (IPCC translation: “...the situation is a civil disturbance...”) (source: Government website⁶³, HKPF⁶⁴ and media reports⁶⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Cable TV)</i></p>
16:38-17:13	<p>About six ambulancemen entered CITIC Tower via its main entrance and conveyed four persons out from the building on stretchers (source: CITIC Tower CCTV).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: CITIC Tower CCTV)</i></p>
16:45	<p>Police officers used tear gas and less-lethal projectiles to disperse protesters from Tim Mei Avenue to Harcourt Road (source: live video footage and media reports⁶⁶).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
16:58	<p>Some protesters confronted with police officers outside City Hall at Central (source: media reports⁶⁷).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
17:00-18:00	<p>Police officers used tear gas and less-lethal projectiles to disperse the crowd on Harcourt Road. The protesters eventually dispersed westwards and southwards (source: live video footage and media reports⁶⁸).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
17:42	<p>The Police issued a press release entitled “Police take action to stop riot”, explaining the situation and the police action in Admiralty since that morning (source: HKPF⁶⁹ and Government website⁷⁰).</p>
18:00	<p>LegCo announced that no meeting would be convened that day (source: LegCo website⁷¹).</p>
18:15-22:30	<p>Police officers conducted sweeping on Queensway with the use of tear gas (source: live video footage and media reports⁷²). The last tear gas was used at the junction of Queensway and Justice Drive between 21:00 and 22:00 (source: HKPF).</p>  <p><i>[Image source: Now TV (left), RTHK (right)]</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
18:56	HQCCC instructed that sweeping action along Queensway should stop outside Pacific Place to avoid being attacked by some protesters at United Centre and Rodney Street (source: HKPF).
19:00	An interview with the Chief Executive recorded on the morning of 12 Jun was broadcast on television. In the interview, the Chief Executive stated that the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill would proceed (source: media reports ⁷³).
19:00	Some protesters dispersed from Admiralty to Central (source: media reports ⁷⁴).
19:10	Around 300 protesters with weapons were approaching the PHQ (source: HKPF).
19:13	<p>Some protesters took away materials from a construction site near the junction of Harcourt Road and Connaught Road Central and erected barricades on the road (source: media reports⁷⁵).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>[Image source: HK01 (left), Now TV (right)]</i></p>
19:30	Around 100 protesters gathered at the junction of Arsenal Street and Hennessy Road. Around 2 000 – 3 000 protesters gathered in Pacific Place (source: HKPF).
20:00-22:00	<p>Thousands of protesters obstructed roads in Central. Buses and private cars were trapped (source: media reports⁷⁶).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>

Time (Approx.).	Incident
20:00-23:00	<p>Hundreds of protesters erected barricades and gathered at the junction of Harcourt Road and Connaught Road Central (source: media reports⁷⁷). At 22:13, a burning object (suspected petrol bomb) was thrown on the ground of Harcourt Road near Hutchison House. No one was hit or injured (source: media reports⁷⁸).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>[Image source: RTHK (left), Now TV (right)]</i></p>
20:30	Admiralty MTR Station was closed upon the Police's request (source: media reports ⁷⁹).
20:50	The Chief Executive condemned the protest, speaking in Chinese "...這已經不是和平集會，而是公然、有組織地發動暴動..." (official translation: "...this is no longer a peaceful assembly but a blatant, organised riot...") (source: Government website ⁸⁰).
22:00	<p>Police officers conducted sweeping from Arsenal Street to Harcourt Road and dismantled the road blocks (source: live video footage and media reports⁸¹).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
22:00	CHRF told the press that the Police had objected to the holding of assembly on the following day (source: media reports ⁸²).
23:00-23:59	Some protesters started to leave Admiralty, Central and Wan Chai (source: live video footage and media reports ⁸³).
23:30	<p>The Police set up cordon lines at the junctions of</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> (i) Tim Wa Avenue and Harcourt Road; (ii) Tim Wa Avenue and Lung Wo Road; (iii) Tim Mei Avenue and Harcourt Road; (iv) Tim Mei Avenue and Lung Wui Road; and (v) Lung Wui Road and Lung Hop Street (source: HKPF).

E. 13 June: 00:00 – 02:00 – Events after 12 June

Time (Approx.).	Incident
00:00	<p>Protesters left Admiralty, Wan Chai and Central gradually (source: media reports⁸⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
00:51	<p>Traffic resumed in the Central area (source: media reports⁸⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
01:00	<p>A large amount of debris scattered on the roads. Some people cleared some debris on the roads. Traffic gradually resumed normal (source: media reports⁸⁶).</p>  <p><i>[Image source: Now TV (top left and right), HK01 (bottom)]</i></p>

- ¹ LegCo Secretariat (2019-06-11). 立法會主席就《2019年逃犯及刑事事宜相互法律協助法例(修訂)條例草案》的辯論安排及相關的保安事宜發言(只備中文). (Chinese only) Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/chinese/press/pr20190611-2.html>
LegCo Secretariat (2019-06-11). “Special arrangements for the Legislative Council Complex”. Retrieved from https://www.legco.gov.hk/general/english/sec/corg_ser/as47-e.pdf
- ² Information Services Department (2019-06-11). East Wing Forecourt temporarily closed. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/11/P2019061100774.htm?fontSize=1>
- ³ AM730 (2019-06-14). 立法會昨今續不開會 警方截查惹不滿. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/立法會昨今續不開會-警方截查惹不滿-176384>
Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 【引渡惡法】金鐘站過百警員截查市民 目擊者：一字排開話搜就搜. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190611/59704377>
Apple Daily (2019-06-12). 反惡法背水一戰. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190612/20701819>
Cable TV (2019-06-11). 【港鐵金鐘站有警員檢查途人身份證及搜身】. Retrieved from <https://zh-hk.facebook.com/icablenews/videos/港鐵金鐘站有警員檢查途人身份證及搜身/442399589651498/>
HK01 (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例】冒雨準備集會 金鐘站氣氛緊張 多名青年被警搜身. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/339530/逃犯條例-冒雨準備集會-金鐘站氣氛緊張-多名青年被警搜身>
Headline Daily (2019-06-12). 梁君彥限 66 小時辯論 隨時「剪布」千人夜圍立會 警嚴防衝擊. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771049/日報-港聞-梁君彥限 66 小時辯論-隨時-剪布-千人夜圍立會-警嚴防衝擊>
Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 立會封閉示威區派警駐守防暴. Retrieved from http://hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142540.html
Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-12). 封鎖示威區 警搜青年身被轟濫權 立法會大樓限制進出台媒：港戒嚴嗎?. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2160494/>
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-12). 警部署 5 千人 防衝擊立會堵路. <https://paper.hket.com/article/2374348/警部署 5 千人%20 防衝擊立會堵路>
Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-12). Around 2,000 Hong Kong protesters begin night vigil as extradition law anger mounts. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/12/around-2000-hong-kong-protesters-begin-night-vigil-extradition-law-anger-mounts/>
Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-12). 修訂逃犯例二讀前夕 警檢武器頭盔噴火器 特首律政司司長 遭死亡恐嚇. Retrieved from <http://www.lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/12/01.pdf>
Metro Daily (2019-06-12). 金鐘如同「戒嚴」 添馬草地忽「保養」. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/金鐘如同戒嚴-添馬草地忽保養/
Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 金鐘站大截查 針對戴口罩青年. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560279389495/金鐘站大截查-針對戴口罩青年>
Now TV (2019-06-11). 警員金鐘站內搜查市民隨身物品. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351361>
Now TV (2019-06-11). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶現場最新消息. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351355>
Now TV (2019-06-12). 立法會發出黃色警示 警員入大樓布防. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351375&past=1>
Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 網絡鼓吹示威者現場製燃燒彈 搶警槍 5000 警力進駐金鐘 防衛立會. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190612/00176_008.html
RTHK (2019-06-12). 警員在港鐵金鐘站搜查市民引發不滿. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462196-20190612.htm>
Sing Pao (2019-06-12). 鼓吹奪警槍 自製噴火器 立法會危機升溫 截查建功 警方檢獲大批可命武器. Retrieved from <http://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=103480>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-12). 示威者夜圍立會 千警嚴密布防. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2017918/日報-港聞-示威者夜圍立會-千警嚴密布防>
Sky Post (2019-06-12). 罷工罷市群情洶湧 政總立法會嚴防. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2374274/罷工罷市群情洶湧%20 政總立法會嚴防>
Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-12). 警金鐘戒備 反對派妨礙執法. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0612/302017.html>

- ⁴ Apple Daily (2019-06-12). 立會全面封鎖 要求警方協防. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190612/20701689>
- Bastillepost (2019-06-11). 激進份子計劃包圍立法會 網傳商討襲擊警方「速龍隊」. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4529691>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- HK Economic Times (2019-06-11). 【逃犯條例】逾萬人響應 6.12「一人政總野餐」 添馬公園被圍封 進行「草地保養」. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2373608/>
- HK Economic Times (2019-06-11). 【逃犯條例】警方部署 5000 人嚴防示威者衝擊立法會及堵路「直至法案通過」. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2374065/>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-12). 網上號召添馬公園野餐. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771070/日報-港聞-網上號召添馬公園野餐>
- Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-12). Around 2,000 Hong Kong protesters begin night vigil as extradition law anger mounts. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/12/around-2000-hong-kong-protesters-begin-night-vigil-extradition-law-anger-mounts/>
- LIHKG's posts (from 2019-06-09 to 2019-06-12). 大會：預演包圍立法會. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1194247/page/1>. 12 號唔好嚟立法會. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1198914/page/1>. (文宣組) 612icon. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1199744/page/1>.
- Ming Pao (2019-06-11). 【逃犯條例·多圖】立會周三凌晨起發黃色警示 大批市民聚集添馬公園公民廣場 (23:58). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190611/s00001/1560266599597/> 【逃犯條例-多圖】立會周三凌晨起發黃色警示-大批市民聚集添馬公園公民廣場
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 民陣籲圍立會 5000 警佈防 警內部評估衝突可「近乎旺暴」. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560279387732/民陣籲圍立會-5000警佈防-警內部評估衝突可「近乎旺暴」>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【晨早新聞重點】(6月12日). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351377&past=1>
- Sing Pao (2019-06-11). 逾百萬市民遊行 政府漠視訴求 行動升級 包圍立法會 罷工罷市罷課. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=103393>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-12). 示威者夜圍立會 千警嚴密布防. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2017918/日報-港聞-示威者夜圍立會-千警嚴密布防>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-12). 一圖 | 示威者圍堵立法會阻修例 堵塞交通挑釁警察密謀行動. Retrieved from <http://news.wenweipo.com/2019/06/12/IN1906120027.htm>
- ⁵ LegCo Secretariat (2019-06-12). Special arrangements for LegCo Complex. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/english/press/pr20190612-1.html>
- ⁶ AM730 (2019-06-12). 如臨大敵 66 小時審議修例 立法會嚴密布防. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/如臨大敵-66小時審議修例-立法會嚴密布防-176030>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-11). 【0040】立法會發佈黃色警示，大批警察進入立法會煲底。 Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/hk.nextmedia/videos/1565291153604037/>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-12). 封鎖示威區 警搜青年身被轟濫權 立法會大樓限制進出台媒：港戒嚴嗎?. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2160494/>
- Hong Kong Free Press (2019-06-12). Around 2,000 Hong Kong protesters begin night vigil as extradition law anger mounts. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/06/12/around-2000-hong-kong-protesters-begin-night-vigil-extradition-law-anger-mounts/>
- Now TV (2019-06-11). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶現場最新消息. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351355>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【晨早新聞重點】(6月12日). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351377&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 立法會發出黃色警示 警員入大樓布防. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351375&past=1>

- RTHK (2019-06-11). 立法會於凌晨 12 時發黃色警示. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462181-20190611.htm>
- 7 HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6 月 11 至 14 日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Metro Daily (2019-06-13). 警方大清場 立會昨取消會議. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/警方大清場-立會昨取消會議/
- Now TV (2019-06-11). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶現場最新消息. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351355>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【晨早新聞重點】(6月12日). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351377&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 反對修訂逃犯條例市民通宵立法會外聚集. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351378&past=1>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例修訂今恢復二讀 大批市民通宵聚集. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462220-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 政總及立會外聚集市民增加 大批配備防暴裝備警員戒備. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462227-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-12). 一圖 | 示威者圍堵立法會阻修例 堵塞交通挑釁警察密謀行動. Retrieved from <http://news.wenweipo.com/2019/06/12/IN1906120027.htm>
- 8 Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 反惡法 二次佔中 暴政向我們開槍. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702755>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 隔牆有耳：座駕被圍 大咗鬼局長報平安. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702796>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6 月 11 至 14 日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者雜物堵塞交通 警發射催淚噴劑驅散. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771428/日報-港聞-示威者雜物堵塞交通-警發射催淚噴劑驅散>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-14). 警施放 150 催淚彈抗襲. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771712/日報-港聞-警施放 150 催淚彈抗襲>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-14). 示威者多番暴力衝擊立會 一哥：最低殺傷力武器還擊. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771715/日報-港聞-示威者多番暴力衝擊立會-一哥-最低殺傷力武器還擊>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 堵馬路 圍警車 掘地磚 築路障 暴動致 72 傷 警施彈平亂. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142730.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者突堵龍和道 近百巴士線暫停 金鐘烏煙瘴氣 商戶生意大挫. Retrieved from https://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142739.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動 11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Metro Daily (2019-06-13). 警方大清場 立會昨取消會議. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/警方大清場-立會昨取消會議/
- Ming Pao Canada (2019-06-13). 佔領無大台領導 4 萬人網上凝聚 通訊群組協調 同步車堵路人衝路. Retrieved from http://www.mingpaocanada.com/Tor/htm/News/20190613/HK-gab3_r.htm
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者包圍立法會及政總 霸佔夏慤道龍和道. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351403>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 三大戰場怨氣沖天. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_004.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 橡膠彈橫飛 淚彈遍金鐘 暴動開槍驅散. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00174_001.html

- RTHK (2019-06-12). 大批反修例示威者佔據夏慤道東西行線及龍和道與警對峙. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462254-20190612.htm>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 示威者在特首辦外與警方對峙 警方一度舉紅旗警告. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462301-20190612.htm>
- Sing Pao (2019-06-13). 可殺人致命 迫不得已武力驅散 盧偉聰：尖鐵支擲路磚襲警. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=103539>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072 人傷>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-12). 視頻 | 港示威者圍堵立法會阻修例. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/video/2019/0612/302280.html>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-13). 暴動再演佔「鐘」 亂港黑手再現. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0613/302442.html>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 大批示威者佔據金鐘一帶-警方夏慤道曾施放催淚水劑. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d006c20e603832f3b92ec7f/大批示威者佔據金鐘一帶-警方夏慤道曾施放催淚水劑>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-13). Telegram 變指揮平台 一管理員被捕. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/06/13/HS1906130004.htm>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- 9 AM730 (2019-06-13). 警催淚彈橡膠彈驅散. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/警催淚彈橡膠彈驅散-176215>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-13). 示威者衝擊 警放布袋彈催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://paper.hket.com/article/2375305/示威者衝擊%20警放布袋彈催淚彈>
- Metro Daily (2019-06-13). 警方大清場 立會昨取消會議. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/警方大清場-立會昨取消會議/
- Ming Pao (2019-06-13). 反修例變佔鐘 警開槍射膠彈 林鄭月娥重申不撤回. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190613/s00001/1560365250077/反修例變佔鐘-警開槍射膠彈-林鄭月娥重申不撤回>
- Ming Pao Canada (2019-06-13). 佔領無大台領導 4 萬人網上凝聚 通訊群組協調 同步車堵路人衝路. Retrieved from http://www.mingpaocanada.com/Tor/htm/News/20190613/HK-gab3_r.htm
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者包圍立法會及政總 霸佔夏慤道龍和道. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351403>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者舉傘 如佔中重演. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_006.html
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 大批反修例示威者佔據夏慤道東西行線及龍和道與警對峙. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462254-20190612.htm>
- Sing Pao (2019-06-13). 可殺人致命 迫不得已武力驅散 盧偉聰：尖鐵支擲路磚襲警. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=103539>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-12). 視頻 | 港示威者圍堵立法會阻修例. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/video/2019/0612/302280.html>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-12). 一圖 | 示威者圍堵立法會阻修例 堵塞交通挑釁警察密謀行動. Retrieved from <http://news.wenweipo.com/2019/06/12/IN1906120027.htm>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV, Stand News and TVB.

- ¹⁰ BBC (2019-06-12). As it happened: Chaotic scenes as HK protests turn violent. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/news/live/world-asia-china-48455370/page/6>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領清場一文全覽>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄612衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄612衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 【多圖】立法會推遲開會 激進示威者包圍立法會. Retrieved from https://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142571.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 堵馬路 圍警車 掘地磚 築路障 暴動致72傷 警施彈平亂. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142730.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例>
- NEXT Magazine (2019-06-12). 【612罷工罷市】金鐘龍和道、立法會旁大批紅磚被掘起堆起磚牆 | 壹週刊. Retrieved from https://hk.nextmagz.com/article/2_675235_0
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 有示威者在立法會附近行人路掘起磚頭. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351407>
- Orange News (2019-06-12). 【有片】示威者搬送大量鐵枝磚頭等 企圖衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <http://www.orangenews.hk/news/system/2019/06/12/010118829.shtml>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：示威者搬鐵枝 撬地磚砌牆. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612094816609-0612_00822_001.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 旺暴翻版 警開火無得揀. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_011.html
- RTHK (2019-06-12). Police warn protesters against throwing bricks. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1462314-20190612.htm>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 【警方稱龍和道有示威者掘磚 警告切勿投擲磚頭】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/posts/2602730899834950>
- The Reporter (2019-06-13). 612的日與夜——香港反送中運動影像紀實. Retrieved from <https://www.twreporter.org/a/photo-hong-kong-china-extradition-law-612-resistance>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). LegCo riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-12). 一圖 | 示威者圍堵立法會阻修例 堵塞交通挑釁警察密謀行動. Retrieved from <http://news.wenweipo.com/2019/06/12/IN1906120027.htm>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-13). 暴徒施襲傷香江 警察浴血護安寧. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/06/13/YO1906130001.htm>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ¹¹ LegCo Secretariat (2019-06-12). Cancellation of LegCo subcommittee meeting. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/english/press/pr20190612-2.html>
- ¹² HKPF (2019-06-12). 【2019年6月12日·警方簡報】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/videos/631241707351378/>
- ¹³ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Metro Daily (2019-06-13). 警方大清場 立會昨取消會議. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/警方大清場-立會昨取消會議/
- Ming Pao (2019-06-13). 反修例變佔鐘 警開槍射膠彈 林鄭月娥重申不撤回. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190613/s00001/1560365250077/反修例變佔鐘-警開槍射膠彈-林鄭月娥重申不撤回>
- Ming Pao Canada (2019-06-13). 佔領無大台領導 4萬人網上凝聚 通訊群組協調 同步車堵路人衝路. Retrieved from http://www.mingpaocanada.com/Tor/htm/News/20190613/HK-gab3_r.htm

- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者包圍立法會及政總 霸佔夏慤道龍和道. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351403>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者舉傘 如佔中重演. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_006.html
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 大批反修例示威者佔據夏慤道東西行線及龍和道與警對峙. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462254-20190612.htm>
- Sing Pao (2019-06-13). 可殺人致命 迫不得已武力驅散 盧偉聰：尖鐵支擲路磚襲警. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=103539>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-12). 視頻 | 港示威者圍堵立法會阻修例. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/video/2019/0612/302280.html>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-12). 一圖 | 示威者圍堵立法會阻修例 堵塞交通挑釁警察密謀行動. Retrieved from <http://news.wenweipo.com/2019/06/12/IN1906120027.htm>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV, Stand News, SETN and TVB.
- ¹⁴ HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 堵馬路 圍警車 掘地磚 築路障 暴動致 72 傷 警施彈平亂. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142730.html
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者推進至添華道政府總部外. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351392>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 示威者在特首辦外與警方對峙 警方一度舉紅旗警告. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462301-20190612.htm>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- ¹⁵ HKPF (2019-06-12). 【警方呼籲】 Retrieved from <https://twitter.com/hkpoliceforce/status/1138637363129618432>
- HKPF (2019-06-12). 【警方呼籲】 Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/posts/2421803521240931?comment_id=2422076971213586
- Bastille Post (2019-06-12). 鐵馬封金鐘道來回線 交警為受困車輛開路. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4536541-【逃犯條例】示威者鐵馬封金鐘道來回線-交警開路>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Meme hk.com (2019-06-12). 4 車橫臥金鐘道 警譴責刻意堵路. Retrieved from <http://news.memehk.com/posts/20732>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例-短片】警強烈譴責有汽車刻意堵路 警告示威者勿擲磚頭. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560307770285/【逃犯條例-短片】警強烈譴責有汽車刻意堵路-警告示威者勿擲磚頭>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/【逃犯條例-短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 警方稱金鐘有汽車刻意堵路 籲勿駕車到受影響地區. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462288-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例】示威者鐵馬封金鐘道來回線-交警開路. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1021052/即時-香港-逃犯條例-示威者鐵馬封金鐘道來回線-交警開路/>

- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 名貴汽車布陣堵路 塞爆金鐘. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018482/日報-港聞-名貴汽車布陣堵路-塞爆金鐘>
- Sky Post (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例】金鐘佔領行動遍地開花 司機「和平撞車」死火癱瘓交通. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2374565/【逃犯條例】金鐘佔領行動遍地開花%20司機「和平撞車」死火癱瘓交通>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：干諾道中多輛私家車堵路 現場交通擠塞. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612093741090-0612_00822_001.html
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-12). 【包圍立法會】人海堵塞告士打道釀大塞車 警方強烈譴責車輛刻意堵路. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2374549/【包圍立法會】人海堵塞告士打道釀大塞車%E3%80%80警方強烈譴責車輛刻意堵路>
- ¹⁶ HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- ¹⁷ At about 22:00 on 12 June 2019, CHRF told the press that the Police had objected to the holding of assembly on the following day (source: media reports).
- ¹⁸ HK01 (2019-06-14). 【逃犯條例】警簽發民陣和平大台 無衝擊無警告示威者硬食催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社區專題/340824/逃犯條例-警簽發民陣和平大台-無衝擊無警告示威者硬食催淚彈>
- Stand News (2019-06-12). 【6.12 佔領 • 不斷更新】警疑施催淚彈、開槍射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-示威者成功佔據夏慤道-佔領運動場面重現/Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and SETN.>
- ¹⁹ Information Services Department (2019-06-12). All entrances of CGO have been closed (政府總部各出入口現已封閉). Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/12/P2019061200257.htm>
- ²⁰ HKPF (2019-06-12). 【警方呼籲】 Retrieved from <https://twitter.com/hkpoliceforce/status/1138637363129618432>
- HKPF (2019-06-12). 【警方呼籲】 Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/posts/2421803521240931?comment_id=2422076971213586
- Bastille Post (2019-06-12). 鐵馬封金鐘道來回線 交警為受困車輛開路. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4536541-【逃犯條例】示威者鐵馬封金鐘道來回線-交警開路>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Meme hk.com (2019-06-12). 4車橫臥金鐘道 警譴責刻意堵路. Retrieved from <http://news.memehk.com/posts/20732>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例-短片】警強烈譴責有汽車刻意堵路 警告示威者勿擲磚頭. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560307770285/【逃犯條例-短片】警強烈譴責有汽車刻意堵路-警告示威者勿擲磚頭>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 警方稱金鐘有汽車刻意堵路 籲勿駕車到受影響地區. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462288-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例】示威者鐵馬封金鐘道來回線-交警開路. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1021052/即時-香港-逃犯條例-示威者鐵馬封金鐘道來回線-交警開路/>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 名貴汽車布陣堵路 塞爆金鐘. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018482/日報-港聞-名貴汽車布陣堵路-塞爆金鐘>
- Sky Post (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例】金鐘佔領行動遍地開花 司機「和平撞車」死火癱瘓交通. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2374565/【逃犯條例】金鐘佔領行動遍地開花%20司機「和平撞車」死火癱瘓交通>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：干諾道中多輛私家車堵路 現場交通擠塞. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612093741090-0612_00822_001.html

- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-12). 【包圍立法會】人海堵塞告士打道釀大塞車 警方強烈譴責車輛刻意堵路. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2374549/> 【包圍立法會】人海堵塞告士打道釀大塞車%E3%80%80 警方強烈譴責車輛刻意堵路
- ²¹ LegCo Secretariat (2019-06-12). Rescheduling of Council meeting. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/english/press/pr20190612-3.html>
- ²² Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- BBC (2019-06-12). As it happened: Chaotic scenes as HK protests turn violent. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/news/live/world-asia-china-48455370/page/6>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/> 【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest-live-video> footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and SETN.
- ²³ BBC (2019-06-12). As it happened: Chaotic scenes as HK protests turn violent. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/news/live/world-asia-china-48455370/page/6>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/> 【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例
- Live video footage of TMHK.
- ²⁴ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/> 【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 灣仔及中西區交通嚴重擠塞. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351408>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者佔據金鐘多條行車路 有司機批如暴亂. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351396&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 多條港島巴士路線改道. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351410&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 有示威者用鐵馬垃圾桶等雜物堵塞道路. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351500&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 電車畢打街至分域街東行線封閉. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351419&past=1>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 名貴汽車布陣堵路 塞爆金鐘. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018482/日報-港聞-名貴汽車布陣堵路-塞爆金鐘>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- ²⁵ Initium (2019-06-12). 反《逃犯條例》修訂市民佔領金鐘多條主要道路 警方發射逾150催淚彈清場. Retrieved from <https://theinitium.com/article/20190612-hongkong-extradition-bill-protest-legco/>
- Live video footage of APTN and SETN.
- ²⁶ HKPF (2019-06-12). 警方發現龍和道附近有示威者把地上磚頭掘起. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/posts/2421947004559916>
- ²⁷ Information Services Department (2019-06-12). 張建宗籲聚集市民和平散去. (Chinese only) Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/06/20190612/20190612_131735_161.html
- ²⁸ HKSAR Government (2019-06-12). 張建宗籲聚集市民和平散去. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/06/20190612/20190612_131735_161.html
- BBC (2019-06-12). As it happened: Chaotic scenes as HK protests turn violent. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/news/live/world-asia-china-48455370/page/5>

- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【最新】張建宗：佔據馬路市民盡快和平散去 保持冷靜勿以身試法. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351415>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 張建宗：政府會做好解說工作及把關. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351417&past=1>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 張建宗透過政府新聞處發片 籲佔據馬路市民返回行人路. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462332-20190612.htm?spTabChangeable=0>
- ²⁹ HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】 6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 民陣稱龍匯道集會未收到警方不反對通知書亦無收到反對. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462335-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- Live video footage of Cable TV and Now TV.
- ³⁰ Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ³¹ AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 反惡法 二次佔中 暴政向我們開槍. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702755>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例】網傳示威者要求政府三時前撤回修訂 否則行動升級. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1521061/即時-港聞-逃犯條例-網傳示威者要求政府三時前撤回修訂-否則行動升級>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 堵馬路 圍警車 掘地磚 築路障 暴動致 72 傷 警施彈平亂. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142730.html
- Kinliu (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例】示威者促政府 3 時前撤修例 否則將行動升級. Retrieved from <https://n.kinliu.hk/kinliuhknews/> 【逃犯條例】示威者促政府 3 時前撤修例-否則將行/
- LIHKG's posts (2019-06-12). 求文宣製作三點鐘 DEADLINE !!! Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1206943/page/1>. [廣傳] 三點鐘唔撤回修例就會行動升級 !!! Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1207090/page/1>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-13). 佔領無大台領導 4 萬人網上凝聚 通訊群組協調 同步車堵路人衝路. Retrieved from http://www.mingpaocanada.com/Tor/htm/News/20190613/HK-gab3_r.htm
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：網傳 3pm 前不撤回修例 示威行動會升級. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612125225571-0612_00822_001.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 三大戰場怨氣沖天. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_004.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072人傷>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-06-13). Telegram 變指揮平台 一管理員被捕. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/06/13/HS1906130004.htm>
- ³² Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- BBC (2019-06-12). As it happened: Chaotic scenes as HK protests turn violent. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/news/live/world-asia-china-48455370/page/4>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者大規模衝擊警多次放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8nxUMAtLumA>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】 6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>

- Metro Daily (2019-06-13). 市民反「二讀」爆衝突再升級 警開三類槍 對付示威者. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/市民反二讀爆衝突再升級-警開三類槍-對付示威/
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 下午三時許示威者衝立法會與警爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351508>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：催淚煙滿天 橡膠彈橫飛 記錄最亂一刻. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612193012722-0612_00822_001.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 三大戰場怨氣沖天. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_004.html
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 示威者在政總外向警擲物 警方施放胡椒噴霧及催淚水劑. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462349-20190612.htm>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 現場大批速龍小隊與防暴警察等到場增援-舉紅旗警告示威者. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d00a741e60383ea0a92ec6f/現場大批速龍小隊與防暴警察等到場增援-舉紅旗警告示威者>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- ³³ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- BBC (2019-06-12). As it happened: Chaotic scenes as HK protests turn violent. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/news/live/world-asia-china-48455370/page/4>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者大規模衝擊警多次放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8nxUMAtLumA>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Metro Daily (2019-06-13). 市民反「二讀」爆衝突再升級 警開三類槍 對付示威者. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/市民反二讀爆衝突再升級-警開三類槍-對付示威/
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 下午三時許示威者衝立法會與警爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351508>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：催淚煙滿天 橡膠彈橫飛 記錄最亂一刻. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612193012722-0612_00822_001.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 三大戰場怨氣沖天. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_004.html
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 示威者在政總外向警擲物 警方施放胡椒噴霧及催淚水劑. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462349-20190612.htm>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 現場大批速龍小隊與防暴警察等到場增援-舉紅旗警告示威者. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d00a741e60383ea0a92ec6f/現場大批速龍小隊與防暴警察等到場增援-舉紅旗警告示威者>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV, Stand News and TVB.
- ³⁴ AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- AM730 (2019-06-13). 警催淚彈橡膠彈驅散. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/警催淚彈橡膠彈驅散-176215>
- AM730 (2019-06-14). 逾 150 發催淚彈驅散 盧偉聰：警非常克制. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/逾 150 發催淚彈驅散-盧偉聰%EF%BC%9A 警非常克制-176382>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 警以退為進 示威者中伏. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702787>

- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-13). 防暴警 催淚彈橡膠彈鎮暴 圍立會反修例 金鐘灣仔爆暴動. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771407/日報-港聞-防暴警-催淚彈橡膠彈鎮暴-圍立會反修例-金鐘灣仔爆暴動>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-14). 警施放 150 催淚彈抗襲. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771712/日報-港聞-警施放 150 催淚彈抗襲>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-14). 示威者多番暴力衝擊立會 一哥：最低殺傷力武器還擊. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771715/日報-港聞-示威者多番暴力衝擊立會-一哥-最低殺傷力武器還擊>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 立會封閉示威區派警駐守防暴. Retrieved from http://hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142540.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 堵馬路 圍警車 掘地磚 築路障 暴動致 72 傷 警施彈平亂. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142730.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 【現場目擊】警長蛇陣堅守 立會大樓絲毫無損. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142737.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動 11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-13). 示威者衝擊 警放布袋彈催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://paper.hket.com/article/2375305/示威者衝擊%20警放布袋彈催淚彈>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 下午三時許示威者衝立法會與警爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351508>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 警員立會大樓內戒備 示威者和警員均有受傷. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351442&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：警方定性為暴動 金鐘道晚上清場. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612154006312-0612_00822_001.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者舉傘 如佔中重演. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_006.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 拆鐵馬進擊 險攻入「煲底」. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_005.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072 人傷>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-12). 示威者暴力衝擊立會 有警員受傷倒地. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/video/2019/0612/302300.html>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-13). 暴動再演佔「鐘」 亂港黑手再現. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0613/302442.html>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-14). 一刀未剪 視頻揭暴徒襲警. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/video/2019/0614/304028.html>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d0129e7e60383f51c92ec7c/警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.

- ³⁵ AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- AM730 (2019-06-13). 警催淚彈橡膠彈驅散. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/警催淚彈橡膠彈驅散-176215>
- AM730 (2019-06-14). 逾 150 發催淚彈驅散 盧偉聰：警非常克制. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/逾 150 發催淚彈驅散-盧偉聰%EF%BC%9A 警非常克制-176382>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 警以退為進 示威者中伏. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702787>
- Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-13). 防暴警 催淚彈橡膠彈鎮暴 圍立會反修例 金鐘灣仔爆暴動. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771407/日報-港聞-防暴警-催淚彈橡膠彈鎮暴-圍立會反修例-金鐘灣仔爆暴動>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-14). 警施放 150 催淚彈抗襲. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771712/日報-港聞-警施放 150 催淚彈抗襲>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-14). 示威者多番暴力衝擊立會 一哥：最低殺傷力武器還擊. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771715/日報-港聞-示威者多番暴力衝擊立會-一哥-最低殺傷力武器還擊>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 立會封閉示威區派警駐守防暴. Retrieved from http://hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142540.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 堵馬路 圍警車 掘地磚 築路障 暴動致 72 傷 警施彈平亂. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142730.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 【現場目擊】警長蛇陣堅守 立會大樓絲毫無損. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142737.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動 11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-06-13). 示威者衝擊 警放布袋彈催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://paper.hket.com/article/2375305/示威者衝擊%20警放布袋彈催淚彈>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 下午三時許示威者衝立法會與警爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351508>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 警員立會大樓內戒備 示威者和警員均有受傷. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351442&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：警方定性為暴動 金鐘道晚上清場. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612154006312-0612_00822_001.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者舉傘 如佔中重演. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_006.html
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 拆鐵馬進擊 險攻入「煲底」. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_005.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072 人傷>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-12). 示威者暴力衝擊立會 有警員受傷倒地. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/video/2019/0612/302300.html>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-13). 暴動再演佔「鐘」 亂港黑手再現. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0613/302442.html>

- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-14). 一刀未剪 視頻揭暴徒襲警. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/video/2019/0614/304028.html>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d0129e7e60383f51c92ec7c/警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- 36 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Now TV (2019-07-01). 【經緯線】金鐘 612. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MHBXgRhXQ8M>
- Live video footage of TMHK.
- 37 AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 立會封閉示威區派警駐守防暴. Retrieved from http://hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142540.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動 11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 拆鐵馬進擊 險攻入「煲底」. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_005.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072 人傷>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d0129e7e60383f51c92ec7c/警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News
- 38 AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 立會封閉示威區派警駐守防暴. Retrieved from http://hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142540.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動 11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 拆鐵馬進擊 險攻入「煲底」. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_005.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>

- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072人傷>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d0129e7e60383f51c92ec7c/警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少72人受傷入院>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- ³⁹ AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 立會封閉示威區派警駐守防暴. Retrieved from http://hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142540.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動 11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 拆鐵馬進擊 險攻入「煲底」. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_005.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072人傷>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d0129e7e60383f51c92ec7c/警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少72人受傷入院>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- ⁴⁰ AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄612衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Metro Daily (2019-06-13). 市民反「二讀」爆衝突再升級 警開三類槍 對付示威者. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/市民反二讀爆衝突再升級-警開三類槍-對付示威/
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 示威者向中環及金鐘內街撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351520&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-07-01). 【經緯線】金鐘 612. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MHBXgRhXQ8M>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612之後>
- Live video footage of TMHK.
- ⁴¹ AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 立會封閉示威區派警駐守防暴. Retrieved from http://hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142540.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動 11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html

- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 拆鐵馬進擊 險攻入「煲底」. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_005.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifstyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072人傷>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d0129e7e60383f51c92ec7c/警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少72人受傷入院>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV, Stand News and TVB.
- 42 Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- Sing Pao (2019-06-13). 可殺人致命 迫不得已武力驅散 盧偉聰：尖鐵支擲路磚襲警. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=103539>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 現場示威者衝入立法會示威區-警方施放催淚煙驅散. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d00ac0ce60383040b92ec8e/現場示威者衝入立法會示威區-警方施放催淚煙驅散>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612之後>
- Live video footage of Cable TV, TMHK, TVB.
- 43 AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-12). 立會封閉示威區派警駐守防暴. Retrieved from http://hkcd.com/content/2019-06/12/content_1142540.html
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-14). 金鐘暴動 11 暴徒被拉 盧偉聰：嚴格依指引使用武器. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/14/content_1142938.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-13). 警橡膠彈射頭浴血 至少 72 人送院 佔領金鐘遭催淚煙布袋彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/article/id/2161571/>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
- Oriental Daily (2019-06-13). 拆鐵馬進擊 險攻入「煲底」. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190613/00176_005.html
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- Sky Post (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴動 72 人傷. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifstyle.com.hk/article/2375194/反修例變暴動%2072人傷>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少 72 人受傷入院. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d0129e7e60383f51c92ec7c/警方施放催淚彈等驅散金鐘示威者-至少72人受傷入院>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and TVB.
- 44 Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- 45 Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.

- ⁴⁶ Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ⁴⁷ Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ⁴⁸ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ⁴⁹ Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ⁵⁰ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 反惡法 二次佔中 暴政向我們開槍. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702755>
Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
HK01 (2019-06-16). 【逃犯條例·6.12清場紀錄】警武力驅散實錄四行為涉違反指引. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/340813/逃犯條例-6-12清場紀錄-警武力驅散實錄-四行為涉違反指引>
Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/>【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例
Now TV (2019-06-12). 下午三時許示威者衝立法會與警爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351508>
Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者衝擊警防線 警多次放催淚彈多人傷. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351438>
Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者與警方於添華道爆發衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351439>
Now TV (2019-06-12). 警方在添華道及夏慤道多次施放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351455&past=1>
Now TV (2019-06-13). 示威者向中環及金鐘內街撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351520&past=1>
Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
Now TV (2019-07-01). 【經緯線】金鐘 612. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MHBXgRhxQ8M>
Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：警方定性為暴動 金鐘道晚上清場. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612154006312-0612_00822_001.html
Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- ⁵¹ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 反惡法 二次佔中 暴政向我們開槍. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702755>
Cable TV (2019-06-12). 逃犯條例二讀 (12/6) - 示威者攻入示威區警發射布袋彈. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hfak7SPWOvY>
HK01 (2019-06-16). 【逃犯條例·6.12清場紀錄】警武力驅散實錄四行為涉違反指引. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/340813/逃犯條例-6-12清場紀錄-警武力驅散實錄-四行為涉違反指引>
Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/>【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例
Now TV (2019-06-12). 下午三時許示威者衝立法會與警爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351508>
Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者衝擊警防線 警多次放催淚彈多人傷. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351438>
Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者與警方於添華道爆發衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351439>
Now TV (2019-06-12). 警方在添華道及夏慤道多次施放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351455&past=1>
Now TV (2019-06-13). 示威者向中環及金鐘內街撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351520&past=1>
Now TV (2019-06-13). 【獨家】金鐘反修例示威全紀錄. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351634&past=1>
Now TV (2019-07-01). 【經緯線】金鐘 612. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MHBXgRhxQ8M>

- Oriental Daily (2019-06-12). 衝擊立法會：警方定性為暴動 金鐘道晚上清場. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190612/bkn-20190612154006312-0612_00822_001.html
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- ⁵² Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ⁵³ Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and SETN.
- ⁵⁴ CitizenNews (2019-06-21). 【612 催淚彈清場】重組圍困中信驚恐 35 分鐘 集會者：險窒息、人踩人「集體謀殺」. Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/21488/612_金鐘大衝突-中信大廈-逃犯條例-21498/
- Stand News (2019-06-20). 【6.12 再定性·3】重組中信圍困噩夢 一群「和理非」如何被警暴所傷. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/612redefine/>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612_之後
- Live video footage of Now TV and SETN.
- ⁵⁵ CitizenNews (2019-06-21). 【612 催淚彈清場】重組圍困中信驚恐 35 分鐘 集會者：險窒息、人踩人「集體謀殺」. Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/21488/612_金鐘大衝突-中信大廈-逃犯條例-21498/
- Stand News (2019-06-20). 【6.12 再定性·3】重組中信圍困噩夢 一群「和理非」如何被警暴所傷. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/612redefine/>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612_之後
- Live video footage of Now TV and SETN.
- ⁵⁶ CitizenNews (2019-06-21). 【612 催淚彈清場】重組圍困中信驚恐 35 分鐘 集會者：險窒息、人踩人「集體謀殺」. Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/21488/612_金鐘大衝突-中信大廈-逃犯條例-21498/
- Stand News (2019-06-20). 【6.12 再定性·3】重組中信圍困噩夢 一群「和理非」如何被警暴所傷. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/612redefine/>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612_之後
- Live video footage of Now TV and SETN.
- ⁵⁷ CitizenNews (2019-06-21). 【612 催淚彈清場】重組圍困中信驚恐 35 分鐘 集會者：險窒息、人踩人「集體謀殺」. Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/21488/612_金鐘大衝突-中信大廈-逃犯條例-21498/
- Stand News (2019-06-20). 【6.12 再定性·3】重組中信圍困噩夢 一群「和理非」如何被警暴所傷. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/612redefine/>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612_之後
- Live video footage of Now TV and SETN.
- ⁵⁸ Live video footage of APTN, Now TV, SETN and TMHK.
- ⁵⁹ Apple Daily (2019-06-18). 【引渡惡法】中信圍困真相！警狂轟催淚彈暴力驅散數百人 空拍證險釀人踩人慘劇. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190618/59730220>
- Cable TV (2019-06-19). 新聞刺針【中信大廈外的催淚彈】. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/news.lancet/posts/1241829905990048?comment_id=1241848259321546&comment_tracking=%7B%22tn%22%3A%22R%22%7D
- Cable TV (2019-06-19). 新聞刺針【中信大廈外的催淚彈】. Retrieved from <http://cablenews.i-cable.com/ci/videopage/program/122535604/新聞刺針/中信大廈外的催淚彈/>
- CitizenNews (2019-06-21). 【612 催淚彈清場】重組圍困中信驚恐 35 分鐘 集會者：險窒息、人踩人 形同「集體謀殺」. Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/21488/612_金鐘大衝突-中信大廈-逃犯條例-21498/
- HK01 (2019-06-14). 【逃犯條例】警簽發民陣和平大台 無衝擊無警告示威者硬食催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社區專題/340824/逃犯條例-警簽發民陣和平大台-無衝擊無警告示威者硬食催淚彈>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 下午三時許示威者衝立法會與警爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351508>
- Stand News (2019-06-18). 【睇片】短片證警 6.12 狂射催淚彈夾擊中信大廈 民眾被圍無處可逃. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/睇片-短片證警-6-12-狂射催淚彈夾擊中信大廈-民眾被圍無處可逃/>

- Stand News (2019-06-20). 【6.12 再定性·3】重組中信圍困噩夢 一群「和理非」如何被警暴所傷. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/612redefine/>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612之後>
- Live video footage of APTN, Now TV and SETN.
- ⁶⁰ Apple Daily (2019-06-18). 【引渡惡法】中信圍困真相！警狂轟催淚彈暴力驅散數百人 空拍證險釀人踩人慘劇. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190618/59730220>
- Cable TV (2019-06-19). 新聞刺針【中信大廈外的催淚彈】. Retrieved from https://www.facebook.com/news.lancet/posts/1241829905990048?comment_id=1241848259321546&comment_tracking=%7B%22tn%22%3A%22R%22%7D
- Cable TV (2019-06-19). 新聞刺針【中信大廈外的催淚彈】. Retrieved from <http://cablenews.i-cable.com/ci/videopage/program/122535604/新聞刺針/中信大廈外的催淚彈/>
- CitizenNews (2019-06-21). 【612 催淚彈清場】重組圍困中信驚恐 35 分鐘 集會者：險窒息、人踩人形同「集體謀殺」. Retrieved from <https://www.hkcnnews.com/article/21488/612金鐘大衝突-中信大廈-逃犯條例-21498/>
- HK01 (2019-06-14). 【逃犯條例】警簽發民陣和平大台 無衝擊無警告示威者硬食催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社區專題/340824/逃犯條例-警簽發民陣和平大台-無衝擊無警告示威者硬食催淚彈>
- HK01 (2019-06-18). 【逃犯條例】催淚煙困中信大廈 中年男憶千人「生死一刻」. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/341093/逃犯條例-催淚煙困中信大廈-中年男憶千人-生死一刻>
- HK01 (2019-06-25). 【逃犯條例】美法防暴專家評 6.12 中信事件 美專家：是策略性失誤. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/344307/逃犯條例-美法防暴專家評 6-12 中信事件-美專家-是策略性失誤>
- New York Times (2019-06-30). Did Hong Kong Police Abuse Protesters? What Videos Show. Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/06/30/world/asia/did-hong-kong-police-abuse-protesters-what-videos-show.html>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 下午三時許示威者衝立法會與警爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351508>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- Stand News (2019-06-18). 【睇片】短片證警 6.12 狂射催淚彈夾擊中信大廈 民眾被圍無處可逃. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/睇片-短片證警-6-12-狂射催淚彈夾擊中信大廈-民眾被圍無處可逃/>
- Stand News (2019-06-20). 【6.12 再定性·3】重組中信圍困噩夢 一群「和理非」如何被警暴所傷. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/612redefine/>
- TVB (2019-06-22). 新聞透視 612 之後. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/programmes/newsmagazine/5d0e1bf7e60383e206229ae2/612之後>
- Live video footage of APTN, Now TV and SETN.
- ⁶¹ HK01 (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·龍和道持續更新】警放催淚彈 示威者一度被困中信. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/339647/逃犯條例-龍和道持續更新-警放催淚彈-示威者一度被困中信>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-12). 多名民主派向防暴警員口角 要求停止驅散示威者. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1521330/即時-港聞-逃犯條例-多名民主派向防暴警員口角-要求停止驅散示威者>
- Stand News (2019-06-20). 【6.12 再定性·3】重組中信圍困噩夢 一群「和理非」如何被警暴所傷. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/612redefine/>
- Live video footage of Cable TV and SETN.
- ⁶² AM730 (2019-06-13). 警催淚彈橡膠彈驅散. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/警催淚彈橡膠彈驅散-176215>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>

- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/>【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV.
- ⁶³ Information Services Department (2019-06-12). Police condemns violent acts (警方嚴厲譴責金鐘騷亂). Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/06/20190612/20190612_174707_173.html
- ⁶⁴ HKPF (2019-06-12). 【2019年6月12日·警務處處長會見傳媒】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/videos/305350270343846/>
- ⁶⁵ Apple Daily (2019-06-12). 【引渡惡法】盧偉聰將今次事件定性為騷亂 籲市民勿進入金鐘. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190612/59707521>
- HK01 (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例】示威者鐵枝磚頭襲警 警射橡膠彈 一哥:暴徒、騷亂. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/339849/逃犯條例-示威者鐵枝磚頭襲警-警射橡膠彈-一哥-暴徒-騷亂>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ⁶⁶ Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- TVB (2019-06-12). [現場]警方曾舉黑旗示意施放催淚彈 開始清除夏慤道鐵馬陣 - 逃犯修訂條例. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d00bde9e60383dc0792ec98/lang=cht/現場警方曾舉黑旗示意施放催淚彈-開始清除夏慤道鐵馬陣>
- Live video footage of Now TV.
- ⁶⁷ HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Medium (2019-06-15). 【香港反逃犯條例抗爭】 超詳盡時間軸 (上). Retrieved from <https://medium.com/@civilmediatw/香港反逃犯條例抗爭-超詳盡時間軸-上-412181b8b23c>
- ⁶⁸ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 反惡法 二次佔中 暴政向我們開槍. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702755>
- BBC (2019-06-12). As it happened: Chaotic scenes as HK protests turn violent. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/news/live/world-asia-china-48455370/page/3>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-14). 【逃犯條例】急救站遭警方射催淚彈 陳沛然要求警方徹查. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1523380/即時-港聞-逃犯條例-急救站遭警方射催淚彈-陳沛然要求警方徹查>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- Now TV (2019-06-13). 示威者向中環及金鐘內街撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351520&past=1>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 警方清空夏慤道一帶. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351463&past=1>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News.
- ⁶⁹ HKPF (2019-06-12). Police take action to stop riot (警方採取行動制止暴動). Retrieved from https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_tc/03_police_message/pr/pr_archives.html?month=201906

- ⁷⁰ Information Services Department (2019-06-12). 警方採取行動制止暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/12/P2019061200711.htm?fontSize=1>
- ⁷¹ LegCo Secretariat (2019-06-12). Council meeting not to be held today. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/english/press/pr20190612-4.html>
- ⁷² HK01 (2019-06-16). 【逃犯條例·6.12 清場紀錄】警武力驅散實錄 四行為涉違反指引. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/340813/逃犯條例-6-12 清場紀錄-警武力驅散實錄-四行為涉違反指引>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息(12/6). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351382>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 警方驅趕金鐘道示威者 拆除障礙物. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462464-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 防暴警察晚上向金鐘道放催淚彈 半小時後示威者重返. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462478-20190612.htm>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). Police use tear gas on demonstrators on Queensway. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1462463-20190612.htm>
- Sing Pao (2019-06-13). 示威入夜後戰線延至中環 多輛私家車堵路 人群通宵聚集 警方戒備. Retrieved from <http://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=103537>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- TVB (2019-06-12). 現場警方傍晚派出防暴警察-金鐘道一帶再次施放催淚彈. Retrieved from <http://news.tvb.com/story/5cc5f2c6e603832c68bee8b7/5d00dac4e60383434692ec9d/現場警方傍晚派出防暴警察-金鐘道一帶再次施放催淚彈>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV, Now TV, Stand News and TVB.
- ⁷³ China Daily (2019-06-13). CE condemns riot against rendition bill. Retrieved from http://www.chinadaily.com.cn/hkedition/2019-06/13/content_37480124.htm
- HK01 (2019-06-13). 【逃犯條例】林鄭電視訪問落淚 稱無賣港 丈夫指「賣身給香港」. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339755/逃犯條例-林鄭電視訪問落淚-稱無賣港-丈夫指-賣身給香港>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-06-13). 林鄭強烈譴責金鐘暴動 籲平和理性守法表達意見. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-06/13/content_1142729.html
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 林鄭月娥稱有意見指她「賣港」 反問「我點樣賣港」. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462421-20190612.htm>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). Hong Kong Chief Executive Carrie Lam accuses anti-extradition bill protesters of 'organising a riot'. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014250/hong-kong-chief-executive-carrie-lam-accuses-anti>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 林鄭：撤修例 市民心上刺難拔除. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018485/日報-港聞-林鄭-撤修例-市民心上刺難拔除>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-06-12). 林鄭：作出不少個人犧牲 堅信修例初心正確. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/hongkong/video/2019/0612/302325.html>
- ⁷⁴ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 示威者仍在金鐘中環聚集 有市民下班後到場聲援. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462412-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.

- ⁷⁵ HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄612衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄612衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Headline Daily (2019-06-13). 防暴警催淚彈橡膠彈鎮暴 圍立會反修例 金鐘灣仔爆暴動. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/771407/日報-港聞-防暴警-催淚彈橡膠彈鎮暴-圍立會反修例-金鐘灣仔爆暴動>
- Metro Daily (2019-06-13). 市民反「二讀」爆衝突再升級 警開三類槍 對付示威者. Retrieved from https://www.metrodaily.hk/metro_news/市民反二讀爆衝突再升級-警開三類槍-對付示威/
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者繼續在金鐘及中環堵路. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351510>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【最新】示威者與警方在夏慤道對峙. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351499&past=1>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 防暴警察晚上向金鐘道放催淚彈 半小時後示威者重返. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462478-20190612.htm>
- ⁷⁶ HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄612衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄612衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 入夜後大批示威者轉至中環聚集堵路. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351503>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 防暴警察晚上向金鐘道放催淚彈 半小時後示威者重返. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462478-20190612.htm>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- ⁷⁷ Apple Daily (2019-06-13). 示威者血與汗 拉倒首日審議. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190613/20702782>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄612衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄612衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-13). 高峰4萬人 入夜數百人退守中環 警目標保立會 暫不清場. Retrieved from http://www.mingpaocanada.com/Tor/htm/News/20190613/HK-gaa2_r.htm
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 示威者撤到干諾道中聚集 警方設防線夏慤道天橋橋面. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462476-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- ⁷⁸ HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6月11至14日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6月11至14日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄612衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄612衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-06-13). 佔路襲警 暴動禍港. Retrieved from <http://lionrockdaily.com/2019/06/13/01.pdf>
- Ming Pao (2019-06-13). 高峰4萬人 入夜數百人退守中環 警目標保立會 暫不清場. Retrieved from http://www.mingpaocanada.com/Tor/htm/News/20190613/HK-gaa2_r.htm
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者繼續在金鐘及中環堵路. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351510>

- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- 79 AM730 (2019-06-13). 金鐘如戰場 修例爆衝突 | 林鄭譴責有組織暴動. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/金鐘如戰場-修例爆衝突-林鄭譴責有組織暴動-176214>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- Sing Pao (2019-06-13). 示威入夜後戰線延至中環 多輛私家車堵路 人群通宵聚集 警方戒備. Retrieved from <http://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=103537>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-06-13). 反修例變暴力游擊戰. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2018473/日報-港聞-反修例變暴力游擊戰>
- The Standard (2019-06-13). Legco riot: Rubber bullets, bean-bag rounds and tear gas disperse thousands of protesters. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=208577>
- 80 Information Services Department (2019-06-12). CE urges restoration of order (特首冀社會盡快回復秩序). Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/06/20190612/20190612_205047_758.html
- 81 Ming Pao (2019-06-13). 高峰 4 萬人 入夜數百人退守中環 警目標保立會 暫不清場. Retrieved from http://www.mingpao.com/Tor/htm/News/20190613/HK-gaa2_r.htm
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- Live video footage of APTN, Cable TV and Now TV.
- 82 HK01 (2019-07-13). 【逃犯條例】民陣揭警方早定性 6·12 集會為暴動 批林鄭講大話. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/351092/逃犯條例-民陣揭警方早定性 6-12 集會為暴動-批林鄭講大話>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- RTHK (2019-06-12). 民陣稱明天集會遭警方反對 繼續呼籲市民罷工罷市. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1462474-20190612.htm?archive_date=2019-06-12
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- 83 Ming Pao (2019-06-12). 【逃犯條例·短片+多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台 撤回修例 (23:57). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190612/s00001/1560296192111/【逃犯條例-短片-多圖】特首選委聯署促林鄭下台-撤回修例>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者凌晨陸續自行散去. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351517>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- Live video footage of APTN and Now TV.
- 84 BBC (2019-06-12). As it happened: Chaotic scenes as HK protests turn violent. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/news/live/world-asia-china-48455370>
- HK01 (2019-06-15). 【逃犯條例】6 月 11 至 14 日局勢動態 從佔領到清場一文全覽. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/339557/逃犯條例-6 月 11 至 14 日局勢動態-從佔領到清場一文全覽>
- HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>
- Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者凌晨陸續自行散去. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351517>
- SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>
- 85 HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>

SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>

⁸⁶ Apple Daily (2019-06-14). 市民清垃圾 惡警刁難. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190614/20703807>

HK01 (2019-07-06). 【逃犯條例·多圖】記錄 612 衝突瞬間 重組示威者警方攻防時序. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/343590/逃犯條例-多圖-記錄 612 衝突瞬間-重組示威者警方攻防時序>

Now TV (2019-06-12). 【不斷更新】政總及立法會一帶最新消息 (12/6 晚間). Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351471>

Now TV (2019-06-12). 示威者凌晨陸續自行散去. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=351517>

SCMP (2019-06-13). As it happened: Hong Kong police and extradition protesters renew clashes as tear gas flies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014104/thousands-block-roads-downtown-hong-kong-defiant-protest>

CHAPTER 9

INCIDENT DAY – MONDAY 1 JULY 2019

Introduction

9.1 This Chapter deals with the events on 1 July, the third Incident Day in a trilogy of events marking protests against the Fugitive Offenders Bill that occurred at the Legislative Council (LegCo) Complex, after 9 June and 12 June. 1 July was the day when violent protesters succeeded in storming the LegCo Complex in the late afternoon and later vandalised the building, including in particular the main chamber, computer server rooms, desks and rooms designated for Members. After the damage to the LegCo Complex, there were accusations from some media¹ that the Police was using an “empty city strategy (空城計)” to entrap the protesters or had intentionally allowed the protesters to enter and damage the LegCo Complex, so as to turn the public sentiment against them.

9.2 This incident, along with those on 9 June and 12 June, were directly related to violent protesters’ attempts to break into the LegCo Complex and Police handling of the events stemming from these attempts. The three incidents were closely related. The purpose of this Chapter aims to inform the IPCC of the facts of the incidents relating to 1 July, when protesters finally broke into and vandalised the LegCo Complex. It would help the IPCC discharge its statutory function under section 8(1)(a) of the IPCC Ordinance in examining complaints relating to or stemming from attempts to break into the LegCo Complex on 9 June and 12 June. At the same time, the opportunity is taken to make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police under Section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance to address the public concern.

Public Order Events before 1 July

9.3 The events surrounding the LegCo Complex on 9 June and 12 June have been detailed in Chapters 7 and 8. On 9 June, those who opposed the Fugitive Offenders Bill laid siege to the LegCo Complex and later in the evening, clashed with the police officers at police cordon line at the Complex, until daybreak the following day. Between 10 and 12 June, the day scheduled for the Second Reading of the Fugitive Offenders Bill, calls for action to disrupt the meeting had been widely circulated on the internet, and an ultimatum appeared in the internet that if the Government did not withdraw the Bill by 15:00, protest action would escalate.

¹ Sing Pao (2019-07-02). 防暴警施發催淚彈 示威者四散. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=104489>
The Standnews (2019-07-02). 【佔領立法會】警突全撤 被指「空城計」讓示威者闖入 盧偉聰否認刻意設陷阱. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/佔領立法會-警突全撤-被指-空城計-讓示威者闖入-盧偉聰否認刻意設陷阱/>

On 12 June, tens of thousands of people flooded to Central Government Complex (CGC) area and occupied the major thoroughfares outside the LegCo Complex and in Admiralty from morning to midnight, almost bringing the traffic between the east and west side of Hong Kong to a standstill during this period. As the Government did not withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill by the deadline of 15:00, violent protesters hurled bricks, iron rods and other hard objects at police officers guarding cordon lines surrounding CGC.

9.4 Between 12 June and 1 July, a number of significant events took place. On 15 June, the Chief Executive announced that the Government had decided to suspend the Fugitive Offenders Bill.² On Sunday 16 June, Civil Human Rights Front (CHRF) launched another procession with some two million people, on CHRF's estimate³, flooding the streets. Despite the large turnout, the procession concluded peacefully at CGC without any clashes.⁴ On 17 June, the Police management assured the public that those had not engaged in any violent acts during the Public Order Events (POEs) on 12 June need not worry about committing a riot offence.⁵ On 18 June and 19 June, the Chief Executive and the Secretary for Security (S for S) publicly apologised for the Government deficiencies in processing the Fugitive Offenders Bill.⁶ On the nights of 21 June and 26 June, several hundred to several thousand protesters laid siege to Police Headquarters (PHQ) after taking part in rallies earlier. The Police did not take any dispersal action and only stood guard inside PHQ, allowing the protesters to disperse in their own time. There was no physical confrontation between the protesters and the Police on both occasions, although the exterior of PHQ was defaced with slogans and CCTV cameras were disabled or actually broken; laser lights were also used to shine on police officers inside PHQ who could be seen from the street. Police officers and civilians inside PHQ were unable to leave till the early hours of the following morning after the siege.⁷ The POEs concluded,

² The Government of HKSAR Press Release (2019-06-15). Opening remarks by CE at media session. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/15/P2019061500707.htm>

³ Police figure: 338 000

⁴ SCMP (2019-06-16). As it happened: A historic day in Hong Kong concludes peacefully as organisers claim almost 2 million people came out in protest against the fugitive bill. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014695/sea-black-hong-kong-will-march-against-suspended>

⁵ News.gov.hk (2019-06-17). Police chief clarifies "riot" term. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/eng/2019/06/20190617/20190617_224726_031.html

⁶ Government Press Releases (2019-06-18). Opening remarks by CE at media session (with photos/video).

Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/18/P2019061800812.htm?fontSize=1>

Government Press Releases (2019-06-19). Transcript of remarks by S for S at media session. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/19/P2019061900772.htm?fontSize=1>

⁷ Ming Pao (2019-06-21). 【逃犯條例·不斷更新·短片】接近凌晨零時 警總外人潮未散. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190621/s00001/1561076224064/> 【逃犯條例-不斷更新-短片】接近凌晨零時-警總外人潮未散

SCMP (2019-06-21). Hong Kong extradition bill protesters besiege police headquarters into Friday night after day of mobile rallies. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015614/hong-kong-extradition-bill-protesters-besiege-police>

with no violent incidents or clashes between the protesters and the Police.⁸

9.5 It was against this background that the events on 1 July unfolded. A Chronology of the events on this day appears as Annex to this Chapter.

Events on 1 July

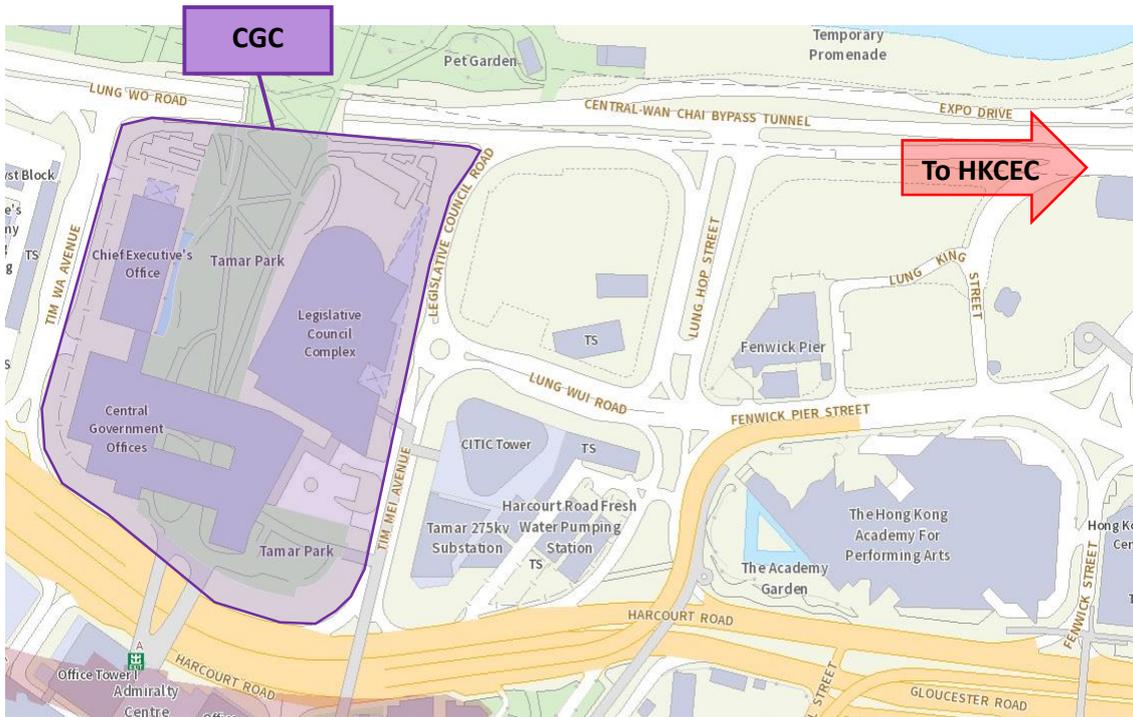
9.6 1 July was the anniversary of the establishment of HKSAR. A number of events were organised for the day. The flag-raising ceremony and celebrations were held at the Golden Bauhinia Square and Hong Kong Convention and Exhibition Centre (HKCEC) respectively that morning. Similar to previous years, CHRF also launched the 1 July procession from Victoria Park to CGC that afternoon. Since 29 June, the Police had received intelligence that some protesters had planned to disrupt the flag-raising ceremony, block the major thoroughfares near HKCEC and mount attacks on the LegCo Complex in order to press the Government to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The Police deployed around 350 officers to secure the Golden Bauhinia Square and HKCEC, 1 100 officers to manage the 1 July procession and 200 police officers to defend inside the LegCo Complex.

9.7 The Police adopted a two-tier command structure to run these operations. The policing objectives on 1 July for protection of CGC did not change from those on 9 June and 12 June, i.e. to protect the integrity of CGC, namely to ensure that CGC could function as intended and persons using CGC are safe. Unauthorised entry into CGC and violent or illegal acts to impair the functioning of CGC would not be tolerated. The policing approach was, as before, to prevent the preventable, manage the unpreventable and engage the unacceptable.⁹

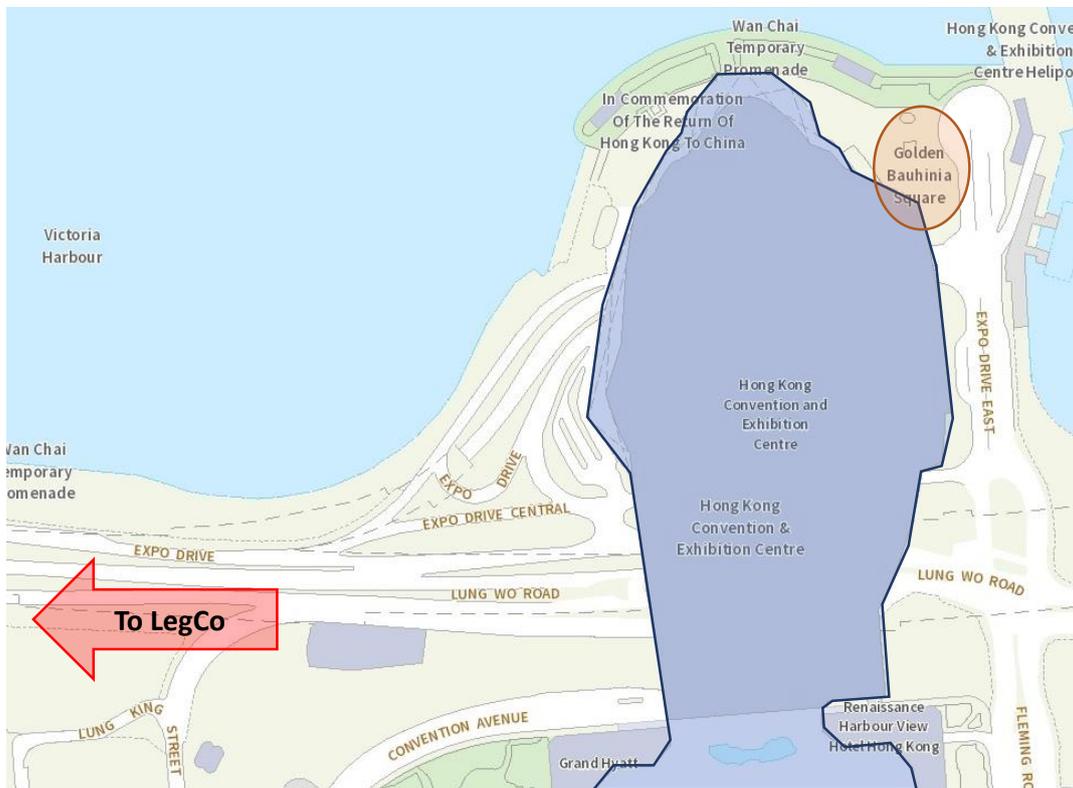
9.8 HKCEC is about 600 metres from the LegCo Complex. Connecting the two complexes are Lung Wo Road along the waterfront, and Lung Wui Road extending to Fenwick Pier Street and Convention Avenue. Given their proximity to CGC, these roads together with Harcourt Road and other thoroughfares in Admiralty were targets for frequent blockade by protesters on 9 June and 12 June (see Maps 9-1 and 9-2).

⁸ SCMP (2019-06-21). As it happened: How Hong Kong extradition bill protesters continued siege of police headquarters into Friday night. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015463/hong-kong-extradition-bill-protesters-occupy-road-leading>
SCMP (2019-06-26). Siege of Hong Kong police headquarters ends without clashes after 6-hour drama by extradition bill protesters. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3016238/hong-kong-police-under-siege-again-protesters-surround>

⁹ Source: HKPF



Map 9-1: CGC area and around
(Source of base map: Lands Department)



Map 9-2: HKCEC, Golden Bauhinia Square and around
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

9.9 In the small hours of 1 July, protesters started gathering outside the LegCo Complex. They later walked over to HKCEC and occupied Lung Wo Road, Lung Wui Road and Fenwick Pier Street near HKCEC. In the early morning, there were sporadic clashes between some protesters and the Police at these spots. According to the Police, they withdrew from these areas around 10:44 to avoid confrontation. The protesters continued to occupy those roads.

9.10 Around 13:17, some protesters started using metal rods and a cart loaded with objects to smash the glass panels repeatedly near Members' Entrance 2 of the LegCo Complex (see Graphic 9-1). They managed to break the glass but the police officers standing guard inside successfully warded them off. As a result of the events at the LegCo Complex, at 14:45 CHRF changed the finishing point of the procession from CGC to Central. At 14:54, some violent protesters at the LegCo Complex threw unknown objects emitting powdery smoke towards police officers. Some officers reported to have been injured by the powders, causing them breathing difficulties and redness on their skin. Fire Services Department (FSD) later examined the unknown objects and confirmed at 17:30 that the powders contained acidic and poisonous substances.



Graphic 9-1: CGC area, with indications of CGO, LegCo Complex and its Members' Entrance 2, Public Entrance 1 and the Designated Demonstration Area
(Source of base image: SCMP)

9.11 Around 17:00, protesters moved to Public Entrance 1 and tried to smash the glass panels there (see Graphic 9-1). Around 17:30, they broke the glass panel and at around 21:00 pried open the roller shutter behind the glass panel. They then threw or shot some objects that emitted a billowing white powdery smoke at the police officers inside. As a result, the police

officers inside the LegCo Complex retreated to the adjacent Central Government Offices (CGO), leaving the LegCo Complex unguarded. After entering the LegCo Complex, the violent protesters remained inside for about three hours, causing very substantial damage with a subsequent repair cost of about \$40 million.¹⁰ The Police took dispersal action in the vicinity of the LegCo Complex around midnight, by which time most of the protesters had left the LegCo Complex.

9.12 A total of 20 police officers were injured on 1 July. Hospital Authority did not record any casualty in relation to the incident on 1 July.

9.13 As at 29 February 2020, the Police had arrested 44 persons (39 male and five female) in connection with the incident on 1 July for various offences, including “Unlawful Assembly”, “Riot”, “Assault on Police Officer”, “Obstructing Police Officer”, “Wounding with Intent”, “Possession of Instruments Fit for Unlawful Purposes”, “Possession of Part I Poison”, “Failing to Carry HKID Card”, “Criminal Damage”, “Conspiracy to Criminal Damage”, “Offence by Persons Entering or Remaining in Precincts of Chamber”, and “Endangering Safety of Person or Property under Section 48 of Cap 448C (Air Navigation (Hong Kong) Order)”. Among them, 13 persons had been charged in Court pending trial, 23 were still under police investigation and eight had been released.

9.14 The storming of the LegCo Complex on 1 July was an unprecedented event. Some media reports accused the Police of using an “empty city strategy (空城計)” to deliberately entice protesters to enter and vandalise the LegCo Complex.¹¹ The public also questioned the Police tactics and deployment to defend the LegCo Complex on 1 July, which were substantially different from those on 9 June and 12 June.

Sources of Information

9.15 For the purpose of its study of events on 1 July, the IPCC has scrutinised the following materials:

- (a) Documents provided by the Police in respect of police deployment and operation, prior intelligence received, use of police weapons and casualties involved in the incident day.

¹⁰ RTHK (2019-10-18). 梁君彥稱立法會維修費約4千萬 下星期三發黃色警示. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1484918-20191008.htm>

¹¹ The Stand News (2019-07-02). 【佔領立法會】警突全撤 被指「空城計」讓示威者闖入 盧偉聰否認刻意設陷阱. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/佔領立法會-警突全撤-被指-空城計-讓示威者闖入-盧偉聰否認刻意設陷阱/>

- (b) Operational Orders related to Operation TIDERIDER provided by the Police.
- (c) Information obtained from meetings with the Police.
- (d) Footage recorded by the Police pertaining to the 1 July operations. A total of six video clips of one hour and four minutes long were viewed.
- (e) News reports and news footage produced by different television companies, newspapers and media. A total of 68 news reports and 138 video reports of 120 hours long were examined.
- (f) Footage and photos provided by the public in response to IPCC's appeal.
- (g) Press statements obtained from the websites of Information Services Department (*news.gov.hk* and *info.gov.hk*), the Police (*police.gov.hk*) and LegCo (*legco.gov.hk*) concerning the incidents on 1 July.
- (h) CITIC Tower CCTV footage provided by Property management of CITIC Tower to the IPCC, including 141 CCTV clips consisting about 152 hours in relation to 1 July.
- (i) Information obtained from a site visit to the LegCo Complex by the IPCC Secretariat staff.

The Events

Events between 12 June and 1 July

9.16 After 12 June, a number of significant events took place before 1 July. They are as follows:

- After 12 June, the public continued to call for the withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill. CHRF organised another public procession on 16 June and appealed to people to show up to voice their condemnation of the Fugitive Offenders Bill.
- On 15 June, in view of general public sentiments against the Fugitive Offenders Bill, the Chief Executive announced that the Government had decided to suspend the

Fugitive Offenders Bill.¹²

- On 16 June, CHRF launched a public procession walking from Victoria Park to CGC (see Image 9-1). According to CHRF's estimate, two million took part in the procession. Despite the Chief Executive's announcement on 15 June, some members of the public were still worried that the Government would revive the Fugitive Offenders Bill in the future.¹³ There were also strong public sentiments against the Police for using force on the protesters on 12 June and characterising the situation that day as a riot. In the public procession, some protesters demanded the Government to withdraw the Fugitive Offenders Bill, the Police to retract the characterisation of the incident on 12 June as a riot, the Police to account for their excessive use force on 12 June, and the unconditional release of those arrested on 12 June. The procession was generally peaceful apart from some hundreds of protesters remaining in the area outside CGC after the event and occupying Harcourt Road from midnight to the early hours on the following day. There was no confrontation between the protesters and the Police.¹⁴



Image 9-1: CHRF procession held on 16 June 2019

(Image source: HK01)

¹² The Government of HKSAR Press Release (2019-06-15). Opening remarks by CE at media session. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/15/P2019061500707.htm>

¹³ Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-06-17). 陳景生:政府不撤回修訂逃犯條例不智. Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2164248/陳景生%3A政府不撤回修訂逃犯條例不智>

¹⁴ SCMP (2019-06-16). As it happened: A historic day in Hong Kong concludes peacefully as organisers claim almost 2 million people came out in protest against the fugitive bill. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3014695/sea-black-hong-kong-will-march-against-suspended>

- On 17 June, the Police management clarified that the remarks made on the riot on 12 June were aimed only at those whose behaviour amounted to riotous acts. Other protesters who took part in the public order events but did not engage in the violent acts need not worry that they had committed riot (“我當日所說，其實是指某些人的行為已經涉嫌干犯暴動罪，所以當日參與公眾活動的其他示威人士，如沒參加過任何暴力行為，他們不用擔心會觸犯暴動罪。”).¹⁵
- On 18 June and 19 June, the Chief Executive and the S for S openly apologised for Government deficiencies in processing the Fugitive Offenders Bill.¹⁶
- On 19 June, the Federation of Students and five university student unions announced that if the Government did not respond to demands made by the public by 17:00 on 20 June, they would escalate their actions and initiate a non-cooperation movement at 07:00 on 21 June.¹⁷ In support of this call by the student unions, many people dressed in black sat in silence at the designated demonstration area at the LegCo Complex in the small hours of 21 June. By 10:00 that day, more than a thousand people had gathered at the designated demonstration area. At 11:00, the protesters decided to escalate their action and walked out to Tim Mei Avenue and Harcourt Road. They used water-filled barriers (not those used by the Police) and traffic cones to block the eastbound and westbound lanes of Harcourt Road (see Image 9-2). Afterwards, many of them proceeded to PHQ and laid siege. More people later joined the siege of PHQ with thousands of them at its peak (see Image 9-3). Some protesters threw eggs at the building, obscured CCTV cameras installed on the boundary wall and spray-painted slogans on the walls of the building. Laser lights were also shone on police officers visible from the street. The Police did not take any dispersal action but only guarded inside PHQ. Most of the protesters left in the small hours on the following day. Again, the Police did not have any physical confrontation with the protesters.¹⁸

¹⁵ News.gov.hk (2019-06-17). Police chief clarifies "riot" term. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/eng/2019/06/20190617/20190617_224726_031.html

¹⁶ Government Press Releases (2019-06-18). Opening remarks by CE at media session (with photos/video). Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/18/P2019061800812.htm?fontSize=1>
Government Press Releases (2019-06-19). Transcript of remarks by S for S at media session. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201906/19/P2019061900772.htm?fontSize=1>

¹⁷ RTHK (2019-06-19). 大專學界促撤回修例撤暴動定性撤控並追究警方濫用暴力. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1463752-20190619.htm?archive_date=2019-06-19

¹⁸ Ming Pao (2019-06-22). 萬人圍警總 快閃堵政府 3 大樓 G20 前夕冀國際施壓 民陣發起周三中環集會. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190622/s00001/1561141004409/萬人圍警總-快閃堵政府3大樓-g20前夕冀國際施壓-民陣發起周三中環集會>

CBS News (2019-06-22). Hong Kong protesters end police headquarters siege. Retrieved from <https://www.cbsnews.com/news/hong-kong-protesters-end-police-headquarters-siege-today-2019-06-22/>



Image 9-2: On 21 June, protesters used water-filled barriers and traffic cones to block Harcourt Road
(Image source: RTHK)

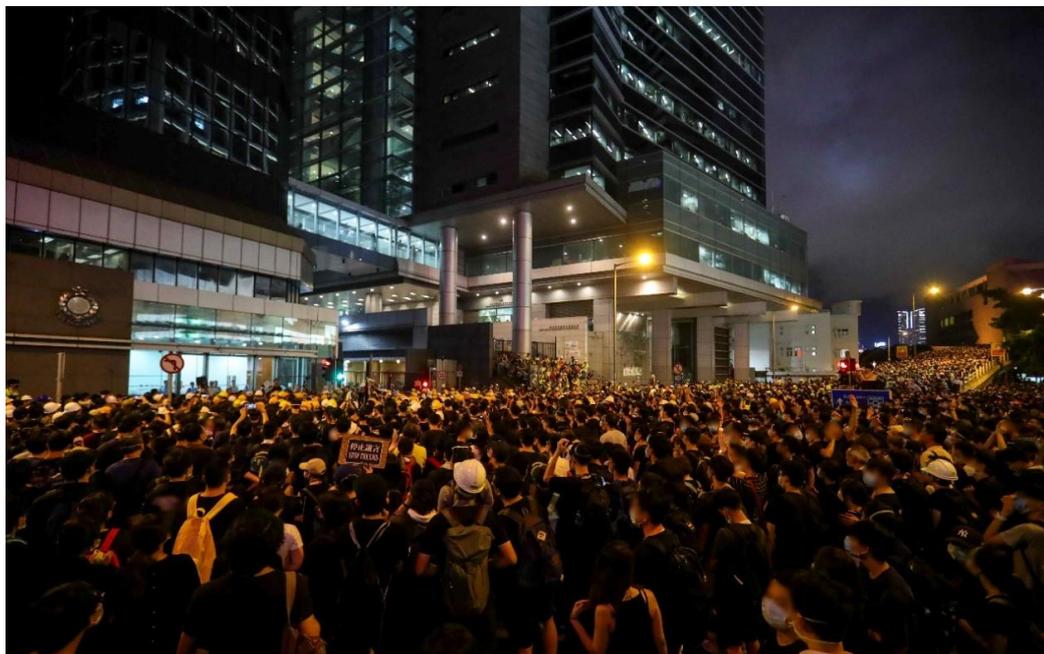


Image 9-3: Protesters laid siege of PHQ on 21 June 2019
(Image source: SCMP)

- On the evening of 26 June, CHRF launched another rally at the Edinburgh Place in Central with around 10 000 participants (see Image 9-4). Participants in the assembly called for the Chief Executive to respond to their demands. When the assembly concluded around midnight, over a thousand participants walked to PHQ and once again

laid siege to the police complex (see Image 9-5). Similar to 21 June, the Police only guarded inside PHQ without taking proactive action. The protesters gradually left the location in the small hours of 27 June. Around 03:00, when only around 200 protesters remained outside PHQ, the Police dispersed them in the direction of Wan Chai. The event concluded peacefully without any violent clash that night.¹⁹



Image 9-4: CHRF rally at Edinburgh Place on 26 June 2019

(Image source: Ming Pao)

¹⁹ Ming Pao (2019-06-27). 喚 G20 關注集會後 千人再圍警總 噴漆撬字擲蛋 警拉閘按兵不動. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/港聞/article/20190627/s00002/1561574385071/喚_g20_關注集會後-千人再圍警總-噴漆撬字擲蛋-警拉閘按兵不動
SCMP (2019-06-26). Siege of Hong Kong police headquarters ends without clashes after 6-hour drama by extradition bill protesters. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3016238/hong-kong-police-under-siege-again-protesters-surround>



Image 9-5: Protesters laid another siege of PHQ after CHRF rally on 26 June 2019

(Image source: SCMP)

Clashes before the Flag-raising Ceremony

- Around 03:00 of 1 July, hundreds of protesters gathered at the designated demonstration area of the LegCo Complex. Since 04:52, some of the protesters had blocked the roads near the HKCEC, including Lung Wo Road, Lung Wui Road and Fenwick Pier Street. There were stand-offs between those protesters and the Police until around 07:10 (see Images 9-6 and 9-7) (source: media reports).





Images 9-6 and 9-7: In the small hours of 1 July, protesters and the Police were in stand-off near the HKCEC
(Image source: RTHK and HK01)

- Around 07:10, there were clashes between some protesters and police officers near Fenwick Pier Street (source: HKPF). Police officers used batons and OC foam to contain the protesters at Harcourt Road near Tim Mei Avenue (see Image 9-8). From 07:30 onwards, the situation became a stand-off again between the Police and protesters (source: media reports). Some violent protesters threw bricks, balloons containing suspected corrosive liquid and objects emitting smoke at police officers. 14 police officers were injured. At 10:44, police officers were instructed to withdraw (source: HKPF).



Image 9-8: At around 07:20, police officers used OC Foam and batons to disperse protesters
(Image source: HK01)

Charging on the LegCo Complex at Members' Entrance 2

- Around 13:17, some 50 protesters had gathered at the LegCo Complex and started to crash repeatedly into the glass panels at Members' Entrance 2, with a loaded metal cart (see Image 9-9) (source: HKPF and media reports). At 14:51, the protesters succeeded in breaking one of the glass panels. The police officers inside used OC foam on the protesters near the broken glass panel (see Image 9-10) (source: media reports and live video footage). At 14:54, the protesters threw some unknown objects emitting powdery smoke towards police officers. Some officers reported to have been injured by the powder, causing them breathing difficulties and redness on their skin. FSD later arrived and examined the objects (source: HKPF). The protesters there did not force entry but continued to hit other glass panels with hard objects until around 16:10. During the whole process, the police officers remained on guard inside the LegCo Complex behind the glass door at Members' Entrance 2 (source: media reports). At 17:30, FSD confirmed that the powder emitted from the unknown objects contained an acidic and poisonous substance called "P-phenylenediamine dihydrochloride" (source: HKPF).
- At 14:59, the Police formulated a sweeping plan, intending to push the protesters away from the LegCo Complex towards the east. Headquarters Command and Control Centre (HQCCC), however, decided not to execute the sweeping plan (source: HKPF).



Image 9-9: Around 13:17, some protesters started charging the LegCo Complex, including using a metal cart
(Image source: HK01)



Image 9-10: At 14:51, the metal cart used by the protesters broke through one of the glass panels
(Image source: HK01)

CHRF Procession

- At 14:45, the procession organised by CHRF started off at the Victoria Park (source: HKPF). As some protesters were trying to force into the LegCo Complex, CHRF announced that the procession would not finish at CGC. The procession would head straight to Chater Road in Central (see Map 9-3). The head of the procession arrived at the finishing point in Central at 15:52 (source: HKPF). Since 16:10, many protesters started detouring from Queensway and proceeded to the LegCo Complex area (see Image 9-11) (source: media reports). The whole procession concluded at 21:20 (source: HKPF).



Map 9-3: Planned and diverted route of CHRF procession
(Source of base image: SCMP)



Image 9-11: Since 16:10, protesters started detouring from Queensway and proceeded to the LegCo Complex

(Image source: HK01)

Charging on the LegCo Complex at Public Entrance 1, Police Retreat and the Storming of the LegCo Complex

- Around 17:00, over a thousand protesters were in the area outside Public Entrance 1 of the LegCo Complex (see Image 9-12). Many of them started smashing the glass panels at the entrance (source: HKPF and media reports). The Police deployed 200 more officers to the LegCo Complex as reinforcement (source: HKPF).



Image 9-12: At around 17:00, some protesters attacked the glass panels near Public Entrance 1

(Image source: HK01)

- Around 18:30, some of them broke into the building and moved forward to the roller shutter installed right behind their entry point and tried to pry open the roller shutter (source: HKPF and media reports). Around 400 police officers were on guard inside the building (source: HKPF).
- At 20:39, over 2 000 protesters had gathered outside LegCo Complex. Someone (believed by the Police to be among the protesters) from outside the LegCo Complex tampered with the electricity supply box installed right outside the LegCo Complex and disrupted the power supply to some parts of the building (source: HKPF). Lights suddenly went off in some parts of the building (see Image 9-13) (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).



Image 9-13: At 20:39, lights went off in some parts of the LegCo Complex
(Image source: RTHK)

- At 20:47, the violent protesters had already pried open part of the roller shutter. They threw objects that emitted a powdery smoke through the broken roller shutter into the area where the police officers were on guard (see Image 9-14). HQCCC considered the situation at the LegCo Complex was not suitable for dispersing protesters and instructed officers to retreat at 20:51 (source: HKPF). The police officers left the LegCo Complex through a passage to go to the adjacent CGO (see Image 9-15) (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 9-14: At 20:47, smoke-emitting objects thrown towards the Police inside the LegCo Complex
(Image source: HK01)



Image 9-15: At 20:51, police officers retreated from the LegCo Complex to the adjacent CGO
(Image source: Cable TV)

- At around 21:00, hundreds of protesters entered the LegCo Complex and vandalised the premises (see Images 9-16 to 9-17) (source: media reports).



Image 9-16: At 21:00, violent protesters entered the LegCo Complex
(Image source: Ming Pao)



Image 9-17: After 21:00, violent protesters occupied the LegCo Complex
and vandalised the premises
(Image source: HK01)

- At 21:35, the Police senior management gave instructions for the formulation of a plan for the situation inside the LegCo Complex. Between 22:00 and 22:32, the Police senior management instructed police officers to proceed to the Police College for briefing (source: HKPF).
- At 22:21, the Police announced on the internet that they would conduct dispersal actions very shortly. At 23:40, the Police arrived in the vicinity of the LegCo Complex for the dispersal actions (source: HKPF and media reports).
- At 00:02 on 2 July, the Police advanced towards the protesters at Lung Wo Road with a black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE”. Violent protesters threw bricks, umbrellas, hard objects and eggs at the Police. The Police started to disperse the protesters in the vicinity of the LegCo Complex with rounds of tear gas fired near Lung Wui Road and Lung Wo Road (see Image 9-18) (source: HKPF). The violent protesters inside the LegCo Complex started to leave. They and other protesters retreated to Admiralty Centre via Tim Mei Avenue and Harcourt Road. Up to around 00:41, protesters started to disperse and leave Admiralty area (source: HKPF). After that, the Police entered the LegCo Complex around 01:00. All the protesters had already left (source: media reports).



Image 9-18: At 00:02 of 2 July, the Police fired tear gas to disperse the protesters in the LegCo area
(Image source: HK01)

Complaints against Police

9.17 The incident on 1 July did not give rise to any Reportable Complaint (RC) but there were ten Notifiable Complaints (NCs). The ten NCs include two about excessive use of force on the protesters; two about the Police failure to take appropriate action to stop the protesters from damaging the LegCo Complex; one about inappropriately conducting stop and search on citizens and vehicles; and one about failing to display insignia by some police officers. The remaining four were about other improper police demeanours such as being impolite to protesters.

Police Response

9.18 In response to the events of this day, the Police management had made various observations to the IPCC. The Police response is set out below:

9.19 The plan of the Police was to defend from inside the LegCo Complex. There was no plan to do sweeping outside the LegCo Complex as 1 July was a public holiday and there was no meeting and no staff working in the LegCo Complex. This was unlike the situation of 12 June where there was on-going business with a meeting scheduled in LegCo.

9.20 Two major events, namely the flag-raising ceremony at the Golden Bauhinia Square and the public procession staged by the CHRF, were held in the morning and afternoon respectively. Since 29 June, there had been heated online discussions summoning protesters to replace the national flags with black flags, prohibit guests and officials from attending the flag-raising ceremony and mount attacks to iconic locations such as CGC, Government House, PHQ, and Liaison Office of the Central People's Government, etc.

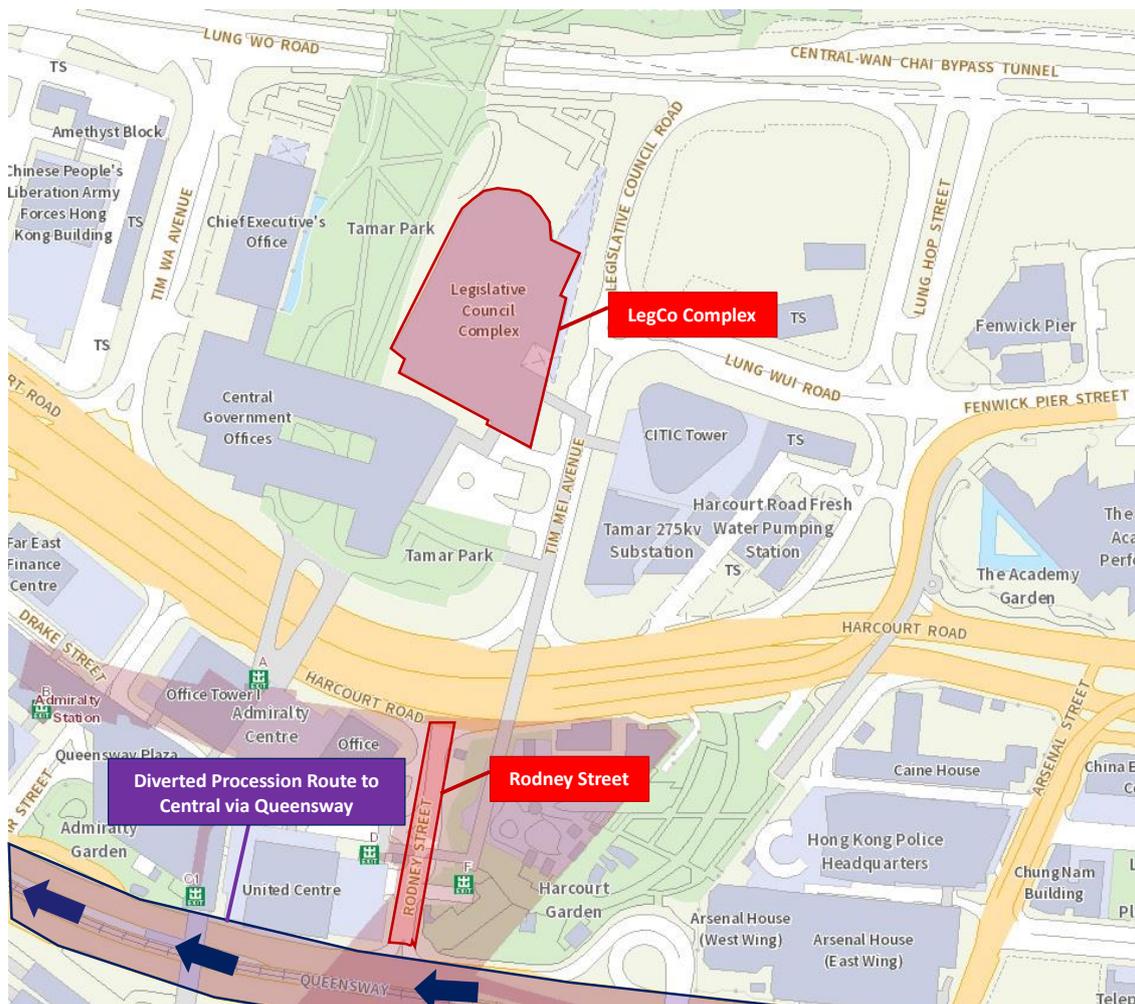
9.21 Due to the heated discussions on prohibiting or disrupting the flag-raising ceremony, the Government arranged sea routes for the officials, guests and staff to proceed to the Golden Bauhinia Square. Manpower from six local police districts was therefore deployed to safeguard the assembly points for the attendants. Marine Police were deployed to safeguard the waters near Golden Bauhinia Square and the coastal area. Police resources were tied up as protesters started their action early in the morning to disrupt the flag-raising ceremony.

9.22 At 13:17, many protesters surrounded the LegCo Complex and they started to damage the glass entrance and threw smoke bombs of unknown substances at police officers who were guarding inside the Complex. The number of protesters around CGC increased rapidly. However, the presence of reporters and LegCo Members caused significant difficulties in mounting immediate dispersal or arrest action. Such action might trigger the escalation of violence by the protesters that would endanger the reporters, LegCo Members and

other public members there.

9.23 At around 14:54, some violent protesters used ‘smoke bombs’ to attack police officers defending the LegCo Complex. Although the Police reinforcement was ready for sweeping, around 150-200 protesters started to block Harcourt Road at 15:08. Information revealed that some protesters would attack Government House and PHQ. Subsequently, at around 15:52, the procession reached Central area and the number of participants rapidly rose to 38 000 at 16:30. Meanwhile, ambulance and FSD officers arrived at CGC to convey injured police officers to hospital and to examine the suspicious gas or powder from ‘smoke bombs’. FSD later found the powder from ‘smoke bombs’ contained an acidic and poisonous substance called ‘P-phenylenediamine dihydrochloride’.

9.24 There were already a large number of protesters occupying Lung Wo Road, Tim Mei Avenue, Lung Wui Road and the section of Harcourt Road outside Admiralty Centre (see Map 9-4). They were subsequently joined by over tens of thousands protesters detoured from the procession route at Rodney Street upon incitation by protesters. If the Police conducted the sweeping operation, police officers could be trapped in the intersection of Tim Mei Avenue and Harcourt Road and might trigger off a major battle with more protesters flooding into the area from the Causeway Bay/ Wanchai direction. Having regard to public safety, HQCCC decided against sweeping action. It was assessed that any escalation of violence might endanger innocent people like peaceful protesters, FSD officers, ambulance officers and reporters at the scene. Hence, the Police did not take dispersal or arrest action in that situation.



Map 9-4: CGC area, Rodney Street and the diverted CHRF procession route

(Source of base map: Lands Department)

9.25 At around 20:51, over 3 000 protesters were gathering at the designated demonstration area of the LegCo Complex. They besieged the LegCo Complex and attempted to forcibly enter the building, while thousands of other protesters remained around CGC. The crowd continued to build up as the protesters of the CHRF procession continuously joined in after reaching their destination. There were only two options left: to stay and protect the building; or to withdraw. If the officers were to stay and protect the building, they could only use batons to disperse the crowd which might cause serious injuries. In the indoor environment, the Police could not use the same forms of force for controlling a situation in more open space. The situation got worse as some protesters had tampered with the electrical box of the LegCo Complex and tried to cut off the electricity supply causing some lights to go off. Given the power failure, it was not known whether the fire service installation remained functional. The area was a closed area without good ventilation so that ‘smoke bombs’ thrown by protesters might endanger officers on the spot. Having considered the escalated violent tactics of the protesters and the limitations of the local environment, police officers retreated

from the LegCo Complex for the officers' safety and avoidance of severe casualties.

IPCC Observations

9.26 The IPCC notes the Police response at paragraphs 9.18 to 9.25 and also that the protesters did not target the LegCo Complex between 12 June and 1 July amid the Government's suspension of the Fugitive Offenders Bill:

- (a) After the announcement made by the Chief Executive on 15 June about suspending the Fugitive Offenders Bill, on 18 June and 19 June, the Chief Executive and S for S had publicly apologised for the Government deficiencies in processing the Fugitive Offenders Bill.
- (b) After the clash on 12 June at the LegCo Complex, the violent protesters did not target the LegCo Complex.
- (c) Even though the 16 June procession had an estimated turnout of two million²⁰, it concluded at CGC without any violent incident.
- (d) The sit-in rally on 21 June at the designated demonstration area at the LegCo Complex was peaceful. During and after the event, the protesters made no attempt to enter the LegCo Complex or cause any damage to it. Instead, the protesters laid siege to PHQ.
- (e) After the rally on 26 June, the protesters again went to PHQ instead of CGC. The protesters did not target the LegCo Complex.
- (f) 1 July was a public holiday and annual celebration day. All Government officials and LegCo Members were invited to attend the celebration at the HKCEC.

9.27 The IPCC takes note of the Police response that the Police deployments for the defence of the LegCo Complex were the result of intelligence based risk assessment, and that the tactics adopted were the result of changing circumstances faced by the Police on that day. But unfortunately, the risk assessment had turned out to be flawed. The primary objective of Operation TIDERIDER was ensuring the integrity of the LegCo Complex. It is regrettable that this objective was not achieved. The IPCC considers that insufficient thought was given to the vulnerability of the building to a successful break-in, which did happen later that day, resulting in serious vandalism of the interior and internal facilities of the building. With

²⁰ Police figure: 338 000

hindsight, the objective of protecting the LegCo Complex could have been achieved had the Police has taken early measures to contain and protect the LegCo Complex, such as utilising stronger protective barriers. It is observed that this has now been done (see Images 9-19 & 9-20).

Recommendations by IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance

9.28 The IPCC recommends that, based on the lessons learnt from this episode, the Police management should conduct the following reviews:

- (a) The Police ability to mobilise and allocate manpower to deal with several major POEs simultaneously;
- (b) The Police ability for timely assessment (including ability to collect intelligence) and identification of potentially risky targets including those of symbolic or strategic importance to the HKSAR, in particular the LegCo Complex, in the light of possible escalation of violent protests;
- (c) The Police ability to assess risk (including identification and evaluation of potential vulnerability) and identify risk mitigation of each major potential target, for instance, the glass panels and doors and the electricity supply box at the LegCo Complex, better utilisation of stronger protective barriers, such as water-filled barriers that had been deployed during the visit of the Vice Premier in 2011 and subsequently deployed on 21 July and thereafter (see Images 9-19 & 9-20);
- (d) Risk mitigation measures identified for each target at risk and regularly review in the light of changing circumstances;
- (e) The strategic effectiveness of setting up cordon lines inside the LegCo Complex as opposed to outside the Complex, allowing the external perimeter of the building to be breached and refraining from taking dispersal action until midnight; and
- (f) The general tactics to lessen confrontation, where protection of targets at risk are concerned.



Image 9-19: Water-filled barriers at LegCo Complex on 1 October
(Image source: *Ming Pao*)



Image 9-20: Water-filled barriers outside Mong Kok Police Station on 30 September
(Image source: *RTHK*)

ANNEX

CHRONOLOGY – MONDAY 1 JULY 2019

Key Incidents

- | | |
|------------------|--|
| A. 03:00 – 10:44 | Clashes in the morning |
| B. 13:17 – 16:10 | Charging the LegCo Complex at Members' Entrance 2 |
| C. 14:45– 21:20 | CHRF Procession |
| D. 17:00– 01:00 | Charging the LegCo Complex at Public Entrance 1,
Police Retreat and the storming of the LegCo Complex |

Chronology of Events*A. Clashes in the morning*

Time (Approx.)	Incident
03:00	<p>Hundreds of protesters gathered at the designated demonstration area of the LegCo Complex. They raised a darkened version of the HKSAR flag in place of the national flag outside LegCo (source: media reports¹).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
04:52	<p>Protesters blocked Lung Wo Road, Lung King Street and roads around the HKCEC with metal barricades, rubbish containers and other obstacles. The Police gave warning and urged the protesters to leave. Meanwhile, the Police with shields advanced towards the protesters along Lung Wo Road (source: media reports²).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>(Image source: Ming Pao and HK01)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
04:59	<p>The Police raised a yellow flag saying “Police Cordon Do Not Cross” near the HKCEC (source: media reports³).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
05:41	<p>Protesters were in stand-off with the Police at the junction of Lung Wui Road and Fenwick Pier Street. The Police raised a red warning flag asking protesters to stop charging. Staying 50 metres away from the Police, protesters held up umbrellas and faced off against the Police (source: media reports⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
07:10	<p>There were clashes between some protesters and police officers near Fenwick Pier Street (source: HKPF). Objects were thrown towards the Police. In response, the Police used batons and pepper spray to push the protesters back towards Lung Wui Road (source: media reports⁵). An officer reported to have been injured by a brick thrown towards him at Lung Wui Road / Lung Hop Street at around 07:22 (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
07:22 – 07:30	<p>The Police in Harcourt Road used batons and pepper spray to disperse the crowd while protesters shielded themselves with umbrellas. From 07:30 onwards, the situation became a stand-off again between the Police and protesters (source: media reports⁶).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page and Ming Pao)</i></p>
07:40	<p>Police cordon lines were set up at various locations in the area, including Harcourt Road, CITIC Tower (facing LegCo), Lung Hop Road / Lung Wo Road (facing North), etc. (source: HKPF).</p>
07:49	<p>Police officers started to push forward towards protesters at Harcourt Road. Protesters started to move backwards towards Admiralty (source: media reports⁷).</p>
07:58	<p>Police officers were standing by at Harcourt Road and Fenwick Street (source: media reports⁸).</p>
08:00	<p>Around 12 officers were reported injured by balloons containing suspected corrosive liquid at Harcourt Road (source: HKPF).</p>
08:41	<p>Protesters at Lung Hop Street retreated to Lung Wo Road (source: media reports⁹).</p>
08:55	<p>An officer was reported injured by an unknown smoke emitting object thrown towards the Police cordon line at Lung Wui Road (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
10:30	<p>Protesters subdued a man who took photos of them near Lung Wui Road (source: media report¹⁰).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Sing Tao Daily)</i></p>
10:44	<p>HQCCC instructed that police manpower at HKCEC could withdraw (source: HKPF).</p>

B. Charging the LegCo Complex at Members' Entrance 2

Time (Approx.)	Incident
13:17 onwards	<p>Some protesters attempted to break into the LegCo Complex at Members' Entrance 2, including charging at the glass panel with rods and a metal cart. Several lawmakers tried to persuade the protesters to stop their action but in vain. In the meantime, hundreds of police officers had their shields raised were standing inside the LegCo Complex (source: media reports¹¹).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
13:30 - 14:45	<p>Various Police units (including PTU and EU coys) were mobilised to CGC (source: HKPF).</p>
13:51	<p>Protesters threw smoke emitting objects to the police cordon inside the LegCo Complex (source: HKPF).</p>
14:51	<p>The metal cart used by the protesters broke through one of the glass panels. Police officers in riot gear then discharged pepper spray-based solution at protesters through the shattered glass (source: media reports and live video footage¹²).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
14:54	Protesters threw unknown objects emitting powdery smoke towards the Police stationed inside the LegCo Complex. At 17:30, the FSD confirmed that the powders in the objects contained an acidic and poisonous substance called “P-phenylenediamine dihydrochloride” (source: HKPF).
14:59	The Police formulated a sweeping plan, intending to push the protesters away from the LegCo Complex towards the east. The plan was not executed for safety concern (source: HKPF).
15:08	Around 150-200 protesters blocked Harcourt Road (source: HKPF).
15:24	Police called ambulance as officers were reported to be injured by the smoke emitted from the object thrown in by protesters (source: HKPF).
15:56	Ambulance arrived at CGC (source: HKPF).
16:10	Protesters stopped charging the LegCo Complex. Some of them moved on to Harcourt Road (source: media reports ¹³).

C. *CHRF Procession*

Time (Approx.)	Incident
14:45	CHRF commenced the procession at Victoria Park. Destination changed from Tim Mei Avenue to Chater Road (source: HKPF). This was because some protesters were trying to force into the LegCo Complex (source: media reports ¹⁴).
15:05	CHRF procession reached Causeway Road (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
15:42	CHRF procession reached Southern Playground (source: HKPF).
15:52	The head of the CHRF procession entered Central area (source: HKPF).
16:05	CHRF procession reached Cheung Kong Centre (source: HKPF).
16:10 onwards	<p>Many protesters started detouring from the procession route at Queensway and proceeded to the LegCo Complex area (source: media report¹⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
21:20	The CHRF procession was concluded (source: HKPF).

D. Charging the LegCo Complex at Public Entrance 1, Police Retreat and the storming of the LegCo Complex

Time (Approx.)	Incident
17:00	<p>Thousands of protesters started smashing the glass panels at Public Entrance 1 of the LegCo Complex (source: HKPF and media reports¹⁶). The Police deployed 200 more officers to the LegCo Complex as reinforcement (source: HKPF).</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
17:30	<p>Protesters tried to break the glass doors at Public Entrance 1. A small group of protesters entered the Complex through the main entrance. Simultaneously, police officers with shields and gas masks were standing by inside the Complex, with rifles for rubber rounds, super sock rounds and tear gas canisters ready (source: media reports¹⁷).</p>  <p>(Image source: Ming Pao)</p>
18:00	<p>The LegCo Secretariat issued a Red alert (source: Government¹⁸, LegCo¹⁹ and media reports²⁰).²¹</p>
18:30	<p>Protesters were trying to pry open the roller shutter installed right behind their entry point. Police officers armed with shields and gas masks were standing by at the other side of the gate (source: media reports²²).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: Ming Pao)</i></p>
20:39	<p>Around 2 000 protesters surrounded the LegCo Complex and attempted to break in. Protesters tampered the electricity supply and some premises inside the LegCo Complex had power failure (source: HKPF). Lights suddenly went off in some parts of the building (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage²³).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
20:47	<p>Protesters threw some smoke emitting objects towards the police cordon line through the roller shutter, which had already been prised open by the protesters earlier (source: HKPF and media reports²⁴).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
20:51	<p>Police officers were instructed to retreat (source: HKPF). They left the LegCo through a passage to the adjacent CGO (source: media reports and live video footage²⁵).</p>
21:00	<p>The protesters successfully broke into the LegCo Complex. The protesters stormed in, occupied and vandalised there (source: media reports²⁶).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Ming Pao and HK01)</i></p>
21:35	<p>Police senior management instructed to formulate a plan for the current situation inside LegCo Complex (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:00 - 22:32	Police senior management instructed police officers to go to Police College for briefing (source: HKPF).
22:21	The Police announced on the internet that a dispersal operation would take place around the LegCo Complex shortly (source: HKPF).
23:30	<p>Police’s estimation of number of protesters:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> ● Designated demonstration area & LegCo Square: 2 700 ● Tamar Park: 50 ● Legislative Council Road: 450 ● Tim Mei Avenue: 600 ● Lung Wo Road: 500 ● Harcourt Road: 850 ● Tim Wa Avenue: 50 <p>(source: HKPF)</p>
23:40- 23:58	The Police equipped with shields and batons were seen at Lung Wo Road, Arsenal Street and Fenwick Pier Street (source: HKPF and media reports ²⁷).
00:02 (2 July 2019)	<p>The Police advanced towards the protesters at Lung Wo Road. Black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” was displayed. Protesters threw bricks, umbrellas, hard objects and eggs to the Police. The Police fired rounds of tear gas near Lung Wui Road and Lung Wo Road to disperse the protesters. All protesters started to leave the LegCo Complex. The Police advanced and protesters later retreated to Admiralty area (source: HKPF and media reports²⁸).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>(Image source: Ming Pao and HK01)</i></p>
00:41	Protesters started to disperse and leave Admiralty area (source: HKPF). The Police moved towards the west from Harcourt Road and warned people at the scene to leave in the direction of Admiralty (source: media reports ²⁹).
01:00	All protesters inside LegCo Complex had already left the building before the Police marched in (source: media reports ³⁰).

- ¹ Ming Pao (2019-07-01). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/> 【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防
 HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 七一示威衝擊時序. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178565/七一示威衝擊時序>
 Lion Rock Daily (2019-07-02). 撞門闖入大肆破壞警施催淚彈清場 暴徒蹂躪立法會. Retrieved from <http://www.lionrockdaily.com/2019/07/02/01.pdf>
 Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 日夜連場衝突 最少43傷. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006753498/日夜連場衝突-最少43傷>
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-02). 千人三路作亂 午後籠車衝立會 清晨擾升旗禮. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2027455/日報-港聞-千人三路作亂-午後籠車衝立會>.
 Sky Post (2019-07-02). 示威者佔領立法會 大肆破壞 警凌晨清場. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2389071/示威者佔領立法會 大肆破壞 警凌晨清場>
 Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 示威者佔立會 警催淚彈清場. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006744075/示威者佔立會-警催淚彈清場>
 Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 升旗禮前爆衝突 警驅散示威者. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776345/日報-港聞-升旗禮前爆衝突-警驅散示威者>
 Sing Pao (2019-07-02). 案件列侮辱國旗區旗 警方調查. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=104496>
 Live news video footages of RTHK and Stand News; News video footages of TVB
- ² Ibid
- ³ HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
 RTHK News (2019-07-01). 警方在龍和道舉起黃旗 警告示威者不得越過封鎖線. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1465891-20190701.htm?archive_date=2019-07-01
 News video footage of TVB
- ⁴ RTHK (2019-07-01). 警方向龍匯道一帶示威者舉紅旗 警告不要衝擊警方防線. Retrieved from https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1465893-20190701.htm?archive_date=2019-07-01
- ⁵ Ming Pao (2019-07-01). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/> 【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防
 HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
 Now News (2019-07-01). 【不斷更新】七一升旗禮、酒會及遊行最新消息. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=353737>
 Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 警揮棍噴椒驅金鐘人群. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190702/20718438>
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 七一示威衝擊時序. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178565/七一示威衝擊時序>
 Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 日夜連場衝突 最少43傷. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006753498/日夜連場衝突-最少43傷>
 Sky Post (2019-07-02). 示威者佔領立法會 大肆破壞 警凌晨清場. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2389071/示威者佔領立法會 大肆破壞 警凌晨清場>
 South China Morning Post (2019-07-02). The storming of legco. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3016844/hong-kong-police-clear-protesters-occupying-legislature>
 The Standard (2019-07-02). Legco occupied. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=209173&sid=11>
 Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 被撒不明液有毒粉末 15警送院. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006753357/被撒不明液-有毒粉末-15警送院>

- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 警稱遭擲不明液體 13 同僚受傷. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/articlePrint/id/2153760>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 林鄭復出 承諾施政風格變更開放包容 七一升旗首移室內觀禮 官員乘船到場避示威. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/articlePrint/id/2178569>.
- Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 升旗禮前爆衝突 警驅散示威者. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776345/日報-港聞-升旗禮前爆衝突-警驅散示威者>
- Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 皮膚紅腫灼傷 不明液體襲擊 13 警送院. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776348/日報-港聞-皮膚紅腫灼傷-不明液體襲擊 13 警送院>
- Live news video footage of TVB, Now TV, Cable TV, RTHK, Apple Daily and Stand News
- ⁶ Ibid
- ⁷ Ming Pao (2019-07-02). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3 人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3 人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防>
- Live news video footages of Now TV and Apple Daily
- ⁸ Ibid
- ⁹ Ming Pao (2019-07-02). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3 人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3 人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防>
- HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6 月 30 日至 7 月 2 日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6 月 30 日至 7 月 2 日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
- ¹⁰ HK01 (2019-07-01). 【逃犯條例】被揭發近距離拍攝示威者 一男捉手機另一男速逃. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/346773/逃犯條例-被揭發近距離拍攝示威者-一男捉手機另一男速逃>
- Ming Pao Daily News (2 July 2019). 日夜連場衝突 最少 43 傷. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006753498/日夜連場衝突-最少 43 傷>
- News video footages of TVB and Cable TV
- ¹¹ Ming Pao (2019-07-01). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3 人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3 人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防>
- HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6 月 30 日至 7 月 2 日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6 月 30 日至 7 月 2 日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
- Now News (2019-07-01). 【不斷更新】七一升旗禮、酒會及遊行最新消息. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=353737>
- Am730 (2019-07-02). 示威者鐵籠車撞立會. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/示威者鐵籠車撞立會-178631>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-02). 暴徒爆玻璃攻佔立會大肆破壞 特首深夜見傳媒強烈譴責. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-07/02/content_1145530.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 七一示威衝擊時序. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178565/七一示威衝擊時序>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 示威者撞爆玻璃牆 闖立會大破壞 一度佔會議廳噴黑區徽 警凌晨施催淚彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178563/示威者撞爆玻璃牆+闖立會大破壞>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-07-02). 撞門闖入大肆破壞警施催淚彈清場 暴徒蹂躪立法會. Retrieved from <http://www.lionrockdaily.com/2019/07/02/01.pdf>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-02). 千人三路作亂 午後籠車衝立會 清晨擾升旗禮. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2027455/日報-港聞-千人三路作亂-午後籠車衝立會>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 絕望籠罩 青年衝擊立會. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190702/20718434>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 四衝擊行動 由示威者投票選擇. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190702/20718614>
- Eastweek (2019-07-03). 23 日內 5 次 示威新常態 激進死士暴力衝擊. Retrieved from <https://eastweek.my-magazine.me/main/88910>
- Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 攻陷立會 激進示威者大肆破壞. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776333/日報-港聞-激進示威者大肆破壞-攻陷立會>
- Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 大錘鐵通襲立會 鐵籠車毀玻璃牆. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776339/日報-港聞-大錘鐵通襲立會-鐵籠車毀玻璃牆>

- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-02). 泛民議員 圖阻衝擊不果. Retrieved from https://paper.hket.com/article/2389077/泛民議員_圖阻衝擊不果
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 示威者佔立會 警催淚彈清場. Retrieved from https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006744075_示威者佔立會-警催淚彈清場
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 「不施壓 政府當你無到」 示威者投票衝立會 學者：入到又點？ Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006750191/「不施壓-政府當你無到」-示威者投票衝立會-學者-入到又點>
- Oriental Daily News (2019-07-02). 暴力蔓延 政界促地區戒嚴. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190702/00176_006.html
- Sing Pao (2019-07-02). 示威者專業衝擊立會 15名警務人員受傷 鐵籠車撞玻璃擲通渠水彈. Retrieved from http://www.mingpaocanada.com/tor/htm/News/20190701/taa1_r.htm
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-02). 「化武」襲擊 15警員受傷 示威者即製石灰煙霧彈稀釋通渠水. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2027470/日報-港聞-化武-襲擊-15警員受傷>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-02). 全日瘋狂衝擊警隊凌晨平亂 「獨青」闖會議廳塗污區徽掛龍獅旗 暴徒攻立會全城憤怒反對派禍首「咪旨意甩身」 Retrieved from http://paper.takungpao.com/resfile/PDF/20190702/PDF/a1_screen.pdf
- Wen Wei Po (2019-07-02). 各界批反對派底暴撥火「助攻」 不勸示威者後退反叫警員「克制」令局面失控須負所有責任. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/07/02/HS1907020013.htm>
- Wen Wei Po (2019-07-02). 煽上街不止暴反對派真禍首 暴力衝擊立會大肆破壞超越法治底線法律界同聲譴責暴徒惡行. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/07/02/HK1907020004.htm>
- Live news video footage of TVB, Now TV, Cable TV, RTHK and Stand News
- ¹² Ibid
- ¹³ SCMP (2019-07-01). A day of unprecedented violence in Hong Kong as protesters storm the Legislative Council and police fire tear gas. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015620/protesters-ram-legislature-hong-kong-marks-tense-handover>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 七一示威衝擊時序. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178565/七一示威衝擊時序>
- Live news video footage of Now TV
- ¹⁴ HK01 (2019-07-01). 【71遊行】警指暴力示威者在政總建議遊行終點 民陣改遮打. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/346802/71_遊行-警指暴力示威者在政總建議遊行終點-民陣改遮打
- In Media (2019-07-01). 民陣七一遊行 終點改遮打道 55萬人參與. Retrieved from <https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1065294>
- ¹⁵ HK01 (2019-07-01). 【七一遊行】民陣：逾55萬人參與遊行 歷來最多 警：高峰期19萬. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/346803/七一遊行-民陣-逾55萬人參與遊行-歷來最多-警-高峰期19萬>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-02). 民陣遊行終點改遮打道支援「口罩黨」. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0702/313595.html>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-02). 民陣「歡迎」離隊「去想去的地方」. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2027482/日報-港聞-民陣-歡迎-離隊-去想去的地方>
- Live news video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV and Now TV.
- ¹⁶ Ming Pao (2019-07-01). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防>
- HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
- Now News (2019-07-01). 【不斷更新】七一遊行及立法會大樓受衝擊. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=353778>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-02). 暴徒爆玻璃攻佔立會大肆破壞 特首深夜見傳媒強烈譴責. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-07/02/content_1145530.html
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 七一示威衝擊時序. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178565/七一示威衝擊時序>
- Live news video footage of TVB, Now TV, Cable TV, RTHK and Stand News.
- ¹⁷ HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>

- Now News (2019-07-01). 【不斷更新】七一遊行及立法會大樓受衝擊. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=353778>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 【引渡惡法】對峙 8 小時示威者全面佔領立會 警先棄守後清場. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190701/59776408>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 絕望籠罩 青年衝擊立會. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190702/20718434>
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 「不施壓 政府當你無到」 示威者投票衝立會 學者：人到又點？ Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006750191/>「不施壓-政府當你無到」-示威者投票衝立會-學者-人到又點
- Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 大錘鐵通襲立會 鐵籠車毀玻璃牆. Retrieved from <https://hd.sheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776339/日報-港聞-大錘鐵通襲立會-鐵籠車毀玻璃牆>
- Live news video footages of TVB, Now TV, Cable TV and Stand News
- ¹⁸ Government Press Release (2019-07-01). LegCo Secretariat issues Red alert. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/01/P2019070100734.htm>
- ¹⁹ LegCo Press Release (2019-07-01). LegCo Secretariat issues Red alert. Retrieved from <https://www.legco.gov.hk/yr18-19/english/press/pr20190701-1.html>
- ²⁰ Ming Pao (2019-07-01). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/>【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防
- SCMP (2019-07-01). A day of unprecedented violence in Hong Kong as protesters storm the Legislative Council and police fire tear gas. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015620/protesters-ram-legislature-hong-kong-marks-tense-handover>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 【引渡惡法】對峙 8 小時示威者全面佔領立會 警先棄守後清場. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190701/59776408>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-07-02). 撞門闖入大肆破壞警施催淚彈清場 暴徒蹂躪立法會. Retrieved from <http://www.lionrockdaily.com/2019/07/02/01.pdf>
- South China Morning Post (2019-07-02). Protests descend into violence for anniversary. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3016839/protesters-storm-and-vandalise-legislative-council-anarchy>
- Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 大錘鐵通襲立會 鐵籠車毀玻璃牆. Retrieved from <https://hd.sheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776339/日報-港聞-大錘鐵通襲立會-鐵籠車毀玻璃牆>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-02). 各界強烈譴責暴力衝擊破壞立會. Retrieved from https://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-07/02/content_1145531.html
- ²¹ When the Red alert is in force, all people should leave the LegCo Complex immediately.
- ²² SCMP (2019-07-01). A day of unprecedented violence in Hong Kong as protesters storm the Legislative Council and police fire tear gas. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015620/protesters-ram-legislature-hong-kong-marks-tense-handover>
- Live news video footages of TVB, Now TV and Cable TV
- ²³ HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
- Live news video footages of RTHK
- ²⁴ HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
- Live news video footages of RTHK, Cable TV and TVB
- ²⁵ Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 示威者撞爆玻璃牆 闖立會大破壞 一度佔會議廳噴黑區 徽 警凌晨施催淚彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178563/示威者撞爆玻璃牆+闖立會大破壞>
- Live news video footages of Cable TV and Now TV
- ²⁶ Ming Pao (2019-07-01). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/>【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防
- HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
- Now News (2019-07-01). 【不斷更新】七一遊行及立法會大樓受衝擊. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=353778>
- Am730 (2019-07-02). 示威者鐵籠車撞立會. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/示>

示威者鐵籠車撞立法會-178631

Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 對峙 8 小時 警先棄守後清場 示威者佔領立法會. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190702/20718608>

China Daily Hong Kong Edition (2019-07-02). Acts of violence draw condemnation. Retrieved from <https://www.chinadailyhk.com/articles/230/165/138/1562006762234.html>

Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-02). 暴徒爆玻璃攻佔立法會大肆破壞 特首深夜見傳媒強烈譴責. Retrieved from http://www.hkcd.com/content/2019-07/02/content_1145530.html

Lion Rock Daily (2019-07-02). 撞門闖入大肆破壞警施催淚彈清場 暴徒蹂躪立法會. Retrieved from <http://www.lionrockdaily.com/2019/07/02/01.pdf>

Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-02). 千人三路作亂 午後籠車衝立法會 清晨擾升旗禮. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2027455/日報-港聞-千人三路作亂-午後籠車衝立法會>

South China Morning Post (2019-07-02). The storming of legco. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3016844/hong-kong-police-clear-protesters-occupying-legislature>

Sky Post (2019-07-02). 示威者佔領立法會 大肆破壞 警凌晨清場 Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2389071/示威者佔領立法會 大肆破壞 警凌晨清場>

South China Morning Post (2 July 2019). Protests descend into violence for anniversary. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3016839/protesters-storm-and-vandalise-legislative-council-anarchy>

The Standard (2019-07-02). Legco occupied. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=209173&sid=11>

Wen Wei Po (2019-07-02). 鐵車鐵馬鐵支爆門毒液毒粉毒手襲警 暴佔立法會真邪惡警方清場彰正義. Retrieved from <http://pdf.wenweipo.com/2019/07/02/a01-20-0702.pdf>

Am730 (2019-07-02). 示威者攻陷立法會蹂躪 防暴警察退守任佔領. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/示威者攻陷立法會蹂躪-防暴警察退守任佔領-178630>

Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 絕望籠罩 青年衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190702/20718434>

Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 攻陷立法會 激進示威者大肆破壞. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776333/日報-港聞-激進示威者大肆破壞-攻陷立法會>

Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-02). 示威者佔領立法會 3 句鐘 大肆破壞 港府強烈譴責暴力 警凌晨清場. Retrieved from <https://paper.hket.com/article/2389122/示威者佔領立法會 3 句鐘 大肆破壞>

Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 3 人堅守立法會 示威者折返抬走 警凌晨多路推進驅散. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006747975/3 人堅守立法會-示威者折返抬走-警凌晨多路推進驅散>

Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 示威者佔立法會 警催淚彈清場. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006744075/示威者佔立法會-警催淚彈清場>

Oriental Daily News (2019-07-02). 七一示威 無法無天 政府棄守 立法會被佔 特區恥辱 萬劫不復. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190702/bkn-20190702033041220-0702_00822_001.html

Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-02). 警總月內三度被圍. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2027458/日報-港聞-警總月內三度被圍>

Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-02). 十多示威者當「死士」衝立法會 Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2027473/日報-港聞-十多示威者當-死士-衝立法會>

Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-02). 全日瘋狂衝擊警隊凌晨平亂 「獨青」闖會議廳塗污區徽掛龍獅旗 暴徒攻立法會全城憤怒反對派禍首「咪旨意甩身」 Retrieved from http://paper.takungpao.com/resfile/PDF/20190702/PDF/a1_screen.pdf

Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-02). 暴徒亂港 無法無天 市民痛心 Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0702/313581.html>

Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-02). 促警方追究及嚴懲暴行. Retrieved from http://today.hkcd.com/content/2019-07/02/content_1145506.html

Live news video footages of RTHK, Now TV, Cable TV, TVB and Stand News.
Video footage from Ta Kung Pao

²⁷ Ming Pao (2019-07-01). 【衝擊立法會·不斷更新·短片】3 人留守立法會會議廳 防暴警軍器廠街佈防. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190701/s00001/1561938076204/> 【衝擊立法會-不斷更新-短片】3 人留守立法會會議廳-防暴警軍器廠街佈防

HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6 月 30 日至 7 月 2 日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from

- <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會> SCMP (2019-07-01). A day of unprecedented violence in Hong Kong as protesters storm the Legislative Council and police fire tear gas. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015620/protesters-ram-legislature-hong-kong-marks-tense-handover>
- Sing Pao (2019-07-02). 武力驅趕 立法會附近回復平靜 防暴警施發催淚彈示威者四散. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=loadpdf&t=news&id=12938>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 七一示威衝擊時序. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178565/七一示威衝擊時序>
- Headline Daily (2019-07-02). 警凌晨清場 催淚彈驅散. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/776336/日報-港聞-警凌晨清場-催淚彈驅散>
- Live news video footages of TVB, Now TV and Cable TV
- ²⁸ Ming Pao (2019-07-02). 【立法會清場·短片】防暴警入立法會 會議廳無示威者 警登小巴查證件. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190702/s00001/1561996952606/【立法會清場-短片】防暴警入立法會-會議廳無示威者-警登小巴查證件>
- HK01 (2019-07-03). 【逃犯條例·6月30日至7月2日政局全覽】示威者衝擊立法會. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/346672/逃犯條例-6月30日至7月2日政局全覽-示威者衝擊立法會>
- SCMP (2019-07-01). A day of unprecedented violence in Hong Kong as protesters storm the Legislative Council and police fire tear gas. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3015620/protesters-ram-legislature-hong-kong-marks-tense-handover>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-02). 對峙8小時 警先棄守後清場 示威者佔領立會. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190702/20718608>
- Sing Pao (2019-07-02). 武力驅趕 立法會附近回復平靜 防暴警施發催淚彈示威者四散. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=loadpdf&t=news&id=12938>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-02). 示威者撞爆玻璃牆 闖立會大破壞 一度佔會議廳噴黑區徽 警凌晨施催淚彈清場. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/politics/article/2178563/示威者撞爆玻璃牆+闖立會大破壞>
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 3人堅守立會 示威者折返抬走 警凌晨多路推進驅散. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006747975/3人堅守立會-示威者折返抬走-警凌晨多路推進驅散>
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-07-02). 示威者佔立會 警催淚彈清場. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190702/s00001/1562006744075/示威者佔立會-警催淚彈清場>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-02). 攻佔立會 塗污區徽 300人大肆破壞 政府強烈譴責. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2027452/日報-港聞-攻佔立會-塗污區徽>
- Live news video footages of RTHK, Now TV, Cable TV, TVB and Stand News.
- ²⁹ Ibid
- ³⁰ Ibid



獨立監察警方處理投訴委員會
Independent Police Complaints Council

Rooms 1006-10, 10/F, China Resources Building,
No. 26 Harbour Road, Wan Chai, Hong Kong

Tel : 2524 3841
Fax : 2524 1801 / 2525 8042
Email : enq@ipcc.gov.hk
Website : www.ipcc.gov.hk



IPCC Website



IPCC YouTube Channel

A Thematic Study by the IPCC
on the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill
since June 2019 and the Police Actions in Response

Volume 3



Independent Police Complaints Council

CONTENTS

VOLUME 3

CHAPTER 10

INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 21 JULY 2019 YUEN LONG

10.1	Introduction	2
10.20	Sources of Information	10
10.21	The Events	11
10.22	Complaints against Police	75
10.25	Police Response	76
10.72	IPCC Observations	86
10.137	Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance	118
	Annex	122

CHAPTER 11

INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 11 AUGUST 2019 KWAI FONG STATION AND TAI KOO STATION

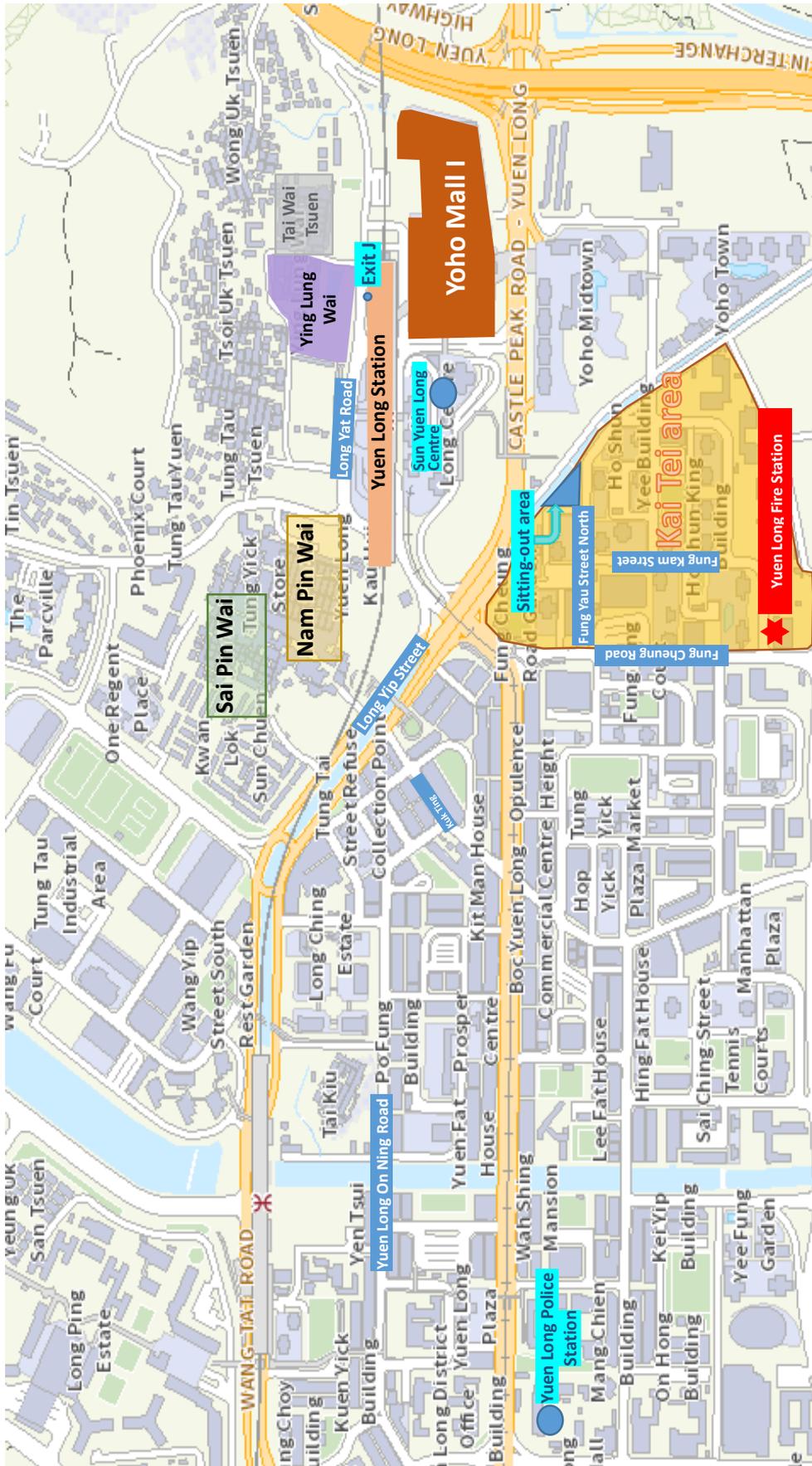
11.1	Introduction	200
11.26	Sources of Information	207
11.27	The Events	207
11.28	Complaints against Police	220
11.35	Police Response	222
11.46	IPCC Observations	224
11.53	Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance	233
	Annex	236

CHAPTER 10**INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 21 JULY 2019
YUEN LONG****Introduction**

10.1 This Chapter deals with the events on Sunday 21 July 2019, widely known as the Yuen Long Incident, which sparked off accusations of collusion between the Police and triads. It intensified resentment against the Police amongst the Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters, adding momentum to the protests. The Yuen Long Incident has given rise to 53 Reportable Complaints (RCs) and 19 Notifiable Complaints (NCs) (see paragraph 10.22 below for details). These complaints are investigated by CAPO and each RC will be monitored by the IPCC with observer(s) assigned to attend interview(s) conducted by CAPO and observe CAPO's collection of evidence. The purpose of this Chapter is to enable the IPCC to inform itself of the facts of the incidents giving rise to these complaints and the context in which these incidents took place, so that the IPCC is in a better position to undertake its function under section 8(1)(a) of the IPCC Ordinance in monitoring and reviewing the investigations of the individual complaints by CAPO. At the same time, the opportunity is taken to make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) under section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance so that complaints from future Police operations may be prevented.

The Geographical Context of Yuen Long and the West Rail Line Yuen Long Station

10.2 Yuen Long, in northwest New Territories, consists of Yuen Long Town, Tin Shui Wai and a number of indigenous villages with close-knit communities. Yuen Long Station on the West Rail Line is situated at Long Yat Road. To its north are six villages, namely Tai Wai Tsuen, Ying Lung Wai, Tsoi Uk Tsuen, Tung Tau Tsuen, Nam Pin Wai and Sai Pin Wai; and to its south are Yoho Mall and Yuen Long Town. Yuen Long Station has nine exits, two connected to Yoho Mall and five leading to the six villages. Yuen Long Station is about 7-minute walk from Fung Yau Street North in Yuen Long Town and about 15-minute walk from Yuen Long Police Station. Situated at the end of Fung Yau Street North is a sitting-out space. The area around Fung Yau Street North and Fung Kam Street, which runs perpendicular to Fung Yau Street North, is commonly known as "Kai Tei" (see Map 10-1)



Map 10-1: Map of Yuen Long Station and its vicinity
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

Events Leading to the Yuen Long Incident

10.3 After the 1 July Incident at the Legislative Council Complex, Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters launched several marches in various districts, in Tuen Mun on Saturday 6 July, Tsim Sha Tsui on Sunday 7 July, Sheung Shui on Saturday 13 July, and Sha Tin on Sunday 14 July. Most of the marches were followed by violent clashes between some protesters and police officers.

10.4 On Saturday 6 July, a few thousand protesters marched in Tuen Mun with a theme “To Liberate Tuen Mun Park” (光復屯門公園). They protested against the lack of action by the authorities to reprove the nuisance from the singing and dancing performances of some middle-aged women commonly known as “Big Aunties” (大媽) in the Park, which attracted many older men from the neighbourhood. Inside Tuen Mun Park, some protesters had verbal exchanges and physical confrontation with some of the “Big Aunties”. The Police helped a “Big Auntie” to leave the park as she feared for her safety. Some protesters criticised the Police for acting in favour of the “Big Aunties”. In the evening, a few hundred protesters surrounded Tuen Mun Police Station and occupied the roads outside. The protesters left only after police officers formed a cordon line outside the station to take dispersal action.¹

10.5 The following day, Sunday 7 July 2019, tens of thousands of protesters marched from Tsim Sha Tsui to West Kowloon Station to proclaim their cause to mainland visitors and to win their support for the protests.² Upon conclusion of the peaceful procession at 19:30, thousands of protesters went “shopping” in Mong Kok where clashes broke out with the Police when the latter took dispersal action. The Police arrested four persons in the clashes.³

-
- ¹ Ming Pao (2019-07-06). 「光復屯門公園」遊行 屯門警署外示威者散去 Retrieved from <https://m.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190706/s00001/1562397458281/> 「光復屯門公園」遊行-屯門警署外示威者散去【多圖】
HK01 (2019-07-06). 【光復屯門公園】逾萬屯門人上街驅走大媽 入夜示威者包圍警署. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/18區新聞/348731/光復屯門公園-逾萬屯門人上街驅走大媽-入夜示威者包圍警署>
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-06). 屯門公園大媽被包圍躲入女廁 阿伯與遊行人士對罵：點解叫人老淫蟲？ Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2394082/屯門公園大媽被包圍躲入女廁阿伯與遊行人士對罵：點解叫人老淫蟲？>
Headline Daily (2019-07-06). 【光復屯門公園】大媽遭狙擊警員護送離開 示威者：勿摸活家禽. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1538424/即時-港聞-光復屯門公園-大媽遭狙擊警員護送離開-示威者-勿摸活家禽>
- ² SCMP (2019-07-07). Mass protest draws tens of thousands to streets of Kowloon in march against Hong Kong extradition bill Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3017620/mass-rally-draws-tens-thousands-streets-kowloon-protest>
- ³ SCMP (2019-07-08). Hong Kong police accused of provoking protesters and failing to wear ID during Mong Kok chaos after extradition bill march Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3017775/hong-kong-police-accused-provoking-protesters-and>

10.6 A week later, on Saturday 13 July, some protesters marched in Sheung Shui — this time with a theme “To Liberate Sheung Shui” (光復上水). They opposed the parallel trading activities in the district, which affected the daily lives of the residents and caused overcrowding on the streets. Shortly after the march, clashes broke out between the protesters and some parallel tradesmen. The Police arrested some protesters. Some other protesters occupied the roads. Clashes broke out when the Police took dispersal action. The crowd was eventually dispersed by night-time. At least ten police officers and 14 civilians were injured.⁴

10.7 The following day, Sunday 14 July, the protesters launched the “Sha Tin Procession” (沙田區大遊行) to walk from Tsang Tai Uk Recreation Ground to the Bus Terminus at East Rail Line Sha Tin Station. Some protesters occupied the roads. Clashes broke out when the Police took action to disperse the protesters. Many protesters ran into New Town Plaza where they had further violent clashes with the Police. News footage revealed scenes of violent protesters laying into police officers who fell behind his team in New Town Plaza. A protester bit off a section of a plainclothes police officer’s finger when police officers subdued him. A total of 11 police officers were injured. According to Hospital Authority, 28 persons were treated at various hospitals in relation to the public order events (POEs) that day.⁵

Public Screening of Videos on Alleged Police Brutality and Subsequent Internet Traffic

10.8 On the evening of 16 July, in the sitting-out area at Fung Yau Street North in Yuen Long, some Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters held a public screening of video clips on alleged

⁴ HK01 (2019-07-14). 【光復上水·多圖多片】從遊行至爆發警民衝突 七小時全程重組
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/351610/光復上水-多圖多片-從遊行至爆發警民衝突-七小時全程重組>

Now TV (2019-07-13). 【不斷更新】市民發起「光復上水」遊行後與警方爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=355281>

Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-13). 警方指多名警員被襲擊受傷 強烈譴責暴力示威者刻意襲擊行為.

Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1043710/即時-香港-警方指多名警員被襲擊受傷-強烈譴責暴力示威者刻意襲擊行為>

Wen Wei Po (2019-07-14). 「光復上水」演暴力 襲警 毀舖 傷人. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/07/14/HS1907140001.htm>

⁵ HK01 (2019-07-15). 【沙田遊行】重組新城市浴血戰始末 包抄式清場變狹路相逢爆衝突.
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/351893/沙田遊行-重組新城市浴血戰始末-包抄式清場變狹路相逢爆衝突>

RTHK (2019-07-14). “Sha Tin extradition protest descends into violence” Retrieved from <https://gbcodes.rthk.hk/TuniS/news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1468352-20190714.htm?spTabChangeable=0>

Stand News (2019-07-14). 【直播·不斷更新】11.5 萬人沙田遊行 警民沙燕橋隔空對峙. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-沙田區大遊行-千計市民參與/>

Ming Pao (2019-07-14). 【逃犯條例·沙田示威】7-14 文字紀錄：下午遊行 晚上新城市廣場衝突 (附短片) (23:59). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190714/s00001/1563088298405/>

【逃犯條例-沙田示威】7-14 文字紀錄-下午遊行-晚上新城市廣場衝突 (附短片)

police brutality in recent POEs. Towards the end of the screening, some people dressed in white confronted the participants of the event. Nonetheless, the heated commotion did not erupt into violence. When police officers arrived, the two parties left. Later that night, messages on the internet began to circulate suggesting the involvement of triads in the incidents that took place in Yuen Long. There were also online posts calling for people to “Liberate Yuen Long” (光復元朗) and to take part in a public meeting to be held in Yuen Long on 21 July in protest against those disrupting the screening on 16 July. In response, some messages were posted on the internet urging local Yuen Long residents to protect their homeland and to expel protesters with warnings of potential violence targeted at protesters. The public meeting planned for 21 July did not take place, however, because most of the people went to a public procession on Hong Kong Island launched by Civil Human Rights Front (CHRF) that day.

Police Preparations for Possible Trouble in Yuen Long

10.9 In view of the online appeals for Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters to take part in a public assembly in Yuen Long on 21 July, which in turn prompted calls to urge local residents to come out to protect their homes, Regional Headquarters of New Territories North (NTN) asked Headquarters Command and Control Centre (HQCCC) on 18 and 19 July for manpower from the regional level to Yuen Long District in case of major confrontation on 21 July. According to the Police, HQCCC risk assessment of a major confrontation in Yuen Long was low, however, as it was observed on the internet that most people would be joining the CHRF procession on Hong Kong Island that day instead. As HQCCC deployed most of the manpower for the operation on Hong Kong Island, Regional Headquarters NTN assigned a platoon of 30 officers of Tuen Mun Tier III level (comprising officers with no Police Tactical Unit (PTU) training) to stand by at the Tuen Mun Police Station for contingency.

10.10 On 21 July, the entire Yuen Long Police District, which comprised Yuen Long Division, Tin Shui Wai Division, and Pat Heung Division, had only 209 officers for policing duty. According to the Police, to prepare for eventualities that day, the Yuen Long Police set up special teams, including:

- (a) District Operations Room/Yuen Long (DOR/YL) with 11 officers to take charge of all contingent operations, under the command of District Commander of Yuen Long (Temporary).
- (b) Quick Response Teams (QRT) with 70 uniformed branch officers, to carry out station defence duty and to handle any incidents of concern, mainly for intervention of confrontation involving moderate level of violence.
- (c) Crime Response Teams (CRT) with 46 officers to verify reports related to the POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill and investigate crime in their assigned areas.

- (d) Spotter Teams (SPT) with 13 officers deployed to various locations around Yuen Long Town to observe and report any irregularity within their areas.
- (e) Crime Yuen Long Headquarters Team (CRM YL HQ Team) with five officers to oversee initial investigation of all crime committed during 21 July in Yuen Long.
- (f) MTR Operation Posts (MTR OP) with eight officers at West Rail Line Yuen Long, Tin Shui Wai, Long Ping and Kam Sheung Road Stations, i.e. two officers at each station, to report directly to DOR/YL any irregularity observed from the MTR Control Room.

10.11 Territory-wide, the Police adopted a three-tier command structure for the operation of 21 July with HQCCC directed by the highest level of the Police management and other senior officers from the Operations Wing. Police operations were, however, focused on Hong Kong Island, while the Regional High Command (HICOM) NTN with the assistance of DOR/YL took charge in Yuen Long. The policing objectives were to prevent violence, maintain law and order, and ensure public safety.



Map 10-2: Map showing key locations on Hong Kong Island and in Yuen Long
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

10.12 On 21 July, the procession organised by CHRF took place as scheduled. According to CHRF's estimate, 430 000 took part in the procession on 21 July while the Police counted 138 000 at its peak. Like most other processions since 1 July, it started peacefully but erupted into violent clashes between protesters and the Police from around 18:30 until midnight. This time, the violent clashes took place outside the Liaison Office of the Central People's Government (LOCPG) in Western District (see Map 10-2) where the protesters substantially escalated their violence in the disturbances, blocking roads, setting objects on fire and defacing the exterior of the building at the LOCPG. In the operation, the Police fired nine rubber rounds, 25 react rounds (i.e. sponge-tipped bullets), and 55 tear gas rounds.

What Happened in Yuen Long on 21 July

10.13 As HQCCC toiled to tackle the disorders in Western District, the situation in Yuen Long had been building up since late afternoon with people dressed in white gathering at Fung Yau Street North. At 22:48, about 70 people dressed in white, some carrying sticks and wooden poles, entered Yuen Long Station. They confronted a group of about 100 people in black outfits inside the station. The two groups hurled verbal abuse at one another. The mutual verbal abuse then degenerated into clashes between the two groups with the glass panel railings that separated them. Among the group in black outfits was a Legislative Council (LegCo) Member.

10.14 The Police 999 Console received numerous reports of assault at Yuen Long Station. At 22:52, three uniformed branch police officers arrived at Yuen Long Station but they found the scale of the commotion beyond their capability, so they left the station to wait for reinforcement in their patrol car after reporting the situation back to their supervisor. At 23:02, as the verbal abuse between the two sides escalated, the people dressed in white jumped over the ticket gates into the paid area to attack those in black outfits. The people in black retreated upwards to the platform, with the people dressed in white giving chase all the way up to the platform and into the compartments of a train which had stopped there and into which the people in black outfits retreated. The people dressed in white attacked the people in black outfits inside the train but alighted as the train departed, thus ending the attack. The people dressed in white were then seen leaving the station at 23:14. At 23:15, Yuen Long QRT arrived at Yuen Long Station, but by then the people dressed in white had mostly left. The altercations between the people dressed in white and those in black were live-streamed by a LegCo Member who joined the persons in black outfits, also by a reporter at the scene. It was not until the situation on Hong Kong Island had subsided around 23:00 that HQCCC became aware of the chaos at Yuen Long Station through live news broadcast, while the altercations between the white and black camps was happening. When the situation on Hong Kong Island eased, it became possible for Regional Response Contingents (RRC) resources to be redeployed to Yuen Long at 00:16, 00:25 and 01:26.

10.15 Further attack broke out at 00:28 when about 30 people dressed in white, holding wooden poles and sticks, returned to Exit J of Yuen Long Station and through the roller shutter taunted those in black outfits still inside the station. In response, a person in black outfit threw a helmet at the roller shutter in the face of those dressed in white. Another person in black outfit charged forward with an umbrella in an attempt to stab the people dressed in white through the roller shutter. The people dressed in white pulled up the roller shutter and chased after that person and assaulted him. They also attacked other people in the station.

10.16 The Hospital Authority (HA) at various hospitals treated a total of 47 persons related to the incidents in Yuen Long on 21 July.

10.17 After the Incident, the Police arrested persons suspected of involvement on 21 July. As at 29 February 2020, the Police had arrested 37 persons (all male) in connection with the incident in Yuen Long for “Unlawful Assembly”, “Taking Part in Riot” and “Conspiracy to Wounding with Intent”. Among them, seven persons have been charged in Court pending trial; 25 were still under police investigation and five were released.

10.18 A chronology of the events of this day appears as Annex to this Chapter.

The Aftermath

10.19 The Incident was instantly and widely covered by the media. The public was shocked and horrified by images of the attack on news broadcast. Outraged by the lawlessness of the people dressed in white, questions were raised why the Police had not taken action to stop them. There were accusations about suspected collusion between the Police and triads, with the Police deliberately not taking action and responding late to allow time for the people in white to leave the scene. Despite Police denial of all these allegations, the Yuen Long Incident was used by some of the protesters to stage further protests repeatedly afterwards. What happened in Yuen Long on 21 July has raised public concern about the following issues:

- (a) Police inaction and late response to the events in Yuen Long;
- (b) Police response to the media enquiry; and
- (c) Police handling of public speculation.

Sources of Information

10.20 For the purpose of its study of the events on 21 July, the IPCC has scrutinised the following materials:

- (a) Documents provided by the Police in respect of police deployment and operation, prior intelligence received, use of police weapons, casualties and arrests involved on the incident day.
- (b) Operational Orders for Operation TIDERIDER provided by the Police.
- (c) Information obtained from meetings with the Police.
- (d) Police beat radio and 999 calls recordings. A total of 733 beat radio audio recordings among DOR/YL, QRTs and CRTs between 18:00 of 21 July and 01:00 of 22 July; and 1 484 audio recordings of New Territories (NT) 999 calls between 19:00 of 21 July and 00:59 of 22 July were examined.
- (e) News reports and news footage produced by different television companies, newspapers and media. A total of 294 news reports⁶ and 70 video reports of about 107 hours long were examined.
- (f) Photos and footage provided by the public in response to IPCC's appeal.
- (g) MTRC CCTV footage and audio recordings. A total of 87 CCTV clips of about 170 hours and 28 audio recordings for some 21 minutes were examined.
- (h) Information provided by Fire Services Department on call records of Fire, Special Service and Ambulance.
- (i) Press statements obtained from the websites of the Information Services Department (*news.gov.hk* and *info.gov.hk*), the Police (*police.gov.hk*) and MTRC (*www.mtr.com.hk*).
- (j) Information provided by a Yuen Long District Councillor.

⁶ This figure counts the paper media, while the IPCC has also viewed mainstream online media/sources including but not limited to Stand News, Hong Kong Free Press, HK01, etc.

- (k) Information provided by the HA on the number of persons receiving medical treatment as a result of the Yuen Long Incident on 21 July.
- (l) Posts and discussions on DISCUSS forum, Facebook, HKGolden, LIHKG, and YouTube.

The Events

10.21 The events can be divided into four phases, namely:

- Phase I - Events and messages on the internet before 21 July
- Phase II - Public procession on Hong Kong Island and clashes outside LOCPG on 21 July
- Phase III - Events in Yuen Long on 21 July
 - Part (i) - Assembly of people dressed in white at Fung Yau Street North and Kai Tei area, and messages on the internet and intelligence around that period
 - Part (ii) - First attack at Yuen Long Station and messages on the internet
 - Part (iii) - Further assault incidents at or near Yuen Long Station
 - Part (iv) - Police action at Nam Pin Wai and messages on the internet
- Phase IV - Public speculation and Police response after Yuen Long Incident

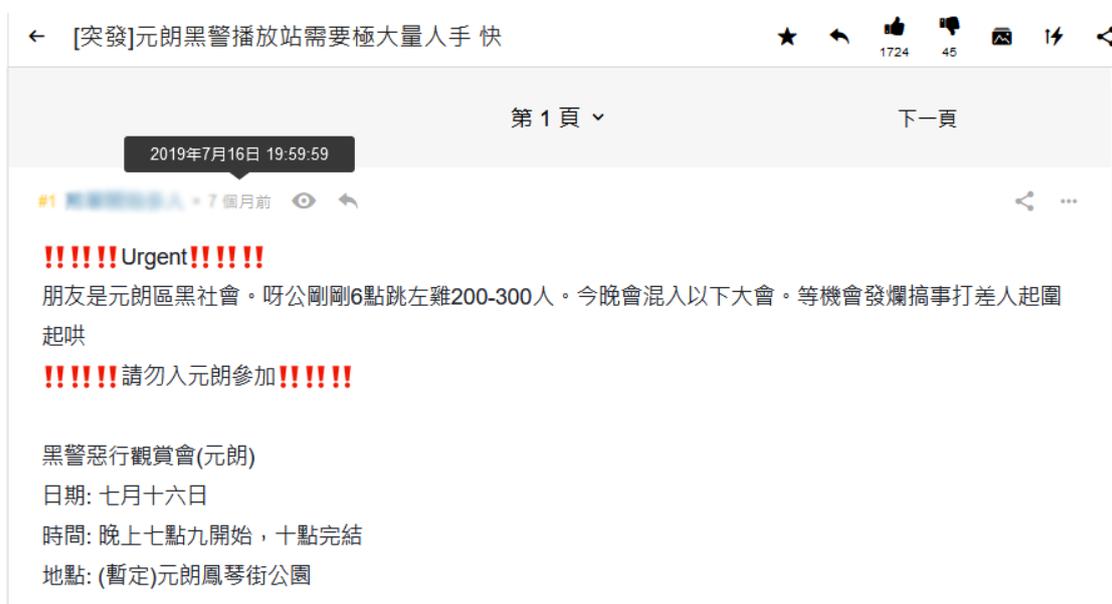
Phase I – Events and Messages on the Internet Before 21 July

Confrontation at Fung Yau Street North on 16 July

- Around 20:00 on 16 July, in the sitting-out area at Fung Yau Street North in Yuen Long, some local Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters held a public screening of video clips on alleged police brutality in recent POEs. Around 40 people attended the event. At the end of the public screening, about 40 males (some dressed in white) turned up and confronted the participants of the event (source: HKPF). News reported that the two parties exchanged abusive words, splashed water and hurled water bottles at one another. A few online video clips showed that they pushed and pulled, and some people dressed in white punched two young persons who walked past their party. One male dressed in white also attempted to kick the two young persons from behind. The Police was called but,

according to news articles, most of the people who attended the screening event had left when the Police arrived at the scene and the situation had already settled down. In the event, the Police did not make any arrest and simply dispersed the crowd (source: media reports).

- At 19:59 (around the time the public screening started), a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “[突發] 元朗黑警播放站需要大量人手 快”. (Translation: Breaking news. Screening event about black cops in Yuen Long urgently needs many to assist.) The post creator stated that the head of a triad faction had called upon 200 to 300 persons to blend in with the crowd at the screening event and to find opportunities to stir up trouble (see Image 10-1) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

My friend is a triad member in Yuen Long. The triad head just made a call at 18:00 for 200 to 300 people. They would participate in tonight's screening and wait for the right moment to cause commotion, beat police officers and stir up trouble. Please do not attend!

Image 10-1 (Image source: LIHKG)

- In a message that followed the above post at 21:24, a netizen supplemented that he saw many people dressed in white standing on the street opposite and some of them wore masks (see Image 10-2) (source: LIHKG).



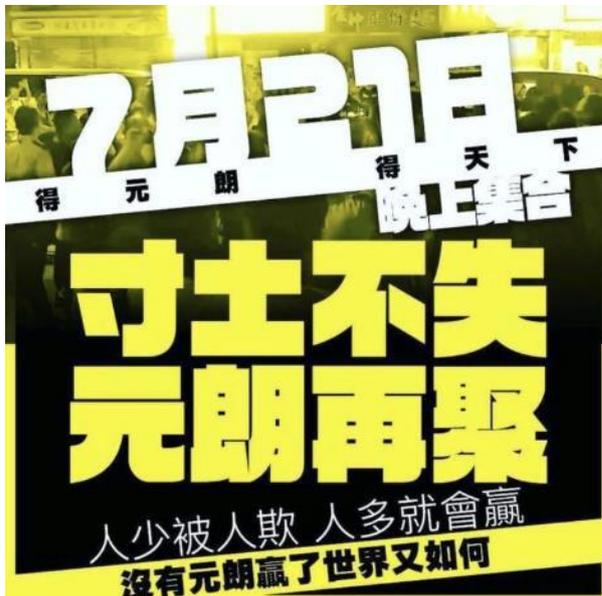
Image 10-2 (Image source: LIHKG)

- In another post at 21:46, a netizen stated that some people dressed in white had assaulted people. Some netizens suggested on a message that followed the post, “搵日要光復元朗” (Translation: Have to liberate Yuen Long one day.) (see Image 10-3) (source: LIHKG).



Image 10-3 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 23:16, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “元朗真係唔建議大家搞光復”. (Translation: Would not recommend liberating Yuen Long.) The post creator discouraged people from trying to liberate Yuen Long for fear that the indigenous villagers would take violent action against them (source: LIHKG).
- From 16 July onwards, there were also online messages calling for people to take part in a public meeting to be held in Yuen Long on 21 July in protest against those causing disturbance at the screening on 16 July (see Image 10-4) (source: HKPF and LIHKG).



Translation

21 July evening gathering.

Fight for Yuen Long to rule the world.

Gather in Yuen Long. Do not lose an inch of our ground.

With fewer people we will be bullied.

With more people we will win.

Winning the world would mean nothing if without Yuen Long.

Image 10-4 (Image source: LIHKG)

- In response, people in opposition urged Yuen Long residents online to protect their homeland and to expel protesters from Yuen Long (see Image 10-5) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

All Residents of Yuen Long District

Traditional Chinese Martial Arts Lion Dance Performance (Invitation)

21 July 2019

Chinese martial arts Stick fighting

to welcome incoming guests

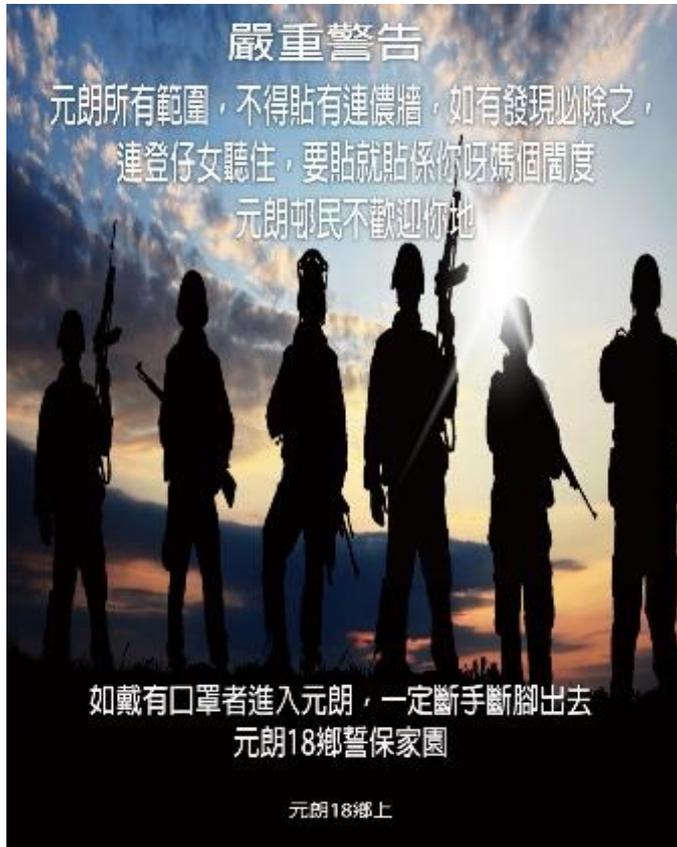
Served to all without fail

traditional shit and piss

We will be waiting all day.

Image 10-5 (Image source: LIHKG)

- A post warning about potential violence targeted at Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters appeared on the internet (see Image 10-6) (source: HKPF and LIHKG).



Translation

Serious Warning

No Lennon Wall in Yuen Long. All posts would be removed once found. Listen! LIHKG followers, if you want to post, post on your mother's cunt. You are not welcome by Yuen Long villagers.

If you wear mask in Yuen Long, both your arms and legs would be amputated. Yuen Long Shap Pat Heung would fight to protect our homeland.

Image 10-6 (Image source: LIHKG)

- On 17 July, a news article⁷ covering the 16 July film screening quoted a Yuen Long District Councillor as saying that the people dressed in white who showed up at the end of the event were members of a local triad branch in Yuen Long (source: media report).
- As to the confrontation at the public screening event, according to news reports on 22 and 23 July, i.e. after the Yuen Long Incident, a video clip was widely circulated on the internet which showed that the people dressed in white, had offered their assistance to a commander of Pat Heung Division at the scene to expel the participants of the public screening event from Yuen Long (Note: this commander also led a QRT to the Yuen Long Station on 21 July.) The commander patted the shoulder of a person dressed in white and said “心領，唔想大家嘅幫忙令警察更加辛苦。” (Translation: Appreciate it, but we don't want your help to make it more difficult for the Police.) The video only showed that brief moment.

⁷ Apple Daily (2019-07-17). 中聯辦吹雞元朗惡漢即搞事 麥業成：認得有啲人係屏山鄉水房. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190717/59831967>

What happened before and after that moment was not known (source: media reports). According to the Police, the video footage went viral on the internet after the Yuen Long Incident, attracting public criticism of Police-triad collusion (source: HKPF).

- At 20:15 on 22 July, a post appeared on LIHKG providing a link to the video. The post creator suggested that the commander was on friendly terms with the triad members (source: LIHKG).

18 and 19 July Police Response to Online Appeals

- According to the Police, as part of the on-going arrangement for Operation TIDERIDER, Yuen Long District had been supplying manpower (102 officers) to form an integral part of RRC NTN as well as a separate Yuen Long Tier III platoon (about 40 officers) under the command of HQCCC on 21 June. On 21 July, these officers were deployed to Hong Kong Island, which significantly reduced the deployable resources in the District (source: HKPF).
- Due to the appeals on social media platforms for a public meeting on 21 July in Yuen Long, Regional Headquarters NTN requested HQCCC on 18 and 19 July to provide RRC resources to Yuen Long District on 21 July. Having assessed the level of response to and interest in the online appeals, risk levels involved and the violence previously experienced in both Yuen Long and Hong Kong Island, HQCCC accorded priority to Hong Kong Island for RRC resources (source: HKPF).
- Yuen Long District therefore rearranged its available resources to form ad hoc special units to cope with any emergency situation that might arise. Details of the deployment arrangement were given in paragraphs 10.10 and 10.31 (source: HKPF).
- On 18 July, according to the Police, crime officers of Yuen Long District were deployed to debrief some Yuen Long village representatives in a Rural Committee event. Most of the village representatives denied any knowledge of the online appeals and any planned activities on 21 July. Regardless, officers urged them to persuade villagers to stay home on that day, which was acknowledged (source: HKPF).
- At 01:24 on 20 July, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “721 元朗出發既巴絲小心鄉黑吹雞打人”. (Translation: Brothers and sisters departing from Yuen Long on 21 July beware of village triad rallying to beat people.) The post was a warning that triad gangs, fitted out for traditional Chinese dragon dance, would attack people in black outfits in Yuen Long on 21 July. The post creator therefore suggested a change of clothes before taking the West Rail Line (see Image 10-7) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

Be careful, those who would take the West Rail, please change your clothes first.

Latest news:

Yuen Long triad gang has gathered 500 members for 21 July.

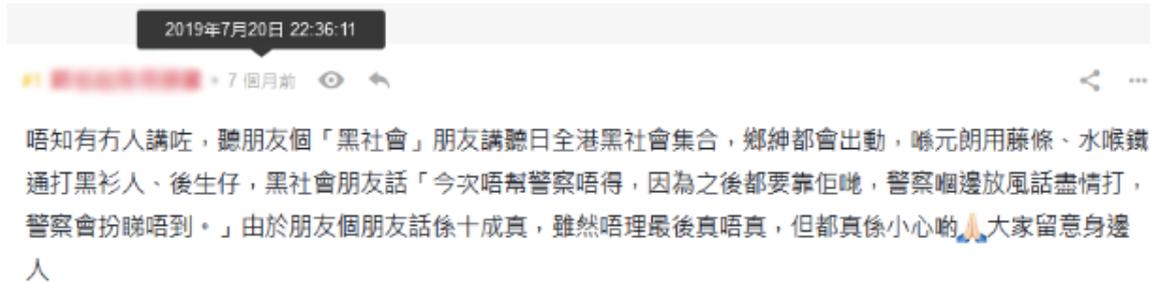
They will be in traditional Chinese dragon dance outfit for recognition and launch attacks on people who wear masks and black outfits. However, they will not go to Kowloon/ Hong Kong Island.

Image 10-7 (Image source: LIHKG)

20 July Pro-Government Rally at Tamar Park

- On 20 July, thousands of people, mostly dressed in white, gathered at a pro-Government rally entitled “Safeguard Hong Kong” at Tamar Park to show their support for the Government and the Police Force. A speaker at the event made a statement that the young Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters should be caned (藤條教仔論) (source: media reports).
- During the rally, a television news channel interviewed a participant who told the reporter that the media should go to Yuen Long on 21 July, as “there would be a good show” (“將會有一場好戲睇”). Later, the television channel identified this participant to be one of the assailants in the attack at Yuen Long Station in the small hours of 22 July. The news footage captured him wearing a mask, holding a wooden pole, and rushing into Yuen Long Station during the attack (source: media reports).

- At 22:36, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “〔小心！！元朗人入〕721 元朗黑社會話會周街打後生仔” (Translation: (Be careful! To Yuen Long people) Yuen Long triads said they would beat young people on the street on 21 July.) (see Image 10-08). The post creator warned that triad members would use bamboo sticks to beat people in black outfits and teenagers, while the Police would turn a blind eye (source: LIHKG).



Translation

Don't know if you have ever heard this news. A friend of mine told me that all triad members and village gentry in Hong Kong would come out tomorrow. They are going to use rattan sticks, iron water pipes to beat the people in black outfits and young people. The friend of a triad member said that they have to do this to help the Police as they also have to rely on the Police. The Police has given indication to beat people as much as possible and the Police would turn a blind eye. My friend said the information was hundred percent true. Irrespective whether this is true or not, better for us to be cautious and vigilant.

Image 10-08 (Image source: LIHKG)

Phase II – Public Procession on Hong Kong Island and Clashes outside LOCPG on 21 July

Commencement of Procession at 15:39

- At 15:39, a public procession, for which the Police had issued a Letter of No Objection (LoNO), kicked off at Victoria Park and proceeded to Luard Road, Wan Chai (see Map 10-2). According to the event organiser CHRF, 430 000 people attended the procession while the Police put the figure at 138 000 at its peak. Most of the protesters, however, did not stop at Luard Road, the finishing point stipulated on the LoNO, but continued to walk to Central. Around 18:36, some protesters went even further to LOCPG (source: media reports).

Clashes outside LOCPG from 18:55 to 23:41

- From 18:55 onwards, a large number of protesters gathered outside LOCPG. Some of them threw eggs at the building, sprayed paint on the surveillance cameras, vandalised the walls of the building and defaced the national emblem with black paint (see Image 10-09). A few of them even tried to get into LOCPG but failed. Protesters started to occupy the main road Des Voeux Road Central (source: media reports).

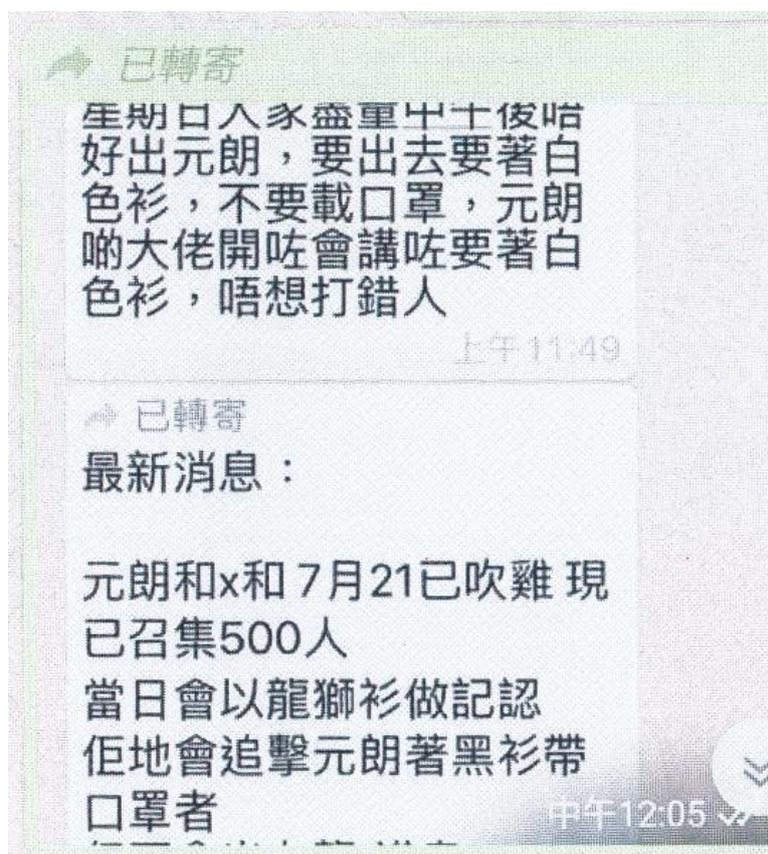


Image 10-09: The protesters threw black paint at the national emblem on the LOCPG façade
(Image source: Ming Pao)

- At 20:08, the Police took action to disperse the protesters outside LOCPG. Some violent protesters hurled bricks and glass bottles at the police officers on Connaught Road West. They also attacked the officers with sling shots, arrows, and sharpened poles, and set fire on the road. The Police reacted with nine rubber rounds, 25 react rounds and 55 tear gas rounds. The violent clashes continued till around 23:41 when the protesters left gradually (source: HKPF and media reports).

Phase III – Events in Yuen Long on 21 July*Part (i) : Assembly of People Dressed in White at Fung Yau Street North and Kai Tei Area, and Messages on the Internet and Intelligence around that Period**A District Councillor Informing the Police of Possible Attack on Protesters*

- At 12:05 on 21 July, a District Councillor forwarded to an officer of the Police Community Relations Office (PCRO) of Yuen Long a photo which contained two WhatsApp messages about rumours that a triad gang would summon 500 members to attack the people in black outfits and masks on 21 July (see Image 10-10). According to the WhatsApp messages, those triad members would wear white. According to the District Councillor, the PCRO officer replied that the Police had arranged manpower and had been closely monitoring the situation in Yuen Long. The PCRO officer also requested the District Councillor to notify him of any updates promptly. The officer further reassured the District Councillor that there would be officers patrolling around the West Rail Station and the Police had plans for the situation (source: HKPF, the District Councillor and media reports).

*Translation*

Everyone don't go to Yuen Long in Sunday afternoon. If you have to, wear white and don't wear mask as the bosses in Yuen Long agreed to wear white shirts. They don't want to hit the wrong person.

Latest news:

Yuen Long triad gang has gathered 500 members for 21 July.

They will be in tradition Chinese dragon dance outfit for recognition and launch attacks on people who wear masks and black outfits.

Image 10-10 (Image source: District Councillor Mak Ip Sing)

- At 18:00, acting on this information and other intelligence earlier on social media that Yuen Long residents would expel protesters with violence, the Yuen Long Police activated the DOR/YL to monitor the situation and to be ready for action if necessary (source: HKPF).
- At 18:08, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “「突發」元朗鄉黑已出車”. (Translation: (Breaking news) Yuen Long triads set out.) The post creator stated that people dressed in white and wearing masks were standing by at Tai Tong Road. The post creator reminded people to “*Be Water*”. In the messages that followed this post, a netizen posted a photo of a group dressed in white gathering in a sitting-out area of a village. The photo was apparently taken at 16:33 (see Image 10-11) (source: LIHKG).

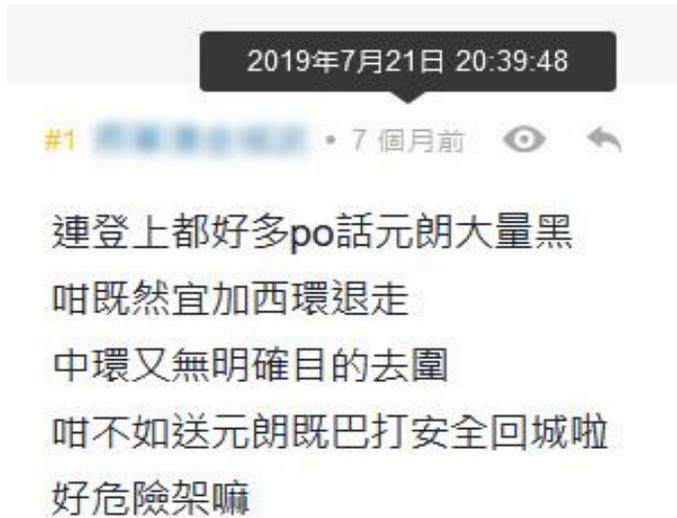


Image 10-11 (Image source: LIHKG)

Gathering of People Dressed in White at Various Locations in Yuen Long

- According to the Police, between 19:07 and 21:43, the Police received 500 calls from the public about people dressed in white assembling at different locations in Yuen Long, including Fung Yau Street North. After 21:59, the 999 Console received further reports in relation to the incident. The information about these calls will be given later in this Chapter (source: HKPF).

- The 999 Console received a total of 729 calls between 19:00 and 21:59 (source: HKPF). Examination of some of these 729 calls made available to IPCC revealed the following:
 - (a) Between 19:00 and 21:59, many calls reported that people dressed in white had gathered at Fung Yau Street North and Fung Kam Street. The numbers reported ranged from a few tens to over 100. Most of the calls did not mention that the people dressed in white had any weapons with them. Several tens of the reports stated that some of the people in white were holding bamboo sticks or flags, and only a few reports cited them as holding poles or iron pipes.
 - (b) After 21:00, there were a few calls complaining of some of the people dressed in white assaulting people on the streets and causing nuisance to passers-by.
 - (c) After 21:45, some of the calls reported that some of the people dressed in white chased after and assaulted passers-by.(source: 999 calls recordings)
- The Police also received messages from a LegCo Member and three District Councillors about the gathering of people dressed in white in Yuen Long, and their intention to attack people in black outfits (source: HKPF).
- In response to the reports received at different times between 19:00 and 21:45, DOR/YL sent CRT officers to the reported locations at 19:51, 20:04, 20:27, 21:08 and 21:45. CRT officers reported seeing people dressed in white gathering at those locations without causing any breach of the peace or committing crime. Having consulted with DOR/YL, the CRT officers made the judgement that no immediate dispersal was necessary. CRT officers, therefore, decided not to take any further action (source: HKPF).
- CCTV footage from more than one shops at Fung Yau Street North as shown in a television news programme revealed that beginning at 18:36, people dressed in white started gathering on that street. By 21:29, at least 100 to 200 dressed in white had assembled there. A District Councillor saw the same that night (source: the District Councillor and media reports).
- At 20:39, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “送元朗手足安全回家計劃”. (Translation: Plan of sending brothers back to Yuen Long safely.) (see Image 10-12). The post creator offered to send some protesters back to Yuen Long from Central, as there were triads gathering in the Yuen Long vicinity according to the many posts on LIHKG (source: LIHKG).

Translation

A lot of po (posts) on LIHKG said that Yuen Long was full of triads.

Since (the protesters) retreated from Sai Wan and there was no clear target to besiege in Central, let's escort our brothers back to Yuen Long safely.

It's so dangerous.

Image 10-12 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 20:59, an ex-LegCo Member created a post and shared a video on Facebook about people dressed in white walking on a street in Yuen Long. The ex-LegCo Member stated in her post “元朗現場，黑社會治港？聽講話要打返入元朗的黑衫人士” (Translation: Live in Yuen Long. Triads ruling Hong Kong? Heard that they were going to beat people in black outfits returning to Yuen Long.) (source: Facebook).
- At 21:02, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “721 元朗鄉黑伏擊中”. (Translation: 721 Yuen Long village triads ambushing.) The post creator uploaded a photo of a group of people dressed in white gathering near Exit G2 of Yuen Long Station (see Image 10-13) (source: LIHKG).



Image 10-13 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 21:09, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “小心元朗，出入元朗少(小)心啲”. (Translation: Beware Yuen Long. Watch your steps in and out of Yuen Long). The post creator attached a photo (see Image 10-14) and warned about Police-triad collusion (source: LIHKG).



Image 10-14 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 21:14, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “請大家一齊打999”. (Translation: Everyone please call 999.) The post creator asked other netizens to call 999 to report that people dressed in white and equipped with offensive weapons were having an illegal assembly at Fung Kam Street. The post creator suggested tens of thousands to call 999 together (see Image 10-15) (source: LIHKG).



Image 10-15 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 21:14, another post appeared on LIHKG entitled “元朗宵禁未”. (Translation: Yuen Long under curfew yet.) In the messages that followed the post, some netizens commented that it was useless to call the Police. Messages like “有L用警察同佢地一伙” (Translation: No fucking use, the Police is with them.) and “黑警選擇性失明” (Translation: Black cops selectively turned a blind eye.) were found (source: LIHKG).
- At 21:43, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “我正式宣佈下禮拜就光復元朗”. (Translation: I formally announce that we will liberate Yuen Long next week.) The post creator commented triads had assaulted people. In the messages that followed this post, some netizens suggested going to the villages in Yuen Long to beat the members of triads. One message says “超過成萬人踩入圍村我睇佢地惡得去邊?” (Translation: With over ten thousand swarming into their village. See if they can still survive?) (see Image 10-16) (source: LIHKG).



Image 10-16 (Image source: LIHKG)

- According to the Police, between 20:00 and 21:00, HICOM NTN contacted HQCCC on three occasions requesting additional resources to be allocated to NTN Region in response to the reports received on people dressed in white gathering at various locations of Yuen Long. HQCCC, however, maintained its decision to accord priority to Hong Kong Island (source: HKPF).
- At 21:29, 22:13 and 22:25 respectively, CCTV news footage showed police vehicles driving past Fung Yau Street North when the people dressed in white were present. The officers on board the police vehicles did not get off (see Image 10-17) (source: HKPF and media reports). According to the Police, the same police vehicle that drove past the location at 21:29 and 22:13 was on the way to conduct traffic enforcement, while the other one at 22:25 was locating a victim of an assault case. As the Police did not observe any breach of the peace or crime, the Police considered no intervention was warranted (source: HKPF).



Image 10-17: At 21:29, a police vehicle drove past Fung Yau Street North when there was an assembly of people dressed in white (*Image source: RTHK*)

- Footage on a television news programme showed that at 22:00, a LegCo Member was shaking hands with some of the people dressed in white at Fung Yau Street North (source: media reports).
- Starting from 22:13, there were messages on Telegram (see Image 10-18) appealing to the public to make 999 reports so as to sabotage the Police Console system. At 22:47, a similar message was also circulating on LIHKG (see Image 10-19) (source: media report, Telegram and LIHKG).

Translation

That Yuen Long case

Please help dial 999 to blast the police line.

Image 10-18 (Image source: Telegram)

Translation

Please dial 999 crazy to make report.

Tell the Police someone is about to die. Call until they come to the scene.

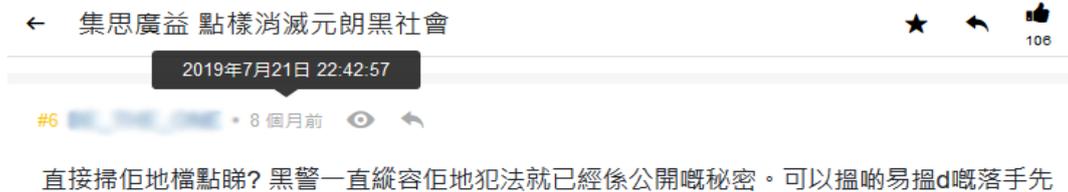
Even if they show up, keep calling.

For diverting police manpower, or for whatever purpose, dial 999 quick.

Image 10-19 (Image source: LIHKG)

- Another footage on that television news programme showed that at 22:30, tens of people dressed in white left Fung Yau Street North in the direction of Fung Cheung Road, which was in the opposite direction from the sitting-out area at Fung Yau Street North (see Map 10-1). By 22:40, all the people dressed in white had left Fung Yau Street North (source: media report).

- At 22:34, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “集思廣益 點樣消滅元朗黑社會”. (Translation: Brainstorming how to eliminate the triads in Yuen Long.) In the messages that followed this post, some netizens suggested raiding the establishments of triad society directly (see Image 10-20) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

How about storming their turf directly? It has been open secret that the Police has been conniving at their illegal acts. We can find something easier first to work on.

Image 10-20 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 22:39, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “(必要置頂)下星期六既(嘅)光復元朗，係必要！”. (Translation: Must liberate Yuen Long next Saturday.) In the messages that followed this post, some netizens expressed their dissatisfaction with the Police. Comments like “明明係班黑社會係元朗搞事 點解冇警察去控制” (Translation: It is clear that it was the triads who caused trouble in Yuen Long. Why were there no police officers to control?) and “警黑合作” (Translation: Police-triads cooperation.) were found in the post (source: LIHKG).

A Passer-by Assaulted by People Dressed in White at Fung Yau Street North

- At 21:55, the Police 999 Console received a report that a group of people dressed in white had hit a passer-by with rattan sticks in Kai Tei area. This news was instantly covered by the media on the internet.⁸ At 21:56, Regional Command and Control Centre of New Territories (RCCC NT) sent two Emergency Unit (EU) cars to handle the assault report. [There were a total of three EU cars in Yuen Long District. Another EU car was assigned to deal with a “Fire” report at Nam Sang Wai. Yuen Long Division itself had four police patrol cars on B shift (15:00 – 23:00) and three patrol cars on C shift (23:00 – 07:00) that night.] At 22:36, the Police located the victim at Yuen Long On Ning Road and conveyed him to hospital (source: HKPF).

⁸ Truth Media Hong Kong (2019-07-21). 元朗穿黑衣市民被竹枝襲擊至嚴重受傷 施襲者發現本台記者隨即散去. Retrieved from <https://tmhk.org/2019/07/21/元朗穿黑衣市民被竹枝襲擊至嚴重受傷-施襲者發現/>

- According to media reports, the victim was a male chef. He told the press that he had seen many people dressed in white gathering at Fung Yau Street North that night when he walked past the location. When he made a remark about the street being so full of people dressed in white, those people chased after him and hit him with rattan sticks. From a photo of the multiple injuries the victim suffered from the assault, the victim might have been hit by rattan sticks (see Image 10-21) (source: media reports).



Image 10-21: The victim suffered multiple injuries from the assault (*Image source: HK01*)

Part (ii): First Attack at Yuen Long Station and Messages on the Internet

- At 22:40, inside Yuen Long Station (see Graphic 10-1), about four people dressed in white, holding protest signs on wooden poles, chased after a female in black outfit from Exit F into the paid area of Yuen Long Station (paid area marked “1” in Graphic 10-1). Another female in black outfit rushed forward to help that female by hitting the people dressed in white with an umbrella. The first female ran away. The people dressed in white then turned back to assault the second female. A scuffle between them took place in the paid area. About ten people in black outfits who were inside the paid area came to the help of that female. They used umbrellas to hit those dressed in white while those dressed in white hit back with their protest signs and pole-like objects. Another six to seven people dressed in white, some holding protest signs on wooden poles, and flags on sticks, then jumped over the ticket gates and the glass panel railing into the paid area to join the fight. The fight lasted briefly for two minutes. At 22:43, the people dressed in white left Yuen Long Station (source: MTR CCTV footage).
- At 22:44, a LegCo Member arrived at the paid area of Yuen Long Station (paid area marked “1” in Graphic 10-1). At that time, about 100 people in black outfits had gathered at the paid area (source: MTR CCTV footage). According to some subsequent news reports, these people in black outfits had returned from the procession on Hong Kong Island (source: media reports). When the LegCo Member arrived at Yuen Long Station, he started a live stream broadcast on Facebook (source: A LegCo Member’s Facebook). The footage on his Facebook showed that he joined the people in black outfits and inquired about the earlier attack at 22:40. Blood stains and broken pieces of wooden poles, possibly left behind from the attack at 22:40, could be seen on the floor inside the paid area (source: media reports and live video footage).
- At 22:48, around 70 persons dressed in white, some holding wooden poles, flags, sticks and umbrellas, entered Yuen Long Station via Exit F (see Image 10-22) (source: MTR CCTV footage and live video footage).



Image 10-22: People dressed in white, holding wooden poles and sticks, entered Yuen Long Station via Exit F (*Image source: MTR CCTV footage*)

- The people dressed in white did not cross the ticket gates but stayed in the unpaid area of the concourse exchanging verbal abuse over the glass panel railing and the ticket gates at different times with the people in black outfits who remained in the paid area (paid area marked “1” in Graphic 10-1) (see Images 10-23 to 10-24). Some of the people in black outfits were wearing helmets and holding umbrellas (source: MTR CCTV footage, media reports and live video footage). The two parties threw plastic water bottles and other objects at one another. The people in black outfits also opened their umbrellas to protect themselves (see Image 10-24). The LegCo Member urged the people in black outfits in the paid area to stay away from the glass railing and keep a distance from the people dressed in white, while he told the people dressed in white in the unpaid area not to cross the ticket gates. He also told the people in black outfits in the paid area to take pictures of the people dressed in white with their mobile phones (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 10-23: People dressed in white gathered outside the paid area
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)



Image 10-24: People dressed in white outside the paid area exchanged verbal abuse with the people in black outfits, who had now opened their umbrellas
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

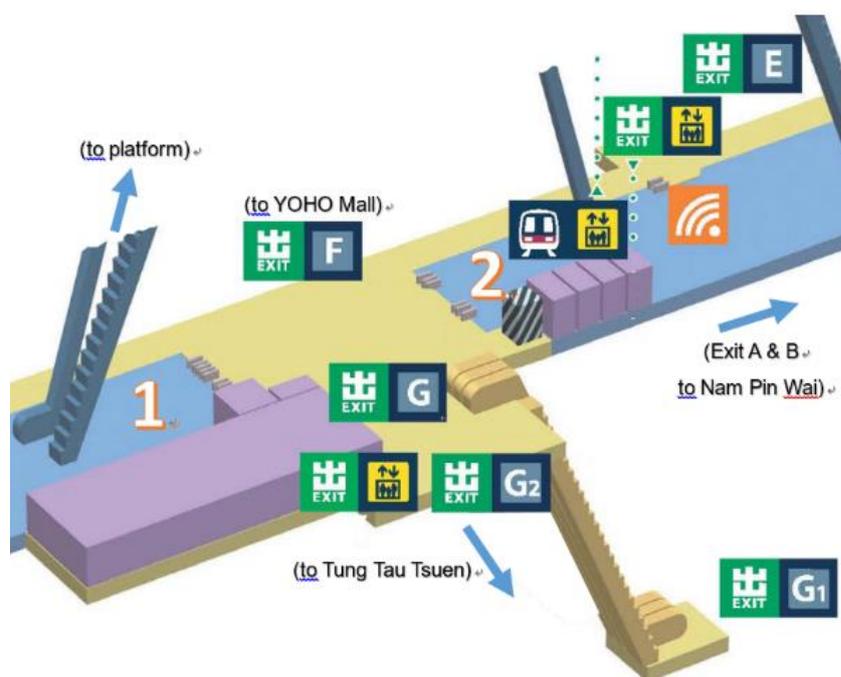
- A 22:51, a reporter started a live stream broadcast on Facebook covering what happened in the concourse of Yuen Long Station at the paid area (paid area marked “1” in Graphic 10-1) (source: media report).
- At 22:51, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “元朗後生仔請小心，已經白色衫無差別打人”。(Translation: Youngsters in Yuen Long please be careful, people dressed in white were beating people indiscriminately.) The post creator posted a photo and stated that people dressed in white were hitting others with chairs (see Image 10-25). In the messages that followed this post, some netizens mentioned that the Police cooperated with triads in the incident. One message reads “網傳警察內部已經講明唔好處理話白衫打人” (Translation : It was spread on the internet that the Police internally had made it clear that they would not handle reports about people dressed in white clothing beating people.) and another message reads “無人再敢住元朗黑社會同警察合作的地區。” (Translation: No one would dare to live in Yuen Long, a district where the Police cooperates with triads.) Other messages that followed the post expressed similar sentiments (source: LIHKG).



Image 10-25 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 22:54, the people in black outfits inside the paid area (paid area marked “1” in Graphic 10-1) started chanting “Hong Kong people, add oil! (香港人，加油!)”. At 22:56, the LegCo Member defied the people in white dare not to leave as the Police was about to arrive to arrest them. The people in black outfits then started chanting “Triad society! Don’t leave! (黑社會！唔好走!)” (source: media reports and live video footage).

- At 22:58, the people dressed in white moved backward. Some people in black outfits in the paid area (paid area marked “1” in Graphic 10-1) then walked closer to the ticket gates and glass panel railing. Some people dressed in white immediately rushed forward, attacking the people in black outfits who had moved forward over the glass railing and ticket gates. Some people in black outfits struck back with umbrellas and threw plastic water bottles at the people dressed in white while some others opened their umbrellas for cover.



Graphic 10-2: Yuen Long Station Layout (Concourse)

(Source of base graphic: MTRC)

- At 22:58, from the MTR CCTV footage, a single male was seen inciting the people dressed in white from the other section of the paid area near Exit E (paid area marked “2” in Graphic 10-2). A person dressed in white went over to the ticket gate to argue with him. Then some tens of people dressed in white rushed to the ticket gate at that section of the paid area to join the argument. In the process, around ten persons dressed in white jumped into the paid area to assault that male. The scuffle lasted less than one minute (source: MTR CCTV footage). While this was happening, several people in black outfits and two reporters at the opposite section (paid area marked “1” in Graphic 10-2) crossed the ticket gates to go to the unpaid area. (It is not known why they came out of the paid area, but they did so just as the scuffle in the paid area marked “2” occurred.) Many people dressed in white chased after them and beat them (source: media reports and live video footage).

The people dressed in white who was assaulting the male in the other section retreated and joined the assault in the unpaid area (source: MTR CCTV footage).

- At 22:59, some people in black outfits in the paid area then sprayed water from a fire hose and discharged gas from a fire extinguisher in the direction of those people dressed in white. It is not known what then happened to the two reporters and the people in black outfits who had been beaten by the people dressed in white (see Images 10-26 and 10-27) (source: media reports and live video footage).



Images 10-26 (left) and 10-27 (right): Around 22:59, people inside the paid area used fire hose and fire extinguisher to disperse the crowd of people dressed in white

(Image source: Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page)

- At 23:02, the people dressed in white jumped over the ticket gates into the paid area (paid area marked “1” in Graphic 10-2) (see Image 10-28). The LegCo Member and people in black outfits immediately dashed up the staircase to the platform and went into a train compartment to hide from the people dressed in white. The train remained at the platform without departing Yuen Long Station (source: MTR CCTV footage, media reports and live

video footage). According to MTRC, the train was unable to depart Yuen Long Station because the train doors could not be closed (source: press releases of MTRC⁹).



Image 10-28: At 23:02, people dressed in white started to enter the paid area and chase after the people inside (Image source: Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page)

- The people dressed in white initially did not give chase to the platform but stayed in the concourse area. There they assaulted people in black outfits who were going upstairs to the platform, while the people in black outfits used umbrellas to fight back or protect themselves (source: MTR CCTV footage and media reports).
- At 23:04, the LegCo Member, holding an umbrella, came out of the train compartment with some unknown individuals to the staircase (source: MTR CCTV footage and live video footage). On the staircase, a female wearing a black top was exchanging words with a crowd of people dressed in white who were standing at the bottom of the staircase.

⁹ MTRC Press Releases (2019-07-22). “Outbreak of Violence at West Rail Line Yuen Long Station” Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS20190722E.pdf, and https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS20190722E1.pdf

The LegCo Member and the two unknown individuals urged the female to go up to the platform. The female then went up the staircase and followed them into the train compartment (source: live video footage).

- Around 23:05, some people in black outfits threw unknown objects from the platform level to the concourse where the people dressed in white had gathered (source: MTR CCTV footage). From the live video footage, both parties exchanged abusive words. The people dressed in white then ran up to the platform. Those people in black outfits rushed back into the train compartment, by now full of passengers and other people in black outfits. Many people dressed in white now on the platform taunted and hit those in black outfits who were standing at the train doors. They also hurled unknown objects at the people in the train compartment. Inside the train compartment, the people in black outfits opened their umbrellas to cover themselves. At the same time, a few people in black outfits fought with some people dressed in white on the platform (see Image 10-29) (source: MTR CCTV footage, media reports and live video footage).



Image 10-29: Around 23:05, people dressed in white on the platform

(Image source: HK01)

- From the live video footage, about ten people dressed in white rushed into a train compartment to assault the people inside, irrespective of the colour of their outfits, with sticks, umbrellas and wooden poles. It lasted for half a minute before the people dressed in white came out of the train compartment (see Image 10-30). A minute later, MTRC announced that the train service at Yuen Long Station was suspended and asked the passengers to leave the train. Most of the people, however, remained on the train (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 10-30: People dressed in white rushed into the train compartment and assaulted the people inside (Image source: Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page)

- Around 23:07, from the live video footage, the people dressed in white entered the train compartment again and assaulted the people inside. Some of the victims were not wearing black outfits. Many people on the train screamed and cried. Around 23:08, the people dressed in white started to leave. A male knelt at the train door begging them to stop beating people (see Image 10-31). He also picked up a pair of glasses for a person dressed in white. However, as soon as he had passed the glasses to that person, another person dressed in white rushed forward, punched him in the face and left (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 10-31: A man knelt at the train door,
begging the people dressed in white to stop attacking people
(Image source: Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page)

- Around 23:09, a few people dressed in white returned to the train compartment and assaulted the LegCo Member. After the assault, they left the train compartment swiftly (source: media reports and live video footage). While on the platform, the people dressed in white rushed into the compartment to assault the people there and again when the train doors were open (Note: At that time, there were a few attempts to close the train doors, but the doors could not be closed.) (source: MTR CCTV footage).
- At 23:13, the train doors were closed and carried the injured passengers away from Yuen Long Station. At 23:14, the people dressed in white left Yuen Long Station (source: MTR CCTV footage, media reports and live video footage).

Reports Received by 999 Console and DOR/YL

- According to police records, between 22:00 and 22:59, 999 Console answered 265 calls and between 23:00 and 23:59 another 387 calls (source: HKPF).
- Examination of some of the calls to 999 Console between 22:00 and 23:59 made available to IPCC revealed the following:
 - (a) Between 22:00 and 22:39, there were many reports about the people dressed in white assaulting passers-by on the streets, more reports mentioning weapons, mostly sticks and poles; and several reports saying that there was no Police after waiting for an hour.
 - (b) At 22:40, 999 Console received a report that there was a fight at Yuen Long Station and someone was lying on the floor. The caller requested ambulance service. [Note: It is not known what fight the report was referring to. From the chronology established so far, the first physical confrontation took place at 22:40 when four people dressed in white chased a female in black outfit into the paid area of Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF and MTR CCTV footage).]
 - (c) At 22:42, 999 Console received two further reports that tens of people were fighting inside Yuen Long Station. The situation was chaotic and someone was hurt and bleeding. Ambulance was asked to be sent for. (Note : Again, it is not known what fight the two reports were referring to.)
 - (d) From 22:45 onwards, 999 Console received further reports that a large number of people dressed in white had assaulted people in the vicinity of Yuen Long Station; other reports said at Yuen Long Station. (Note : From the chronology established

so far, around 70 people dressed in white went into Yuen Long Station at 22:48. It is not known what the assault the reports were referring to.)

(source: 999 calls recordings)

- According to the Police, at 22:42, RCCC NT transmitted to a Patrol Sub-unit (PSU) Sergeant two requests for police assistance inside Yuen Long Station, i.e. a male being assaulted by persons dressed in white, and a mother with a child requesting police escort. Also at 22:42, the MTR OP at Yuen Long Station reported to DOR/YL that about 30 people carrying poles had gathered at Exit F (source: HKPF).
- According to MTRC, at 22:45, station staff at Yuen Long Station noticed that disputes occurred at the station concourse and the fire alarm was also triggered. (source: press releases of MTRC). MTRC therefore made a report to the Police at 22:47 (source: HKPF and press releases of MTRC).
- According to the Police, within the three-hour period between 22:30 and 01:30, the telephone company recorded 24 374 calls being made to NT 999 Console. Among these calls, 4 164 reached the NT 999 Console system. 1 100 were answered by the 999 operators for collating 75 Incident Logs and passed to Yuen Long Divisional Console for action (later consolidated and combined into 32 Incident Logs). For reference, the daily average of calls answered by NT 999 Console over a 24-hour period is 2 300. Between 22:13 and 22:47, there were Telegram and LIHKG posts calling for people to dial 999 with a view to sabotaging the 999 Console system (see Images 10-18 and 10-19) (source: HKPF).

Deployment of Police Officers to Yuen Long Station

- At 22:45, RCCC NT dispatched two patrol cars to Yuen Long Station in response to the two requests received at 22:42 for police assistance inside Yuen Long Station (One patrol car completed handling the traffic complaints at Tong Yan San Tsuen Road and the other one finished patrolling the area around On Lok Road, Ma Miu Road, Ma Wang Road and Fairview Park.) (source: HKPF).
- At 22:52, three police constables on board the first patrol car arrived at Exit G1 of Yuen Long Station (see Image 10-32) (source: HKPF and MTR CCTV footage). The three police constables spotted no one fighting, but a crowd mostly dressed in white inside Yuen Long Station, appeared to be emotional and yelled loudly. Given the number of people involved, they considered themselves unable to handle the situation. So they reported the situation, i.e. there was a stand-off between the people inside and outside the paid area, to

their supervising sergeant who then reported to DOR/YL. DOR/YL therefore instructed the officers to retreat and wait nearby for reinforcement (source: HKPF).



Image 10-32: Three police constables from the first patrol car arrived at the station concourse

(Image source: MTR CCTV footage)

- At 22:57, DOR/YL deployed a total of about 50 QRT officers from Yuen Long Police Station, notified CRM YL HQ Team, and mobilised two columns of Tuen Mun Tier III platoon officers (about 15 officers) to go to Yuen Long Station as reinforcement. At the same time, DOR/YL instructed the second patrol car, which was on the way to Yuen Long Station, to return to Yuen Long Police Station. Upon receiving DOR/YL's assignment to go to Yuen Long Station, the QRT officers at Yuen Long Police Station put on their gear and received a briefing within ten minutes. They left the police station at 23:07 and arrived at Yuen Long Station at 23:15 (CRM YL HQ Team also arrived at the same time), one minute after the attack had ended at 23:14. This was the first batch of QRT police officers from Yuen Long Police Station to arrive at Yuen Long Station. At 23:30 and 23:38, the Tuen Mun Tier III officers and the second batch of QRT officers from Yuen Long Police Station respectively arrived at Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).

- By the time the first batch of QRT officers arrived at Yuen Long Station at 23:15, most of the people dressed in white had left. Some of them were still leaving Yuen Long Station. As captured by the CCTV footage of Yuen Long Station, at 23:15, around 40 people dressed in white took the escalator to leave the station concourse via Exit G1 (see Image 10-33). Suddenly, they turned around and ran up the escalator (which was going downward) back to the concourse (see Images 10-34 and 10-35). A few seconds later, a group of about 30

police officers were seen going up on the upward escalator to the concourse (see Image 10-36). At that time, a police officer spotted a man dressed in white trying to walk up the downward escalator to the concourse and the officer waved his baton at the man. The man then turned back to leave the station via the downward escalator (see Images 10-38 to 10-39). When the Police landed at the concourse, some of the people dressed in white were running away from the police officers, but the police officers did not give chase to stop them (see Images 10-37 and 10-40) (source: MTR CCTV footage). According to the Police, when the police officers were arriving at Yuen Long Station, they saw crowds of people but did not witness any violence. The few people dressed in white leaving the concourse did not exhibit any disorderly behaviour or violence (source: HKPF).



Image 10-33: The people dressed in white leaving the station via Exit G1
(Image source: MTR CCTV footage)



Image 10-34: The people dressed in white suddenly turned back and ran up the escalator which was going downward (Image source: MTR CCTV footage)



Image 10-35: The people dressed in white running away from Exit G1
(Image source: MTR CCTV footage)



Image 10-36: Police was then seen coming up from the upward escalator
(Image source: MTR CCTV footage)



Image 10-37: The people dressed in white ran away from the Police
(Image source: MTR CCTV footage)



Image 10-38: A police officer spotted a man dressed in white going up a downward escalator and he waved his baton at the man (*Image source: MTR CCTV footage*)

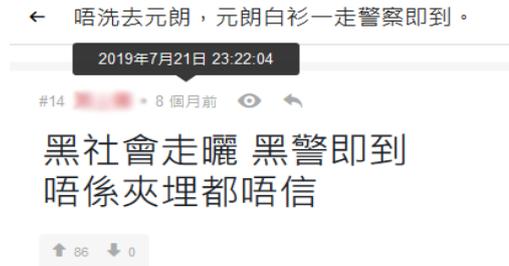


Image 10-39: The man dressed in white then left the station via the downward escalator when more Police came up the escalators (*Image source: MTR CCTV footage*)



Image 10-40: The Police did not give chase and stop the people dressed in white when they ran past (*Image source: MTR CCTV footage*)

- At 23:19, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “唔洗去元朗，元朗白衫一走警察即到。” (Translation: No need to go to Yuen Long. The Police arrived right after the people dressed in white were gone.) In the messages that followed this post, some netizens commented that the perfect timing of police arrival showed police collusion with triad society (an example at Image 10-41) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

*The black cops arrived right after the triads had left.
Would not believe they have not worked out the time together.*

Image 10-41 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 23:28, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “[文宣] 元朗西鐵站嘅事一定要比國際睇睇下香港警黑合作幾無縫”. (Translation: [Propaganda] The West Rail Line Yuen Long Station Incident must be shown to the world. See how seamlessly the Hong Kong Police cooperated with triads.) The post creator commented that the police officers arrived at Yuen Long Station, just as the people dressed in white were leaving. The Police did not even attempt to stop any of them (see Image 10-42) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

*Hong Kong now has become a third-world country.
The black cops timed their entrance into Yuen Long Station when the people dressed in white were leaving and did not try to stop them from leaving.*

Image 10-42 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 23:34, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “黑警同黑社會合作得好好”. (Translation: Black cops and triads cooperated very well.) The post creator commented that this incident showed that the Police was black cops and had obviously colluded with triads, as the police officers only appeared after the people dressed in white had assaulted the people in Yuen Long Station (see Image 10-43) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

This time the cops are really black

Just as black as triads

They only showed up after the people in white had beaten people

Isn't that collusion with triad society!?

Image 10-43 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 23:37, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “今晚元朗絕對證明到警黑合作”. (Translation: What happened tonight in Yuen Long can absolutely prove Police-triad collusion.) The post creator commented that the Police did not take action against illegal assembly and assault. It was obvious that the Police arrived at the scene only an hour later as planned (see Image 10-44) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

The illegal assembly was ignored

The assault on the platform was also ignored

Reports were not accepted

It is obvious that the black cops planned to arrive an hour late.

Image 10-44 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 23:40, a post appeared on DISCUSS forum entitled “元朗西鐵站大混戰 live”. (Translation: Yuen Long West Rail Station chaotic fight live.) The post creator attached a video footage from a LegCo Member (the same one who appeared at Yuen Long Station) which captured what happened inside Yuen Long Station. In the messages that followed this post, some netizens commented “又證明左黑社會同警察有一腿” (Translation : Again, it is proved that the Police has relationship with triads.) (source: DISCUSS forum).
- A post was created on HKGolden entitled “LIVE 元朗現場”. (Translation: Yuen Long Live.) The post creator attached a video link on the Facebook of the same LegCo Member. In the messages that followed this post, netizens denounced Police handling of the incident. Comments like “夾好晒時間 真係痴 L 線” (Translation : Timing well coordinated. Bloody crazy.) and “完美演繹黑警合作你出我入” (Translation : Perfect cooperation between the Police and triads. One party left and another party entered.) were found (see Image 10-45) (source: HKGolden).



夾好晒時間
我黎你走
追條向左走向右走咩

Translation

Have worked out the time together. I come you leave. Not bothering to chase.

Image 10-45 (Image source: HKGolden)

- The police officers arriving at Yuen Long Station helped seven injured persons to get onto the ambulance (source: HKPF). According to MTR CCTV footage, the ambulance arrived at the Bus Terminus of Yuen Long Station at 22:52 (source: MTR CCTV footage). Afterwards, over 100 citizens at Yuen Long Station surrounded the police officers and condemned them for arriving late (see Image 10-46) (source: HKPF and media reports). According to the Police, some of the citizens threw things at the officers. In view of the hostility of the crowd and there was no further fighting at Yuen Long Station, all police officers left Yuen Long Station at 23:46 (source: HKPF).



Image 10-46: At 23:15, riot police officers arrived at Yuen Long Station but most of the people dressed in white had already gone and the Police was surrounded by an angry crowd

(Image source: HK01)

- At 23:25, DOR/YL instructed the QRT officers to conduct high-profile patrol in the vicinity after they had handled the situation at Yuen Long Station. At 23:56, DOR/YL repeated the instruction. The QRT officers did not, however, conduct any high-profile patrol as instructed by DOR/YL. Instead, they reformed at Yuen Long Fire Station at 00:10 for an urgent briefing on the tactics to enhance overall operation effectiveness, in view of the unsatisfactory coordination experienced at Yuen Long Station. The QRT commander had notified DOR/YL of the arrangement for an urgent briefing via the beat radio. The briefing ended at 00:16. At this time, a QRT commander received a phone call from HQCCC telling him that many people were fighting near Yuen Long Station and a villager

had been seriously injured. The QRT commander then related this information to DOR/YL and asked DOR/YL to confirm the situation. At 00:17, DOR/YL instructed all frontline officers not to go to Yuen Long Station before confirmation of a fight there (source: HKPF).

- At 00:28, after receiving a report from an officer of PCRO/YL that there was a rumour about the death of a villager in a fight at Ying Lung Wai, DOR/YL instructed the QRTs officers to ascertain the situation there. At 00:45, QRT officers finished conducting sweeping at Ying Lung Wai but they did not locate any injured person or witness (source: HKPF).

Officer's Response to Media Enquiry

- After coming out of Yuen Long Station at 23:46, the QRT officers did not leave the spot instantly. It took them some time until midnight to reform their respective teams on the street near Yuen Long Station before going to Yuen Long Fire Station (source: HKPF). Around midnight, when the police officers were still in the vicinity of Yuen Long Station, a reporter enquired with another QRT commander why the Police was so late in arriving at Yuen Long Station. (Note: This commander was the same commander who had led the operation in the 16 July confrontation after the public screening, and was captured on a video patting the shoulder of a person dressed in white. Details given on p. 16.) The commander had replied “我睇唔到錶呀，Sorry 呀！你見唔見到頭先都幾亂下㗎？見到㗎可？如果見到你就知啦，我哋點會有機會可以睇錶呢？” (Translation: Sorry, I did not look at the watch. Did you not see how chaotic that was? You saw it, right? If you saw it, then you would know. How would we have the chance to look at the watch?) (source: media reports).

Police Stations Besieged

- At 23:15 and 23:20, Tin Shui Wai Police Station and Yuen Long Police Station were respectively surrounded by some 20 people who were dissatisfied with the Police handling of the incident at Yuen Long Station. At 23:19, DOR/YL activated station defence for both police stations. By 00:12, the gathering outside Tin Shui Wai Police Station had increased to 150. Both Tin Shui Wai Police Station and Yuen Long Police Station adopted access control of the Report Room and had pulled down the main gate there. Police officers were deployed to guard the door, maintain access control and handle public enquiry on the spot. The access control was lifted when station defence was deactivated at 05:45.

According to the Police, during access control period, members of the public could still enter the Report Room via a door on the main gate. During that period, a total of 22 and 37 persons had been to Tin Shui Wai Police Station and Yuen Long Police Station respectively for enquiry or reports (source: HKPF).

Part (iii): Further Assault Incidents at or near Yuen Long Station

Fighting at Ying Lung Wai

- According to the news, close to the midnight after the attack at Yuen Long Station, a crowd of about 30 people dressed in white gathered at Ying Lung Wai, right behind Yuen Long Station from Exit J. Around 23:58, there was an encounter between some people dressed in white and some 30 in black outfits there when the latter were leaving Yuen Long Station. At 00:05, the two parties hurled things at one another and a fight erupted. The people dressed in white fought with sticks, umbrellas and pole-like objects while the people in black outfits used umbrellas (source: media reports and live video footage).
- According to the Police, at 00:01 on 22 July, 999 Console received a report of fighting at Ying Lung Wai near Exit J. 999 Console did not deploy any police officers for it. Nor did it inform DOR/YL of the report. 999 Console had wrongly consolidated that report into two earlier reports requesting for police assistance, both made at 00:00. One report from a citizen requesting police escort to leave Yuen Long Station and the other from some ambulance officers seeking police assistance to enter Yuen Long Station via Exit J. Due to insufficient manpower, no officer was assigned to give the requested assistance in these two reports. As DOR/YL was not informed of the report of the fighting at Ying Lung Wai near Exit J, no deployment was arranged (source: HKPF).
- It later transpired that the fight was a new incident during which a male villager who, according to some news reports, was a Yuen Long triad faction leader had collapsed at 00:08 and was subsequently sent to hospital (source: HKPF and media reports).

People Dressed in White Returned to Yuen Long Station

- At 00:16, about ten people dressed in white, holding poles and umbrellas, returned to Yuen Long Station via Exit J to attack the people in black outfits inside. The people dressed in black also used umbrellas as protection. The people dressed in white were outnumbered and ran away (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).

- Rumours that the Yuen Long triad faction leader had died soon spread online that night. From LIHKG, two photos capturing a WhatsApp-like screen of conversations at 00:16 and 01:14 indicated the Yuen Long triad faction leader had died and that the triads had summoned members to take action (see Images 10-47 and 10-48) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

Yuen Long Big Brother has just died.

Images 10-47 (left) and 10-48 (right) (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 00:28, a PCRO officer reported to DOR/YL rumours of the death of the Yuen Long triad faction leader. DOR/YL then instructed the QRT officers, who were attending a briefing at Yuen Long Fire Station, to ascertain the situation at Ying Lung Wai (source: HKPF).
- Subsequent news reported that the rumour had angered the triad members as they thought the people in black outfits were responsible for the death of the Yuen Long triad faction leader (source: media reports).

Further Attack at 00:28

- At 00:25, the MTRC closed Exit J (source: HKPF), which leads to three villages, namely Tai Wai Tsuen, Ying Lung Wai and Wong Uk Tsuen. It was installed with a roller shutter. While some of the people in black outfits had already left Yuen Long Station, a number of

them were still in the concourse of Yuen Long Station (source: MTR CCTV footage and media reports).

- At 00:28, about 30 people dressed in white returned to Exit J and taunted those in black outfits still inside Yuen Long Station through the roller shutter. In response, a person in black outfit threw a helmet at the roller shutter in the face of those dressed in white. Another person in black outfit charged forward with an umbrella in an attempt to stab the people dressed in white through the roller shutter (see Images 10-49 and 10-50) (source: media reports).



Image 10-49: At 00:28, tens of people dressed in white returned to Exit J of Yuen Long Station.

A person in black outfit rushed forward with an umbrella to the roller shutter
(Image source: Now TV)



Image 10-50: The person in black outfit used an umbrella to stab the people dressed in white through the roller shutter (Image source: Now TV)

- The people dressed in white pulled up the roller shutter and chased after the person who tried to stab them with an umbrella and assaulted him (see Image 10-51). The people dressed in white attacked other people in Yuen Long Station. They chased after the people in black outfits who fled to Yoho Mall. People were injured (see Image 10-52). The people dressed in white then left Yuen Long Station via Exit J (source: MTR CCTV footage and media reports).



Image 10-51: At Exit J of Yuen Long Station, people dressed in white pulled up the roller shutter and rushed inside the station to attack the people thereat (*Image source: RTHK*)

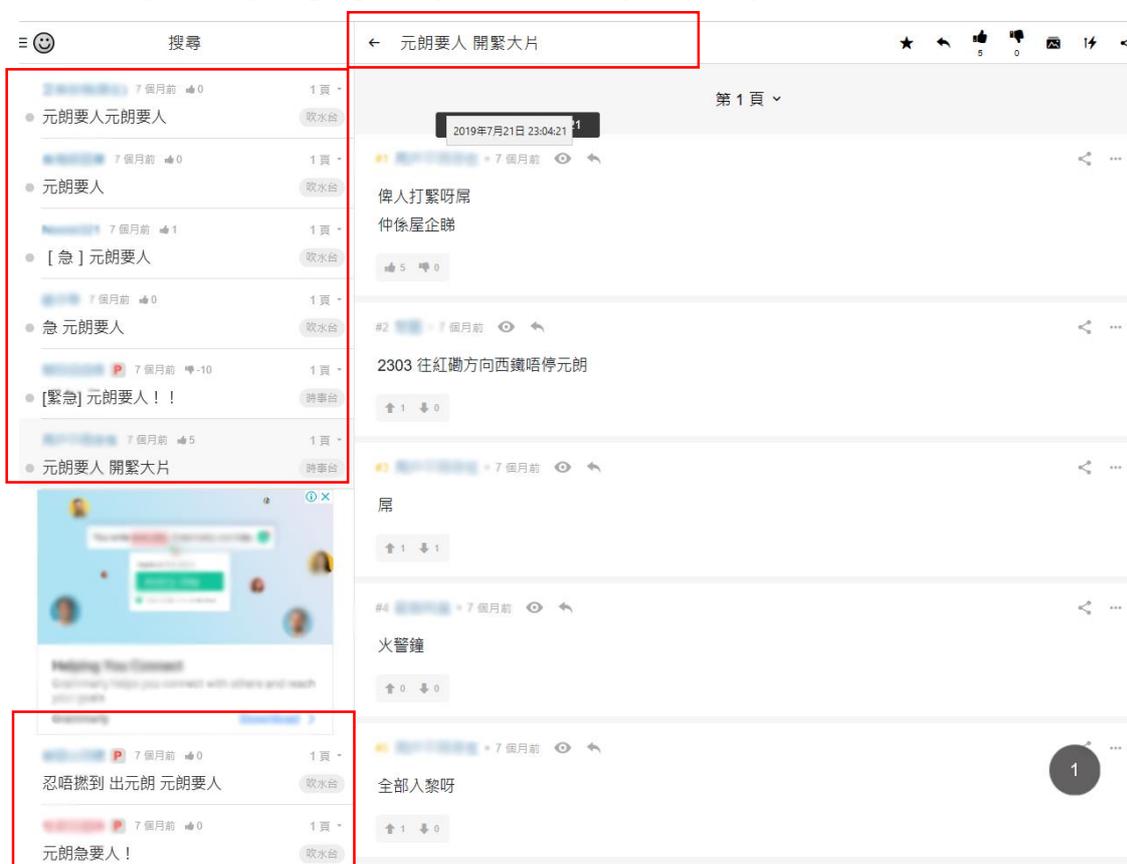


Image 10-52: People were injured during the further attack at Exit J, Yuen Long Station (*Image source: HK01*)

- According to police records, 999 Console answered 424 calls between 00:00 and 00:59 (source: HKPF). Examination of some of the calls to 999 Console between 00:00 and 00:59 made available to IPCC revealed the following:
 - (a) At 00:28, the 999 Console received a call reporting another attack at Exit J.
 - (b) At 00:29, the 999 Console received another call saying that the assailants had pulled up the roller shutter at Exit J and were rushing into Yuen Long Station to assault people again.(source: 999 calls recordings)
- According to the Police, by 01:00, the Police had received at least 11 reports related to the attack at Exit J at 00:16 and ten reports about the attack at 00:28 respectively. Owing to the immense pressure and the confusion from the sudden surge of an unusually large volume of calls within a short time, 999 Console thought those reports were about the previous attack inside Yuen Long Station, which had been dealt with by QRT officers. As the Police did not realise that there was another attack, they did not send any police officers back to Yuen Long Station until 01:00 (source: HKPF).
- The Police revealed that it was at 00:28 that DOR/YL further received another two pieces of information, one from a PCRO officer that a villager had just died in a fighting at Ying Lung Wai and another from MTR OP reporting that 30 persons dressed in white had appeared outside Exit J and argued with those dressed in black inside through the roller shutter. Having assessed the seriousness of the incidents and the limited resources available, DOR/YL instructed QRTs to proceed to Ying Lung Wai (source: HKPF).
- The Police stated that, with the escalating confrontation in Yuen Long and that the situation on Hong Kong Island subsiding, HQCCC reformed RRC NTN and at 00:16 sent it to Yuen Long District to restore public order, prevent the escalation of violence and deter crime. As the situation at Yuen Long Station and its vicinity was still volatile, the senior Police management of the District decided to instruct the RRC NTN commander to lead the troops to Yuen Long Station. At 01:00, the reinforcement arrived at Yuen Long Station. At 01:04, they completed sweeping but no injured person or witness could be located (source: HKPF).

*Part (iv): Police Action at Nam Pin Wai and Messages on the Internet**Stand-off at Nam Pin Wai between 00:57 and 03:35*

- Shortly after the first attack began, there were online appeals calling for people to go to Yuen Long to reinforce the Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters. At 23:04, a post entitled “元朗要人 開緊大片” appeared on LIHKG. (Translation: Need people in Yuen Long. A big fight there.) The post creator urged people not to just watch what happened in Yuen Long on television but to go there. On LIHKG, there were other posts with similar headings calling for people to go to Yuen Long (see Image 10-53) (source: LIHKG).

*Translation*

Yuen Long urgently needs people. A big fight over there.

Image 10-53 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 00:45, SPT officers reported to DOR/YL that around 100 people, mostly in black outfits and some with helmets and umbrellas, were walking from Kuk Ting Street (see Map 10-1) towards Nam Pin Wai (source: HKPF). At 00:57, a few hundred in black outfits gathered outside Nam Pin Wai. Many of them were wearing a helmet and a mask, and holding an umbrella. Some were holding poles (see Image 10-54). According to news reports, they gathered there in response to the online appeals for reinforcement (source: media reports and live video footage).

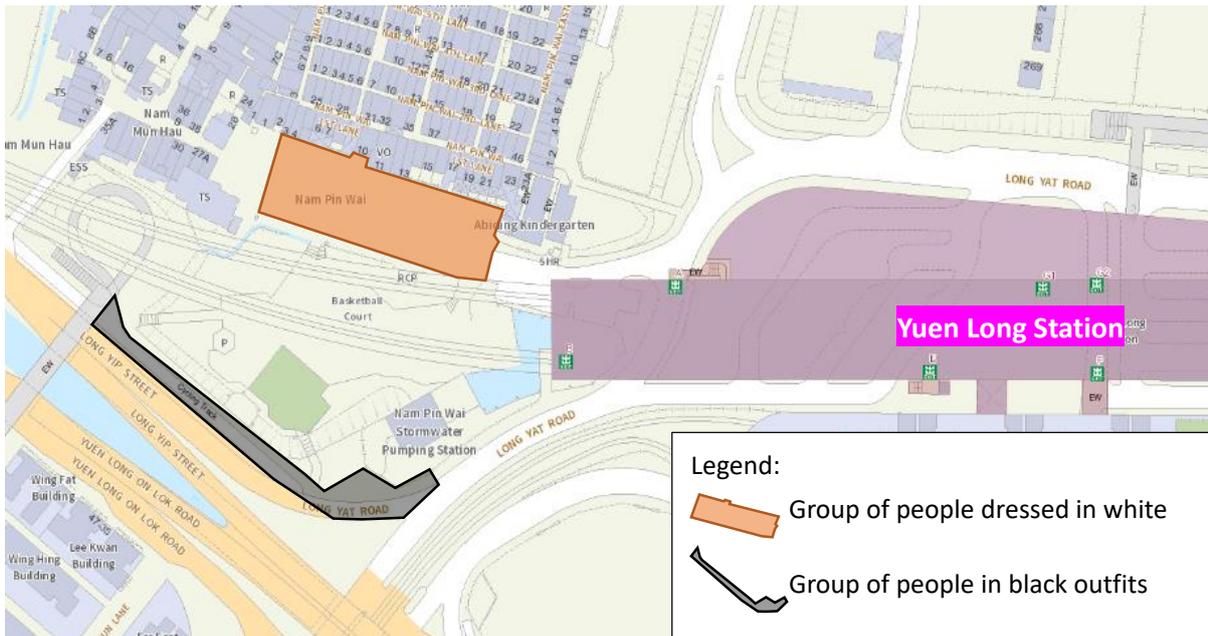


Image 10-54: People wearing black outfits and masks were seen gathering outside Nam Pin Wai holding umbrellas and poles (*Image source: Now TV*)

- According to a news report, after the attack, the people dressed in white fled to Nam Pin Wai, which is a 3-minute walk from Exit A of Yuen Long Station. At 00:57, media footage captured images of a group in black outfits chasing some people dressed in white to the entrance of Nam Pin Wai. Some people on both parties were holding poles. There was a brief moment of clashes at the entrance of Nam Pin Wai, after which the people dressed in white retreated into Nam Pin Wai whereas the people in black outfits remained on the spot. The footage showed that people in black outfits were gathering there, i.e. outside Nam Pin Wai, while many people dressed in white were at the entrance inside Nam Pin Wai (see Image 10-55). The two spots were separated by an open space underneath a flyover. There was a stand-off between the two parties (see Map 10-3). Many on both sides were carrying poles, sticks, or umbrellas (source: HKPF and media reports).



Image 10-55 : People dressed in white gathered at the entrance of Nam Pin Wai
(Image source: HK01)



Map 10-3: Stand-off locations of people dressed in white and black at Nam Pin Wai
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

- Around 01:00, about 500 riot police officers returning from the operation on Hong Kong Island arrived at Nam Pin Wai upon HQCCC redeployment, to control the situation. (The clashes on Hong Kong Island ended at 23:41) The Police formed a cordon line between the two groups. According to the Police, the mission of their deployment was to restore public order, prevent the escalation of violence and deter crime. The top priority of the officers in charge at the scene was, therefore, to separate the two large crowds about to engage in ferocious confrontation (source: HKPF).

- Around 02:26, from a news footage, yelling of abusive language provoking the people dressed in white in Nam Pin Wai to come out of the village for confrontation could be heard from the video clip. Some six males dressed in white, all masked and holding a pole, responded and walked towards the open space at the entrance outside the village. These men responded by yelling abusive words. One of them threw a plastic water bottle in the direction of the yelling (i.e. towards Long Yip Street). Two riot police officers approached them from behind. One of the officers held a baton, while the other had a baton and a round shield. The officer holding just a baton, a Superintendent of Police, pointed his baton towards Nam Pin Wai. In response, four of the males turned back to Nam Pin Wai, while the remaining two, who were wearing a white helmet, remained on the spot and kept pointing their poles in the direction of Long Yip Street (see Image 10-56). The Superintendent pointed his right hand to the direction of Nam Pin Wai, while the other officer gestured them to stop walking forward. They had a brief conversation for about 30 seconds, during which the Superintendent put his left hand on the shoulder of one of the males for about two seconds (see Image 10-57). The two men then turned around and walked back to Nam Pin Wai, while the Superintendent once again pointed his hand in the direction of Nam Pin Wai and followed them for a short distance before turning back to join the other riot officers standing guard at Long Yat Road (source: media reports and live video footage).

- According to the Police, the two officers were instructing the persons dressed in white to return to Nam Pin Wai. When the two men did not comply, the Superintendent and the other officer then had a brief conversation with them during which the officers pushed the men towards the direction of the village with their free hands, while holding their batons in the other. The officer also pointed at the baton to ensure the persons dressed in white complied with the instructions (source: HKPF).



Image 10-56: Two riot police officers approached the men dressed in white (*Image source: RTHK*)



Image 10-57: The two riot officers had a brief conversation with two persons dressed in white. During which, an officer put his left hand on the shoulder on one male (*Image source: RTHK*)

- At 03:25, crime officers of Yuen Long District arrived at Nam Pin Wai. According to the Police, those people in black outfits scattering nearby had already dispersed while those dressed in white had reduced to around 200. Most people at the scene started to leave Nam Pin Wai through connected alleys whilst those remained were not seen committing any crime nor holding any weapon. There was no direct evidence at that stage and no arrest

was made as such. Throughout the night, the Police had questioned and searched 40 males (from both groups) and found (as well as seized) over 160 items of iron pipes, wooden sticks and golf clubs at a nearby open-space carpark (source: HKPF).

- At 04:45, people dressed in white also left Nam Pin Wai (source: HKPF and media reports).

Messages on the Internet

- At 03:46, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “一圖說明元朗鄉黑白衫人事件”. (Translation: One graphic to illustrate the Yuen Long Incident of village triads dressed in white.) (see Image 10-58) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

The Police worked in collusion with triads.

Triads dressed in white beat civilians with rattan sticks, wooden poles and iron pipes

No Police arrive in 30 minutes. The Police hung up 999 calls.

Image 10-58: A graphic designed by netizens summarizing the Yuen Long Incident
(Image source: LIHKG)

In the messages that followed this post, some netizens raised two incidents to claim that the Police had colluded with triads, namely the Police arrived only when the triad members had beaten people in Yuen Long and Yuen Long Station, and the Police only stood guard around Nam Pin Wai when the people dressed in white had gathered there (see Image 10-59) (source: LIHKG).



警黑合作例子：

- 1.) 放任黑社會周街打人仲要打到入西鐵，好啦打人嗰班走曬你地班警察先過嚟，時間啱啱好
- 2.) 南邊圍村嗰邊，明明影住曬班白色衫擺住鐵通叫陣，班警察只敢遠觀，唔敢向前推進一步

Translation

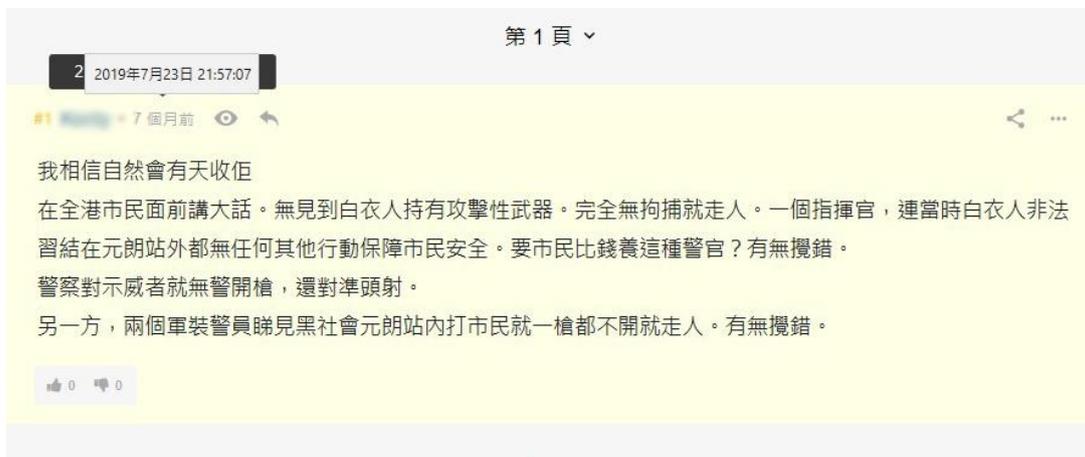
Examples of Police-triad collusion

1. *The Police worked well with triads on the timing that the Police did not come over until the triad members had left after beating people at Yuen Long Station.*
2. *At Nam Pin Wai, the Police only looked from far away and dared not to come forward a step. It was clear that the people dressed in white were holding iron pipes and yelling.*

Image 10-59 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 05:05, before the police officers left Nam Pin Wai, a Superintendent conducted a stand-up media briefing. When asked by reporters why the Police had not arrested anyone dressed in white, he replied, “白衣嘅人唔等於佢有份參與呢個打鬥。我地唔能夠話你白衣就係有問題，我就要作出拘捕。任何陣形，我地係公平處理。我地亦都唔能夠話你黑衣，就係有份參與呢個打鬥。所以，我地一定公平處理。” (Translation : People dressed in white does not necessarily mean that they have taken part in the fight. We cannot say that your wearing white outfits means that you are a problem and we have to make arrest. Irrespective of whatever camp, we will handle the matter fairly. At the same time, we can't say that you have taken part in the fight because you wear black. We have to handle the matter in an impartial manner.) When asked by reporters why no arrest had been made when people were carrying offensive weapons, the Superintendent responded, “我相信我刑事同事落到嚟係唔見有任何人揸攻擊性武器。” (Translation : I believe my crime team colleagues did not see anyone holding offensive weapons when they arrived at the scene.) (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).

- After the Superintendent had made the above statements, many posts criticising that Superintendent and the Police (in relation to the Yuen Long Incident) appeared on the internet, such as LIHKG. Some messages condemned collusion between the Police and triads. Some suggested that the officer had lied to all Hong Kong citizens by saying that there was no sign of people in white holding offensive weapons (see Image 10-60). In August, some messages made reference to the arrest of a university student on 6 August for “Possession of Offensive Weapon” in Sham Shui Po after he had purchased laser pointers, in comparison with no arrest in the Yuen Long when the people dressed in white were holding iron pipes and poles (source: LIHKG).



Translation

Lying in front of all the citizens of Hong Kong saying that not seeing the people dressed in white had any offensive weapons. (The Police) left without making any arrest.

Two uniformed police officers saw triad members beating citizens inside Yuen Long Station. They left without firing a shot.

Image 10-60 (Image source: LIHKG)

Phase IV - Public Speculation and Police Response after Yuen Long IncidentPublic Speculation on Police-triad Collusion

- From the night of 21 July onwards, there were many posts on LIHKG talking about Police-triad collusion. Some examples are cited below (source: LIHKG).
- At 02:14 on 22 July, a post entitled “元朗警黑合作既間接證據” appeared on LIHKG. (Translation: Indirect evidence of Police-triad cooperation) The post creator said that the people dressed in white did not need to mask their face, because even if the Police knew who they were, the black cops would not arrest them. The post creator concluded that the people dressed in white and the police officers colluded with one another (see Image 10-61) (source: LIHKG).

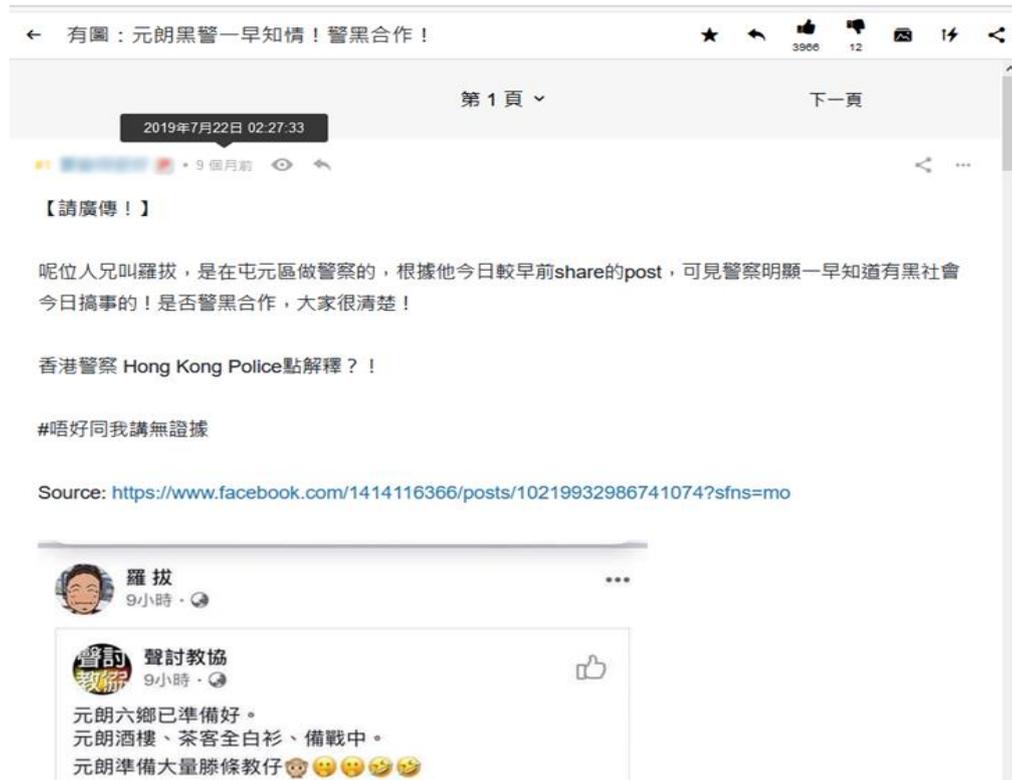
Translation

The people dressed in white did not have to cover their faces. Even though their identity is known to the Police, they would not be arrested. They have colluded with one another. Why the Police did not arrest the triad members whose images were uploaded on Facebook? Do the Police really think that Hongkongers are idiots?

Image 10-61 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 02:27 on 22 July, a post entitled “有圖：元朗黑警一早知情！警黑合作！” appeared on LIHKG. (Translation: With photo: Yuen Long black cops knew it long ago! Police-triad collusion!) The post creator re-posted a Facebook post of someone who claimed to be a police officer of Tuen Mun District, and said that the Facebook post clearly indicated

Police-triad collusion. The Facebook post, which was posted nine hours before this LIHKG post, mentioned “元朗六鄉已準備好。元朗酒樓、茶客全白衫、備戰中。元朗準備大量滕(籐)條教仔”。 (Translation: Yuen Long six villages were ready. The customers in Yuen Long restaurant all dressed in white were ready for war. Yuen Long has prepared a large supply of rattan sticks for discipline.” (see Image 10-62) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

This guy, named Robert, is a police officer serving in Tuen Mun District. Based on the post he had shared earlier today, it can be seen that the Police knew in advance that the triads would stir up trouble today. How does the Police explain then?! Don't tell me there is no evidence.

Image 10-62 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 02:43 on 24 July, a post entitled “十分重要！元朗警黑合作的祕密！背後話事人！” appeared on LIHKG. (Translation: Very important! Secret of Police-triad collusion in Yuen Long! The boss behind it!) The post creator pointed out that a directorate police officer was an indigenous villager and urged netizens to stop him from becoming the next Commissioner (see Image 10-63) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

The future Commissioner of Police, TANG Ping Keung, is an indigenous villager.

Image 10-63 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 22:48 on 29 July, a post entitled “警黑合作無間鐵證 元朗黑夜” appeared on LIHKG. (Translation: Seamless cooperation between the Police and triads. For Yuen Long dark night.) The post creator stated that the CCTV footage shown on a television news programme revealed that, prior to the people dressed in white going to Yuen Long Station, several police vehicles drove past where the people dressed in white were gathering. However, the police officers did not do anything. This was conclusive evidence that the Police cooperated perfectly with the triad members (source: LIHKG).
- In the afternoon of 22 July, the Pan-democrat legislators held a press conference criticising and condemning Police-triad collusion in the Yuen Long Incident (source: media reports).

- On the internet, there were many posters and propaganda drawings depicting speculations of Police-triad collusion arising from the Yuen Long Incident. Some examples are given below (see Images 10-64 to 10-68) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

Deserters

Wanted

Hong Kong Police

*21 July 2019 Around 23:00
After witnessing citizens under
terrorist attack, two uniformed
police turned around and left,
leaving the citizens to death.*

Image 10-64 (Image source: LIHKG)



Translation

Yuen Long

*Black
Cops*

Image 10-65 (Image source: LIHKG)

Translation

721

*Yuen Long Station Terrorist Attack
Hong Kong Police deliberately left
the scene to create
HUMANITARIAN DISASTER
Allowing over a hundred armed
people dressed in white and triad
members to attack passers-by
indiscriminately.*

*Police arrived 39 minutes after the
report.*

*The incident caused 45 persons
injured, including a pregnant
woman, one in critical condition and
five seriously injured.
After half a year, only 37 persons
were arrested and seven of them
were charged.*

Image 10-66 (Image source: LIHKG)



Translation

*Never forget 7.21
Time without Police
Police-triad collusion
Yuen Long Terrorist
Attack*

Image 10-67 (Image source: LIHKG)



Translation

*Police-triad cooperation
(*“Popo” is a slang term for
the local police)*

Image 10-68 (Image source: LIHKG)

Police and Government Responses

22 July

- At 00:16 on 22 July, the Government issued a press release condemning violent acts on Hong Kong Island and in Yuen Long (source: Information Services Department).¹⁰
- At 03:54, the Police issued a press release to condemn the violent acts on Hong Kong Island and in Yuen Long. The Police also reiterated its stance of not tolerating any violent behaviour (source: Information Services Department).¹¹

¹⁰ Information Services Department Press Release (2019-07-22). “The Government strongly condemns violent acts” Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/22/P2019072200010.htm>

¹¹ Information Services Department Press Release (2019-07-22). “Police condemn violent acts” <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/22/P2019072200117.htm?fontSize=3>

- On the same morning, a Police Public Relations Branch (PPRB) spokesperson attended an interview with a radio station. During the interview, the Police spokesperson refuted the accusation of Police-triad collusion. The officer explained that police manpower was stretched out on 21 July as the Police had to focus on the violent protests in Western District. It took the Police longer to reallocate manpower to Yuen Long (source: media report).
- At 15:00, the Chief Executive, together with the Secretaries of Bureaux and Directors of Departments, and the Commissioner, attended a media session at the Office of the Chief Executive.¹² The Chief Executive condemned the violent acts both on Hong Kong Island and in Yuen Long on 21 July, and stated that the Government would seriously take enforcement action. The Commissioner briefed the press about what happened on 21 July in Yuen Long and Western District and the Police action. The Commissioner denied any Police-triad collusion (source: Information Services Department and media reports).
- Around midnight, the Police held a stand-up briefing outside a police station to announce that they had arrested six persons for “Unlawful Assembly” in relation to the Yuen Long Incident. Some of them were triad members. The Police said at the briefing that they would arrest anyone who was involved in the violent acts (source: Facebook page of HKPF and media reports).

24 July

- In response to public criticism of Police handling in the Yuen Long Incident, the Police published a video on its Facebook Page and YouTube Channel to explain that the Police late response in the Yuen Long Incident was because most of the police manpower had been deployed to handle the protests in Western District. The already limited police manpower in Yuen Long was occupied by other reports around the District at the material time (source: Facebook page and YouTube channel of HKPF).

25 July

- At a press conference in the afternoon, the Police explained that on 21 July, the police officers who first attended the scene left shortly because the situation was beyond their ability to control and reinforcement was required. The riot police officers arrived at Yuen Long Station 39 minutes after receiving the report (source: media reports).

¹² Information Services Department Press Release (2019-07-22). “Transcript of remarks by CE at media session (with video)”
Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/22/P2019072200890.htm?fontSize=>

6 August

- At 16:00 at the Police regular press conference, reporters enquired about the Yuen Long Incident. The Police denied any collusion with triads. The Police further explained that it required 28 minutes to deploy 40 police officers for reinforcement at Yuen Long Station as there were violent clashes in the protests in Western District (source: media report).

Complaints against Police

10.22 As at 29 February 2020, the Yuen Long Incident had given rise to 53 RCs and 19 NCs.

10.23 The nature of the RCs is as follows :

- 28 RCs about officers' failure to answer 999 calls.
- 11 RCs about officers hanging up 999 calls.
- Nine RCs about Police's failure to attend the scene.
- Four RCs about officers' impoliteness.
- One RC about officer's failure to answer enquiries.

10.24 The nature of the NCs is as follows :

- Five NCs (raised by 344 complainants) about officers not answering calls to 999 and Report Rooms.
- Ten NCs about officers' failure to attend the scene promptly and take appropriate action, such as cordoning off the scene and making arrests.
- Two NCs about officers making inappropriate statements to the media. (One NC was raised by 183 complainants against a District Commander who had replied to the reporters that he did not have time to look at his watch when asked to explain the police officers' late arrival at Yuen Long Station. One NC was raised by a LegCo Member about a statement made by a Senior Superintendent of PPRB during a television channel interview that the Yuen Long Incident was caused by a group of people leading protesters to Yuen Long)
- One NC about officers' failure to restrain arrested persons properly.
- One NC about Police-triad collusion.

Police Response

10.25 In response to the events of this day, Police management has made various observations to the IPCC, as set out below:

Police Intelligence-based Risk Management on the Events of 21 July

10.26 Shortly after the scuffle between local Yuen Long residents and those involved in the outdoor video screening in Yuen Long on 16 July, propaganda from advocates of POEs against the Fugitive Offenders Bill, and alleged Yuen Long local residents began emerging on various social media platforms. The Police had been monitoring the situation since then.

10.27 In view of the above development, officers in Yuen Long District continued gathering intelligence via several means. Furthermore, Crime Yuen Long District officers were deployed to debrief some Yuen Long village representatives in a Rural Committee event on 18 July. Most of the village representatives denied any knowledge of the online propaganda and any planned activities on 21 July. Regardless, officers urged them to persuade villagers to stay home on that day, which was acknowledged.

10.28 Yuen Long District's assessment was that possible crowd gathering and minor confrontation like that of the scale of 16 July would happen on 21 July but Hong Kong Island Region would remain the main "battlefield".

10.29 The Police accorded a higher priority to Hong Kong Island rather than Yuen Long for the reasons below:

- (a) Feedback to the Fugitive Offenders Bill event in Yuen Long on 21 July was sparing.
- (b) The self-claimed Yuen Long local residents responded that the Yuen Long community would take action to protect Yuen Long themselves.
- (c) Most of the village representatives denied any knowledge of the online propaganda and any planned activities on 21 July.
- (d) Based on the history of public events in Yuen Long since June 2019, there had only been minor scuffle between Yuen Long local residents and the activists of the Fugitive Offenders Bill protests on 16 July.
- (e) The public procession on Hong Kong Island scheduled on 21 July had aroused extensive discussion on all platforms, suggesting a large turnout, with possible large-scale confrontation between the protesters and the Police. Available intelligence also suggested the POE was going to be extremely violent and widespread, with

protesters deploying new deadly weapons, including petrol bombs, sling shots, bows and arrows.

- (f) Comparing the level of response and interest in the online propaganda, risk levels involved and the violence previously experienced in both Yuen Long and Hong Kong Island, HQCCC accorded priority to Hong Kong Island for RRC resources to deal with possible confrontation, and at the same time HQCCC was prepared to address any emerging threats occurring elsewhere in Hong Kong using RRC or other available resources.

Police Deployment Plan in Yuen Long

10.30 As a part of the on-going manpower arrangement of Operation TIDERIDER, Yuen Long District had also been supplying manpower (102 officers) to form an integral part of RRC NTN, as well as a separate Yuen Long Tier III platoon under the command of HQCCC since 21 June. On 21 July, these officers were deployed to Hong Kong Island, thus significantly reducing the deployable resources in Yuen Long District.

10.31 To cope with any emergency situation, the District Commander retained the necessary divisional manpower in Yuen Long District for manning the District's three police stations as well as handling beat incidents. He also mobilised the remaining crime and uniformed branch officers to form ad hoc special units as follows:

- (a) DOR/YL with 11 officers, assisted the District Commander of Yuen Long (Temporary) to command the operation, and provided updates on the overall situation and instructions to all participating units.
- (b) QRT with 70 uniformed branch officers, equipped with arms and ammunitions, batons, OC foams, handcuffs, protective helmets, and arm and shin guards, to handle any incidents of concern. They might also be deployed to conduct station defense duty. They were not expected to be deployed for sweeping duties but mainly for intervention of confrontation involving moderate level of violence.
- (c) CRT with 46 officers, equipped with arms and ammunitions, batons, OC foams, handcuffs, and arm and shin guards, to covertly authenticating reports related to the POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill where the informant could not be contacted, and investigating crime in their assigned areas. A great majority of the CRT personnel did not receive PTU training. They were not equipped with the knowledge and the qualification to use the equipment required for conducting sweeping duties. They would not be deployed to handle the confrontation involving large crowds.

- (d) SPT with 13 crime and uniformed branch officers in plainclothes with no police equipment. They were deployed to various locations around Yuen Long Town to report any irregularity related to the POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill that they observed within their areas. SPTs were not expected to handle any confrontation between different parties. They would not disclose police identities during the operation.
- (e) CRM YL HQ Team with five officers, equipped with arms and ammunitions, batons, OC foams, handcuffs, and arm and shin guards, to oversee initial investigation of all crime committed during 21 July in Yuen Long. The equipment issued to CRM YL HQ Team was mainly for ensuring their personal safety. They would not be deployed to handle the confrontation involving large crowds.
- (f) MTR OP with eight crime officers at West Rail Line Yuen Long, Tin Shui Wai, Long Ping and Kam Sheung Road Stations, i.e. two crime officers at each station. They stayed at the Control Room of West Rail Station along with a Rail District officer throughout. MTR OP was required to report directly to DOR/YL any irregularity without leaving the Control Room. These officers carried no police beat equipment.

10.32 Regional Headquarters NTN additionally assigned a Tier III platoon (total 30 officers) on standby at Tuen Mun for Yuen Long District's priority deployment.

Police Handling of 999 Reports on Crowd Gathering in Yuen Long before the First Attack at Yuen Long Station

10.33 The gathering of persons dressed in white at different locations in Yuen Long town area was known to the Police. Upon receiving the 999 reports on gathering of people dressed in white, DOR/YL sent CRTs to verify the reports. According to the CRTs, persons dressed in white were seen at various spots in Yuen Long but no one was taking part in fighting, holding a weapon, or engaging in an unlawful assembly. They were seen appearing at the same place without chanting slogans or staging demonstration.

10.34 CRT officers, having consulted DOR/YL, made the judgment that no immediate dispersal was considered necessary or prudent after taking into account the fact that no crime or breach of the peace had occurred. Any dispersal might result in an otherwise avoidable violent confrontation. DOR/YL and the officers had to exercise due caution, this being only one week after the Sha Tin confrontation. In that incident, police officers were ferociously attacked by some violent protesters inside New Town Plaza during Police action to maintain law and order. 11 police officers were injured, including an officer who was beaten

unconscious, and another officer who had a section of his finger bitten off by a mobster. One injured officer remains on sick leave as at February 2020. As a result, cautious deployment of sufficient or extra officers in the handling of suspicious calls and possible confrontation situations became a Force-wide practice.

10.35 For the news programme which broadcast CCTV clips showing police vehicles that drove past the gathering crowds on three occasions, seemingly without making timely intervention and preventing the subsequent violence, all officers on board the police vehicles acknowledged the presence of persons dressed in white in the area but without observing any weapons or disorderly manner. As such, no intervention of crowds was warranted.

10.36 Between 20:00 and 21:00, HICOM NTN contacted HQCCC on three occasions requesting additional resources to be allocated to NTN Region in response to the reports received on people dressed in white gathering at various locations of Yuen Long. HQCCC, however, maintained its decision to accord priority of manpower resources to Hong Kong Island.

Late Arrival of the Police Officers at Yuen Long Station

10.37 RCCC NT communicated two requests for police assistance inside Yuen Long Station at 22:42. The first patrol car arrived at 22:52, ten minutes after the initial call was received, which was within the “15 minute” performance pledge.

10.38 At 22:57, having been informed of the situation by the supervisor of the first patrol car and confirmed the same with MTR OP, DOR/YL deployed QRT to Yuen Long Station and requested Tuen Mun Tier III to come to Yuen Long Station as reinforcement. In view of the scale of fighting, reinforcing officers received briefing, drew appropriate equipment and arrived at the scene within 18 minutes of the time of deployment (22:57 to 23:15).

Deployment of Two Patrol Cars to Yuen Long Station

10.39 RCCC NT communicated two requests to a PSU Sergeant for police assistance inside Yuen Long Station, for a male being assaulted by persons dressed in white and for a mother with a child requiring police escort. At that stage, there was no indication that the situation at Yuen Long Station was beyond the capacity of routine resources. As such, two patrol cars with a total of six police officers on board were sent to Yuen Long Station.

10.40 The three attending officers (*of the first arriving patrol car*) reported a stand-off between people inside and outside the paid area. The Police decision for the three officers to retreat was made in considering the available manpower, equipment and the officers’ personal

safety, particularly in view of the severe casualties caused to police officers the week before by hundreds of violent mobsters using umbrellas and other hard objects inside confined premises on 14 July at Sha Tin New Town Plaza. Given the size of the radical crowd and the hostile atmosphere, only five officers on board two patrol cars were deployable (one officer had to guard the patrol cars which carried lots of equipment onboard). The two crime officers at MTR OP carried no police beat equipment and therefore could not be deployed. QRT was therefore considered the most appropriate unit to safely handle the incident.

No Arrest at Yuen Long Station

10.41 When the first batch of QRT officers arrived at Yuen Long Station from 23:15 onwards, the first brawl had already concluded. Around 100 persons who remained in the concourse of Yuen Long Station mostly dressed in black and some with no obvious markings, immediately surrounded and scolded the officers for their late arrival. The officers then helped ambulancemen to escort seven injured persons onto ambulances. Without receiving any new requests for assistance or observing any crime at Yuen Long Station, and given the gathering crowds' level of hostility, the officers-in-charge considered no inquiry or investigation was possible and therefore they retreated from Yuen Long Station.

10.42 The mission of the QRTs was to intervene any fighting in the station and restore law and order. According to the QRTs, they did not witness any assault when they arrived. The officers focused on the handling of injured persons and facilitating the work of the ambulancemen at the scene. They were soon overwhelmed by the hostile crowd and therefore no further action could possibly be taken.

10.43 Despite the commanders of QRTs had already briefed their officers about the situation, the approaching tactics and safety measures, etc., the coordination and communication between the QRTs inside Yuen Long Station were unsatisfactory. Being out-numbered by the aggressive hostile crowds inside the station, the QRTs could hardly carry out their duty. An QRT commander, therefore, called for an urgent briefing at 23:59 on the tactics to be deployed with a view to enhancing the overall operational effectiveness.

Closure of Yuen Long and Tin Shui Wai Police Stations

10.44 At 23:15, Tin Shui Wai Police Station was surrounded by around 20 persons. Those persons were believed to be acting in response to the appeals posted on the social media platforms earlier in the same evening or after witnessing/ knowing the situation at Yuen Long Station via news reports. (The crowd that besieged the police station was believed to be local

anti-Fugitive Offenders Bill groups living in Tin Shui Wai area.) The crowd queried Police handling of the fight at Yuen Long Station.

10.45 The situation was reported to DOR/YL. Thus, at 23:19, District Commander of Yuen Long (Temporary) instructed both Yuen Long Police Station and Tin Shui Wai Police Station to activate station defence. To guard against any threat to the security of the station, Tin Shui Wai Police Station adopted access control of the Report Room. The main gate of the Report Room was pulled down. However, members of the public could still access the Report Room by a door opened on the main gate. Starting from 23:30, about 25 persons, who appeared to be emotional, visited Yuen Long Police Station and queried Police handling of the fight at Yuen Long Station. Yuen Long Police Station exercised access control as well. Both stations assigned police officers to guard the door, maintain access control and handle any public enquiry on the spot. Though the two stations had remained operational that night, it was reported on the news and social media that the police stations were “closed”, which was materially incorrect.

Deployment to the Fight at Ying Lung Wai and the Subsequent Attacks at Yuen Long Station

10.46 Subsequent to the online appeal through Telegram to cripple the Police 999 Console operation, 24 374 calls were made to the NT 999 Emergency Call Centre within the three-hour period from 22:30 to 01:30, with 4 164 calls entering the 999 calling system, 1 100 of which were answered by 999 operators in the creation of 75 Incident Logs passed to Yuen Long Divisional Console for action (later consolidated and combined into 32 Incident Logs). The number had greatly exceeded the average normal daily number of 2 300 calls answered by NT 999 Console over a 24-hour period and the system was overwhelmed by fragmented information received from callers who were watching news, either live or during reruns. The circumstances suggested that it was a deliberate attempt by the callers to cripple the 999 Console operation as advocated through the online appeal.

10.47 Most of the information provided by the callers bore a high degree of similarity, and was fragmented and incomplete regarding the exact location, timing or perpetrators involved in the alleged attacks. Owing to the immense pressure and disorientation brought by the sudden surge of an unusually large number of calls, the 999 operators could not recognise those calls as new reports but instead consolidated them to the first fight at 22:42. As a result, no deployment was made for the 00:28 fight at Yuen Long Station until around 01:00 when PTU duties of RRC NTN was deployed from Hong Kong Island.

10.48 After the QRT commander had relayed a message from HQCCC about a fight at Ying Lung Wai, DOR/YL, at 00:17, instructed frontline duties not to go to Yuen Long Station before

confirming that there was a fight. The decision was to ascertain the actual situation at that moment, i.e. to check whether there was any official report made and whether the MTR OP observed any fighting, so that appropriate deployment commensurate with the situation and officers' safety could be made.

10.49 It was at 00:28 that DOR/YL further received another two pieces of information, including from a PCRO Sergeant that a male had just died in a fight at Ying Lung Wai while MTR OP reported 30 persons dressed in white appearing outside Exit J and arguing with those dressed in black inside through the roller shutter. Having compared the seriousness of the incidents and the limited resources available, DOR/YL instructed QRTs to proceed to Ying Lung Wai.

10.50 It must be pointed out that the abrupt surge of 999 calls posed tremendous difficulties to the NT 999 Console, which was not designed to handle such an immense influx of calls within a very short time: 999 is a manual system that relies on a team of well-trained operators to receive each call, elicit and screen the information from the informants who are often in distress.

10.51 On 21 July, eight Police Communication Officers (PCOs) were on C shift duty as normal at the NT 999 Console under the supervision of one Senior PCO. Although 11 more PCOs from other divisional consoles were immediately arranged to assist, the similarity in the 999 calls received, many with fragmented information, made for an exceptionally difficult situation was beyond their capacity. In the event, the operators unfortunately misinterpreted those calls as being all related to the first fight at 22:42 and consolidated them to the same Incident Log created.

10.52 The abrupt surge of 999 calls and multiple incidents that took place across Yuen Long on 21 July, in addition to the vast volume of information passing through RCCC NT and DOR/YL that night, overloaded the communication channels of RCCC NT, DOR/YL and ground duties. Meanwhile, DOR/YL was also required to simultaneously maintain close and frequent communication with different units under its command, e.g. MTR OPs, uniformed and crime officers deployed on the ground as well as other channels like PCRO staff. The overloaded communication channels gave rise to possible miscommunication and oversight which, in turn, had a ripple effect on the timely deployment and coordination of resources.

10.53 With hindsight, the judgement calls made by respective officers might not have been the most appropriate when things have transpired. Those decisions made, however, were based on the ongoing, fast-changing situations at multiple locations, limited resources and other

relevant operational considerations in circumstances where a deliberate attempt to cripple the police communication system was ongoing.

No Arrest at Nam Pin Wai

10.54 The mission of RRC NTN's deployment to Nam Pin Wai, Yuen Long, was to restore public order, prevent the escalation of violence and deter crime. The utmost priority of the officers in charge at the scene was therefore to separate the two large crowds about to engage in atrocious confrontation, which according to RCCC NT and DOR/YL was increasing in number. Consequently, RRC NTN made the tactical decision of conducting dispersal action and not making any arrest on site unless absolutely necessary so as not to heighten the tension between the people dressed in white and those dressed in black.

10.55 While conducting an investigation at Nam Pin Wai, there was insufficient evidence to draw any direct connection between the persons present at Nam Pin Wai at the material time and the assailants of the earlier fights at Yuen Long Station. Taking into consideration the overall circumstances, the officer-in-charge of CRM YL HQ Team decided to exercise the power to stop and search any person suspected of having committed an offence as opposed to making an arrest. The actions were considered appropriate in the circumstances.

RRC NTN Officers Patted the Shoulder of a Person in White at Nam Pin Wai

10.56 Edited video clips broadcast on various news programmes captured two RRC NTN officers talking to two persons dressed in white. Some netizens associated the short encounter, including the alleged "patting" of shoulder, with the dispersal-oriented action at Nam Pin Wai as Police-triad collusion. These allegations and speculations were based only on misleading online rumours designed to smear Police image; there is no evidence to back up such claims.

10.57 The Superintendent-in-charge explained that they had heard some commotion in which black-clad persons on Long Yat Road were inciting white-clad persons inside the village to come out for confrontation. He and another officer thus went into the open car park outside the village to intercept the white-clad group proceeding to confront the black-clad persons on Long Yat Road. As captured in the video by the media, the two officers instructed the white-clad persons to return to the village and the majority complied. The Superintendent and another officer then had a brief conversation with two white-clad persons during which they pushed the men in the direction of the village with their free hands, while holding their batons in the other. When the men started to move, the officers followed them for a few seconds and the Superintendent pointed his baton to ensure compliance before returning to Long Yat Road.

Officers' Response to Media Enquiries

10.58 The QRT commander who had told a reporter that he did not have time to look at his watch had been under tremendous pressure after leading his officers to retreat from the hostile crowd that surrounded the officers, abusing them with foul language and some even throwing objects at them. The reporter meanwhile focused on demanding an explanation for the late arrival of the QRTs.

10.59 Professionalism is one of the core values of the Force. The Force will continue to provide training and support as well as constantly reminding police officers of all ranks to execute their duties in a professional manner and with appropriate skills so as to communicate properly and professionally with the public through different media.

10.60 As for the Superintendent who answered press enquiry after the police investigation at Nam Pin Wai, his response was based upon the facts and findings in hand at the material time, and it was made after considering the legal basis and evidence available.

Role of HQCCC

10.61 On 21 July, three-tier command was in place: HQCCC mainly focused on the public procession on Hong Kong Island, HICOM NTN under skeleton manning initially and fully activated at a later stage while DOR/YL was in operation from 18:00 to monitor the incidents. The mobs attacked and besieged the LOCPG, in addition to attacking police officers with deadly weapons. The situation was chaotic and the Police had to ensure sufficient resources to prevent further escalation. Police reinforcement was therefore deployed to Western District and Sheung Wan to handle and contain the disorder.

10.62 It was not until the situation on Hong Kong Island had become deescalated around 23:00 when HQCCC became aware of the chaos at Yuen Long Station through live news broadcast. When the situation on Hong Kong Island became permissible, RRC resources were redeployed to Yuen Long at 00:16, 00:25 and 01:26 respectively.

Public Speculation on Police-triad Collusion

10.63 There is public concern that the Police response to the incidents in Yuen Long on 21 July did not meet the expectations of the general public.

10.64 There was no clear association of people dressed in white with violence prior to 21 July. The officers concerned decided that no immediate dispersal was necessary after taking

into account the fact that there was no crime or breach of the peace. In addition, any dispersal might result in otherwise avoidable violent confrontation.

10.65 With hindsight, the judgement calls made by respective officers might not have been the most appropriate when things have transpired. Those decisions made, however, were based on the ongoing, fast-changing situations at multiple locations, limited resources and other relevant operational considerations in circumstances where a deliberate attempt to cripple the police communication system was ongoing.

10.66 It should also be highlighted that the Police faced tremendous challenges posed by the highly chaotic situation in Yuen Long on 21 July which could in no way be compared with normal daily policing. Yuen Long District was overloaded that night on various fronts, such as the abrupt surge of 999 calls, multiple simultaneous or consecutive events at different locations, the volume and the clarity of information flow among different communication centres, ground duties and various parties.

10.67 The information overload caused by the influx of information through various sources, including some deliberate attempts to overload or cripple the 999 Console system, had resulted in much uncertainties and ambiguities that undermined the ability of various command centres to have a clear picture of what had actually happened and affected their ability to deploy resources for effective and timely handling of that situations.

10.68 Public perception had been misled in connection with the incidents on 21 July, including the framing of the incidents inside Yuen Long Station as a one-sided indiscriminate terrorist attack when it had actually started off as a gang fight involving a sizeable number of participants from both sides. There were also allegations of Police-triad collusion in connection with the separation of persons inside and outside Nam Pin Wai by RRC NTN officers and the subsequent lack of arrests on the spot by the crime officers.

10.69 The Police has reiterated that the Force is politically neutral and treats everyone equally and impartially, regardless of background or identity. The Police has a statutory duty to maintain public safety and public order and will make arrests and prosecute in accordance with the law. Any arrest is based on the evidence available and the Police will seek the advice as necessary from the Department of Justice prior to prosecution of offenders.

10.70 The Police would learn from experience and review different aspects to identify deficiencies and look for areas for improvement.

Number of Arrests in Relation to Yuen Long Incident

10.71 As at 29 February 2020, the Police had arrested 37 persons (all male) in connection with the incident in Yuen Long on 21 July for offences of “Unlawful Assembly”, “Taking Part in Riot” and “Conspiracy to Wound with Intent”. Among them, seven persons have been charged with “Taking Part in Riot” and “Conspiracy to Wound with Intent”, pending trial on court bail; while 25 are still under police investigation and five were released.

IPCC Observations

10.72 The Yuen Long Incident has given rise to complaints against the Police in their handling of different events on the night of 21 July, culminating in the allegations of collusion between the Police and triads. Having examined the chronology of facts and the messages on the internet that the IPCC has gathered, the IPCC has some observations on how the Yuen Long Incident unfolded and how the Police handled different events in the Incident. It must be stressed that it is beyond the statutory powers and the capacity of the IPCC to examine allegations of collusion between any police officer and triads. That is a matter for a law enforcement agent. However, the Police’s failure to take timely action in certain instances did fuel allegations of collusion against the Police.

10.73 For easier reference and better understanding of the IPCC’s observations, *Table 10-1* has been prepared. The table shows in time sequence and in summary, the situation on the ground, reports to the Police, internet/ media activities, Police action at each juncture and the IPCC’s observations.

Table 10-1: Table of Events from Early Evening 21 July 2019 with IPCC's Observations

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
18:00				DOR/YL began operation.	
18:36	Crowd of persons dressed in white assembling at Fung Yau Street North and Kai Tei area.				
19:07		From this time onwards, calls about the crowd dressed in white began to accumulate.			
19:51		More calls about the crowd dressed in white came in.		CRT sent, reporting back that persons dressed in white were not in breach of the peace.	Whilst the assessment of the CRT was reasonable, the fact that the Police had already been receiving 999 calls from citizens alarmed by such a large assembly dressed in white, should have rung alarm bells in the mind of DOR/YL.
20:00				Between this time and 21:00, HICOM NTN contacted HQCCC three times for additional manpower but HQCCC continued to accord priority to Hong Kong Island.	

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
20:04		More calls about the crowd dressed in white came in.		CRT sent, reporting back that persons dressed in white were not in breach of the peace.	999 calls flooded in. Whilst the second CRT's assessment was reasonable, it should be plain to DOR/YL that the public was becoming increasingly concerned.
20:27		More calls about the crowd dressed in white came in.		CRT sent, reporting back that persons dressed in white were not in breach of the peace.	DOR/YL should realise that public concern was rising.
20:36				A PCRO Sergeant received WhatsApp message from a District Councillor with two photos of the situation at the roadside of Fung Yau Street North showing around 30 persons dressed in white gathering there.	
20:39		More calls about the crowd dressed in white came in.	LHKG post: “送元朗手足安全回家計劃” (Plan of sending brothers back to Yuen Long safely). (Image 10-12)		As the public concern heightened, internet traffic was signaling to the other Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters to be careful, seeing no apparent action from the Police.

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
20:59		More calls about the crowd dressed in white came in.	An ex-LegCo Member posted a video on her Facebook with the caption: “元朗現場，黑社會治港？聽講話要打返入元朗的黑衫人” (Live in Yuen Long. Triads ruling Hong Kong? Heard they were going to beat people in black outfits returning to Yuen Long?)		
21:08		More calls of the same nature came in.		CRT sent, reporting back that persons dressed in white were not in breach of the peace.	This was the 4 th iteration of the same assessment but to the public who were still calling in, there was no apparent Police action on the ground.
21:09	The crowd dressed in white had grown larger.	More calls about the crowd dressed in white came in.	LHK post: “小心元朗，出入元朗少(小心啲)” (Be careful Yuen Long. Watch your steps in and out of Yuen Long). (Image 10-14)		
21:14			LHK post: “請大家一齊打 999” (Everyone please call 999). (Image 10-15)		

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
21:29		More calls of the same nature.	Television news showed 100-200 persons dressed in white still at Fung Yau Street North. (Shop CCTV)	Patrol car passed by Fung Yau Street North, on way to traffic enforcement. (Image 10-17)	Crowd dressed in white could have grown by now, and became conspicuous at Fung Yau Street North. Still with no apparent Police action as a patrol car passed by.
21:45		Similar calls came to about 500 by now.		CRT sent, reporting back that persons dressed in white were not in breach of the peace.	
21:52				PCRO Yuen Long District team received call from a District Councillor that people dressed in white might attack people in black outfits in Yuen Long.	
21:55		999 calls of a person having been assaulted by persons dressed in white.			DOR/YL should now know that the crowd dressed in white had resorted to violence, which five CRT visits had failed to spot.

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
22:09				The PCRO Yuen Long District team received a call from a District Councillor that people dressed in white had been gathering at Kai Tei.	
22:13		Reports continued.	Posts on Telegram and LIHKG (at 22:47) were seen calling for people to call 999 to sabotage the 999 Console. (Images 10-18 and 19)	Patrol car passed by Fung Yau Street North, on its way to conduct traffic enforcement.	
22:25		Reports continued.		Patrol car passed by Fung Yau Street North, on its way to locating an assault victim.	A number of options would have been open for DOR/YL consideration: (1) Enlisting the help of a community leader (the crowd had been there for over two hours now giving the Police enough time to do this). (2) Closely monitoring the movements of the crowd dressed in white so that any action could either be stopped or at least reported; and if manpower permits, set

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
22:40	<p>Crowd dressed in white was no longer seen at Fung Yau Street North.</p> <p>Inside Yuen Long Station, a group of four persons dressed in white seen chasing a female into the paid area, and a scuffle ensued between a group dressed in white and another group in black outfits. A group of about 100 persons in black outfits had then gathered in the paid area.</p>	<p>A call about a fight at the Yuen Long Station was received.</p>			<p>up a police cordon to move the public away from the assembly in case of violent action. If any of these action had been taken, public concern would have been mitigated.</p> <p>The absence of close monitoring resulted in the Police not spotting the movements of this crowd dressed in white.</p>

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
22:42		Two calls about tens of people fighting in the Yuen Long Station were received.		MTR OP reported to DOR/YL that 30 persons carrying poles had gathered at Exit F of Yuen Long Station. About the same time, RCCC NT communicated two requests for police assistance inside Yuen Long Station to a PSU Sergeant. One request was about a male having been assaulted by persons dressed in white and the other from a mother with a child who needed the Police to escort them out of the station.	The concurrence of these two reports should have alerted DOR/YL the seriousness of the situation.
22:44	A LegCo Member arrived by train and alighted onto the platform of Yuen Long Station.		This LegCo Member started a live stream on Facebook, as he reached the paid side of the concourse.		As the Police had not followed the movements of the crowd dressed in white, though the situation might appear serious, QRIs were not deployed.

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
22:45	MTRC staff at Yuen Long Station noticed the situation.	More reports were now received of assaults in the Yuen Long Station.		Two patrol cars with six police officers were despatched to Yuen Long Station.	Instead, a small response team was sent.
22:47	MTRC staff at Yuen Long Station made a report to the Police.				
22:48	About 70 dressed in white, holding wooden poles, flags, sticks and umbrellas entered Yuen Long Station concourse and a shouting match with abuse thrown from both sides commenced. The group dressed in white stayed at the unpaid area while the group in black outfits remained at the paid area. The group in black outfits was joined by the LegCo Member. This degenerated into a brief brawl between the two sides, though				

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
22:51	separated by the ticket gates and glass panel railing. (Images 10-22 to 24)		Another live stream on Facebook was started by a reporter on what was happening in the concourse of Yuen Long Station.		
22:52				Three police constables in the first patrol car arrived at Yuen Long Station. They spotted no one fighting but there was an agitated crowd, mostly dressed in white, inside the station. They reported to their supervising sergeant, who in turn reported to DOR/YL. DOR/YL ordered these officers to retreat.	
22:57				Having confirmed the situation with MTR OP, DOR/YL turned out the QRT, notified CRM YL HQ Team, and requested Tuen Mun District to turn	It was only at this point that the QRT was ordered to mobilise.

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
23:02	As confrontation between the groups dressed in white and black heated up, the group dressed in white jumped over the ticket gates, and the group in black outfits, including the LegCo Member, immediately retreated to the platform upstairs, at which time, a train had stopped by the platform. The group in black outfits and the LegCo Member dashed into a compartment. Soon the group dressed in white caught up with them. (Images 10-28 to 29)			out the Tier III team as reinforcement.	
23:05 23:13	Certain members of the group dressed in white followed into the train and				

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
	attacked persons inside the train compartment with sticks, umbrellas and wooden poles. (Images 10-30 to 10-31)				
23:07				QRT left Yuen Long Police Station by car to Yuen Long Station.	
23:13	The train left the platform of Yuen Long Station with persons in black outfits and the LegCo Member. People dressed in white retreated back onto the platform.				
23:14	People dressed in white left Yuen Long Station.				
23:15	Most of the people dressed in white had left the Yuen Long Station. About 20 persons were surrounding Tin Shui Wai Police			First batch of QRT arrived at Yuen Long Station and saw some of the persons dressed in white leaving the station.	It is regrettable that the first batch of QRT arrived one minute after the attack ended. It is also regrettable that the QRT missed the opportunity to question the last of the persons

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
	Station condemning Police handling of the incident at Yuen Long Station.				dressed in white as they were leaving Yuen Long Station. At this point, the altercation between the two groups had been widely streamed on Facebook and the internet. The persons in black outfits were seen being attacked by the camp dressed in white on the platform and into the train compartment, with the Police nowhere to be seen.
23:19			LHKG post: “唔洗去元朗，元朗白衫一走警察即到” (No need to go to Yuen Long. The Police arrived right after the people dressed in white were gone”) (Image 10-41)	DOR/YL activated station defence for both Tin Shui Wai Police Station and Yuen Long Police Station.	
23:20	Both Yuen Long and Tin Shui Wai Police Stations were surrounded by people complaining				

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
	about Police handling of the incident at Yuen Long Station.				
23:28			LIHKG post: “【文章】元朗西鐵站嘅事一定要比國際睇 睇下香港警黑合作幾無縫”(The West Rail Line Yuen Long Station Incident must be shown to the world. See how seamlessly the Hong Kong Police co-operated with triads). This post was followed by more posts as the night wore on. (Image 10-42)		
23:30				Tuen Mun Tier III team arrived at Yuen Long Station.	
23:38				Second batch of QRT arrived at Yuen Long Station.	
23:58	Another fight began to brew at Exit J of Yuen Long Station. This was the first fight at or near Exit J after the assault at	The deluge of 999 calls continued until 01:30. Within the 3-hour period from 22:30 to 01:30, 24 374 calls were received by the 999			These calls to flood 999 was irresponsible and destructive, and obviously directed to sabotage the 999 Console. This disabled

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
	the station platform between 23:05 and 23:13.	Console. Among them, 4 164 reached NT 999. These calls had a high degree of similarity. The daily average usage of NT 999 was 2 300. The system was completely flooded.			the system from responding to genuine calls. This is a weakness in the 999 Console system which has to be remedied.
22 July 00:16	A group of about ten dressed in white with wooden poles and umbrellas returned to Yuen Long Station concourse at Exit J. There were also people in black outfits inside the station with umbrellas. The people dressed in white, however, were outnumbered and had to retreat.			Redeployment from HQCCC began. Subsequent redeployment took place at 00:25 and 01:26.	
00:28	(1) A crowd of 30 persons dressed in white returned to Exit J again, at this time closed by a roller shutter. The people dressed in		The rumours of the dead person were soon posted on LIHKG.	(1) MTR OP reported this to DOR/YL.	This was the third confrontation (i.e. event at 23:58 being the first, 00:16 the second and 00:28 the third). Still no police attendance. This attracted public

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
	<p>white were all armed with wooden poles, sticks and umbrellas, and a shouting match was in progress, with those in black outfits on the other side of the roller shutter, and with both sides exchanging insults.</p> <p>(2) At the same time, a fight in Ying Lung Wai (just outside Exit J) erupted, and one person was reported to have died. Exit J leads to Ying Lung Wai, which is not far away.</p>			<p>(2) This report was made by a PCRO Sergeant.</p> <p>(3) DOR/YL, considering that Ying Lung Wai was serious, decided to order the QRTs to proceed to Ying Lung Wai.</p>	<p>mistrust and condemnation. The Police should try its best to avoid such missed opportunities in the future.</p>
00:28+	<p>As the verbal abuse between the two sides escalated, the persons dressed in white pulled up the roller shutter and began filing into Yuen Long Station attacking the people</p>		<p>This episode soon found its way into the internet as at least two media were broadcasting it live, again the Police was nowhere to be seen.</p>	<p>The Police, having been ordered to Ying Lung Wai, did not locate any injured person or witness.</p>	

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
00:57	<p>in black outfits as they filed in. (Images 10-49 to 10-52)</p> <p>A few hundred persons in black outfits assembled at the entrance of Nam Pin Wai, an indigenous village. Persons dressed in white were manning the entrance. A stand-off ensued.</p>				
01:04	<p>Police cordon established separating the two sides.</p>			<p>500 riot officers arrived at Nam Pin Wai. They were redeployed from Hong Kong Island after the disturbances there had subsided.</p>	
03:25	<p>The persons in black outfits had already dispersed while those dressed in white had reduced to 200.</p>		<p>The decision not to make arrests and the episode of the Superintendent touching the shoulder of a person in white he had ordered to return to Nam Pin Wai were used in internet posts as evidence of collusion between the Police and triads. The</p>	<p>Crime officers arrived at the scene to conduct enquiry.</p> <p>During the operation, 40 males from both sides were stopped, searched and questioned by the crime officers. Over 160 items of iron pipes,</p>	<p>It is reasonable for the Police not to have made arrests in such a situation. This, however, has resulted in further mistrust in the Police as can be seen in the social media. In fact, the pat on the shoulder by the</p>

Time	Situation on ground	999 calls	Internet/media activity	Police activity	Observations of the IPCC
04:45	People dressed in white left Nam Pin Wai.		pat on the shoulder was interpreted as a friendly gesture.	wooden sticks, and golf clubs were found in a nearby open-space carpark. No one was arrested that night.	Superintendent was part of the whole process of ordering the two males dressed in white back to Nam Pin Wai. That could not be collusion.
05:05				Crime officers left Nam Pin Wai.	
05:45				Station defence at Tin Shui Wai and Yuen Long Police Stations deactivated.	The Yuen Long Incident on 21 July became a prime target for public condemnation and allegations of Police-triad collusion on the internet.

Events before 21 July

10.74 The events started off with the confrontation at Fung Yau Street North between the Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters and a group of people dressed in white at a public screening of video clips of alleged police brutality on the evening of 16 July. There were news reports that the two parties had exchanged abusive words, splashed water and hurled water bottles at one another. A few online video clips showed them pushing and pulling at one another, and some people dressed in white punching two young persons when they walked past their party. One male dressed in white even attempted to kick the two young persons from behind. Police officers were called but news reports indicated that most of the people who attended the video screening had already left when the Police arrived and the situation had settled down. As such, the Police did not make any arrest but did disperse the crowd. Some people dressed in white were seen offering assistance to a police commander, but the police commander declined. The evening ended with the crowd leaving the scene.

10.75 That night, messages started to appear on the internet about liberating Yuen Long and holding an assembly in Yuen Long on 21 July to protest against the disturbance caused by the people dressed in white in the public screening event. In response to this action plan of the protesters, some netizens called for Yuen Long residents to defend their home and to expel the protesters from Yuen Long. There were warnings of possible use of violence against the protesters on 21 July.

10.76 The Police had been monitoring this internet traffic. Officers in Yuen Long District continued gathering intelligence via several means. Crime officers of Yuen Long District were deployed to debrief some Yuen Long village representatives in a Rural Committee event on 18 July. Most of the village representatives denied any knowledge of the online propaganda and any activities planned for 21 July. Notwithstanding this, officers urged them to persuade villagers to stay home on that day, which was acknowledged.

Police Deployment

10.77 The IPCC notes that the events prior to 21 July resulted in Police assessment that the situation on Hong Kong Island would be much more serious than what might happen in Yuen Long. Manpower deployment was based on this assessment. According to the Police, Yuen Long Police District supplied 102 police officers to form an integral part of RRC NTN as well as a separate Yuen Long Tier III platoon under the command of HQCCC on 21 July. This significantly reduced deployable resources in the Yuen Long Police District. On 18 and 19 July, Regional Headquarters NTN made requests to HQCCC for providing RRC resources to Yuen Long Police District in case of major confrontation between the two parties on 21 July. Having assessed the level of response to and interest in the online appeals, risk levels involved

and the violence previously experienced both in Yuen Long and on Hong Kong Island, HQCCC accorded priority to Hong Kong Island for RRC resources for the reasons given in paragraphs 10.28 and 10.29.

10.78 The IPCC considers the Police to have underestimated the impact of the messages on the internet as a driver for protests. Admittedly, it was less manifest to the Police at that stage. The Police treated internet traffic as intelligence to inform deployment, rather than as a shaper of opinion, and even less as a driver for subsequent protests. On 20 July, messages appeared on the internet claiming that the Police would turn a blind eye to what was going to happen in Yuen Long. The messages did not give any evidence for such claims, which shaped the public narrative and subsequently served as a driver for escalation of the protests.

21 July : Assembly of People Dressed in White at Fung Yau Street North

10.79 The critical events of 21 July began when people dressed in white started gathering at Fung Yau Street North from 18:36 onwards.

10.80 At 12:05 that day, a District Councillor forwarded to a PCRO officer an image of two WhatsApp messages, one of which suggested that triad members would wear white clothes. According to the District Councillor, the PCRO officer replied that the Police had arranged manpower to handle the situation and that the Police had been closely monitoring the situation in Yuen Long. The PCRO officer also requested the District Councillor to notify him of any updates promptly. The officer further reassured the District Councillor that there would be officers patrolling around the West Rail Station and the Police had plans for the situation.

10.81 The Police also received messages from a LegCo Member and two other District Councillors about people in white gathering in Yuen Long, and going to attack people in black outfits. That evening, messages and photos of people dressed in white gathering in Yuen Long appeared on the internet. At 20:39, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “送元朗手足安全回家計劃”. (Translation: Plan of sending brothers back to Yuen Long safely.)

10.82 At 20:59, an ex-LegCo Member created a post and shared a video on Facebook about people dressed in white walking on a street in Yuen Long. At 21:09, a post appeared on LIHKG entitled “小心元朗，出入元朗少(小)心啲”. (Translation: Beware Yuen Long. Watch your steps in and out of Yuen Long). A photo was attached showing the assembly of people dressed in white. CCTV footage of a shop at Fung Yau Street North showed that at 21:29, about 100 to 200 people dressed in white had assembled there.

10.83 Between 19:07 and 21:43, the Police received 500 calls from the public about people dressed in white assembling at different locations in Yuen Long, including Fung Yau Street

North. There were reports mentioning that some of the people in white were holding rattan sticks, wooden poles or iron pipes.

10.84 The IPCC notes the Police response on the handling of the gathering of people dressed in white as given in paragraphs 10.33 to 10.36.

10.85 The IPCC understands that DOR/YL's operational decision not to take any action to disperse the gathering at Fung Yau Street North or to deal with them directly there and then, was based on the judgment that Police action would spark clashes between the Police and the people at the busy Fung Yau Street North, resulting in a situation which would be very difficult to control. Moreover, DOR/YL was under manpower constraint. It is common that persons in command have to make difficult decisions with a variety of constraints.

10.86 The presence of a large number of people dressed in white aroused concern among many citizens. This explains why the 999 Console received 500 calls between 19:07 and 21:43 in relation to the gathering of the people dressed in white.

10.87 It is clear that residents of Yuen Long were alarmed to see the gathering of such a large group of people all dressed in white at a public place, particularly in a busy street like Fung Yau Street North and some people armed with rattan sticks and flags. The PCRO by then had been warned of potential violence from such a group. Messages on the internet had mentioned triad members wearing white clothes drawn up to beat protesters in black outfits when they returned from the POE on Hong Kong Island. If clashes broke out there between the groups, it would be very difficult to handle and innocent people might well be hurt. Even though nothing happened at Fung Yau Street North at the time when CRT officers made surveillance there and when the police vehicles drove past the location at various times, this was an unusual gathering. All these facts were indications that a potentially violent confrontation was building up. DOR/YL should have been aware of these indications.

10.88 Around 21:55, the 999 Console received a report that a group of people dressed in white had hit a passer-by with rattan sticks at Kai Tei. This news was instantly covered by the media on the internet. The media reported that the passer-by was assaulted by some people dressed in white when he walked past Fung Yau Street North. Police officers located the victim at 22:36. At that point it should be clear that the people in white posed a threat to public safety.

10.89 While it is easy to be wise in hindsight, the IPCC observes that there were fairly obvious opportunities missed. The public was evidently becoming increasingly alarmed as 500 calls came through the 999 Console about the potential menace of the men in white gathering at Fung Yau Street North. Sending CRT several times, as DOR/YL did, achieved

little to allay the public concern which was building up. The IPCC considers that the following options either alone or in combination, if taken, would have helped the situation, particularly when the crowd in white had so far not shown tendencies to attack the Police, namely:

- (a) Enlisting the help of Rural Committee leaders or District Councillors through the PCRO to help mediate and find a solution.
- (b) Setting up a small but visible on-site police contingent, to monitor this crowd and to act as a cordon to advise the public not to come near, and taking action or seeking reinforcement if the crowd failed to behave properly.

10.90 The IPCC is of the view that the above action would have been within the manpower constraints of DOR/YL, and would have been totally consistent with the Police doctrine of community engagement. This is a lesson to be learnt as these steps if taken would have made a significant difference not only to allaying the public concern at the time but would have enabled DOR/YL to monitor the movement of this crowd in white for timely preventive action. The Police Strategic Dictum of “Preventing the Preventable” was not well applied in this instance.

Movement of the Crowd Dressed in White away from Fung Yau Street North not Timely Observed

10.91 By 22:40, about 200 people dressed in white had left Fung Yau Street North.¹³ There was no information whether DOR/YL had monitored their movement.

10.92 At 22:48, around 70 people in white appeared at Yuen Long Station where they fought with some people in black outfits at the concourse and later assaulted people in the train compartment at the platform. There was no intervention by the Police. Meanwhile, all the intelligence and reports that the Police had received before 22:00, the messages that appeared on the internet, and Police early alerts indicated that Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters would be returning from the POE on Hong Kong Island to Yuen Long. Hence, the prospect of violent confrontation was clearly present. If there had been better co-ordination within HQCCC, NT Region and Yuen Long command structure on the movements of Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters, better monitoring of the potential areas and assemblies of persons in Yuen Long where the risk of confrontation was high, the outcome would have been different.

¹³ RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>

Physical Confrontation and Attacks at Yuen Long Station and Police Deployment to Handle the Incident

10.93 At 22:40, the first confrontation occurred at Yuen Long Station, in which four people dressed in white chased after a female into the paid area where a scuffle took place between some people dressed in white and a group of people in black outfits. At 22:44, right after the skirmish, a LegCo Member arrived at Yuen Long Station and started a live stream broadcast on Facebook of what happened at Yuen Long Station. At that time, about 100 people in black outfits had gathered in the paid area, some of them wearing helmets and holding umbrellas.

10.94 At 22:48, around 70 persons dressed in white, some holding wooden poles, flags, sticks and umbrellas, entered Yuen Long Station. Exchange of verbal abuse then quickly started between the people dressed in white who stayed in the unpaid area of the concourse and the people in black outfits who remained in the paid area. The verbal battle broke into a brief brawl between the two parties, over the glass panel railing and ticket gates. At 22:51, a reporter also started a live stream broadcast on Facebook covering what happened.

10.95 At 23:02, the people dressed in white jumped over the ticket gates into the paid area. The LegCo Member and the people in black outfits immediately dashed up to the platform and into a train compartment to take refuge. After a brief moment, the people dressed in white also ran up to the platform. Intermittently between 23:05 and 23:13, some people dressed in white rushed into the train compartment to assault the people in black outfits and the LegCo Member inside with sticks, umbrellas and wooden poles. In the assault, other commuters on the train were also hit. At 23:13, the train departed Yuen Long Station with those injured on board while the people dressed in white left the platform after the assaults. At 23:14, the people dressed in white left Yuen Long Station.

10.96 At 22:42, the MTR OP at Yuen Long Station reported to DOR/YL that about 30 people carrying wooden poles had gathered at Exit F. This, according to the best information available to the IPCC, was the first occasion the officers at the MTR OP reported to DOR/YL the potential trouble at Yuen Long Station.

10.97 The IPCC notes the Police response on the handling of the first attack at Yuen Long Station as given in paragraphs 10.37 and 10.43.

10.98 The IPCC observes that even before the dispatch of two police patrol cars and six uniformed police officers, MTR OP officers had already reported a group of at least 30 people armed with poles were gathering at Exit F of Yuen Long Station. Furthermore, a large number of people dressed in white had gathered at Fung Yau Street North before they disappeared around 22:40. There were online messages that a large number of triad members to be wearing

white clothes had been drafted to beat protesters in black outfits; and other messages on the internet that the protesters in black outfits would fight back. The six police officers dispatched should not be expected to be enough to deal with the situation at Yuen Long Station.

10.99 The two police officers at MTR OP were specifically tasked to monitor the situation at Yuen Long Station. They did make a report at 22:42 and therefore should have noticed what happened at Yuen Long Station and were able to provide regular updates to DOR/YL during the critical period between 22:42 and 23:14. According to MTRC, at 22:45, staff at Yuen Long Station noticed that disputes had occurred at the station concourse and the fire alarm was also triggered. At 22:47, MTRC made a report to the Police. Furthermore, among the calls received by 999 Console, one at 22:40 reported that there was a fight at Yuen Long Station and someone was lying on the floor. Two calls at 22:42 reported that tens of people were fighting at Yuen Long Station. The situation was chaotic and someone was hurt and bleeding. At 22:45, there were reports that a large number of people dressed in white assaulted people in the vicinity of Yuen Long Station and some reports said at Yuen Long Station. There was no information that MTR OP reported the above to DOR/YL.

10.100 Given the report made by MTRC and the reports received by 999 Console, DOR/YL, after sending the two patrol cars to Yuen Long Station, should have instructed MTR OP to closely monitor the situation of Yuen Long Station and provide more frequent updates to DOR/YL. Had DOR/YL been given timely information by MTR OP of the situation at Yuen Long Station, DOR/YL might have deployed QRT officers to go to Yuen Long Station earlier. QRT officers were only deployed at 22:57 (12 minutes from 22:45 when the patrol cars were dispatched).

10.101 The IPCC notes that understandably, DOR/YL instructed the three officers to leave Yuen Long Station as soon as they had reported that they could not handle the situation. Similarly, the IPCC can understand the assessment that three officers, together with the officers from the second patrol car which was on its way to the station, and the two officers stationed at the MTR OP, were not sufficient to deal directly with the fighting and assault incident. DOR/YL should have considered deploying these police officers to stand guard at Yuen Long Station to wait for reinforcement. At least to keep a Police presence there. The police officers should not have been asked to retreat immediately.

10.102 DOR/YL deployed QRT officers from Yuen Long Police Station and the Tier III officers in Tuen Mun at 22:57, which was five minutes after the three officers in the patrol cars arrived at Yuen Long Station. Upon receiving DOR/YL's assignment to go to Yuen Long Station, the QRT officers at Yuen Long Police Station put on their gear and received a quick briefing within ten minutes. They left the police station at 23:07 and arrived at Yuen Long Station at 23:15, one minute after the attack had ended at 23:14. This was the first batch of

QRT police officers from Yuen Long Police Station to arrive at Yuen Long Station. At 23:30 and 23:38, the Tuen Mun Tier III officers and the second batch of QRT officers from Yuen Long Police Station respectively arrived at Yuen Long Station. It took the first batch of QRT officers from Yuen Long Police Station 18 minutes, the Tier III officers from Tuen Mun 33 minutes, and the second batch of QRT officers from Yuen Long Police Station 41 minutes to get to Yuen Long Station.

10.103 The IPCC understands that it took time for QRT to be mobilised, officers to put on their gear and to receive a briefing. However, it also meant that by the time the first batch of QRT officers arrived at 23:15, the fight and assault at Yuen Long Station had already concluded and most of the people in white had left.

10.104 The critical period was between 22:42 and 23:14. Had the QRT officers been deployed earlier or asked to be ready for standby earlier, they would have been able to arrive at Yuen Long Station in better time. The assault inside the train compartment between 23:05 and 23:13 could have been prevented or some of the people in white could have been stopped and arrested.

10.105 When QRT officers were deployed to go to Yuen Long Station, other police vehicles within Yuen Long Police District could have also been sent to Yuen Long Station for reinforcement. Given the seriousness of the situation there, it should have taken priority over other less urgent policing tasks. These police vehicles might get to Yuen Long Station faster than QRT officers.

Action of QRT Officers at Yuen Long Station

10.106 By the time the first batch of QRT officers arrived at Yuen Long Station at 23:15, most of the people dressed in white had disappeared. Some of them were still leaving Yuen Long Station. When they saw the police officers, they ran away but the police officers did not stop them (see Images 10-33 to 10-40).

10.107 The IPCC realises that QRT officers would not have sufficient ground to make any arrest merely on the basis of the colour of their clothes. However, seeing the unusual scene of some 40 people in white rushing up an escalator in the reverse direction would have alerted the officers. The QRT officers should have stopped and questioned them and recorded their personal particulars if the QRT had known about the reports to 999 Console and the information from MTR OP that a large number of people dressed in white were involved in the fighting and assaults at Yuen Long Station.

10.108 There were missed opportunities for early intervention, which gave rise to complaints and serious allegations against the Police. This episode provides lessons to be learnt, including how intelligence collected should be better shared and coherently communicated within the HQCCC, Regional and District Command Structure to achieve positive public order and crime investigation outcomes. It would also result in lower potential for complaints against the Police.

Subsequent Assault Incidents at or near Yuen Long Station and the Overwhelming Calls to 999 Console

10.109 At 23:58, there was another fight between a group dressed in white and another group in black outfits at Ying Lung Wai. At 00:01 on 22 July, the 999 Console received a report of fighting at Ying Lung Wai near Exit J between people dressed in white and people in black outfits. The 999 Console did not deploy any police officers, nor did it inform DOR/YL. The Police response to the IPCC was that the 999 Console had mistakenly consolidated that report with two earlier reports made at the same time for police assistance. That error was made in a situation when the 999 Console was flooded between 22:30 and 01:30 the following morning.

10.110 The IPCC notes the Police response on the handling of the subsequent assault incidents at or near Yuen Long Station and the overwhelming influx of 999 calls as given in paragraphs 10.46 to 10.53.

10.111 The IPCC observes that from 22:13, posts started to appear on Telegram and LIHKG calling for people to dial 999 to sabotage the system. Such appeals were irresponsible and destructive with the questionable motive of inciting people to paralyse the 999 Console operation while major incidents causing injuries were taking place. Disrupting the 999 Console operation would not only deprive those genuinely in need of emergency services via 999, but also overburden the 999 Console with untrue reports preventing it from picking up genuine and critical information and relaying it to DOR/YL. According to the Police, between 22:30 and 01:30, 24 374 calls were made to NT 999 Console. 999 operators answered 1 100 of these calls, an average of over 350 calls per hour. The daily average of calls answered by NT 999 Console was 2 300 on a 24-hour basis. On that occasion, NT 999 Console was way overloaded.

10.112 Of course, amongst this deluge of calls, there would have been some of the calls genuinely related to the events in Yuen Long that night. However, the system was not designed to handle such a huge volume of calls. This posed an additional major challenge for the Police on 21 July. The chaos this created contributed to the Police not being able to respond to some incidents.

10.113 The ability of the 999 Console to deal with a flood of calls, many of which motivated by questionable intentions, should be reviewed by the Police.

10.114 News reports cited the collapse of a triad leader in the Ying Lung Wai fight and he was taken to hospital at 00:08. At 00:16, a group of about ten people dressed in white, armed with wooden poles and umbrellas, returned to Yuen Long Station via Exit J to attack the people in black outfits. The larger group of people in black outfits therefore used umbrellas to fight back. Outnumbered, this group dressed in white soon retreated and ran away.

10.115 At 00:28, PCRO/YL reported to DOR/YL rumours of the death of a Yuen Long triad faction leader in a fight. DOR/YL then deployed QRT officers to Ying Lung Wai.

10.116 At about the same time (00:28), about 30 people dressed in white, some holding wooden poles and umbrellas, returned to Exit J of Yuen Long Station while some people in black outfits were still there. A shouting match then ensued between the two groups, with both sides hurling abuse at one another. MTR OP reported that to DOR/YL. Yet, DOR/YL, having assessed the seriousness of the incidents, deployed QRT officers to Ying Lung Wai. The verbal abuse escalated, a person in black outfit was seen trying to stab the people in white with an umbrella through the roller shutter. Soon afterwards, the people dressed in white pulled up the roller shutter at Exit J, and as they entered the concourse they began to assault some of the people in black outfits and other people inside (Images 10-49 to 10-52). Subsequent analysis of the call records showed that the Police had received 11 reports relating to the attack at Exit J at 00:16 and ten reports of the attack at 00:28 respectively. No police officers were deployed to this incident due to the confusion caused by the overloading of the 999 Console.

10.117 The IPCC notes that live stream news reports on the confrontation between the two groups, one clad in white and the other in black, invariably featured with prominence persons in white attacking those in black outfits. As there was no police intervention in any of these incidents, allegations of collusion with triads went viral. There are clearly lessons to be learnt from these episodes.

Reinforcement of Yuen Long

10.118 According to the Police, with the confrontation on Hong Kong Island easing, it became possible to reinforce Yuen Long. Thus, HQCCC reformed RRC NTN for Yuen Long District at 00:16. As the situation at Yuen Long Station and its vicinity was still volatile, the senior Police management of the District decided to instruct the RRC NTN commander to lead the

troops to Yuen Long Station. At 01:00, the reinforcement arrived at Yuen Long Station. At 01:04, they completed sweeping but no injured person or witness could be located.

10.119 The IPCC understands that the Police must prioritise their manpower resources. Despite the resource constraint in Yuen Long, the IPCC considers that they could have been better deployed if more attention had been given to the barrage of real time news coverage and internet traffic. They provided real time information on the movements of both groups and could have prompted earlier police deployment in response to the first attack at the Yuen Long Station (between 22:42 and 23:14). As it happened, QRT officers unfortunately arrived one minute after the attacks ended. These episodes also exposed the vulnerability of the 999 Console, resulting in no police attendance at the subsequent attacks. The 999 Console requires a review of its effectiveness at times of extraordinary stress.

Police Action at Nam Pin Wai

10.120 The IPCC notes that meanwhile, at 00:57, a few hundred people in black outfits had gathered outside Nam Pin Wai, an indigenous village next to Yuen Long Station. Many of the persons in black outfits were wearing helmets and masks, and holding umbrellas and wooden poles. A brief clash between the two camps took place at the entrance of Nam Pin Wai, after which a stand-off between the two parties ensued. Upon redeployment by HQCCC to Yuen Long, about 500 riot police officers arrived at Nam Pin Wai around 01:04 and formed a cordon line between the two groups. The stand-off continued but at 03:25, crime officers of Yuen Long District arrived at Nam Pin Wai and the two groups gradually dispersed. The Police questioned and searched 40 males (those in black as well as others in white), and seized over 160 items of iron pipes, wooden sticks and golf clubs at a nearby open carpark. The Police did not arrest anyone.

10.121 There was an episode in which there were exchanges of verbal abuse between the two sides, a Superintendent of Police gestured to two men dressed in white not to advance in the direction of the people in black outfits but to return to Nam Pin Wai. The Superintendent talked to those two men for about 30 seconds, during which the Superintendent put his left hand on the shoulder of one man for about two seconds. Then the two men walked back to Nam Pin Wai. Some netizens alleged the Superintendent “patting” the shoulder of the man dressed in white. This episode coupled with the absence of arrest of people in white were used by some posts and messages on the internet to support their claim of collusion between the Police and triads.

10.122 The IPCC notes the Police response on the alleged “patting” of shoulder episode as given in paragraphs 10.56 to 10.57.

10.123 The IPCC is of the view that the presence of the riot police officers at Nam Pin Wai was to keep the situation under control. Given the vast number of people on both sides and the already very tense atmosphere, it was impractical to make any arrest. Taking arrest action would only escalate the situation. Forming a cordon line to separate the two groups of people armed with wooden poles, umbrellas and other hard objects was the appropriate action. As to the episode of the Superintendent talking to the two persons dressed in white, the IPCC is of the view the Superintendent had reason to talk to the people dressed in white: he had asked them to return to Nam Pin Wai. That was not collusion between them. The IPCC would make it clear here that it is merely commenting on what was alleged as the basis for collusion in the internet messages. It has no statutory function or power to investigate collusion, which is a matter for a law enforcement agency.

Police Officers' Responses to Media Enquiries

10.124 There were two occasions on which two different senior officers responded to questions raised by reporters. The first one was around midnight outside Yuen Long Station. When a QRT commander was asked why the police officers were so late in getting to Yuen Long Station, he replied “我睇唔到錶呀，Sorry 呀！你見唔見到頭先都幾亂下嚟？見到嚟可？如果見到你就知啦，我哋點會有機會可以睇錶呢？” (Translation: Sorry, I did not look at the watch. Did you not see how chaotic that was? You saw it, right? If you saw it, then you would know. How would we have the chance to look at the watch?)

10.125 The second occasion happened at a stand-up media briefing. When asked by reporters why no arrest had been made when people were carrying offensive weapons, a senior officer responded, “我相信我刑事同事落到嚟係唔見有任何人揸攻擊性武器。” (Translation: I believe my crime team colleagues did not see anyone holding offensive weapons when they arrived at the scene.) Despite this reply, there were photos and media footage capturing people dressed in white holding wooden poles in the presence of uniformed officers. The replies given on both occasions were criticised by the media.

10.126 The IPCC notes the Police response on the officers' replies to media enquiries as given in paragraphs 10.58 to 10.60.

10.127 The IPCC observes that posts and messages on the internet made use of these replies to support allegations of collusion between the Police and triads. The reply given by the QRT commander that he had not looked at his watch evaded the questions raised by the reporters as to why QRT officers arrived there late. The team was asked to mobilise at 22:57 and arrived at Yuen Long Station at 23:15, one minute after the attack had ended. The reply given in the stand-up briefing, had triggered rumours when viewed with photos of people holding weapons. The Police management should review the matter and enhance the media training for senior police officers on answering questions in interviews, stand-up media briefings and press

conferences, in view of the increasing interest of the media in police work and the present political climate.

Public Speculation on Police-triad Collusion

10.128 When the events in Yuen Long on the night of 21 July and in the early hours of 22 July were unfolding, numerous posts and messages on the internet accusing the Police of colluding with triads appeared. The IPCC has examined a number of them and those between Tuesday 16 July and Sunday 21 July, and after Monday 22 July. The following are some examples of those posts or messages in the order of the time they appeared on the internet that the IPCC can best ascertain:

- Triad members would use bamboo sticks to beat people in black outfits and teenagers and the Police would turn a blind eye. (22:36 on 20 July)
- It is useless to call the Police. There is no use as the Police is on their side. Black cops selectively turned a blind eye. (21:14 on 21 July)
- It has been open secret that the Police has been conniving at their illegal acts (of triads in Yuen Long). (22:34 on 21 July)
- It is clear that it was the triads who caused troubles in Yuen Long. Why there were no police officers to control? (22:39 on 21 July)
- The Police arrived right after the people dressed in white had gone. Perfect timing of police arrival showed that the Police colluded with triads. (23:19 on 21 July)
- When the police officers arrived at Yuen Long Station, the people dressed in white were leaving. The Police did not even attempt to stop anyone of them. (23:28 on 21 July)
- The police officers only appeared after the people dressed in white had assaulted the people in Yuen Long Station. (23:34 on 21 July)
- Two uniformed police officers saw triad members beating citizens in Yuen Long Station. They left without firing a shot. (Early hours on 22 July)
- The Police arrived after the triad members had beaten people at the Yuen Long Station and left. It was clear that the people dressed in white were holding iron

pipes at Nam Pin Wai but police officers only looked from far away and dared not to advance. (03:46 on 22 July)

- The officer had lied to all Hong Kong citizens by saying that there was no sight of people dressed in white holding offensive weapons. (This appeared on the internet after the senior officer gave a stand-up briefing at Nam Pin Wai at 05:05 on 22 July)
- The commander who handled the confrontation at the public screening of video clips on 16 July was on friendly terms with the triad members. (20:15 on 22 July)
- The future Commissioner of Police is an indigenous villager. Stop him from becoming the next Commissioner. (02:43 on 24 July)
- The CCTV footage as shown on a television news programme revealed that prior to the people dressed in white going to Yuen Long Station, several police vehicles drove past where the people dressed in white were gathering. However, the police officers did not do anything. The evidence concluded that the Police cooperated perfectly with the triad members. (22:48 on 29 July)

10.129 The IPCC notes the Police response on the public speculation engendered by the Yuen Long Incident, as given in paragraphs 10.63 and 10.70.

10.130 The IPCC observes that the posts and messages on the internet mainly drew upon the following matters to support the claim of collusion between the Police and triads:

- No action was taken on the gathering of the people dressed in white at Fung Yau Street North.
- Police vehicles drove past Fung Yau Street North but did not take any action on the people dressed in white gathering there.
- The Police did not take action against the triads who caused trouble in Yuen Long (apparently referring to the incident on 16 July).
- The three police officers left Yuen Long Station upon seeing the situation there. (The relevant messages said two police officers saw people dressed in white beating people in Yuen Long Station.)

- QRT officers arrived at Yuen Long Station right after the assailants had assaulted the people there and left.
- Police officers did not arrest any people dressed in white at Nam Pin Wai.
- Some people dressed in white offered assistance to the commander who handled the confrontation at the public screening of video clips on 16 July.
- What the senior officer said at the stand-up briefing.

10.131 The IPCC notes that the posts and messages even stated that the current Commissioner was an indigenous villager and the commander who turned down the offer of assistance by some people dressed in white on 16 July was on friendly terms with the triad members. From the time the incidents occurred on 21 July, propaganda materials alleging police collusion with triads and decrying the Yuen Long Incident began to appear. The Yuen Long Incident and Police-triad collusion became a slogan driving escalation of the protests after 21 July.

10.132 The IPCC notices that although the accusation of Police-triad collusion started appearing on the internet when the Yuen Long Incident took place, the Police did not come forward to refute it until the following morning on 22 July when a PPRB representative attended a radio interview. Even then, the PPRB representative did not rebut point by point the basis of the allegation.

10.133 At a Government press conference in the same afternoon, the Commissioner denied any Police-triad collusion without clarifying how the events on 21 July took place in the way they did. Regrettably, both the Commissioner and the PPRB did not make use of these opportunities to inform the public of the details of the incident known to the Police to counter the Police-triad collusion allegation. The mere denials by the Police probably reinforced the speculation, which by then was rife. Because of these missed opportunities, the speculation took firm root in the minds of protesters and became a potent and long-lasting propellant for subsequent POEs.

10.134 Had the Police closely monitored discussions on the internet and promptly devised strategies to refute speculation of Police-triad collusion with clear explanation, the claim might not have been so deeply rooted in some people's minds or so extensively exploited as a reason for subsequent violent protests. As things have turned out, violent protests have taken place on the 21st of each subsequent month until the COVID-19 epidemic.

10.135 The lack of a clear explanation of the events of 21 July has so far served to fuel the narrative on the internet of the Police Force intent on crushing the POEs by siding with triads, notwithstanding the claim being based only on speculation from incidents of 21 July. From that night onwards, the term “black cops”, as the Police Force was then and subsequently collectively called, became infused with renewed resentment and the venting of such resentment became a rallying call to action by protesters. By missing the golden opportunities to explain its action at an early stage of the incident on 21 July in Yuen Long, the Police has become the central target in a campaign of resentment.

10.136 The facts set out in this Chapter and the Police response will be fully taken into account when the IPCC considers the RCs now under investigation by CAPO. Meanwhile, the IPCC considers that the Recommendations which follow, made under section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance, will assist the Commissioner in restoring the trust between the Police and the community.

Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance

10.137 The IPCC is of the view that the failures on the night of 21 July essentially lay in inadequacies of timely collection and collation of actionable intelligence for sharing within the police command structure to enable timely action. This was compounded by inadequate consideration for initiating preventive measures to avert impending public disorder, missing opportunities to provide visible police intervention, failing to take immediate action to quash speculation of serious police misconduct beginning to fester in social media. The vulnerability of the 999 Console system to wilful sabotage and inability to cope with situations of extreme stress proved to be a serious weakness.

10.138 In this connection, the IPCC recommends that Police management conduct the following reviews:

- (a) Review police procedures, strategy and manpower deployment when having to handle two or more major operations at the same time, particularly in the collection and collation of timely intelligence (including the monitoring of social and other media) for sharing and for better communications and coordination at all levels of the Police command structure for more effective allocation of resources on the ground in such situations.
- (b) Review the strategy and manpower deployment on the night of 21 July and in the early hours of 22 July, in particular the following areas or events for lessons to be learnt:

- Review the strategy and manpower deployment in the handling of the gathering of people dressed in white at Fung Yau Street North, considering whether preventive measures should, unless circumstances otherwise dictate, be instituted in similar situations, including measures such as:
 - Close monitoring of the crowd by a visible police presence on the ground.
 - Establishing a police cordon at scene to ward off members of the public from going near such crowds, because of their potential for public disorder, even though apparently peaceful at the initial stage.
 - Warning the public through social media and other means against potential risk and assuring them of police protection.
 - Review the strategy and manpower deployment in handling the fighting and assaults at Yuen Long Station, in particular reviewing how real time media and internet information could be better used, how the communication between DOR/YL and other units were conducted, particularly MTR OP and 999 Console on 21 July night and the communications among DOR/YL, HICOM NTN and HQCCC, so that given similar situations involving large numbers of people in two or more violent opposing parties would be better handled:
 - The collection and sharing of timely intelligence of potential clashes should be improved (including real time monitoring of news media and the internet) and the use of monitoring stations at points where risks of confrontation are assessed to be probable, could be improved.
 - Improving response time to give Police maximum visibility at such confrontation, so that the public may be assured that they are getting the protection from harm that a peaceful community may expect.
 - Review whether command training should be enhanced to ensure implementation of the improvements from the above reviews and commanders are inculcated with the idea that the Police must be visibly seen to be protecting the public even in extreme situations.
- (c) Review Force Media Relations Strategy to ensure timely and accurate information for the press on incidents and staff taking stand-up interviews should be trained to project an image of care for public safety and impartiality in law enforcement, including reviewing and enhancing the training for senior officers in answering

media questions at the scene, giving stand-up briefings, attending press interviews and press conferences.

- (d) Review Force Public and Community Relations Strategy in the light of the widespread use of the internet to turn Police action into allegations of misconduct in order to stir up resentment to drive further protests, including:
- Devising means to enhance communications with the public about enforcement action that the Police has taken, is taking or would take to increase transparency of police work and to prevent unfounded or malicious speculations and rumours.
 - Reviewing the mechanism for disseminating information to the public to enhance transparency, for instance, PPRB could make timely announcement to update the public on serious situations to ease public concern and quash speculations or rumours.
 - Reviewing the protocols and strategy in disseminating information at press conferences to rebut untrue allegations or unfounded speculations against the Police.
 - Reviewing current systems for identifying malicious and egregious allegations and setting up a dedicated structure within the PPRB to monitor the allegations and the extent the Police is succeeding to rebut such allegations.
 - Reviewing current tools for public communication, including creation of own streaming site, to counter malicious allegations.
 - Reviewing how the present Police Community Relations structure, including the Fight Crime Committees, Junior Police Call, and other community structures, could be improved to facilitate communications between the Police and the Community, for example, in providing feedback to the Police on matters of public concern, such as how the public can in future expect the Police to react in situations like those on the night of 21 July.
- (e) Review and rectify the deficiency in the Police 999 Console to cope with extreme stress such as that encountered on the night of 21 July to see what remedial measures are required. In this review, it is recommended that the following matters be considered:

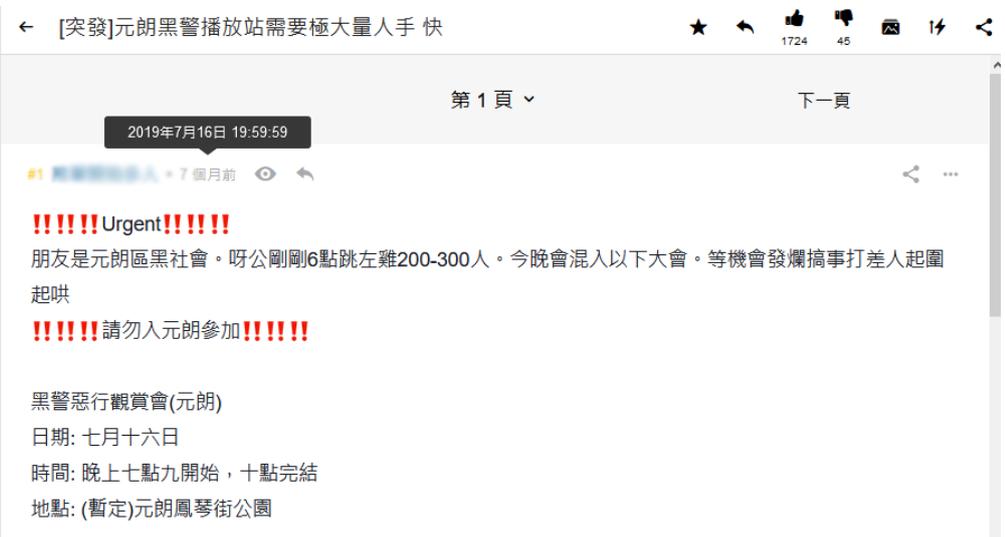
- Whether the current distribution system from the Central Console to Region and to District is adequate for extreme circumstances.
 - In the event of extreme circumstances, what protocols should be put in place, to weed out the malicious calls and attend to genuine calls.
 - Whether the system may be enhanced by greater use of information technology.
 - Whether in the event of a breakdown of the system, what contingency measures could be put in place.
 - Whether it is feasible to instate protocols for regular stress tests for a future system.
- (f) Review localities likely to have continuing risks of confrontation such as those encountered in Yuen Long and prepare contingency plans for dealing with such confrontation, bearing in mind the issues encountered in Yuen Long on 21 July, the lessons learnt, and the recommendations above.

CHRONOLOGY – SUNDAY 21 JULY 2019**Key Incidents**

- A. Phase I - Events and Messages on the Internet before 21 Jul
- B. Phase II - Public Procession on Hong Kong Island and Clashes outside LOCPG on 21 Jul
- C. Phase III - Events in Yuen Long on 21 Jul
- Part (i) - Assembly of People Dressed in White at Fung Yau Street North and Kai Tei Area, and Messages on the Internet and Intelligence around that Period
- Part (ii) - First Attack at Yuen Long Station and Messages on the Internet
- Part (iii) - Further Assault Incidents at Yuen Long Station
- Part (iv) - Police Action at Nam Pin Wai and Messages on the Internet
- D. Phase IV - Public Speculation and Police Response after the Yuen Long Incident

Detailed Chronology of Events**A. Phase I – Events and Messages on the Internet before 21 Jul**

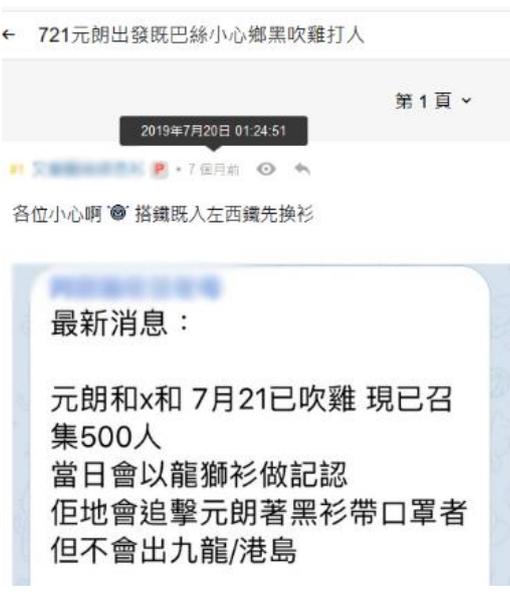
Time (Approx.)	Incident
19:00 16 Jul	Set up of the public screening of video clips on alleged police brutality in recent POEs at the sitting-out area at Fung Yau Street North in Yuen Long (source: media reports ¹).
19:59 16 Jul	A LIHKG post entitled “[突發] 元朗黑警播放站需要大量人手 快”. (Translation: Breaking news. Screening event about black cops in Yuen Long urgently needs many to assist.) The post stated that the head of a triad faction had called upon 200-300 persons to blend in with the crowd at the screening and to find an opportunity to stir up trouble (source: LIHKG ²).

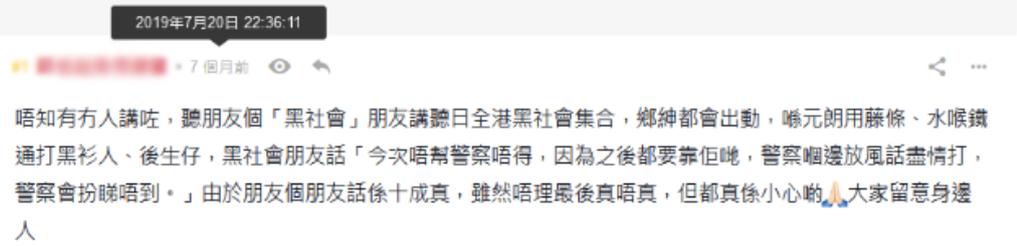
Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p> <p><u>Translation</u></p> <p><i>My friend is a triad member in Yuen Long. The triad head just made a call at 18:00 for 200 to 300 people. They would participate in tonight's screening and wait for the right moment to cause commotion, beat police officers and stir up trouble. Please do not attend!</i></p>
20:00 16 Jul	Screening started (source: media reports ³).
21:24 16 Jul	<p>From message to the LIHKG post at 19:59, a netizen supplemented that he saw many people dressed in white standing on the street opposite and some of them wore masks (source: LIHKG⁴).</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21:46 16 Jul	<p>A netizen posted on LIHKG that some people dressed in white had assaulted people. Some netizens responded that “搵日要光復元朗” (Translation: Have to liberate Yuen Long one day.) (source: LIHKG⁵).</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>
22:00 16 Jul	<p>At the end of the screening, about 40 males (some dressed in white) turned up and confronted the participants of the event. The two parties exchanged abusive words, splashed water and hurled water bottles at one another (source: HKPF and media reports⁶). Online videos showed that they pulled and pushed, and some people dressed in white had punched two young persons who walked past their party. One male dressed in white even attempted to kick them from behind. The Police was called. When the police officers arrived, most of the people who attended the event had left and the situation had already settled down. The Police therefore dispersed the crowd (source: media reports⁷).</p>
22:00 16 Jul	<p>A video recorded that people dressed in white had offered assistance to a commander of Pat Heung Division during the film screening event to expel the screening viewers. The commander patted the shoulder of a person dressed in white and said “心領，唔想大家嘅幫忙令警察更加辛苦。” (Translation: Appreciate it, but we don’t want your help to make it more difficult for the Police.) (source: media reports⁸).</p>
23:16 16 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “元朗真係唔建議大家搞光復”. (Translation: Would not recommend liberating Yuen Long.) to discourage people from trying to liberate Yuen Long for fear that the indigenous villagers would take violent action against them (source: LIHKG⁹).</p>
16 Jul onwards	<p>Online messages appeared to call for people to take part in a public meeting in Yuen Long on 21 Jul to protest against those causing disturbance at the screening on 16 Jul (source: LIHKG¹⁰).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<div> </div> <p><i>Translation</i> 21 Jul evening gathering. Fight for Yuen Long to rule the world. Gather in Yuen Long. Do not lose an inch of our ground. With fewer people we will be bullied. With more people we will win. Winning the world would mean nothing if without Yuen Long.</p> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p> <p>Meanwhile, some people urged Yuen Long residents online to protect their homeland and expel protesters from Yuen Long. Warning of using violence against the protesters also appeared on the internet (source: HKPF and LIHKG¹¹).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>Translation</i> All Residents of Yuen Long District Traditional Chinese Martial Arts Lion Dance Performance (Invitation) 21 July 2019 Chinese martial arts Stick fighting to welcome incoming guests Served to all without fail traditional shit and piss We will be waiting all day.</p> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>Translation</i></p> <p><i>Serious Warning</i></p> <p><i>No Lennon Wall in Yuen Long. All posts would be removed once found. Listen! LIHKG followers, if you want to post, post on your mother's cunt. You are not welcome by Yuen Long villagers.</i></p> <p><i>If you wear mask in Yuen Long, both your arms and legs would be amputated. Yuen Long Shap Pat Heung would fight to protect our homeland.</i></p> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
17 Jul	A news article covering the 16 Jul film screening quoted from a Yuen Long District Councillor that the group of males dressed in white who showed up at the end of the event were members of a local triad branch in Yuen Long (source: media report ¹²).
18 & 19 Jul	<p>Due to the online appeals for a public meeting on 21 Jul in Yuen Long, Regional Headquarters NTN requested HQCCC to provide RRC resources to Yuen Long District on 21 Jul. After assessing the risk levels in Yuen Long, HQCCC accorded priority to Hong Kong Island for RRC resources.</p> <p>Yuen Long District therefore rearranged its available resources to form ad hoc special units to cope with any emergency:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> (a) DOR/YL with 11 officers to take charge of all contingent operations, under the command of District Commander of Yuen Long (Temporary). (b) QRT with 70 officers to carry out station defence duty and intervene confrontation involving moderate level of violence. (c) CRT with 46 officers to verify reports related to POEs arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill. (d) SPT with 13 officers to observe and report any irregularity within their areas. (e) CRM YL HQ Team with five officers to oversee initial investigation of all crime committed during the Yuen Long Incident. (f) MTR OP with eight officers at West Rail Line Yuen Long, Tin Shui Wai, Long Ping and Kam Sheung Road Stations, i.e. two officers at each station,

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	to report directly to DOR/YL any irregularity observed from the MTR Control Room (source: HKPF).
18 Jul	Crime officers of Yuen Long District were deployed to debrief some Yuen Long village representatives in a Rural Committee event. Most of the village representatives denied any knowledge of the online appeals and any planned activities on 21 Jul. The officers therefore urged them to persuade their villagers to stay home on that day, which was acknowledged (source: HKPF).
01:24 20 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “721 元朗出發既巴絲小心鄉黑吹雞打人”. (Translation: Brothers and sisters departing from Yuen Long on 21 Jul beware of village triad rallying to beat people.) This post warned that triad gangs, fitted out for traditional Chinese dragon dance, would attack people in black outfits in Yuen Long on 21 Jul and suggested a change of clothes before taking the West Rail Line (source: LIHKG¹³).</p> <div>  <p>← 721元朗出發既巴絲小心鄉黑吹雞打人</p> <p>第 1 頁 ▾</p> <p>2019年7月20日 01:24:51</p> <p>7 個月前</p> <p>各位小心啊 搭鐵既入左西鐵先換衫</p> <p>最新消息：</p> <p>元朗和x和 7月21已吹雞 現已召集500人 當日會以龍獅衫做記認 佢地會追擊元朗著黑衫帶口罩者 但不會出九龍/港島</p> </div> <p><i>Translation</i> <i>Be careful, those who would take the West Rail, please change your clothes first.</i></p> <p><i>Latest news:</i> <i>Yuen Long triad gang has gathered 500 members for 21 Jul.</i> <i>They will be in traditional Chinese dragon dance outfit for recognition and launch attacks on people who wear masks and black outfits. However, they will not go to Kowloon/ Hong Kong Island.</i></p> <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
17:00 20 Jul	<p>At a pro-Government rally “Safeguard Hong Kong” at Tamar Park, a speaker made a statement that the young Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters should be caned (藤條教仔論) (source: media reports¹⁴).</p> <p>At the rally, a television news channel interviewed a male participant who suggested the media to go to Yuen Long on 21 Jul, saying that “there would be a good show (將會有一場好戲睇)” (Note: This participant was later identified by the television channel as one of the assailants in the attack at Exit J of Yuen Long Station in the small hours of 22 Jul. The news footage captured him wearing a mask, holding a wooden pole, and rushing into Yuen Long Station during the attack.) (source: media report¹⁵).</p>
22:36 20 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “〔小心！！元朗人人〕721 元朗黑社會話會周街打後生仔” (Translation: (Be careful! To Yuen Long people) Yuen Long triads said they would beat young people on the street on 21 Jul.) The post warned that triad members would use bamboo sticks to beat people in black outfits and teenagers, while the Police would turn a blind eye (source: LIHKG¹⁶).</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p> <p><u>Translation</u></p> <p><i>Don't know if you have ever heard this news. A friend of mine told me that all triad members and village gentry in Hong Kong would come out tomorrow. They are going to use rattan sticks, iron water pipes to beat the people in black outfits and young people. The friend of a triad member said that they have to do this to help the Police as they also have to rely on the Police. The Police has given indication to beat people as much as possible and the Police would turn a blind eye. My friend said the information was hundred percent true. Irrespective whether this is true or not, better for us to be cautious and vigilant.</i></p>

B. Phase II – Public Procession on Hong Kong Island and Clashes outside LOCPG on 21 Jul

Time (Approx.)	Incident
15:39 21 Jul	<p>A public procession, for which the Police had issued a LoNO, kicked off at Victoria Park and proceeded to Luard Road. Most of the protesters, however, did not stop at Luard Road, the finishing point stipulated on the LoNO but continued to walk to Central (source: media reports and live video footage¹⁷).</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
18:36 21 Jul	<p>Some protesters went further to LOCPG in Western District (source: media reports and live video footage¹⁸).</p>
18:55 21 Jul	<p>A large number of protesters gathered outside LOCPG. Some of them threw eggs at the building, sprayed paint on the surveillance cameras, and vandalised the walls of the building (source: media reports and live video footage¹⁹).</p>  <p>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)</p>
19:23 21 Jul	<p>Protesters started to occupy the main road Des Voeux Road Central (source: media reports and live video footage²⁰).</p>
20:03 21 Jul	<p>Protesters threw black paint at the national emblem of LOCPG building (source: media reports and live video footage²¹).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: Ming Pao)</i></p>
20:08 21 Jul	The Police started clearance action outside LOCPG (source: HKPF and media reports ²²).
21:15 21 Jul	<p>The violent protesters hurled bricks and glass bottles at the police officers on Connaught Road West. They also attacked the officers with sling shots, arrows, and sharpened poles, and set fire on the road. The Police reacted with nine rubber rounds, 25 react rounds and 55 tear gas rounds (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage²³).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
23:41 21 Jul	The protesters dispersed and left gradually. The Police remained on their defence line in the area (source: media reports and live video footage ²⁴).

C. Phase III – Events in Yuen Long on 21 Jul

Part (i) – Assembly of People Dressed in White at Fung Yau Street North and Kai Tei Area, and Messages on the Internet and Intelligence around that Period

Time (Approx.)	Incident
12:05 21 Jul	<p>A District Councillor forwarded to an officer of the PCRO of Yuen Long a photo which contained two WhatsApp messages about rumours that a triad gang would summon 500 members to attack the people in black outfits and masks on 21 Jul. The messages stated that the triad members would wear white. The PCRO replied that the Police had arranged manpower and had been closely monitoring the situation in Yuen Long. The PCRO officer also requested the District Councillor to notify him of any updates promptly. The officer further reassured the District Councillor that there would be officers patrolling around the West Rail Station and the Police had plans for the situation (source: HKPF, the District Councillor and media reports²⁵).</p> <div style="border: 1px solid black; padding: 5px; margin: 10px 0;"> <p>已轉寄</p> <p>星期口人多益畢出士俊哈 好出元朗，要出去要著白 色衫，不要載口罩，元朗 喇大佬開咗會講咗要著白 色衫，唔想打錯人</p> <p>上午11:49</p> <p>已轉寄</p> <p>最新消息：</p> <p>元朗和x和7月21已吹雞 現 已召集500人 當日會以龍獅衫做記認 佢地會追擊元朗著黑衫帶 口罩者</p> <p>中午12:05</p> </div> <p>(Image source: District Councillor Mak Ip Sing)</p> <p><i>Translation</i> Everyone don't go to Yuen Long in Sunday afternoon. If you have to, wear white and don't wear mask as the bosses in Yuen Long agreed to wear white shirts. They don't want to hit the wrong person.</p> <p><i>Latest news:</i> Yuen Long triad gang has gathered 500 members for 21 Jul. They will be in tradition Chinese dragon dancing outfit for recognition and launch attacks on people who wear masks and black outfits.</p>
18:00 21 Jul	DOR/YL at Yuen Long Police Station started to operate (source: HKPF).
18:08	A LIHKG post entitled “「突發」元朗鄉黑已出車”. (Translation: (Breaking

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21 Jul	<p>news) Yuen Long triads set out.) The post stated that people dressed in white and wearing masks were standing by at Tai Tong Road. The post reminded people to “Be Water”. In the messages that followed this post, a netizen posted a photo of a group dressed in white gathering in a sitting-out area of a village. The photo was apparently taken at 16:33 (source: LIHKG²⁶).</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>
18:30 21 Jul	Assistant Divisional Commander (Operations) of Yuen Long Division gave a briefing to police officers (source: HKPF).
18:36 21 Jul	<p>CCTV footage from more than one shop at Fung Yau Street North revealed that beginning at 18:36, people dressed in white started gathering on that street. This episode was made known from a Chinese news programme broadcast on 29 Jul (source: media reports²⁷).</p>  <p>and distributing masks.</p> <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>
19:07 21 Jul	The Police received a 999 call that more than 100 persons gathered at Yuen Long Fire Station, Fung Kam Street (Kai Tei), but no act of violence (source: HKPF).
19:07 - 21:43	Between 19:07 and 21:43, the Police received nearly 500 calls to 999 regarding the gathering of people dressed in white in Yuen Long. Most of them did not

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21 Jul	mention any weapons, but a few tens mentioned bamboo sticks or flags, only a few cases reported the sight of poles or iron pipes (source: HKPF and 999 calls recordings).
19:46 21 Jul	The Police received a 999 report that around 30-40 persons gathered at Fung Yau Street North (source: HKPF).
19:51 20:04 20:27 21:08 21:45 21 Jul	In response to the 999 reports about gathering of people dressed in white, DOR/YL sent CRT officers on five occasions to those locations to verify the reports. The CRT officers reported seeing people dressed in white gathering without causing any breach of the peace or committing crime. Having consulted with DOR/YL, the CRT officers made the judgement that no immediate dispersal was necessary (source: HKPF).
20:00 - 21:00 21 Jul	HICOM NTN contacted HQCCC on three occasions requesting additional resources to be allocated to NTN Region in response to the reports received on people dressed in white gathering in various locations of Yuen Long. HQCCC maintained its decision to accord priority to Hong Kong Island (source: HKPF).
20:36 21 Jul	<p>A Yuen Long District Councillor forwarded two photos showing a large group of people dressed in white gathering at Fung Yau Street North to a sergeant of PCRO via WhatsApp. He called the sergeant to follow up, who replied that plainclothes officers were already deployed to the scene (source: HKPF and media reports²⁸).</p>  <p>He said some police officers in plain clothes were already deployed.</p> <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
20:39 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “送元朗手足安全回家計劃”. (Translation: Plan of sending brothers back to Yuen Long safely.) The post creator offered to send some protesters back to Yuen Long from Central, as there were triads gathering in the Yuen Long vicinity according to the many posts on LIHKG (source: LIHKG²⁹).</p> <div style="border: 1px solid black; padding: 5px; margin: 10px 0;"> <p style="text-align: center;">2019年7月21日 20:39:48</p> <p>#1 [blurred] • 7 個月前</p> <p>連登上都好多po話元朗大量黑 咁既然宜加西環退走 中環又無明確目的去圍 咁不如送元朗既巴打安全回城啦 好危險架嘛</p> </div> <p style="text-align: right;"><i>Translation</i></p> <p><i>A lot of po (posts) on LIHKG said that Yuen Long was full of triads. Since (the protesters) retreated from Sai Wan and there was no clear target to besiege in Central, let's escort our brothers back to Yuen Long safely. It's so dangerous.</i></p> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
20:45 21 Jul	The Police received a 999 report that around 100 persons dressed in white gathering at Kai Tei, Yuen Long (source: HKPF).
20:59 21 Jul	An ex-LegCo Member created a post and shared a video on Facebook about people dressed in white walking on a street in Yuen Long. She stated in the post “元朗現場，黑社會治港？聽講話要打返入元朗的黑衫人士” (Translation: Live in Yuen Long. Triads ruling Hong Kong? Heard that they were going to beat people in black outfits returning to Yuen Long.) (source: Facebook ³⁰).
21:02 21 Jul	A LIHKG post entitled “721 元朗鄉黑伏擊中”. (Translation: 721 Yuen Long village triads ambushing.) with a photo capturing a group of people dressed in white gathering near Exit G2 of Yuen Long Station (source: LIHKG ³¹).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
<p>21:06 21 Jul</p>	<p>The Police received a 999 report that around 100 dressed in white gathering near Yoho Mall with some carrying bamboo sticks and staring at the passers-by (source: HKPF).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>

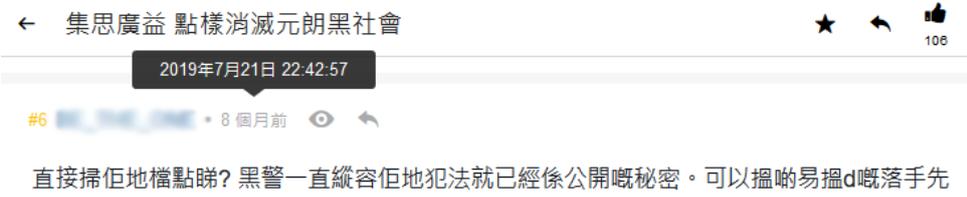
Time (Approx.)	Incident
21:09 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “小心元朗，出入元朗少(小)心啲”. (Translation: Beware Yuen Long. Watch your steps in and out Yuen Long) with a photo shown below and warned about Police-triad collusion (source: LIHKG³²).</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>
21:12 21 Jul	<p>A District Councillor contacted the PCRO Sergeant again and notified the sergeant that he was monitoring the situation at Fung Yau Street North. The sergeant advised the District Councillor to stay safe. This message was a thread to the 20:36 entries (source: media reports³³).</p>  <p>I contacted him at 9:12pm and he told me to take care.</p> <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21:14 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post, entitled “請大家一齊打 999” (Translation: Everyone please call 999.), asked other netizens to call 999 to report that people dressed in white and equipped with offensive weapons were having an illegal assembly at Fung Kam Street. The post suggested tens of thousands to call 999 together (source: LIHKG³⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
21:14 21 Jul	<p>Another LIHKG post entitled “元朗宵禁未”. (Translation: Yuen Long under curfew yet.) appeared. In the messages that followed the post, some netizens commented that it was useless to call the Police. Messages like “有L用警察同佢地一伙” (Translation : No fucking use, the Police is with them.) and “黑警選擇性失明” (Translation : Black cops selectively turned a blind eye.) were found (source: LIHKG³⁵).</p>
21:29 21 Jul	<p>According to a Chinese television news programme broadcast on 29 Jul, at least 100 to 200 persons dressed in white had assembled at Fung Yau Street North. CCTV footage of a shop on Fung Yau Street North captured a police patrol car driving past the location when the people dressed in white gathered there. The patrol car, however, left the scene without any action (source: media report³⁶).</p> <p><i>(Note: The Police stated that the captured police vehicle was a Traffic NTN patrol car driving past the area for traffic enforcement. Police officers on the patrol car confirmed to have seen the people dressed in white gathering but no breach of the peace or crime was observed.) (Source: HKPF)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
21:42 - 22:22 21 Jul	<p>The Police received messages from three District Council / LegCo Members that there were gatherings of people dressed in white in Yuen Long and their intention was to attack people in black outfits (source: HKPF).</p>
21:43 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “我正式宣佈下禮拜就光復元朗”. (Translation: I formally announce that we will liberate Yuen Long next week.) The post commented triads had assaulted people. In the messages that followed this post, some netizens suggested going to the villages in Yuen Long to beat the members of the triads. One message said “超過成萬人踩入圍村我睇佢地惡得去邊?” (Translation: With over ten thousand swarming into their village. See if they can still survive?) (source: LIHKG³⁷).</p> <div> <p>2019年7月21日 22:31:41</p> <p>#64 [redacted] • 7 個月前</p> <p>超過成萬人踩入圍村我睇佢地惡得去邊?</p> </div> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
21:52 21 Jul	<p>A District Councillor telephoned the PCRO of Yuen Long District team that the people dressed in white might attack people wearing black outfits in Yuen Long (source: HKPF and media reports³⁸).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21:55 21 Jul	<p>The Police received a 999 report that a passer-by had been assaulted by a group of people dressed in white with rattan sticks at Kai Tei area (source: HKPF).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
21:56 21 Jul	<p>Upon receiving the 21:55 report, the Police sent two police vehicles (EU Car 83 and EU Car 85) to the scene to handle the situation.</p> <p>(Note: There were a total of three EU cars in Yuen Long District. Another EU vehicle was assigned to deal with a “Fire” report at Nam Sang Wai.) (source: HKPF)</p>
22:00 21 Jul	<p>A Chinese television news programme broadcast on 29 Jul showed footage capturing a LegCo Member shaking hands with some of the people dressed in white at Fung Yau Street North.</p> <p>(Note: This LegCo Member conducted a press conference on 22 Jul and denied his involvement in the attack at Yuen Long Station.) (source: media reports³⁹)</p>
22:01 21 Jul	<p>According to a Chinese television news programme broadcast on 29 Jul, the Police received a report of “Fighting” on Fung Yau Street North (source: media report⁴⁰).</p>
22:09 21 Jul	<p>A District Councillor telephoned and told the PCRO of Yuen Long District team that the people in white were gathering in the Kai Tei area (source: HKPF).</p>
22:10 21 Jul	<p>According to a Chinese television news programme broadcast on 29 Jul, the Police received a report of “Fighting” on Fung Kam Street (source: media report⁴¹).</p>
22:13 21 Jul	<p>A Telegram message was posted to appeal to the public to make 999 reports so as to sabotage the Police 999 Console system. Another similar message was also found circulating on LIHKG at 22:47 (source: HKPF, Telegram, LIHKG and media report⁴²).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>Translation</i> That Yuen Long case Please help dial 999 to blast the police line.</p> <p>(Image source: Telegram)</p>
22:13 21 Jul	<p>According to a Chinese television news programme broadcast on 29 Jul, CCTV footage captured a police patrol car driving past Fung Yau Street North (source: media report⁴³).</p> <p>(Note: The Police stated that this police vehicle was the Traffic NTN patrol car previously passed through Fung Yau Street North at 21:29 for traffic enforcement. Police officers on the patrol car confirmed to have seen the people dressed in white gathering but no breach of the peace or crime was observed.) (source: HKPF)</p>  <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>
22:22 21 Jul	<p>Another LegCo Member called to tell a PCRO officer that he was going to Yuen Long. PCRO advised him not to go for safety (source: HKPF).</p>
22:25 21 Jul	<p>According to a Chinese television news programme broadcast on 29 Jul, CCTV footage captured a police vehicle driving past Fung Yau Street North and the people in white still gathering there. The police vehicle, however, left the scene</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>without any action (source: media report⁴⁴).</p> <p><i>(Note: The Police stated that the police vehicle captured was an EU vehicle driving past the area to locate an assault case victim. Police officers on the vehicle confirmed to have seen the people in white gathering but no breach of the peace or crime was observed.) (source: HKPF)</i></p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
22:26 21 Jul	A District Councillor called and informed the PCRO officer that he was going to Yuen Long (source: HKPF).
22:28 21 Jul	The Police received a 999 report from the victim of the 21:55 assault case who confirmed his location at Yuen Long On Ning Road (source: HKPF).
22:34 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “集思廣益 點樣消滅元朗黑社會”. (Translation: Brainstorming how to eliminate the triads in Yuen Long.) In the messages that followed this post, some netizens suggested raiding the establishments of triad society directly (source: LIHKG⁴⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p> <p><u>Translation</u></p> <p><i>How about storming their turf directly? It has been open secret that the Police has been conniving at their illegal acts. We can find something easier first to work on.</i></p>
22:36 21 Jul	The Police located the victim of the 21:55 Report at Yuen Long On Ning Road and conveyed him to hospital for medical treatment (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	According to media reports, the victim was a male chef. He saw many people dressed in white gathering at Fung Yau Street North and made a remark of the street crowded with people in white. The people dressed in white then chased after him and hit him with rattan sticks (source: media reports ⁴⁶).
22:39 21 Jul	A LIHKG post entitled “(必要置頂)下星期六既(嘅)光復元朗，係必要！”. (Translation: Must liberate Yuen Long next Saturday.) In the messages that followed this post, some netizens expressed their dissatisfaction with the Police. Comments like “明明係班黑社會係元朗搞事 點解冇警察去控制” (Translation : It is clear that it was the triads who caused trouble in Yuen Long. Why were there no police officers to control?) and “警黑合作” (Translation : Police-triad cooperation.) were found in the post (source: LIHKG ⁴⁷).

C. Phase III – Events in Yuen Long on 21 Jul

Part (ii) – First Attack at Yuen Long Station and Messages on the Internet

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:00 - 22:59 21 Jul	999 Console had answered 265 calls (source: HKPF). Between 22:00 – 22:39, there were many reports about the people dressed in white assaulting passers-by on the streets, more reports now mentioned weapons (mostly sticks and poles), and several reports saying that there was no Police after waiting for an hour (source: 999 calls recordings).
22:30 21 Jul	A Chinese television news programme broadcast on 29 Jul showed that tens of people dressed in white started leaving Fung Yau Street North in the direction of Fung Cheung Road, which was opposite in direction to the sitting-out area at Fung Yau Street North (source: media report ⁴⁸).

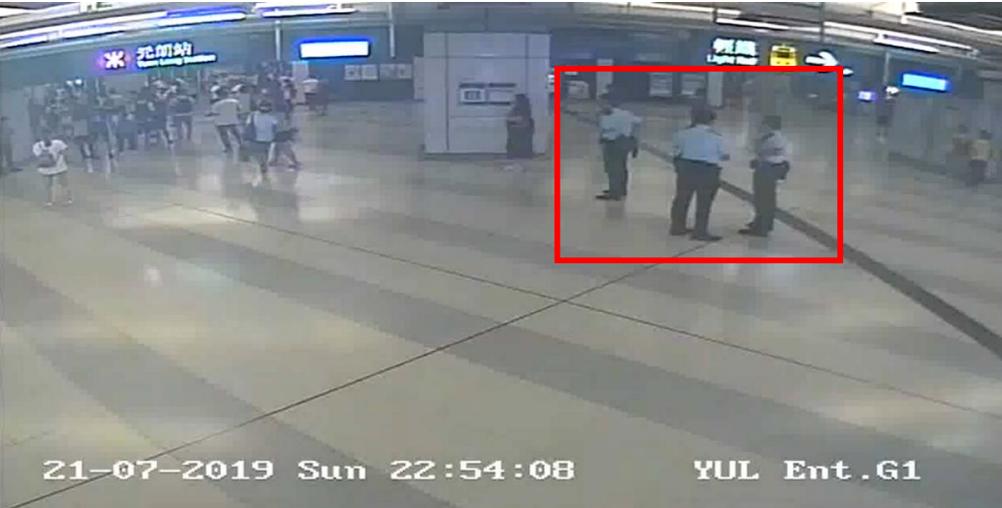
Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>
22:40 21 Jul	A Chinese television news programme broadcast on 29 Jul revealed all people dressed in white had left Fung Yau Street North (source: media report ⁴⁹).
22:40 21 Jul	999 Console received a report that there was a fight at Yuen Long Station and someone was lying on the floor. The caller requested an ambulance (source: 999 calls recordings).
22:40 – 22:43 21 Jul	<p>Yuen Long Station</p> <p>Four people dressed in white, holding protest signs on wooden poles, were seen inside Yuen Long Station. They were chasing after a female (A) in black outfit from Exit F into the paid area of Yuen Long Station.</p> <p>Female (B) in black outfit, who saw it inside the paid area, rushed forward to help female (A) by hitting the people dressed in white with an umbrella. Female (A) ran away. The people dressed in white then turned back to assault the female (B). A scuffle between them took place in the paid area.</p> <p>About ten people in black outfits who were inside the paid area came to the help of female (B). They used umbrellas to hit those dressed in white while those dressed in white hit back with their protest signs and pole-like objects.</p> <p>Another six to seven people dressed in white, some holding protest signs on wooden poles, and flags on sticks, then jumped over the ticket gates and the glass panel railing into the paid area to join the fight. The fight lasted briefly for two minutes (source: MTR CCTV footage).</p>
22:42 21 Jul	999 Console received two further reports that tens of people were fighting inside Yuen Long Station. The situation was chaotic and someone was hurt and bleeding. Ambulance was requested (source: 999 calls recordings).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:42 21 Jul	RCCC NT transmitted to a PSU Sergeant two requests for police assistance inside Yuen Long Station: (1) a male being assaulted by persons dressed in white; and (2) a mother with a child requesting police escort (source: HKPF).
22:42 21 Jul	MTR OP at Yuen Long Station reported to DOR/YL that 30 persons holding poles were gathering at Exit F (source: HKPF).
22:43 21 Jul	The people dressed in white, who joined the fight at 22:40, left the station. Some were armed with canes, sticks and poles (source: media report ⁵⁰ and MTR CCTV footage).
22:44 21 Jul	A LegCo Member (the LegCo Member who called the PCRO officer at 22:22) arrived at the paid area of Yuen Long Station. Meanwhile, about 100 people in black outfits returning from the procession on Hong Kong Island had gathered at the paid area (source: MTR CCTV footage and media reports ⁵¹).
22:44 21 Jul	The LegCo Member started a live stream broadcast of the scene at Yuen Long Station on Facebook. This Member joined the people in black outfits and inquired about the earlier attack which took place at 22:40. Bloodstains and broken pieces of wooden poles were seen on the floor inside the paid area of Yuen Long Station (source: live video footage and media reports ⁵²).
22:45 21 Jul	Upon receiving the two 999 requests for police assistance at 22:42, RCCC NTN dispatched two patrol cars with six police officers on board to Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF and media reports ⁵³).
22:45 21 Jul	MTRC staff at Yuen Long Station noticed that disputes occurred at the station concourse and the fire alarm was also triggered (source: press releases of MTRC ⁵⁴).
22:45 21 Jul	999 Console received further reports that a large number of people dressed in white had assaulted people in the vicinity of Yuen Long Station; other reports said at Yuen Long Station (source: 999 calls recordings).
22:47 21 Jul	MTRC made a report to the Police (source: HKPF and press releases of MTRC ⁵⁵).
22:47 21 Jul	A LIHKG message was posted to appeal to the public to make 999 reports so as to disrupt the Police 999 Console system. A similar message was also found circulating on Telegram at 22:13 (source: LIHKG and media reports ⁵⁶).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>← 元朗班牛屎佬痴搵咗線，請大家瘋狂報警</p> <div style="border: 1px solid black; padding: 5px;"> <p style="text-align: right;">第 1 頁 ▾</p> <p>2019年7月21日 22:47:31</p> <p>#1 瘋打999 • 7個月前</p> <p>請大家瘋狂打999報警 同差佬講有人就嚟死 Call到有龜公龜婆到現場為止 即使到咗都可以繼續打</p> <p>分散警力又好 乜都好</p> <p>快啲打999 🐼🐼🐼</p> </div> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p> <p><i>Translation</i> Please dial 999 crazy to make report. Tell the Police someone is about to die. Call until they come to the scene. Even if they show up, keep calling. For diverting police manpower, or for whatever purpose, dial 999 quick.</p>
22:48 – 23:02 21 Jul	<p>Around 70 persons dressed in white, holding wooden poles, flags, sticks, and umbrellas, entered Yuen Long Station via Exit F. They stayed in the unpaid area of the concourse, exchanged verbal abuse over the glass panel railing and the ticket gates with the people in black outfits who stayed in the paid area (source: MTR CCTV footage, live video footage and media reports⁵⁷).</p> <div style="border: 1px solid black; padding: 5px;">  <p style="text-align: center;">21-07-2019 Sun 22:48:19 YUL Ent.F</p> </div> <p><i>(Image source: MTR CCTV footage)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)</i></p>
<p>22:48 – 23:02 21 Jul</p>	<p>The two parties threw plastic water bottles and other objects at one another. The people in black outfits also opened their umbrellas to protect themselves (source: live video footage and media reports⁵⁸).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)</i></p>
<p>22:48 – 23:02 21 Jul</p>	<p>A LegCo Member urged the people in black outfits in the paid area to stay away from the glass railing and away from the people dressed in white. He told the people dressed in white in the unpaid area not to cross the ticket gates and asked the people in black outfits to use mobile phones to take pictures of the people dressed in white (source: live video footage and media reports⁵⁹).</p>
<p>22:51 21 Jul</p>	<p>A reporter started a live stream broadcast on Facebook covering what happened in the concourse of Yuen Long Station at the paid area (source : media report⁶⁰).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:51 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “元朗後生仔請小心，已經白色衫無差別打人”. (Translation: Youngsters in Yuen Long please be careful, people dressed in white were beating people indiscriminately.) Attached with a photo which the post described as people dressed in white hitting others with chairs.</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p> <p>In the messages that followed this post, some netizens mentioned that the Police cooperated with triads in the incident. One message reads “網傳警察內部已經講明唔好處理話白衫打人” (Translation : It spread on the internet that the Police internally had made it clear that they would not handle reports about people dressed in white clothing beating people.) and another message reads “無人再敢住元朗黑社會同警察合作的地區。” (Translation: No one would dare to live in Yuen Long, a district where the Police cooperates with triads.) Other messages that followed the post expressed similar sentiments (source: LIHKG⁶¹).</p>
22:52 21 Jul	The first police patrol car with three constables arrived at Exit G1 of Yuen Long Station.

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>21-07-2019 Sun 22:54:08 YUL Ent.G1</p> <p><i>(Image source: MTR CCTV footage)</i></p> <p>They spotted no one fighting but a crowd mostly dressed in white inside the station, appeared to be emotional and yelled loudly.</p> <p>Having assessed their manpower, equipment and personal safety, they considered themselves unable to handle the situation. They reported the situation to the supervising sergeant who then reported to DOR/YL (source: HKPF).</p>
22:52 21 Jul	The ambulance arrived at the Bus Terminus of Yuen Long Station (source: MTR CCTV footage).
22:54 21 Jul	DOR/YL was informed of the situation at Yuen Long Station and instructed the three police constables to retreat and wait nearby for reinforcement (source: HKPF).
22:55 21 Jul	Three ambulancemen arrived at Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).
22:56 21 Jul	The LegCo Member inside the paid area of Yuen Long Station defied the people in white dare not to leave as the Police would arrive to arrest them. The people in black outfits then chanted “ <i>Triad society! Don’t leave! (黑社會! 唔好走!)</i> ” (source: live video footage and media reports ⁶²).
22:57 21 Jul	<p>DOR/YL deployed a total of about 50 QRT officers from Yuen Long Police Station, notified CRM YL HQ Team, and mobilised two columns of Tuen Mun Tier III platoon officers (about 15 officers) to go to Yuen Long Station as reinforcement.</p> <p>DOR/YL instructed the second patrol car (which was on the way to Yuen Long Station) to return to Yuen Long Police Station (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:57 21 Jul	The QRT officers at Yuen Long Police Station put on their gear and received a quick briefing in ten minutes before going to Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).
22:58 21 Jul	Inside the Yuen Long Station, the group dressed in white moved backward. Some people in black outfits then walked to the ticket gates and glass panel railing. Some people dressed in white immediately rushed forward to attack them. Some people in black outfits struck back with umbrellas and threw plastic water bottles at the people dressed in white, while some opened their umbrellas for cover (source: live video footage and media reports ⁶³).
22:58 – 22:59 21 Jul	<p>Argument – A single male from the other section of the paid area (“Paid Area 2”, i.e. the paid area leading to Exits A and B and is opposite to where the mass of people in black outfits were staying) incited the people dressed in white. A person dressed in white came forward to argue with him (source: MTR CCTV footage).</p> <p>Assault and scuffle – Some tens of people dressed in white rushed to the ticket gate to join the argument. In the process, around ten persons dressed in white jumped into the paid area to assault that male (source: MTR CCTV footage).</p> <p>Chasing people in black outfits and reporters – At the same time, some people in black outfits and two reporters from the opposite paid area (“Paid Area 1”, i.e. the section where the mass of people in black outfits gathering) crossed the ticket gates to the unpaid area. The people dressed in white then chased after them to beat them, while those who was assaulting that male in Paid Area 2 also joined the scuffle (source: MTR CCTV footage, live video footage and media reports⁶⁴).</p>  <p>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)</p> <p>Spraying water and discharging fire extinguisher – At 22:59, people in black outfits at Paid Area 1 then sprayed water from fire hose and discharged gas from fire extinguisher towards the people dressed in white (source: MTR CCTV footage, live video footage and media reports⁶⁵).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page)</i></p>
<p>23:00 – 23:59 21 Jul</p>	<p>999 Console answered 387 calls (source: HKPF).</p>
<p>23:02 21 Jul</p>	<p>The people dressed in white jumped over the ticket gates into Paid Area 1. The LegCo Member and others in black outfits immediately dashed up to the platform and into a train compartment hiding from the attack. Some people on the train blocked the train doors. The train remained at the platform and not leaving (source: MTR CCTV footage, live video footage and media reports⁶⁶).</p> <p>The people in white initially did not give chase to the platform but stayed in the concourse area. There they assaulted people in black outfits who were going upstairs to the platform, while the people in black outfits used umbrellas to fight back or protect themselves (source: MTR CCTV footage and media reports⁶⁷).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page)</i></p>
23:04 21 Jul	<p>The LegCo Member holding an umbrella, left the train with two unknown individuals to the staircase leading to the concourse downstairs. On the staircase, a female wearing black top was exchanging words with a crowd of people dressed in white who were standing at the bottom of the staircase. The LegCo Member and his party urged the female to go up to the platform. The female then followed them to the platform and into the train compartment (source: live video footage⁶⁸).</p>
23:04 21 Jul	<p>Shortly after the first attack began, there were online appeals calling for people to go to Yuen Long to save the Fugitive Offenders Bill protesters there. A LIHKG post entitled “元朗要人 開緊大片” (Translation: Need people in Yuen Long. A big fight there.) urged people not to just watch what happened in Yuen Long on television but to go there. There were other posts with similar headings calling for people to go to Yuen Long (source: LIHKG⁶⁹).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>Translation</i> Yuen Long urgently needs people. A big fight over there. (Image source: LIHKG)</p>
<p>23:05 21 Jul</p>	<p>Some people in black outfits at the platform level threw unknown objects at the people dressed in white who were gathering at the concourse level (source: MTR CCTV footage).</p> <p>Both parties exchanged verbal abuse. The people dressed in white then ran up to the platform. Many people in black outfits rushed into the train compartments. A few people in black outfits fought with the people dress in white on the platform (source: MTR CCTV footage, live video footage and media reports⁷⁰).</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p><i>Taunting at the train doors</i> – The compartment was full of passengers and people in black outfits. People dressed in white at the platform taunted and hit those in black outfits standing near the train doors and hurled unknown objects towards those in the compartment. People in the compartment opened umbrellas to cover themselves (source: MTR CCTV footage, live video footage and media reports⁷¹).</p>
<p>23:05 21 Jul</p>	<p>Ten people dressed in white rushed into a train compartment to assault the people inside, irrespective of their outfits, with sticks, umbrellas and wooden poles. The attack lasted for half a minute before the people dressed in white left the compartment (source: live video footage and media reports⁷²).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page)</i></p>
<p>23:06 21 Jul</p>	<p>MTRC announced that the train service at Yuen Long Station was suspended and asked the passengers to leave the train. Most of the people, however, remained on the train (source: live video footage and media reports⁷³).</p>
<p>23:07 21 Jul</p>	<p>At Yuen Long Police Station, QRT officers finished the briefing and set off to Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
23:07 21 Jul	At the platform of Yuen Long Station, the people dressed in white entered the train compartment again and assaulted those inside irrespective of the colour of their outfits. Many people on the train screamed and cried (Source: live video footage and media reports ⁷⁴).
23:08 21 Jul	<p>The people dressed in white started to leave the train compartment. A male knelt at the train door begging them to stop beating people. He also picked up a pair of glasses for a person dressed in white. However, as soon as he had passed the glasses to that person, another person dressed in white rushed forward, punched him in the face and left (source: live video footage and media reports⁷⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page)</i></p>
23:09 21 Jul	<p>A few people dressed in white returned to the train compartment and assaulted the LegCo Member. They left the train compartment swiftly after the assault (source: live video footage and media reports⁷⁶).</p> <p>There were a few attempts that the train doors were closing but could not be closed. While on the platform, the people dressed in white rushed into the compartment to assault the people there and again when the train doors were open (source: MTR CCTV footage).</p>

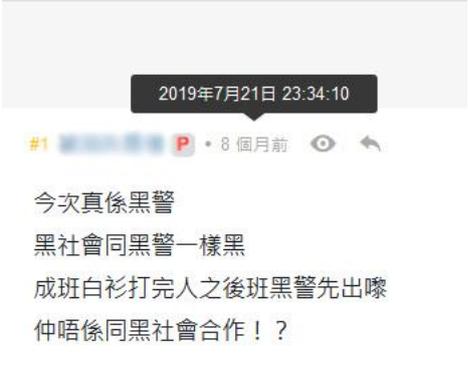
Time (Approx.)	Incident
23:13 21 Jul	The train doors closed and carried the injured passengers away from Yuen Long Station (source: MTR CCTV footage, live video footage and media reports ⁷⁷).
23:14 21 Jul	People dressed in white left Yuen Long Station (source: MTR CCTV footage, live video footage and media reports ⁷⁸).
23:15 21 Jul	Tin Shui Wai Police Station was surrounded by some 20 people (source: HKPF).
23:15 21 Jul	<p>The first batch of QRT officers and CRM YL HQ Team arrived at Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).</p> <p>By the time the first batch of QRT officers arrived at Yuen Long Station at 23:15, most of the people dressed in white had left. A few of them were still leaving Yuen Long Station. As captured by the CCTV footage of Yuen Long Station, at 23:15, around 40 people dressed in white took the escalator to leave the station concourse via Exit G1. Suddenly, they turned around and ran up the escalator (which was going downward) back to the concourse. A few seconds later, a group of about 30 police officers were seen going up on the upward escalator to the concourse. At that time, a police officer spotted a man dressed in white trying to walk up the downward escalator to the concourse and waved his baton at the man. The man then turned back to leave the station via the downward escalator. When the Police landed at the concourse, some of the people dressed in white were running away from the police officers, but the police officers did not give chase to stop them (source: MTR CCTV footage). According to the Police, when the police officers were arriving at Yuen Long Station, they saw crowds of people but did not witness any violence. The few people dressed in white leaving the concourse did not exhibit any disorderly behaviour or violence (source: HKPF).</p>
	

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>21-07-2019 Sun 23:15:31 YUL E4 E3 E2</p> <p>21-07-2019 Sun 23:15:32 YUL Ent.G2</p> <p>21-07-2019 Sun 23:15:36 YUL E4 E3 E2</p> <p>21-07-2019 Sun 23:15:36 YUL Ent.G2</p> <p>Police</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: MTR CCTV footage)</p>
<p>23:18 21 Jul</p>	<p>Gates outside Tin Shui Wai Police Station were pulled down. Police officers were deployed to guard the door, maintain access control and handle public enquiry on the spot. Access control at the police station commenced (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
23:19 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “唔洗去元朗，元朗白衫一走警察即到”。(Translation: No need to go to Yuen Long. The Police arrived right after the people dressed in white were gone.) In the messages that followed this post, some netizens commented that the perfect timing of police arrival showed police collusion with triad society (source: LIHKG⁷⁹).</p>  <p><i>Translation</i> The black cops arrived right after the triads had left. Would not believe they have not worked out the time together.</p> <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>
23:19 21 Jul	District Commander of Yuen Long (Temporary) instructed the activation of station defence at both Tin Shui Wai and Yuen Long police stations (source: HKPF).
23:20 21 Jul	Yuen Long Police Station was surrounded by around 25 people. Gates outside the police station were pulled down for station defence. Police officers were deployed to guard the door, maintain access control and handle public enquiry on the spot. Access control at the police station commenced (source: HKPF).
23:24 21 Jul	The second batch of QRT officers left Yuen Long Police Station for reinforcement at Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).
23:25 21 Jul	DOR/YL instructed the reinforcement QRTs to conduct high profile patrol in the vicinity of Yuen Long Station after they had finished handling the report at Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
23:28 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “[文宣] 元朗西鐵站嘅事一定要比國際睇 睇下香港警黑合作幾無縫”. (Translation: [Propaganda] The West Rail Line Yuen Long Station Incident must be shown to the world. See how seamlessly the Hong Kong Police cooperated with triads.) The post commented that the police officers arrived at Yuen Long Station, just as the people dressed in white were leaving. The Police did not even attempt to stop any of them (source: LIHKG⁸⁰).</p>  <p>← [文宣] 元朗西鐵站嘅事一定要比國際睇 睇下香港警黑合作幾無縫</p> <p>第 1 頁 ▾</p> <p>2019年7月21日 23:28:07</p> <p>#1 [文宣] 元朗西鐵站嘅事一定要比國際睇 睇下香港警黑合作幾無縫 • 7 個月前</p> <p>原來今時今日嘅香港已經變成第三世界國家 黑警計好白衣退場就入西鐵站 仲要冇嘗試過留人</p> <p><i>Translation</i> <i>Hong Kong now has become a third-world country.</i> <i>The black cops timed their entrance into Yuen Long Station when the people dressed in white were leaving and did not try to stop them from leaving.</i> <i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
23:30 21 Jul	<p>Tuen Mun Tier III officers arrived at Yuen Long Station. They were surrounded by an agitated crowd criticising the Police for late arrival (source: HKPF, live video footage and media reports⁸¹).</p> <p>According to the Police, the Tuen Mun officers left the station as the crowd was hostile and the fighting had ceased. Upon the instruction of DOR/YL, they patrolled in the vicinity (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
23:34 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “黑警同黑社會合作得好好” (Translation: Black cops and triads cooperated very well.) and commented that this incident showed that the Police was black cops and had obviously colluded with triads, as the police officers only appeared after the people dressed in white had assaulted the people in Yuen Long Station (source: LIHKG⁸²).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between;"> <div style="width: 45%;"> <p>← 黑警同黑社會合作得好好</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p> </div> <div style="width: 45%;"> <p><u>Translation</u> <i>This time the cops are really black Just as black as triads They only showed up after the people in white had beaten people Isn't that collusion with triad society!?</i></p> </div> </div>
23:35 21 Jul	<p>At Yuen Long Station, a QRT commander requested reinforcement as a crowd of over 100 citizens was surrounding the officers and shouting foul language at them there (source: HKPF, live video footage and media reports⁸³).</p>
23:37 21 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “今晚元朗絕對證明到警黑合作” (Translation: What happened tonight in Yuen Long can absolutely prove Police-triad collusion) and commented that the Police did not take action against illegal assembly and assault. It was obvious that the Police arrived at the scene only an hour later as planned (source: LIHKG⁸⁴).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
23:38 21 Jul	The second batch of QRT officers arrived at Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).
23:40 21 Jul	CRM YL HQ Team left Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).
23:40 21 Jul	A post appeared on DISCUSS forum entitled “元朗西鐵站大混戰 live”. (Translation: Yuen Long West Rail Station chaotic fight live.) The post creator attached a video footage from a LegCo Member (the same one who appeared at Yuen Long Station) which captured what happened inside Yuen Long Station. In the messages that followed this post, some netizens commented “又證明左黑社會同警察有一腿” (Translation : Again, it is proved that the Police has relationship with triads.) (source: DISCUSS forum ⁸⁵).
(Time unknown) 21 Jul	A post was created on HKGOLDEN entitled “LIVE 元朗現場”. (Translation: Yuen Long Live.) The post creator attached a video link on the Facebook of the same LegCo Member. In the messages that followed this post, netizens denounced Police handling of the incident. Comments like “夾好晒時間 真係痴L線” (Translation : Timing well coordinated. Bloody crazy.) and “完美演繹黑警合作你出我入” (Translation : Perfect cooperation between the Police and triads. One party left and another party entered.) were found (source: HKGOLDEN ⁸⁶).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<div>  <p>亞太區有一天成為亞太區佢個街唔追人</p> </div> <p>夾好晒時間 我黎你走 追條向左走向右走咩</p> <p><i>(Image source: HKGOLDEN)</i></p> <p><i>Translation</i> <i>Have worked out the time together. I come you leave. Not bothering to chase.</i></p>
23:46 21 Jul	<p>At Yuen Long Station, QRTs officers, having responded to the “fighting” reports at the concourse, helped seven injured persons to get onto the ambulance (source: HKPF).</p> <p>There were over 100 citizens at Yuen Long Station surrounded the police officers and condemned them for arriving late. Encountering with the angry crowd, all police officers left Yuen Long Station at 23:46 (source: HKPF and media reports⁸⁷).</p>
23:55 21 Jul	<p>MTRC announced closure of Yuen Long Station (source: press releases of MTRC and media reports⁸⁸).</p>
23:56 21 Jul	<p>DOR/YL repeated the same instruction previously given at 23:25, i.e. asking the reinforcement team (QRTs) to conduct high-profile patrol in the vicinity of Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).</p>
<i>(Time unknown)</i> 21 Jul	<p>Around midnight, after the QRT officers had retreated from Yuen Long Station, a reporter enquired with a QRT commander at the vicinity why the Police was so late in arriving at Yuen Long Station (Note: This commander was the same commander who had led the operation in the 16 July confrontation after the public screening, and was captured on a video patting the shoulder of a person dressed in white.)</p> <p>The commander had replied “我睇唔到錶呀，Sorry 呀！你見唔見到頭先都幾亂下嚟？見到嚟可？如果見到你就知啦，我哋點會有機會可以睇錶呢？”</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	(Translation: Sorry, I did not look at the watch. Did you not see how chaotic that was? You saw it, right? If you saw it, then you would know. How would we have the chance to look at the watch?) (source: media reports ⁸⁹).
23:59 21 Jul	Instead of conducting high-profile patrol as instructed by DOR/YL, a QRT commander requested all QRTs to gather at Yuen Long Fire Station for an urgent briefing, in view of the unsatisfactory coordination at Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).
00:10 22 Jul	The reinforcement team (QRTs) reformed at Yuen Long Fire Station for an urgent briefing to handle the situation at Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).

C. Phase III – Events in Yuen Long on 21 Jul

Part (iii) – Further Assault Incidents at Yuen Long Station

Time (Approx.)	Incident
23:58 21 Jul	While a group of 30 people in black outfits were leaving Yuen Long Station via Exit J, they had an encounter with a crowd of about 30 in white who were gathering nearby at Ying Lung Wai (source: live video footage and media reports ⁹⁰).
00:00 22 Jul	999 Console received a report requesting police escort to leave Yuen Long Station and the other from some ambulance officers seeking police assistance to enter Yuen Long Station via Exit J. Both reports were consolidated into one Incident Log, DOR/YL informed 999 Console that there was insufficient manpower. As such, no officer was assigned (source: HKPF).
00:01 22 Jul	999 Console received a report of fighting at Ying Lung Wai near Exit J. 999 Console consolidated this report into the Incident Log created for the reports received at 00:00. Thus, 999 Console did not deploy any police officers to the scene nor did it inform DOR/YL (source: HKPF).
00:05 22 Jul	The encounter at 23:58 outside Exit J near Ying Lung Wai now erupted into a fight between the two parties. The people dressed in white fought with sticks, umbrellas, and pole-like objects, while the people in black outfits used umbrellas (source: live video footage and media reports ⁹¹).
00:08 22 Jul	During the fight at Ying Lung Wai, a male villager collapsed and was sent to hospital. According to some news reports, the male villager was a Yuen Long triad faction leader (source: HKPF and media reports ⁹²).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
00:12 22 Jul	The gathering outside Tin Shui Wai Police Station had increased to 150 (source: HKPF).
00:16 22 Jul	At Exit J of Yuen Long Station, about ten people dressed in white, holding poles and umbrellas, returned and attacked the people in black outfits who were gathering there. The people in black outfits also used umbrellas as protection. The people dressed in white were outnumbered by the people in black outfits and they ran away (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage ⁹³).
00:16 22 Jul	HQCCC deployed RRC NTN to Yuen Long as reinforcement (source: HKPF).
00:16 22 Jul	The QRTs' briefing at Yuen Long Fire Station finished. At this time, a QRT commander received a phone call from HQCCC telling that many people were fighting near Yuen Long Station and a villager had been seriously injured. The QRT commander then related this information to DOR/YL and asked DOR/YL to confirm the situation (source: HKPF).
00:16 22 Jul and 01:14 22 Jul	<p>Rumours that the Yuen Long triad faction leader had died soon spread online that night. From LIHKG, two photos capturing a WhatsApp-like screen of conversations at 00:16 and 01:14 indicated the Yuen Long triad faction leader died and that the triads had summoned members to take action (source: LIHKG⁹⁴).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-around;">   </div> <p><i>Translation</i> Yuen Long Big Brother has just died. (Image source: LIHKG)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
00:17 22 Jul	DOR/YL instructed all frontline officers not to go to Yuen Long Station before confirmation of a fight there. DOR/YL also instructed all outdoor duties to return to Yuen Long Police Station for station defence (source: HKPF).
00:25 22 Jul	MTRC closed the roller shutter at Exit J of Yuen Long Station while many citizens still remained at the station concourse close to Exit J (source: HKPF).
00:25 22 Jul	HQCCC deployed EU NTS to Yuen Long as reinforcement (source: HKPF).
00:28 22 Jul	<p>A PCRO officer reported to DOR/YL that he was told by a village head that a male villager (the rumoured Yuen Long triad faction leader according to some news reports) died in the fight at Ying Lung Wai.</p> <p>DOR/YL received a report from MTR OP that about 30 persons dressed in white had appeared outside Exit J and argued with those in black outfit inside through the roller shutter.</p> <p>DOR/YL then instructed the QRT officers to ascertain the situation at Ying Lung Wai (source: HKPF).</p>
00:28 22 Jul	<p>At Yuen Long Station, about 30 people dressed in white returned to Exit J and taunted those in black outfits still inside Yuen Long Station through the roller shutter.</p> <p>A person in black outfit threw a helmet towards those dressed in white. Another person in black outfit charged towards the roller shutter with an umbrella in an attempt to stab the people dressed in white through the roller shutter.</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>追打上來</p> <p>為何元朗變成這樣</p> <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p> <p>The people dressed in white pulled up the roller shutter and chased after the person who tried to stab them with an umbrella and assaulted him. They also attacked other people in Yuen Long Station. The people in black outfits fled to Yoho Mall. People were injured. The people dressed in white then left Yuen Long Station via Exit J. The attack lasted five minutes (source: live video footage and media reports⁹⁵).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
00:28 22 Jul	The 999 Console received a call reporting another attack at Exit J of Yuen Long Station (source: 999 calls recordings).
00:29 22 Jul	The 999 Console received a call saying that the assailants had pulled up the roller shutter at Exit J and were rushing into Yuen Long Station to assault people again (source: 999 calls recordings).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
00:33 22 Jul	The people dressed in white who were assaulting the people in black outfits left via Exit J after the attack (source: HKPF).
00:45 22 Jul	QRT officers, who were deployed to ascertain the situation at Ying Lung Wai, finished conducting sweeping there without locating any injured person or witness (source: HKPF).
00:00 – 00:59 22 Jul	999 Console answered 424 calls between this period. Among them, at least 11 reports were received related to the attack at Exit J at 00:16, while ten were about attack at Exit J at 00:28. According to the Police, owing to the immense pressure and the confusion from the sudden surge of an unusually large volume of calls within a short time, 999 Console thought those reports were about the previous attack inside Yuen Long Station (i.e. the one which took place between 23:00 – 23:14), which had been dealt with by QRT officers. The Police did not realise that there was another attack, they did not send any police officers back to Yuen Long Station until 01:00 (source: HKPF).
01:00 22 Jul	A PCRO sergeant reported to DOR/YL that the male villager (the rumoured Yuen Long triad faction leader according to some news reports) was conveyed to hospital in conscious state (source: HKPF).
01:00 22 Jul	The reinforcement RRC NTN redeployed by HQCCC arrived at Long Yat Road junction with Long Yip Road, Yuen Long. District Commander of Yuen Long (Temporary) contacted the RRC NTN commander to lead the two troops (PTU C1 and C2) to Yuen Long Station directly (source: HKPF).
01:04 22 Jul	RRC NTN (PTU C1 and C2) completed sweeping at Yuen Long Station. No injured person or witness could be located (source: HKPF).

C. Phase III – Events in Yuen Long on 21 Jul

Part (iv) – Police Action in Nam Pin Wai and Messages on the Internet

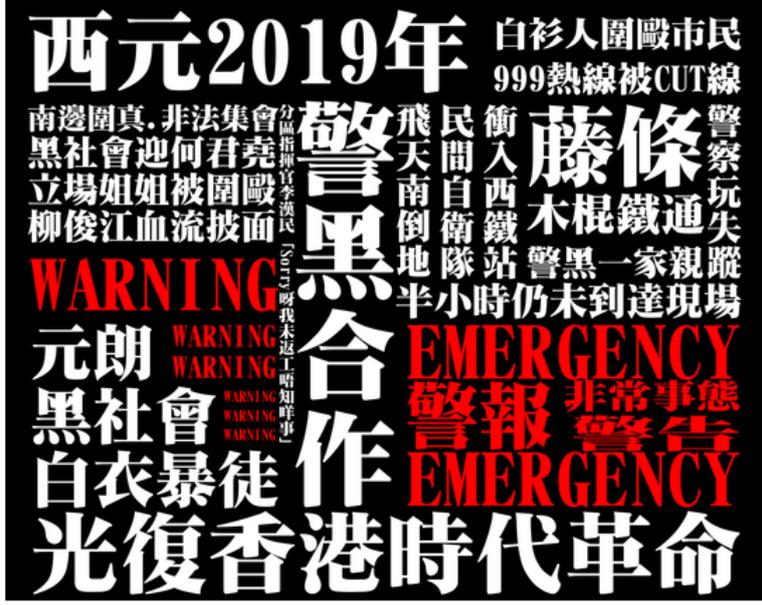
Time (Approx.)	Incident
00:45 22 Jul	SPT reported to DOR/YL that around 100 persons, mostly in black outfits and some with helmets and umbrellas, were walking from Kuk Ting Street towards Nam Pin Wai (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
00:48 22 Jul	People in black outfits looked for and attacked persons dressed in white along Long Yip Road and at the entrance of Sai Pin Wai (source: HKPF).
00:57 22 Jul	<p>A few hundred people in black outfits gathered outside Nam Pin Wai. Many of them were wearing a helmet and a mask, and holding an umbrella. Some were holding poles (source: HKPF, live video footage and media reports⁹⁶).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p> <p>Brief clashes took place when a group in black outfits chased some people dressed in white to the entrance of Nam Pin Wai. Some people on both sides were holding poles. The people dressed in white retreated into the village whereas the people in black outfits remained on the spot. Hundreds of people from both parties staged a stand-off there with the people dressed in white gathering at the entrance inside Nam Pin Wai, while the people in black outfits gathering outside the village. The two spots were separated by an open space underneath a flyover. Many on both sides were carrying poles, sticks, or umbrellas (source: HKPF, live video footage and media reports⁹⁷).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
01:01 22 Jul	999 Console received a report that a crowd with some dressed in white and some in black outfits had gathered at Nam Pin Wai in an emotional state. Police patrol cars were deployed to respond to the reports (source: HKPF).
01:02 22 Jul	RRC NTN (PTU C1 and C2) redeployed to Yuen Long by HQCCC arrived at Long Yat Road and encountered a group of people in black outfits, who threw hard objects at the officers. The people in black outfits were later dispersed by the Police (source: HKPF).
01:03 22 Jul	999 Console received a report that some persons holding poles had gathered at Nam Pin Wai (source: HKPF).
01:04 22 Jul	RRC NTN (PTU C1 – C4, totaling to around 500 riot officers) reformed at Nam Pin Wai and formed a cordon line between the two groups of people. They reported that there were around 200 villagers and 200 persons in black outfits at Nam Pin Wai (source: HKPF).
01:18 01:22 22 Jul	In response to the report at 01:01, the two patrol cars respectively reported that there were 200 – 300 persons gathering at Nam Pin Wai and RRC NTN had been handling the situation. No injured person was found (source: HKPF).
01:26 22 Jul	HQCCC redeployed RRC NTS to Yuen Long as reinforcement (source: HKPF).
01:30 22 Jul	The Police received a 999 report that over 30 persons in black outfits, armed with weapon, were walking from Sol City, Ma Wang Road, i.e. Long Ping Station, towards Yuen Long Station (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
01:49 22 Jul	300 people dressed in white gathered at Nam Pin Wai (source: HKPF).
02:26 22 Jul	<p>Live video footage captured a yelling of abusive language provoking the people dressed in white inside Nam Pin Wai to come out of the village for confrontation. Some six males dressed in white, all masked and holding a pole, responded and walked towards the open space at the entrance outside the village. These men responded by yelling abusive words and one of them threw a plastic water bottle in the direction of the yelling (i.e. towards Long Yip Street).</p> <p>Two riot police officers approached them from behind. One of the officers was holding a baton, while the other had a baton and a round shield. The officer holding just a baton, a Superintendent of Police, pointed his baton towards Nam Pin Wai. In response, four of the males turned back to Nam Pin Wai, while the remaining two, who were wearing a white helmet, remained on the spot and kept pointing their poles in the direction of Long Yip Street.</p> <p>The Superintendent pointed his right hand to the direction of Nam Pin Wai, while the other officer gestured them to stop walking forward. They had a brief conversation for about 30 seconds, during which the Superintendent put his left hand on the shoulder of one of the males for about two seconds. The two men then turned around and walked back to Nam Pin Wai, while the Superintendent once again pointed his hand in the direction of Nam Pin Wai and followed them for a short distance before turning back to join the other riot officers standing guard at Long Yat Road (source: live video footage and media reports⁹⁸).</p> 

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>
<p>03:25 22 Jul</p>	<p>Crime officers of Yuen Long District arrived at Nam Pin Wai. At that time, those people in black outfits scattering nearby had already dispersed while those dressed in white had reduced to around 200. Throughout the night, the Police had questioned and searched 40 males (from both groups) and seized over 160 items, such as iron pipes, wooden sticks and golf clubs at a nearby open-space carpark (source: HKPF, live video footage and media reports⁹⁹).</p> 

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
<p>03:46 22 Jul</p>	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “一圖說明元朗鄉黑白衫人事件”. (Translation: One graphic to illustrate the Yuen Long Incident of village triads dressed in white.)</p>  <p><i>Translation</i></p> <p><i>The Police worked in collusion with triads.</i></p> <p><i>Triads dressed in white beat civilians with rattan sticks, wooden poles and iron pipes</i></p> <p><i>No Police arrive in 30 minutes. The Police hung up 999 calls.</i></p> <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>In the messages that followed this post, some netizens raised two incidents to claim that the Police had colluded with triads, namely the Police arrived only when the triad members had beaten people in Yuen Long and Yuen Long Station, and the Police only stood guard around Nam Pin Wai when the people dressed in white had gathered there (source: LIHKG¹⁰⁰).</p> <p>← 一圖說明元朗鄉黑白衫人事件 ★ ↶ 👍 👎 📧</p> <p style="text-align: right;">19 1</p> <p>警黑合作例子：</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1.) 放任黑社會周街打人仲要打到入西鐵，好啦打人嗰班走曬你地班警察先過嚟，時間啱啱好 2.) 南邊圍村嗰邊，明明影住曬班白色衫擺住鐵通叫陣，班警察只敢遠觀，唔敢向前推進一步 <p><u>Translation</u> <i>Examples of Police-triad collusion</i></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. <i>The Police worked well with triads on the timing that the Police did not come over until the triad members had left after beating people at Yuen Long Station.</i> 2. <i>At Nam Pin Wai, the Police only looked from far away and dared not to come forward a step. It was clear that the people dressed in white were holding iron pipes and yelling.</i> <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>
04:45 22 Jul	People dressed in white left Nam Pin Wai to stop the stand-off (source: HKPF, live video footage and media reports ¹⁰¹).
05:05 22 Jul	When the police officers were leaving Nam Pin Wai, a Superintendent conducted a stand-up media briefing and mentioned, “白衣嘅人唔等於佢有份參與呢個打鬥。我地唔能夠話你白衣就係有問題，我就要作出拘捕。任何陣形，我地係公平處理。我地亦都唔能夠話你黑衣，就係有份參與呢個打鬥。所以，我地一定公平處理。” (Translation : People dressed in white does not necessarily mean that they have taken part in the fight. We cannot say that your wearing white outfit means that you are a problem and we have to make arrest. Irrespective of whatever camp, we will handle the matter fairly. At the same time, we can't say that you have taken part in the fight because you wear black.

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	We have to handle the matter in an impartial manner.) When asked by reporters why no arrest had been made when people were carrying offensive weapons, the officer responded, “我相信我刑事同事落到嚟係唔見有任何人揸攻擊性武器。” (Translation: I believe my crime team colleagues did not see anyone holding offensive weapons when they arrived at the scene.) (source: HKPF, live video footage and media reports ¹⁰²).
05:05 22 Jul	Many posts criticising the remarks made by that Superintendent appeared on the internet, including LIHKG (source: LIHKG ¹⁰³).
05:12 22 Jul	The Police left Nam Pin Wai (source: HKPF and media reports ¹⁰⁴).
05:45 22 Jul	The access control and station defence at Tin Shui Wai and Yuen Long police stations were deactivated. During the period of access control, a total of 22 and 37 persons respectively went to Tin Shui Wai Police Station and Yuen Long Police Station for enquiry or reporting cases (source: HKPF).
06:00 22 Jul	DOR/YL stood down (source: HKPF).

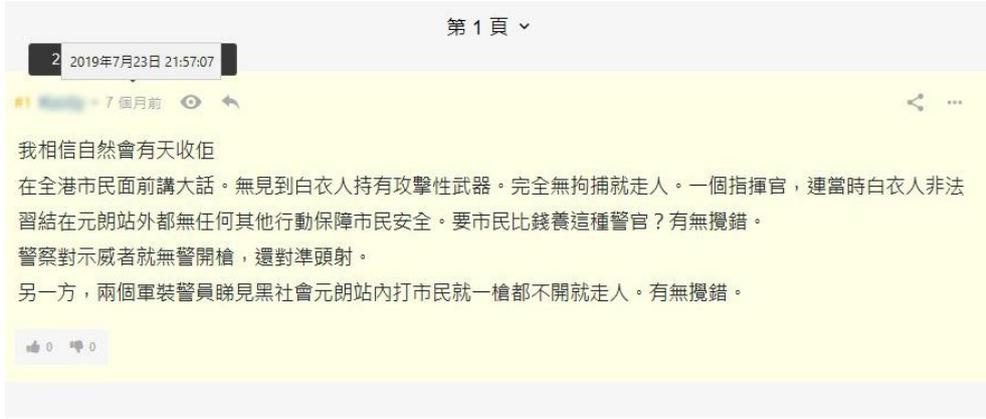
D. Phase IV – Public Speculation and Police Response after Yuen Long Incident

Time (Approx.)	Incident
After 21 Jul	There were many online propaganda drawings and posters, and LIHKG posts talking about Police-triad collusion (source: LIHKG ¹⁰⁵).
00:16 22 Jul	The Government issued a press release condemning violent acts on Hong Kong Island and in Yuen Long (source: Information Services Department ¹⁰⁶).
02:14 22 Jul	A LIHKG post entitled “元朗警黑合作既間接證據” (Translation: Indirect evidence of Police-triad cooperation.) says that the people dressed in white did not need to mask their face, because even if the Police knew who they were, the black cops would not arrest them. The post concluded that the people dressed in white and the police officers colluded with one another (source: LIHKG ¹⁰⁷).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>← 元朗警黑合作既間證據</p> <p>第 1 頁 ▾</p> <p>2019年7月22日 02:14:10</p> <p>7 個月前</p> <p>佢地唔需要蒙面 即係知道黑警就算知佢地係邊個 都唔會拉佢地 跟本打晒龍通 離晒譜 咁難拉示威者都拉到 班黑社會有晒樣上晒fb都拉唔到? 係咪真係當香港人係低能?</p> <p><u>Translation</u> <i>The people dressed in white did not have to cover their faces. Even though their identity is known to the Police, they would not be arrested. They have colluded with one another. Why the Police did not arrest the triad members whose images were uploaded on Facebook? Do the Police really think that Hongkongers are idiots?</i> (Image source: LIHKG)</p>
02:27 22 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post entitled “有圖：元朗黑警一早知情！警黑合作！” (Translation: With photo: Yuen Long black cops knew it long ago! Police-triad collusion!) says that a Facebook user (who claimed to be a police officer of Tuen Mun District) indicated Police-triad collusion. The LIHKG post recapped the Facebook post which mentioned “元朗六鄉已準備好。元朗酒樓、茶客全白衫、備戰中。元朗準備大量滕(籐)條教仔” (Translation: Yuen Long six villages were ready. The customers in Yuen Long restaurant all dressed in white were ready for war. Yuen Long has prepared a large supply of rattan sticks for discipline.” (source: LIHKG¹⁰⁸).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>有圖：元朗黑警一早知情！警黑合作！</p> <p>2019年7月22日 02:27:33</p> <p>【請廣傳！】</p> <p>呢位人兄叫羅拔，是在屯元區做警察的，根據他今日較早前share的post，可見警察明顯一早知道有黑社會今日搞事的！是否警黑合作，大家很清楚！</p> <p>香港警察 Hong Kong Police點解釋？！</p> <p>#唔好同我講無證據</p> <p>Source: https://www.facebook.com/1414116366/posts/10219932986741074?sfn=mo</p> <p>羅拔 9小時 · 🌐</p> <p>聲討教協 9小時 · 🌐</p> <p>元朗六鄉已準備好。 元朗酒樓、茶客全白衫、備戰中。 元朗準備大量滕條教仔🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔</p>
	<p><u>Translation</u></p> <p><i>This guy, named Robert, is a police officer serving in Tuen Mun District. Based on the post he had shared earlier today, it can be seen that the Police knew in advance that the triads would stir up trouble today. How does the Police explain then?! Don't tell me there is no evidence.</i></p> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
02:43 22 Jul	<p>A post entitled “十分重要！元朗警黑合作的秘密！背後話事人！” appeared on LIHKG. (Translation: Very important! Secret of Police-triad collusion in Yuen Long! The boss behind it!) The post pointed out that a directorate police officer was an indigenous villager and urged netizens to stop him from becoming the next Commissioner (source: LIHKG¹⁰⁹).</p>  <p><i>Translation</i> The future Commissioner of Police, TANG Ping Keung, is an indigenous villager. (Image source: LIHKG)</p>
03:54 22 Jul	The Police issued a press release to condemn the violent acts on Hong Kong Island and in Yuen Long and reiterated its stance of not tolerating any violent behaviour (source: Information Services Department ¹¹⁰).
Morning 22 Jul	PPRB spokesperson attended an interview with a radio station. The Police spokesperson refuted the accusation of Police-triad collusion (source: media report ¹¹¹).
Afternoon 22 Jul	The Pan-democrat legislators held a press conference criticising and condemning Police-triad collusion in the Yuen Long Incident (source: media reports ¹¹²).
15:00 22 Jul	The Chief Executive, together with the Secretaries of Bureaux and Directors of Departments, and Commissioner of Police, attended a media session. The Chief Executive condemned the violent acts both on Hong Kong Island and in Yuen Long on 21 Jul, and stated that the Government would seriously take enforcement action. Commissioner of Police briefed the press about what happened on 21 Jul in Yuen Long and denied any Police-triad collusion (source: Information Services Department and media reports ¹¹³).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
Midnight 22 Jul	The Police held a stand-up briefing to announce that they had arrested six persons for “Unlawful Assembly” in relation to the Yuen Long Incident. Some of them were triad members (source: Facebook page of HKPF and media reports ¹¹⁴).
21:57 23 Jul	<p>A LIHKG post condemned collusion between the Police and triads and that the Superintendent who spoke to the press after the police operation at Nam Pin Wai had lied to all Hong Kong citizens by saying that there was no sight of people dressed in white holding offensive weapons (source: LIHKG¹¹⁵).</p>  <p><i>Translation</i></p> <p><i>Lying in front of all the citizens of Hong Kong saying that not seeing the people dressed in white had any offensive weapons. (The Police) left without making any arrest.</i></p> <p><i>Two uniformed police officers saw triad members beating citizens inside Yuen Long Station. They left without firing a shot.</i></p> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
24 Jul	The Police published a video on its Facebook Page and YouTube Channel to explain the Police late response in the Yuen Long Incident (source: Facebook page and YouTube channel of HKPF ¹¹⁶).
Afternoon 25 Jul	The Police explained at a press conference for the handling of the police officers who first attended the scene but left shortly on 21 Jul and stated that the riot officers arrived at the scene 39 minutes after receiving the report (source: media reports ¹¹⁷).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:48 29 Jul	A LIHKG post entitled “警黑合作無間鐵證 元朗黑夜” (Translation: Seamless cooperation between the Police and triads. For Yuen Long dark night.) states that the CCTV footage shown on a television news programme revealed that, prior to the people dressed in white going to Yuen Long Station, several police vehicles drove past where the people dressed in white were gathering. However, the police officers did not do anything. This was conclusive evidence that the Police cooperated perfectly with the triad members (source: LIHKG ¹¹⁸).
16:00 6 Aug	At the Police regular press conference, the Police denied any collusion with triad society in response to media enquiry (source: media reports ¹¹⁹).

- ¹ Apple Daily (2019-07-16). 【逆權運動】元朗放映會播警暴片段 惡漢到場搞事擲汽水罐. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190716/59831262>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-17). 市民播警濫暴片段，黑幫踩場掙汽水. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190717/20731349>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 【警黑勾結】罪證曝光！八鄉指揮官拍膊頭叫白衫佬唔使擔心：心領幫忙. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190722/59852207>
- Stand News (2019-07-17). 元朗警暴放映會遭踩場 數十口罩大漢掙樽、潑水辱罵驅趕. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗警暴放映會遭踩場-數十口罩大漢掙樽-潑水辱罵驅趕>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件】中年漢：畀我哋趕佢走 八鄉指揮官李漢民：心領嘅，唔使擔心. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件-中年漢-畀我哋趕佢走-八鄉指揮官李漢民-心領嘅-唔使擔心/>
- HK01 (2019-07-17). 【逃犯條例】元朗公園播片抗議警暴 一度觸發大批人士衝突. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/352797/逃犯條例-元朗公園播片抗議警暴-一度觸發大批人士衝突>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】片段曝光 八鄉指揮官李漢民曾拍白衫人膊：唔使擔心. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/355044/元朗黑夜-片段曝光-八鄉指揮官李漢民曾拍白衫人膊-唔使擔心>
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 疑指揮官拍白衣幫膊頭 稱「心領」. News video footage of HK01.
- ² LIHKG (2019-07-16). [突發]元朗黑警播放站需要極大量人手 快. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1323937/page/1>
- ³ Apple Daily (2019-07-16). 【逆權運動】元朗放映會播警暴片段 惡漢到場搞事擲汽水罐. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190716/59831262>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-17). 市民播警濫暴片段，黑幫踩場掙汽水. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190717/20731349>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 【警黑勾結】罪證曝光！八鄉指揮官拍膊頭叫白衫佬唔使擔心：心領幫忙. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190722/59852207>
- Stand News (2019-07-17). 元朗警暴放映會遭踩場 數十口罩大漢掙樽、潑水辱罵驅趕. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗警暴放映會遭踩場-數十口罩大漢掙樽-潑水辱罵驅趕>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件】中年漢：畀我哋趕佢走 八鄉指揮官李漢民：心領嘅，唔使擔心. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件-中年漢-畀我哋趕佢走-八鄉指揮官李漢民-心領嘅-唔使擔心/>
- HK01 (2019-07-17). 【逃犯條例】元朗公園播片抗議警暴 一度觸發大批人士衝突. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/352797/逃犯條例-元朗公園播片抗議警暴-一度觸發大批人士衝突>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】片段曝光 八鄉指揮官李漢民曾拍白衫人膊：唔使擔心. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/355044/元朗黑夜-片段曝光-八鄉指揮官李漢民曾拍白衫人膊-唔使擔心>
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 疑指揮官拍白衣幫膊頭 稱「心領」. News video footage of HK01.
- ⁴ LIHKG (2019-07-16). [突發]元朗黑警播放站需要極大量人手 快. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1323937/page/24>
- ⁵ LIHKG (2019-07-16). [突發]元朗黑警播放站需要極大量人手 快. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1323937/page/33>
- ⁶ Apple Daily (2019-07-16). 【逆權運動】元朗放映會播警暴片段 惡漢到場搞事擲汽水罐. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190716/59831262>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 【警黑勾結】罪證曝光！八鄉指揮官拍膊頭叫白衫佬唔使擔心：心領幫忙. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190722/59852207>
- Stand News (2019-07-17). 元朗警暴放映會遭踩場 數十口罩大漢掙樽、潑水辱罵驅趕. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗警暴放映會遭踩場-數十口罩大漢掙樽-潑水辱罵驅趕>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件】中年漢：畀我哋趕佢走 八鄉指揮官李漢民：心領嘅，唔使擔心. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件-中年漢-畀我哋趕佢走-八鄉指揮官李漢民-心領嘅-唔使擔心/>
- HK01 (2019-07-17). 【逃犯條例】元朗公園播片抗議警暴 一度觸發大批人士衝突. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/352797/逃犯條例-元朗公園播片抗議警暴-一度觸發大批人士衝突>

- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】片段曝光 八鄉指揮官李漢民曾拍白衫人膊：唔使擔心。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/355044/元朗黑夜-片段曝光-八鄉指揮官李漢民曾拍白衫人膊-唔使擔心>
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 疑指揮官拍白衣幫膊頭 稱「心領」. News video footage of HK01.
- 7 Apple Daily (2019-07-16). 【逆權運動】元朗放映會播警暴片段 惡漢到場搞事擲汽水罐。 Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190716/59831262>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-16). 【逆權運動】中聯辦吹雞元朗惡漢即搞事 麥業成：認得有啲人係屏山鄉水房。 Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190717/59831967>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-17). 市民播警濫暴片段，黑幫踩場掙汽水。 Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190717/20731349>
- Oriental Daily News (2019-07-16). 修例風波：元朗街頭播片指警濫用暴力 兩批市民爆衝突。 Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190716/bkn-20190716220555250-0716_00822_001.html
- Stand News (2019-07-17). 元朗警暴放映會遭踩場 數十口罩大漢掙樽、潑水辱罵驅趕。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗警暴放映會遭踩場-數十口罩大漢掙樽-潑水辱罵驅趕>
- 堅料網 (2019-07-17). 【逃犯條例】元朗居民踩場 「警濫暴」放映會爆衝突。 Retrieved from <https://n.kinliu.hk/kinliuhknews/【逃犯條例】元朗居民踩場-「黑警濫暴」放映會爆/>
- 8 HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】片段曝光 八鄉指揮官李漢民曾拍白衫人膊：唔使擔心。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/355044/元朗黑夜-片段曝光-八鄉指揮官李漢民曾拍白衫人膊-唔使擔心>
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 疑指揮官拍白衣幫膊頭 稱「心領」. Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件】中年漢：畀我哋趕佢走 八鄉指揮官李漢民：心領嘅，唔使擔心。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件-中年漢-畀我哋趕佢走-八鄉指揮官李漢民-心領嘅-唔使擔心/>
- 9 LIHKG (2019-07-16). 元朗真係唔建議大家搞光復。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1324612/page/1?post=1>
- 10 LIHKG (2019-07-16). [突發]元朗黑警播放站需要極大量人手 快。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1323937/page/67>
- 11 LIHKG (2019-07-18). 元朗佬話唔比連登仔入城。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1330161/page/1>
- LIHKG (2019-07-18). 7.21 發完夢之後 不如搵日去元朗掃黑除惡。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1330362/page/1>
- LIHKG (2019-07-19). 當我地 721 遊行時 班垃圾元朗佬話睇下 721 元朗邊個多人。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1331370/page/1>
- 12 Apple Daily (2019-07-17). 中聯辦吹雞元朗惡漢即搞事 麥業成：認得有啲人係屏山鄉水房。 Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190717/59831967>
- 13 LIHKG (2019-07-20). 721 元朗出發既巴絲小心鄉黑吹雞打人。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1333512/page/1>
- 14 Now TV (2019-07-22). 石鏡泉發道歉聲明撤回「教仔」論。 Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=356367>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件】石鏡泉曾籲大眾用水喉通「打仔」 網民罷買《經濟日報》. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件-石鏡泉曾籲大眾用水喉通-打仔-網民罷買-經濟日報/>
- Now TV (2019-07-28). 【經緯線】元朗黑夜（一）。 Retrieved from [https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357065&refer=Live footage of RTHK](https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357065&refer=Live%20footage%20of%20RTHK)
- 15 Now TV (2019-07-28). 【經緯線】元朗黑夜（一）。 Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357065&refer=>
- 16 LIHKG (2019-07-20). [小心！！元朗人入] 721 元朗黑社會話會周街打後生仔。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1335563/page/1>
- 17 HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行·全日總覽】上環示威者散去 元朗白衣人無差別攻擊。 Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/354411/721_遊行-全日總覽-上環示威者散去-元朗白衣人無差別攻擊
- Ming Pao (2019-07-21). 【逃犯條例·721 遊行】示威者退至干諾道中永和街交界 (23:48). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190721/s00001/1563691974943/【逃犯條例->

- 721 遊行】示威者退至干諾道中永和街交界
News video footage of Cable TV, HK01, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News.
- 18 HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行·全日總覽】上環示威者散去 元朗白衣人無差別攻擊. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/354411/721_遊行-全日總覽-上環示威者散去-元朗白衣人無差別攻擊
Ming Pao (2019-07-21). 【逃犯條例·721 遊行】示威者退至干諾道中永和街交界 (23:48). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190721/s00001/1563691974943/> 【逃犯條例-721 遊行】示威者退至干諾道中永和街交界
News video footage of Cable TV, HK01, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News.
- 19 am730 (2019-07-22). 衝擊中聯辦黑漆污損國徽 上環爆衝突 橡膠彈驅散. Global Times (2019-07-23). 环球记者现场直击：暴徒围堵中联办绝非临时起意. Retrieved from <https://china.huanqiu.com/article/9CaKrnKIHZO>
Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-22). 投擲雞蛋 辱華噴塗 污損國徽 暴徒圍堵中聯辦 挑戰底線 天怒人怨. Headline Daily (2019-07-22). 圍堵中聯辦 上環爆衝突. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/daily/hk/781682/日報-港聞-圍堵中聯辦-上環爆衝突>
Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-22). 7·21 反修例遊行及衝突時序. Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-22). 警民再爆衝突 連射催淚煙橡膠彈 示威者圍中聯辦 擲漆彈塗污國徽招牌. Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-22). 示威者包圍中聯辦 塗污國徽. Ming Pao (2019-07-21). 【逃犯條例·721 遊行】中聯辦國徽遭塗污 梁振英：嚴厲譴責 毛孟靜：冀理解行為背後意義 (22:00). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190721/s00001/1563716653685/> 【逃犯條例-721 遊行】中聯辦國徽遭塗污-梁振英-嚴厲譴責-毛孟靜-冀理解行為背後意義
New York Times (2019-07-21). Mob Beats Antigovernment Protesters in Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/07/21/world/asia/hong-kong-protest-police.html>
Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 中央駐港機構首次遭破壞 政界料中央極之憤怒 促警嚴正執法. Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 示威者挑戰中央底線 突襲中聯辦 掙漆彈 辱國徽. Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 警慌忙調兵搭地鐵救西環. Stand News (2019-07-21). 721 遊行後 示威者包圍中聯辦 警多次施放催淚彈清場. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/直播-不斷更新-民陣-721-遊行-要求成立獨立調查委員會/>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 中聯辦港澳辦強烈譴責 示威者圍堵中聯辦挑戰中央權威. Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 「勇武」示威者 圍堵衝擊中聯辦 塗污國徽及外牆 港府強烈譴責. Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 建制政黨譴責示威者圍中聯辦. Sky Post (2019-07-22). 示威者首圍中聯辦 掙蛋噴漆 多處堵路 警施催淚煙橡膠彈驅散. Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-22). 暴徒亂港暴徒衝擊處心積慮 顏色革命圖謀奪權. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/07/22/323428.html>
Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-23). 有組織有訓練依足【衝擊手冊】施暴製漆彈燃燒物攻擊暴行升級. The Standard (2019-07-22). Violence flares as liaison office targeted. Wen Wei Po (2019-07-22). 暴徒衝中聯辦損國徽 挑戰國家辱民族 夜襲西環鐵支磚頭煙餅攻警 包圍西區警署極猖狂. Wen Wei Po (2019-07-22). 污國徽辱國家各界促嚴懲暴徒於中聯辦大樓外牆噴「支那」字眼挑戰「一國兩制」底線.
News video footage of Cable TV, HK01, Now TV, RTHK, SCMP and Stand News.
- 20 BBC (2019-07-29). 香港示威：抗議者不顧警方反對將集會變遊行抗議，遭遇多輪催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/zhongwen/trad/chinese-news-49142847>
HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行·全日總覽】上環示威者散去 元朗白衣人無差別攻擊. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/354411/721_遊行-全日總覽-上環示威者散去-元朗白衣人無差別攻擊
SCMP (2019-07-22). City's heart becomes a war zone after day of defiance. News video footage of Cable TV, RTHK and Stand News.
- 21 am730 (2019-07-22). 衝擊中聯辦黑漆污損國徽 上環爆衝突 橡膠彈驅散. Apple Daily (2019-07-22). 7.21 遊行後爆衝突 千警上環亂彈清場. HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行】港澳辦中聯辦嚴厲譴責塗污國徽 稱嚴重挑戰一國兩制. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/354586/721_遊行-港澳辦中聯辦嚴厲譴責塗污國徽-稱嚴重挑戰一國兩制
Headline Daily (2019-07-22). 圍堵中聯辦 上環爆衝突.

- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-22). 投擲雞蛋 辱華噴塗 污損國徽 暴徒圍堵中聯辦 挑戰底線 天怒人怨
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-22). 社會各界嚴厲譴責暴徒惡行.
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-22). 示威者暴力衝擊 警射催淚彈驅散.
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-22). 警民再爆衝突 連射催淚煙橡膠彈 示威者圍中聯辦 擲漆彈
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-07-22). 港澳辦中聯辦譴責：觸碰「一國兩制」底線.
- Ming Pao (2019-07-21). 【逃犯條例·721 遊行】中聯辦國徽遭塗污 梁振英：嚴厲譴責 毛孟靜：冀理解行為背後意義 (22:00). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190721/s00001/1563716653685/> 【逃犯條例-721 遊行】中聯辦國徽遭塗污-梁振英-嚴厲譴責-毛孟靜-冀理解行為背後意義
- Metro Daily (2019-07-22). 白衣漢 元朗追打人 示威 血洗 警驅散 上環射膠彈.
- Ming Pao (2019-07-22). 激進示威者圍中聯辦 擲蛋塗污國徽.
- New York Times (2019-07-21). Mob Beats Antigovernment Protesters in Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/07/21/world/asia/hong-kong-protest-police.html>
- Now TV (2019-07-22). 有示威者塗污中聯辦外國徽、外牆. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=356197>
- Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 示威者挑戰中央底線 突襲中聯辦 掙漆彈 辱國徽.
- Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 示威矛頭 由三權轉向中央機構. 塗污國徽招牌.
- Sing Tao (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行】中聯辦國徽被染黑 梁振英直斥「敗類」. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1049415/即時-香港-721 遊行-中聯辦國徽被染黑-梁振英直斥-敗類>
- Sing Pao (2019-07-22). 錯判民情 力撐林鄭 自招惡果 萬惡之源示威者首攻中聯辦.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 中聯辦港澳辦強烈譴責 示威者圍堵中聯辦挑戰中央權威.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 「勇武」示威者 圍堵衝擊中聯辦 塗污國徽及外牆 港府強烈譴責.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 防暴警中聯辦外清場 示威者有預謀打游擊 先後佔夏慤道圍警總.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 建制政黨譴責示威者圍中聯辦.
- Sky Post (2019-07-22). 示威者首圍中聯辦 掙蛋噴漆 多處堵路 警施催淚煙橡膠彈驅散.
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-22). 中聯辦：嚴懲違法暴力維護香港穩定.
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-22). 有組織有訓練依足【衝擊手冊】施暴製漆彈燃燒物攻擊暴行升級.
- The Standard (2019-07-22). Violence flares as liaison office targeted.
- Wen Wei Po (2019-07-22). 暴徒衝中聯辦損國徽 挑戰國家辱民族 夜襲西環鐵支磚頭煙餅攻警 包圍西區警署極猖狂.
- Wen Wei Po (2019-07-22). 污國徽辱國家各界促嚴懲暴徒於中聯辦大樓外牆噴「支那」字眼挑戰「一國兩制」底線.
- News video footage of Cable TV, HK01, News York Times, RTHK, SCMP, CNN, Stand News, HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行·全日總覽】上環示威者散去 元朗白衣人無差別攻擊. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/354411/721 遊行-全日總覽-上環示威者散去-元朗白衣人無差別攻擊>
- Sing Tao (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行】情況持續惡化 警方即將在西環向東面清場. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1049388/即時-香港-721 遊行-情況持續惡化-警方即將在西環向東面清場>
- News video footage of Cable TV, HK01, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News.
- am730 (2019-07-22). 衝擊中聯辦黑漆污損國徽 上環爆衝突 橡膠彈驅散.
- Apple Daily (2019-07-22). 7.21 遊行後爆衝突 千警上環亂彈清場.
- BBC (2019-07-29). 香港示威：抗議者不顧警方反對將集會變遊行抗議，遭遇多輪催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/zhongwen/trad/chinese-news-49142847>
- HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行】警方指警告無效 晚上 10 時施放催淚煙. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354589/721 遊行-警方指警告無效-晚上 10 時施放催淚煙>
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-22). 示威者暴力衝擊 警射催淚彈驅散.
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-22). 7·21 反修例遊行及衝突時序.
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-22). 警民再爆衝突 連射催淚煙橡膠彈 示威者圍中聯辦 擲漆彈塗污國徽招牌.
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-22). 示威者包圍中聯辦 塗污國徽.
- Headline Daily (2019-07-22). 圍堵中聯辦 上環爆衝突.

- Metro Daily (2019-07-22). 白衣漢 元朗追打人 示威 血洗 警驅散 上環射膠彈.
- Ming Pao (2019-07-22). 上環游擊戰 警射催淚彈疑橡膠彈 有示威者擲磚還擊 人群凌晨未散.
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 警上環開槍清場 14 人送院.
- New York Times (2019-07-21). Mob Beats Antigovernment Protesters in Hong Kong. Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/2019/07/21/world/asia/hong-kong-protest-police.html>
- Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 示威者挑戰中央底線 突襲中聯辦 掙漆彈 辱國徽.
- RTHK (2019-07-22). 警方昨晚在上環驅散示威者期間疑發射橡膠彈. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/videos/警方昨晚在上環驅散示威者期間疑發射橡膠彈/2317098818384119/>
- Sing Pao (2019-07-22). 示威者上環與警方激戰.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 「勇武」示威者 圍堵衝擊中聯辦 塗污國徽及外牆 港府強烈譴責.
- Sky Post (2019-07-22). 示威者首圍中聯辦 掙蛋噴漆 多處堵路 警施催淚煙橡膠彈驅散.
- SCMP (2019-07-22). City's heart becomes a war zone after day of defiance.
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-22). 暴徒亂港暴徒衝擊處心積慮 顏色革命圖謀奪權. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0722/323428.html>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-26). 暴徒亂港\暴徒「新武器」衝擊上環謀擄警命. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/0726/325953.html>
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-23). 有組織有訓練依足【衝擊手冊】施暴製漆彈燃燒物攻擊暴行升級.
- The Standard (2019-07-22). Violence flares as liaison office targeted.
- Wen Wei Po (2019-07-22). 暴徒衝中聯辦損國徽 挑戰國家辱民族 夜襲西環鐵支磚頭煙餅攻警 包圍西區警署極猖狂.
- News video footage of Cable TV, HK01, Now TV, RTHK, SCMP and Stand News.
- 24 Headline Daily (2019-07-21). 【721 衝突】上環有示威者焚燒雜物 警方出動橙旗後發射多枚懷疑橡膠子彈. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1549461/即時-港聞-721 衝突-上環有示威者焚燒雜物-警方出動橙旗後發射多枚懷疑橡膠子彈>
- HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行·全日總覽】上環示威者散去 元朗白衣人無差別攻擊. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/354411/721 遊行-全日總覽-上環示威者散去-元朗白衣人無差別攻擊>
- News video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV, Now TV, RTHK.
- 25 HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】白衣人打市民警察無影 元朗區議員：警方說早有部署. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/354590/元朗黑夜-白衣人打市民警察無影-元朗區議員-警方說早有部署>
- Stand News (2019-07-25). 【元朗襲擊】回應軍裝調頭走 警方：就算差人頂住槍都會畀人打得好緊要. <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗襲擊-回應軍裝調頭走-警方-就算差人頂住槍都會畀人打得好緊要/>
- Stand News (2019-07-25). 7.21 晚遇白衣惡漢 警員無視求助駛走警車 區議員黃偉賢：警放水讓黑社會打市民. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/7-21-晚遇白衣惡漢-警員無視求助駛走警車-區議員黃偉賢-警放水讓黑社會打市民/>
- News video footage of Cable TV.
- 26 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 「突發」元朗鄉黑已出車. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1337616/page/1>
- 27 HK01 (2019-07-21). 【元朗黑夜】白衣人元朗疑伏擊示威者 西鐵站爆衝突 共 45 人受傷. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/354584/元朗黑夜-白衣人元朗疑伏擊示威者-西鐵站爆衝突-共 45 人受傷>
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- Stand News (2019-07-30). 元朗 721 襲擊 《鏗鏘集》揭市民 9 時許已報警 警車三度經過白衣人群 零載查無行動. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗-721-襲擊-鏗鏘集-揭市民-9-時許已報警-警車三度駛過白衣人群-零載查無行動/>
- 28 Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 元朗黑夜 還原白色恐襲 8 小時.
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- Stand News (2019-07-24). 【警黑疑勾結】元朗警被揭 7.21 中午已知情 向區議員稱「已安排人手、有部署」 前一天更稱「收到風」. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/警黑疑勾結-元朗警被揭-7-21-中午已知情-向區議員稱-已安排人手-有佈署-前一天更稱-收到風/>
- Stand News (2019-07-25). 7.21 晚遇白衣惡漢 警員無視求助駛走警車 區議員黃偉賢：警放水讓

- 黑社會打市民. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/7-21-晚遇白衣惡漢-警員無視求助駛走警車-區議員黃偉賢-警放水讓黑社會打市民/>
News video footage of Cable TV.
- 29 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 送元朗手足安全回家計劃. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338238/page/1>
- 30 Facebook (2019-07-21). 元朗現場，黑社會治港？ Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/siulai.hk/videos/元朗現場黑社會治港聽講話要打返入元朗的黑衫人士/2107587812685687/>
- 31 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 721 元朗鄉黑伏擊中. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338328/page/1>
- 32 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 小心元朗，出入元朗少心啲. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338358/page/1>
- 33 RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
Stand News (2019-07-24). 【警黑疑勾結】元朗警被揭 7.21 中午已知情 向區議員稱「已安排人手、有部署」 前一天更稱「收到風」. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/警黑疑勾結-元朗警被揭-7-21-中午已知情-向區議員稱-已安排人手-有佈署-前一天更稱-收到風/>
Stand News (2019-07-25). 7.21 晚遇白衣惡漢 警員無視求助駛走警車 區議員黃偉賢：警放水讓黑社會打市民. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/7-21-晚遇白衣惡漢-警員無視求助駛走警車-區議員黃偉賢-警放水讓黑社會打市民/>
News video footage of Cable TV.
- 34 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 請大家一齊打 999. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338379/page/1>
- 35 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 元朗宵禁未. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338384/page/1>
- 36 RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>
RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
Stand News (2019-07-30). 元朗 721 襲擊 《鏗鏘集》揭市民 9 時許已報警 警車三度經過白衣人群 零截查無行動. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗-721-襲擊-鏗鏘集-揭市民-9-時許已報警-警車三度駛過白衣人群-零截查無行動/>
- 37 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 我正式宣佈下禮拜就光復元朗. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338534/page/1>
- 38 Sing Tao (2019-07-24). 【元朗暴力】元朗區議員爆事前已預警村民吹雞搞事 警方回覆：有相應部署. Retrieved from <https://www.singtao.ca/3633828/2019-07-23/news-【元朗暴力】元朗區議員爆事前已預警村民吹雞搞事+警方回覆：有相應部署/?variant=zh-hk>
Stand News (2019-07-25). 7.21 晚遇白衣惡漢 警員無視求助駛走警車 區議員黃偉賢：警放水讓黑社會打市民. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/7-21-晚遇白衣惡漢-警員無視求助駛走警車-區議員黃偉賢-警放水讓黑社會打市民/>
- 39 Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 何君堯飯局 惡煞食飽打人.
Headline Daily (2019-07-22). 【元朗暴力】握手問候白衣人「辛苦你喇」 何君堯稱「只係路過打招呼」. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1549492/即時-港聞-元朗暴力-握手問候白衣人-辛苦你喇-何君堯稱-只係路過打招呼>
Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-23). 何君堯否認與元朗襲擊事件有關.
Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-23). 何君堯拒割席 讚白衣人保家衛族.
Cable TV (2019-07-21). 【何君堯被拍到在元朗跟白衣人握手 何稱只是飯後路過】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/icablenews/videos/何君堯被拍到在元朗跟白衣人握手-何稱只是飯後路過/390359101611922/>
Metro Daily (2019-07-23). 支持他們「保家衛族」 何君堯解畫撐「白衣人」.
Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 何君堯否認策劃 認早知白衣行動 「點會割席？」 稱任何人犯法都可原諒.
Oriental Daily News (2019-07-23). 何君堯否認撐白衫軍行兇.
RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>
RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
Stand News (2019-07-22). 向白衣人豎姆指片段瘋傳 何君堯：我與打人事件絕無關係 只是晚飯

- 後經過。 <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/向白衣人豎中指片段瘋傳-何君堯-我與打人事件絕無關係-只是晚飯後經過/>
- Stand News (2019-07-30). 元朗 721 襲擊 《鏗鏘集》揭市民 9 時許已報警 警車三度經過白衣人羣 零截查無行動. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗-721-襲擊-鏗鏘集-揭市民-9-時許已報警-警車三度駛過白衣人羣-零截查無行動/>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-23). 何君堯辦事處遭大肆破壞 與元朗白衣人握手 開記招否認涉事件. News video footage of New York Times and Now TV.
- 40 RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- 41 RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- 42 Headline Daily (2019-07-23). 盧偉聰：與所有違法人士對立.
- Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-23). 李家超強調追究元朗案違法者.
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-23). 盧偉聰矢言警黑誓不兩立.
- LIHKG (2019-07-21). 元朗班牛屎佬痴撚咗線，請大家瘋狂報警. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338884/page/1>
- Stand News (2019-07-23). 警方專頁發影片 稱周日晚接逾 2 萬求助電話超負荷 望市民諒解. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/警方專頁發影片-稱周日晚接逾-2-萬求助電話超負荷-望市民諒解/>
- Stand News (2019-07-25). 【721 警黑疑勾結】「999 接線生」指元朗警署掛起電話停接報案 斥高層要求擋求助市民 不增派警員到場. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/警黑疑勾結-999-接線生-指元朗警署掛起電話停接報案-斥高層要求擋求助市民-卻不增派警員到場/>
- Stand News (2019-07-26). 張建宗指元朗暴徒打市民 為警方處理致歉 籲市民 727 和平表達勿濫用 999. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/張建宗指元朗暴徒打市民-為警方處理致歉-籲市民-727-和平表達勿濫用-999/>
- Stand News (2019-11-06). 李家超：721 濫用 999 情況嚴重 警車三巡無異樣 林卓廷：終極垃圾回應. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/李家超-721-濫用-999-情況嚴重-警車三巡無異樣-林卓廷-終極垃圾回應/>
- Sing Pao (2019-07-22). 近百求助短時間致電 999 無法接聽.
- SCMP (2019-07-23). Chief defends delayed response.
- Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-23). 盧偉聰：元朗暴力事件必追究到底.
- Wen Wei Po (2019-07-25). 【話你知】Telegram 多個「公海」群是暴衝「大台」. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/07/25/HK1907250006.htm>
- 43 RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- Stand News (2019-07-30). 元朗 721 襲擊 《鏗鏘集》揭市民 9 時許已報警 警車三度經過白衣人羣 零截查無行動. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗-721-襲擊-鏗鏘集-揭市民-9-時許已報警-警車三度駛過白衣人羣-零截查無行動/>
- 44 RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- Stand News (2019-07-30). 元朗 721 襲擊 《鏗鏘集》揭市民 9 時許已報警 警車三度經過白衣人羣 零截查無行動. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗-721-襲擊-鏗鏘集-揭市民-9-時許已報警-警車三度駛過白衣人羣-零截查無行動/>
- 45 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 集思廣益 點樣消滅元朗黑社會. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338778/page/1>
- 46 am730 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】遭打到背脊開花 廚師：白衣人絕非醉酒. Retrieved from <https://www.am730.com.hk/news/新聞/【元朗黑夜】市民被白衣人暴打致背脊開花-181463>

- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】廚師親述放工無辜遭圍毆 背脊皮開肉裂 心有餘悸。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/354810/元朗黑夜-廚師親述放工無辜遭圍毆-背脊皮開肉裂-心有餘悸>
- Headline Daily (2019-07-23). 下班途經也捱打「廝殺列車」45 傷。
- Ming Pao (2019-07-22). 【元朗襲擊·傷者個案】廚師憶述：遭 20 人圍打 施襲者斥「搞亂香港」(14:35). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190722/s00001/1563775758171/>【元朗襲擊-傷者個案】廚師憶述-遭 20 人圍打-施襲者斥「搞亂香港」
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 灰衣廚師收工被打 白衣人邊打邊喊：著黑衫吖。
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 亂棍毆藤條抽 傷者頭爆手瘀背爛 45 人送急症 15 留醫 1 危殆。
- Stand News (2019-07-30). 元朗 721 襲擊 《鏗鏘集》揭市民 9 時許已報警 警車三度經過白衣人群 零截查無行動。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗-721-襲擊-鏗鏘集-揭市民-9-時許已報警-警車三度駛過白衣人群-零截查無行動/>
- Truth Media Hong Kong (2019-07-21). 元朗穿黑衣市民被竹枝襲擊至嚴重受傷 施襲者發現本台記者隨即散去。 Retrieved from <https://tmhk.org/2019/07/21/元朗穿黑衣市民被竹枝襲擊至嚴重受傷-施襲者發現/>
- News video footage of New York Times, RTHK, Now TV and Apple Daily.
- 47 LIHKG (2019-07-21). (必要置頂)下星期六既光復元朗，係必要！
Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338813/page/1>
- 48 RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜。
Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare.
Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- Stand News (2019-07-30). 元朗 721 襲擊 《鏗鏘集》揭市民 9 時許已報警 警車三度經過白衣人群 零截查無行動。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗-721-襲擊-鏗鏘集-揭市民-9-時許已報警-警車三度駛過白衣人群-零截查無行動/>
- 49 RTHK (2019-07-29). 鏗鏘集 – 元朗黑夜。
Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programme/hkcc/episode/579157>
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare.
Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- Stand News (2019-07-30). 元朗 721 襲擊 《鏗鏘集》揭市民 9 時許已報警 警車三度經過白衣人群 零截查無行動。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗-721-襲擊-鏗鏘集-揭市民-9-時許已報警-警車三度駛過白衣人群-零截查無行動/>
- 50 Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗惡煞毆市民】林卓廷：嘴角被插傷需縫針 不少人傷勢嚴重 逾一小時警未現身。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗惡煞毆市民-林卓廷-嘴角被插傷需縫針-不少人傷勢嚴重-逾一小時警未現身/>
- News video footage of HK01, RTHK, SCMP, Apple Daily, Stand News, Cable TV.
- 51 HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？ 真相是到場前少女已成頭血。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗惡煞毆市民】林卓廷：嘴角被插傷需縫針 不少人傷勢嚴重 逾一小時警未現身。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗惡煞毆市民-林卓廷-嘴角被插傷需縫針-不少人傷勢嚴重-逾一小時警未現身/>
- 52 Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21).
Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？ 真相是到場前少女已成頭血。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗惡煞毆市民】林卓廷：嘴角被插傷需縫針 不少人傷勢嚴重 逾一小時警未現身。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗惡煞毆市民-林卓廷-嘴角被插傷需縫針-不少人傷勢嚴重-逾一小時警未現身/>
- 53 Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 建制派反指示威者「挑機」。
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-22). 元朗大批白衣漢 西鐵站襲黑衣人。
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？ 真相是到場前少女已成頭血。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>

前少女已成頭血

Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 白衫軍封元朗站棒打黑衫示威者.

Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗惡煞毆市民】林卓廷：嘴角被插傷需縫針 不少人傷勢嚴重 逾一小時警未現身. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗惡煞毆市民-林卓廷-嘴角被插傷需縫針-不少人傷勢嚴重-逾一小時警未現身/>

Sing Pao (2019-07-22). 前記者柳俊江 議員林卓廷浴血 最少 10 傷 元朗黑夜疑白衣黑漢毆黑衣市民.

Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-23). 對罵變追打 林卓廷被指火上加油.

Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-23). 網傳林卓廷粗口挑釁白衣人.

Wen Wei Po (2019-07-23). 建制批林卓廷刻意挑撥令事件惡化.

News video footage of Cable TV and New York Times.

54 MTRC Press Releases (2019-07-22). “Outbreak of Violence at West Rail Line Yuen Long Station” Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS20190722E.pdf, and https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS20190722E1.pdf

55 MTRC Press Releases (2019-07-22). “Outbreak of Violence at West Rail Line Yuen Long Station” Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS20190722E.pdf, and https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS20190722E1.pdf

56 Headline Daily (2019-07-23). 盧偉聰：與所有違法人士對立.

Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-23). 李家超強調追究元朗案違法者.

Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-23). 盧偉聰矢言警黑誓不兩立.

LIHKG (2019-07-21). 元朗班牛屎佬癩撚咗線，請大家瘋狂報警. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338884/page/1>

Stand News (2019-07-23). 警方專頁發影片 稱周日晚接逾 2 萬求助電話超負荷 望市民諒解.

Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/警方專頁發影片-稱周日晚接逾-2-萬求助電話超負荷-望市民諒解/>

Stand News (2019-07-25). 【721 警黑疑勾結】「999 接線生」指元朗警署掛起電話停接報案 斥高層要求擋求助市民 不增派警員到場. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/警黑疑勾結-999-接線生-指元朗警署掛起電話停接報案-斥高層要求擋求助市民-卻不增派警員到場/>

Stand News (2019-07-26). 張建宗指元朗暴徒打市民 為警方處理致歉 籲市民 727 和平表達勿濫用 999. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/張建宗指元朗暴徒打市民-為警方處理致歉-籲市民-727-和平表達勿濫用-999/>

Stand News (2019-11-06). 李家超：721 濫用 999 情況嚴重 警車三巡無異樣 林卓廷：終極垃圾回應. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/李家超-721-濫用-999-情況嚴重-警車三巡無異樣-林卓廷-終極垃圾回應/>

Sing Pao (2019-07-22). 近百求助短時間致電 999 無法接聽.

SCMP (2019-07-23). Chief defends delayed response.

Ta Kung Pao (2019-07-23). 盧偉聰：元朗暴力事件必追究到底.

Wen Wei Po (2019-07-25). 【話你知】Telegram 多個「公海」群是暴衝「大台」. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/07/25/HK1907250006.htm>

57 Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21).

Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>

HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？ 真相是到場前少女已成頭血.

Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>

Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗惡煞毆市民】林卓廷：嘴角被插傷需縫針 不少人傷勢嚴重 逾一小時警未現身. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗惡煞毆市民-林卓廷-嘴角被插傷需縫針-不少人傷勢嚴重-逾一小時警未現身/>

58 Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21).

Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>

HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？ 真相是到場前少女已成頭血.

Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>

Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗惡煞毆市民】林卓廷：嘴角被插傷需縫針 不少人傷勢嚴重 逾一小時警未現身. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗惡煞毆市民-林卓廷-嘴角被插傷需縫針-不少人傷勢嚴重-逾一小時警未現身/>

- ⁵⁹ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗惡煞毆市民】林卓廷：嘴角被插傷需縫針 不少人傷勢嚴重 逾一小時警未現身。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗惡煞毆市民-林卓廷-嘴角被插傷需縫針-不少人傷勢嚴重-逾一小時警未現身/>
- ⁶⁰ Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/>
- ⁶¹ LIHKG (2019-07-21). 元朗後生仔請小心，已經白色衫無差別打人。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1338720/page/1>
- ⁶² Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/> Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被追打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被追打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- ⁶³ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> News video footage of HK01 and Stand News.
- ⁶⁴ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/> Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被追打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被追打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- ⁶⁵ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). 林卓廷 Facebook 直播片段。 Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/> Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被追打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被追打受傷-未見警員執法/>

- ⁶⁶ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/> Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- ⁶⁷ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/> Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- ⁶⁸ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>
- ⁶⁹ LIHKG (2019-07-21). 元朗要人 開緊大片。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1339142/page/1>
- ⁷⁰ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/> Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- ⁷¹ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/> HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/> Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- ⁷² HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血> Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- ⁷³ Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>

- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- 74 Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21).
Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- 75 Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21).
Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- 76 Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21).
Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被迫打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法。 Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被迫打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- 77 Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21).
Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>
- 78 Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 元朗黑夜 還原白色恐襲 8 小時。
HK01 (2019-07-21). 【元朗黑夜】白衣人元朗疑伏擊示威者 西鐵站爆衝突 共 45 人受傷。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/354584/元朗黑夜-白衣人元朗疑伏擊示威者-西鐵站爆衝突-共 45 人受傷>
- Live video footage from Lam Cheuk Ting's Facebook page (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/LamCheukTing.Official/videos/547539255780791/>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人？真相是到場前少女已成頭血。

- Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/熱爆話題/354821/元朗黑夜-林卓廷帶隊挑釁白衣人-真相是到場前少女已成頭血>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). 【睇片】元朗站惡煞木棒打人 《立場》記者市民被追打受傷 事發半小時未見警員執法. Retrieved from <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗站惡煞手持木棒打人-市民記者被追打受傷-未見警員執法/>
- 79 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 唔洗去元朗，元朗白衫一走警察即到。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1339502/page/1>
- 80 LIHKG (2019-07-21). [文宣] 元朗西鐵站嘅事一定要比國際睇 睇下香港警黑合作幾無縫. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1339722/page/1>
- 81 HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時>
- Sing Pao (2019-07-22). 近百求助短時間致電 999 無法接聽.
- Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/>
- News video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV, New York Times, RTHK, Stand News and CNN.
- 82 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 黑警同黑社會合作得好好. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1339841/page/1>
- 83 Apple Daily (2019-07-22). 被鬧警黑合作 總督察兇市民.
- am730 (2019-07-22). 元朗白衣人疑追打反修例遊行人士.
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時>
- Headline Daily (2019-07-22). 元朗白衣人持棍 西鐵站追打示威者.
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 周前聞青年擬元朗擡山墳 鄉紳憤怒 有人勸說傳言或假 未阻白衣襲擊.
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
- Stand News (2019-07-21). Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/standnewshk/videos/元朗西鐵站有多名身穿白衣男子多次用棍棒追打現場市民又向港鐵閘內叫囂據記者所見有一名中年女子在女廁內頭破血流現場暫時未見在任何警員立場直播期間遇襲女記者雙手右肩受/407353793207073/>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 元朗白衣人襲西鐵站多人濺血.
- News video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV, New York Times, RTHK, Stand News and CNN.
- 84 LIHKG (2019-07-21). 今晚元朗絕對證明到警黑合作. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1339914/page/1>
- 85 DISCUSS Forum (2019-07-21). 元朗西鐵站大混戰 live. Retrieved from <https://www.discuss.com.hk/viewthread.php?tid=28384649>
- 86 HKGOLDEN (2019-07-21). [LIVE]元朗現場. Retrieved from <https://forumd.hkgolden.com/view.aspx?type=CA&message=7086781&page=1>
- 87 HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
- 88 HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時>
- Headline Daily (2019-07-22). 【元朗暴力】西鐵站封站 多位市民報警未能接通. Retrieved from <http://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1549476/即時-港聞-元朗暴力-西鐵站封站-多位市民報警未能>

接通

- RTHK (2019-07-21). 被質問為何太遲到現場 警員指「無睇錶」。 Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/RTHKVNEWS/videos/被質問為何太遲到現場-警員指無睇錶/514093529132702/>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-22). 元朗白衣人襲西鐵站多人濺血.
- Sky Post (2019-07-22). 元朗白衣人亂打人 林卓廷柳俊江濺血.
- MTRC Press Releases (2019-07-22). “Outbreak of Violence at West Rail Line Yuen Long Station” Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS20190722E.pdf, and https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS20190722E1.pdf
- ⁸⁹ Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 警遲到場：睇唔到錶.
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- Sing Tao (2019-07-23). 【元朗暴力】被指與白衣人打交道 「八鄉指揮官」名字電話簿中消失. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1050613/即時-香港-元朗暴力-被指與白衣人打交道-八鄉指揮官-名字電話簿中消失>
- News video footage of RTHK.
- ⁹⁰ Facebook (2019-07-21). 有市民拍到白衣人遭黑衣人追暴圍毆！. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/1510034482611881/videos/2321585051252803/>
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
- ⁹¹ HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
- News footage of Apple Daily and HK01
- ⁹² Apple Daily (2019-07-22). 【無警時分】飛天南通波仔蘇醒聲稱被打 檢查發現身上無傷痕. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190722/59849181>
- Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 「飛天南」蘇醒 稱被打無傷痕.
- BastillePost (2019-07-22). 元朗大佬「飛天南」曾誤傳死訊 險釀更大打鬥. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4765603-元朗大佬「飛天南」曾誤傳死訊-險釀更大打鬥>
- ETtoday 新聞雲(2019-07-22). 影／白衣男打人後「心臟病發」倒地 網傳他是黑幫老大「飛天南」. Retrieved from <https://www.ettoday.net/news/20190722/1495691.htm>
- LIHKG (2019-07-22). 講真，元朗大佬飛天南死左，何君堯要負全責. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1342478/page/1>
- Ming Pao (2019-07-22). 元朗無警執法 白衣人暴打市民 逞兇近兩小時 最少 15 人送院. News video footage of Apple Daily and HK01.
- New York Times (2019-07-29). ‘Please Stop Beating Us’: Where Were Hong Kong’s Police? Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/video/world/asia/10000006624535/hong-kong-protest-police-triad-investigation.html>
- The Standard (2019-07-24). Suspected gangster regains consciousness. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news/section/11/209952/Suspected-gangster-regains-consciousness>
- The Central News Agency (2019-09-18). 元朗毆人心臟病發 飛天南癒後遭警拘捕. Retrieved from <https://tw.news.yahoo.com/元朗毆人心臟病發-飛天南癒後遭警拘捕-034122659.html>
- ⁹³ HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動>

- 部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/
News footage of Apple Daily, HK01 and RTHK.
- 94 LIHKG (2019-07-22). 講真，元朗大佬飛天南死左，何君堯要負全責。 Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1342478/page/1>
- 95 Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 元朗黑夜白衫見人就打 警指揮：不見人持武器。
Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 被指搗鬧 元朗區會副主席辯稱勸交。
Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 柳俊江義載變血人。
Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 元朗黑夜 還原白色恐襲 8 小時。
Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 休班紀律部隊自發趕到救人。
HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時>
Headline Daily (2019-07-23). 下班途經也捱打「廝殺列車」45 傷。
Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-07-23). 白衣人港鐵元朗站襲擊釀 45 傷。
Ming Pao (2019-07-22). 元朗無警執法 白衣人暴打市民 逞兇近兩小時 最少 15 人送院。
Metro Daily (2019-07-23). 暴力衝擊 45 傷 警拘 6 人 元朗變「死城」。
Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 元朗襲擊拘 6 人 警被質疑放白衣 報案 35 分鐘才支援 盧偉聰否認「警黑合謀」。
Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 否認助施襲 王威信：勸架捱棍骨折。
Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 周前聞青年擬元朗搗山墳 鄉紳憤怒 有人勸說傳言或假 未阻白衣襲擊。
New York Times (2019-07-29). 'Please Stop Beating Us': Where Were Hong Kong's Police? Retrieved from <https://www.nytimes.com/video/world/asia/10000006624535/hong-kong-protest-police-triad-investigation.html>
RTHK (2019-07-22). 白衣人元朗站棍打乘客最少 36 人傷 警方未作拘捕行動。 Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1469648-20190722.htm>
RTHK (2019-07-22). 【六分鐘紀錄】重組元朗周日晚 白衣人襲市民事件。 Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1469828-20190722.htm>
Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
Sing Pao (2019-07-23). 元朗驚恐一夜 前記者柳俊江縫八針。
Sky Post (2019-07-23). 遇襲市民：換藍衫亦被打 元朗黑夜 45 人傷。
News video footage of Apple Daily, New York Times, RTHK, SCMP and CNN.
- 96 HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時>
Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
News video footage of Now TV and HK01.
- 97 Facebook (2019-07-21). 有市民拍到白衣人遭黑衣人追暴圍毆！
Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/1510034482611881/videos/2321585051252803/>
HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時。
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時>
HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行·全日總覽】上環示威者散去 元朗白衣人無差別攻擊。 Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/354411/721-遊行-全日總覽-上環示威者散去-元朗白衣人無差別攻擊>
Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇。 Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
News video footage of Now TV and HK01.
- 98 Apple Daily (2019-07-22). 【無警時分】當值警見白衣人即轉身走 防暴警入村仲拍背搭膊頭。
Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190722/59849252>
Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 指揮官拍膊與黑幫論形勢。
Headline Daily (2019-07-23). 白衣團夥徹夜村口集結。

- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- Facebook (2019-07-21). 有市民拍到白衣人遭黑衣人追暴圍毆！ Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/1510034482611881/videos/2321585051252803/>
- News video footage of Apple Daily, New York Times, RTHK and CNN.
- 99 Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 指揮官拍膊與黑幫論形勢.
- Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 白衣團夥徹夜村口集結.
- HK01 (2019-07-21). 【721 遊行·全日總覽】上環示威者散去 元朗白衣人無差別攻擊. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/354411/721_遊行-全日總覽-上環示威者散去-元朗白衣人無差別攻擊
- Metro Daily (2019-07-23). 暴力衝擊 45 傷 警拘 6 人 元朗變「死城」.
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 元朗襲擊拘 6 人 警被質疑放白衣 報案 35 分鐘才支援 盧偉聰否認「警黑合謀」.
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 周前聞青年擬元朗擡山墳 鄉紳憤怒 有人勸說傳言或假 未阻白衣襲擊.
- Now TV (2019-07-22). 警南邊圍村調查 大批白衣人經過防線離開. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=356250>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 惡漢群毆市民 元朗區助理指揮官：未拘捕任何人 穿白衣不等於參與打鬥 <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/惡漢群毆市民%E1%85%A0元朗區助理指揮官-未拘捕任何人%E1%85%A0穿白衣不等於參與打鬥/>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-07-23). 南邊圍村檢鐵通帶走一人.
- The Standard (2019-07-23). 'Stretched' police response defended.
- Wen Wei Po (2019-07-23). 「白衣黑漢」肆虐 警搜元朗拘 6 李家超：不能姑息任何暴力 一哥：與違法者勢不兩立.
- News video footage of Apple Daily, HK01, Now TV and Cable TV.
- 100 LIHKG (2019-07-22). 一圖說明元朗鄉黑白衫人事件. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1343885/page/1>
- 101 Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 指揮官拍膊與黑幫論形勢.
- Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 元朗黑夜 還原白色恐襲 8 小時.
- Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 白衣團夥徹夜村口集結.
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗群毆市民】36 人受傷 1 人危殆 白衣漢曾於南邊圍村聚集 其後乘車離去. <https://thestandnews.com/politics/元朗群毆市民-36人受傷%E1%85%A01人危殆%E1%85%A0白衣漢凌晨於南邊圍村聚集/>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 惡漢群毆市民 元朗區助理指揮官：未拘捕任何人 穿白衣不等於參與打鬥 <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/惡漢群毆市民%E1%85%A0元朗區助理指揮官-未拘捕任何人%E1%85%A0穿白衣不等於參與打鬥/>
- The Standard (2019-07-23). 'Stretched' police response defended.
- News video footage of Now TV, HK01 and RTHK.
- 102 am730 (2019-07-23). 元朗黑夜白衫見人就打 警指揮：不見人持武器.
- Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 白衣團夥徹夜村口集結.
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-23). 元朗西鐵站襲擊案 6 人被捕.
- HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的冇警 5 小時. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的冇警5小時>
- Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 元朗襲擊拘 6 人 警被質疑放白衣 報案 35 分鐘才支援 盧偉聰否認「警黑合謀」.
- RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
- RTHK (2019-07-22). 白衣人元朗站棍打乘客最少 36 人傷 警方未作拘捕行動. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1469648-20190722.htm>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
- Stand News (2019-07-22). 惡漢群毆市民 元朗區助理指揮官：未拘捕任何人 穿白衣不等於參與

- 打鬥 <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/惡漢群毆市民%E1%85%A0元朗區助理指揮官-未拘捕任何人%E1%85%A0穿白衣不等於參與打鬥/>
The Standard (2019-07-23). 'Stretched' police response defended.
News video footage of Apple Daily, HK01, RTHK, CNN, Now TV and Cable TV.
- 103 LIHKG (2019-07-22). 元朗警區指揮官(刑事)游乃強 宣佈鐵通木棍不屬武器. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1345693/page/1>
LIHKG (2019-07-23). 如法律無法對付元朗分區指揮官游乃強. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1356550/page/1?post=1>
LIHKG (2019-07-24). 笑話一則：游乃強. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1357928/page/1>
LIHKG (2019-07-29). (還原 7 分鐘消失的片段) 警方向 Now 新聞部施壓？Now 刪除的新聞片段，是游乃強與鄉黑祠堂密會. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1379785/page/1?post=1>
- 104 am730 (2019-07-23). 元朗黑夜白衫見人就打 警指揮：不見人持武器.
Apple Daily (2019-07-23). 白衣團夥徹夜村口集結.
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-23). 元朗西鐵站襲擊案 6 人被捕.
HK01 (2019-07-22). 【元朗黑夜】重組「無警時分」漫長一夜 白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時.
Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/354982/元朗黑夜-重組-無警時分-漫長一夜-白衣人施暴的有警 5 小時>
Ming Pao (2019-07-23). 元朗襲擊拘 6 人 警被質疑放白衣 報案 35 分鐘才支援 盧偉聰否認「警黑合謀」.
RTHK (2019-07-29). Hong Kong Connection: 721 Yuen Long Nightmare. Retrieved from <https://www.rthk.hk/tv/dtt31/programmeme/hkce/episode/597483>
RTHK (2019-07-22). 白衣人元朗站棍打乘客最少 36 人傷 警方未作拘捕行動. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1469648-20190722.htm>
Stand News (2019-07-22). 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序】機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開 白衣惡煞折返再逞兇. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件時序-機動部隊到場遭指罵後離開-白衣惡煞折返再逞兇/>
Stand News (2019-07-22). 惡漢群毆市民 元朗區助理指揮官：未拘捕任何人 穿白衣不等於參與打鬥 <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/惡漢群毆市民%E1%85%A0元朗區助理指揮官-未拘捕任何人%E1%85%A0穿白衣不等於參與打鬥/>
The Standard (2019-07-23). 'Stretched' police response defended.
News video footage of Apple Daily, HK01, RTHK, CNN and Cable TV.
- 105 LIHKG (2020-01-20). 721 半週年，元朗站仲未宣佈會提早關站，代表乜？ Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1830906/page/22>
- 106 Information Services Department Press Release (2019-07-22). “The Government strongly condemns violent acts” Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/22/P2019072200010.htm>
- 107 LIHKG (2019-07-22). 元朗警黑合作既間接證據. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1343037/page/1>
- 108 LIHKG (2019-07-22). 有圖：元朗黑警一早知情！警黑合作！ Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1343219/page/1>
- 109 LIHKG (2019-07-24). 十分重要！元朗警黑合作的祕密！背後話事人！ Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1357693/page/1>
- 110 Information Services Department Press Release (2019-07-22). “Police condemn violent acts” <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/22/P2019072200117.htm?fontSize=3>
- 111 【元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件】被質疑延誤到場 公共關係科總警司：警方介入或令衝突升溫 (2019-07-22). Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/society/元朗懷疑警黑勾結事件-被質疑延誤到場-公共關係科總警司-警方介入或令衝突升溫/>
- 112 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-07-22). 民主派議員聯署 強烈譴責元朗暴行及警方失職.
Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2196811/民主派議員聯署+強烈譴責元朗暴行及警方失職>
CitizensNews (2019-07-22). 白衣人元朗站毆打市民議員記者 警遲遲未到場 民主派批「令元朗淪為黑社會治港」. Retrieved from <https://www.hkcnews.com/article/22267/黑幫-元朗白衣人-何君堯-22272/白衣人元朗站毆打市民議員記者-警遲遲未到場-民主派批「令元朗淪為黑社會治港」>
Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 修例風波：元朗打人事件 議員批政府誠信徹底破產.
Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190722/bkn-20190722152832708-0722_00822_001.html
Headline Daily (2019-07-22). 【元朗暴力】24 名民主派議員聯署 強烈譴責警方失職. Retrieved

- from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1549498/即時-港聞-元朗暴力-24名民主派議員聯署-強烈譴責警方失職>
Bastille Post (2019-07-22). 元朗衝突市民遭亂打 民主派 24 名議員聯署譴責警方. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4762507-【元朗暴力】24名民主派議員聯署-強烈譴責警方失職>
- 113 Information Services Department Press Release (2019-07-22). “Transcript of remarks by CE at media session (with video)”
Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/22/P2019072200890.htm?fontSize= HK HKSAR> (2019-07-22). 政府強烈譴責暴力行為. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/22/P2019072200010.htm>
HKSAR (2019-07-22). 行政長官會見傳媒開場發言和答問內容(附短片). Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201907/22/P2019072200881.htm>
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-07-22). 【逃犯條例】政府強烈譴責暴力示威者 林鄭月娥：要向暴力說不. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2407334/【逃犯條例】政府強烈譴責暴力示威者 林鄭月娥：要向暴力說不>
Oriental Daily News (2019-07-22). 修例風波：政府強烈譴責衝擊中聯辦及元朗暴力事件. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190722/bkn-20190722141051042-0722_00822_001.html
- 114 Facebook (2019-07-22). 【拘捕·元朗區暴力事件】. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/videos/722380051515961/>
RTHK (2019-07-23). 元朗暴力事件警方拘捕 6 人涉非法集結. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1469860-20190723.htm>
Wen Wei Po (2019-07-23). 「白衣黑漢」肆虐 警搜元朗拘 6 人. Retrieved from <http://paper.wenweipo.com/2019/07/23/YO1907230008.htm>
HK01 (2019-07-23). 【元朗黑夜】白衣人西鐵站暴打市民 重案組拘最少六人涉非法集結. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/355019/元朗黑夜-白衣人西鐵站暴打市民-重案組拘最少六人涉非法集結>
Headline Daily (2019-07-23). 【元朗暴力】6 男子涉非法集結被捕 部分人有黑社會背景. Retrieved from <https://hd.stheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1550199/即時-港聞-元朗暴力-6男子涉非法集結被捕-部分人有黑社會背景>
- 115 LIHKG (2019-07-23). 如法律無法對付元朗分區指揮官游乃強. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1356550/page/1?post=1>
- 116 【警方呼籲與澄清】 (2019-07-24)
https://youtu.be/DZXT_gwt1yc
<https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/posts/2502282459859703>
<https://www.facebook.com/960526577368640/posts/2504727069615242/>
- 117 HK01 (2019-07-25). 【元朗襲擊】回應軍裝調頭走 警方：就算差人頂住槍都會界人打得好緊要. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/元朗襲擊-回應軍裝調頭走-警方-就算差人頂住槍都會界人打得好緊要/>
CitizensNews (2019-07-26). 【元朗恐襲】接報 40 分鐘後警員才到場 指揮官：「哦，39 分鐘」沒道歉. Retrieved from <https://www.hkcnews.com/article/22374/元朗打人-元朗白衣人-警察-22377/> 【元朗恐襲】接報 40 分鐘後警員才到場-指揮官：「哦，39 分鐘」沒道歉
【警方記者會 · 直播】 (2019-07-25)
https://youtu.be/h20YspTYJ_w
<https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/videos/514211222660278/>
- 118 LIHKG (2019-07-29). 警黑合作無間鐵證 元朗黑夜. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1382905/page/1>
- 119 HK01 (2019-08-06). 【警方記者會】否認元朗黑夜警黑合作 稱 28 分鐘整合 40 警員到場. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/360812/警方記者會-否認元朗黑夜警黑合作-稱 28 分鐘整合 40 警員到場>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-06). 【元朗暴力】謝振中指當晚耗 28 分鐘召集另一批 40 名警員到場. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1061402/即時-香港-元朗暴力-謝振中指當晚耗 28 分鐘召集另一批 40 名警員到場>
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-06). 【反修例】警方否認 7.21 元朗「警黑合作」指控 強調案件仍正調查不排除有其他檢控. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2420234/【反修例】>

警方否認 7.21 元朗「警黑合作」指控 強調案件仍正調查不排除有其他檢控
CitizensNews (2019-08-07). 利君雅再「爆 seed」 警方拒交代 7.21 元朗恐襲應變詳情、認 8.5 遲 4
小時處理北角打鬥. Retrieved from [https://www.hkcnews.com/article/22687/元朗白衣人-利君雅-警察
公共關係科-22687/利君雅再「爆 seed」-警方拒交代 721 元朗恐襲應變詳情、認 85 遲 4 小時處理北
角打鬥](https://www.hkcnews.com/article/22687/元朗白衣人-利君雅-警察公共關係科-22687/利君雅再「爆 seed」-警方拒交代 721 元朗恐襲應變詳情、認 85 遲 4 小時處理北角打鬥)
Now TV (2019-08-06). 警方記者會向兩名受傷及被捕記者致歉. Retrieved from
<https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=358196>

CHAPTER 11**INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 11 AUGUST 2019
KWAI FONG STATION AND TAI KOO STATION****Introduction**

11.1 This Chapter deals with an incident inside Kwai Fong Station on the Tsuen Wan Line on 11 August where a round of tear gas was fired and another incident inside Tai Koo Station on the Island Line where pepper balls were fired. These were two among the incidents flaring up in 15 locations across Hong Kong that day. The events aroused public concern over the Police firing of tear gas inside MTR station and targeting pepper ball launcher at close-range, attracting four Reportable Complaints (RCs) and five Notifiable Complaints (NCs) (see paragraphs 11.33-11.34 below for details). These complaints are investigated by CAPO and each RC will be monitored by the IPCC assigning observer(s) to attend interview(s) and observe the collection of evidence conducted by CAPO. The purpose of this Chapter is to enable the IPCC to inform itself of the facts of the incidents giving rise to these complaints and the context in which these incidents took place, so that the IPCC is in a better position to undertake its function under section 8(1)(a) of the IPCC Ordinance in monitoring and reviewing the investigations of the individual complaints by CAPO. At the same time, the opportunity is taken to make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police under section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance so that complaints from future Police operations may be prevented.

Public Order Events Leading to the Events on Sunday 11 August 2019

11.2 After the Yuen Long Incident on Sunday 21 July, protests arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill continued to escalate in scale, frequency, level of violence and number of protest locations.

11.3 On 26 July, about 15 000 protesters¹ (according to the organiser), dressed in black, staged a sit-in protest at the arrival hall of the Hong Kong International Airport (Airport). Some of them handed out leaflets to enlist arriving passengers' support. Protesters returned to occupy the Airport again on 9 August for another sit-in protest at the arrival hall to last until 11 August.

¹ Police estimate figure: 4 000 at peak.
RTHK (2019-07-26). 大會稱機場集會 1 萬 5 千人參與 警方稱高峰期有 4 千. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1470698-20190726.html>

11.4 On Saturday 27 July, despite Police refusal to issue a Letter of No Objection (LoNO), about 288 000 protesters² (according to the event organiser), some wearing helmets and protective gear, marched on the roads in Yuen Long dubbed “Reclaim Yuen Long”, and then blocked major roads in the district. When the Police turned up calling upon the protesters to disperse, they began attacking the Police with umbrellas, bricks, wooden shields and other objects. Violent protesters later surrounded Yuen Long Police Station, again throwing bricks and other objects, causing obstruction of the road outside the station and the suspension of Report Room services.

11.5 On the following day, there was another protest on Hong Kong Island when participants of an authorised public meeting at Chater Garden diverted to Causeway Bay and Western District, ending in violent clashes in Sheung Wan where the Police deployed tear gas for dispersal.³ Successive public protests then ensued. On Thursday 1 August, members from the financial sectors took to the streets in Central to demonstrate against the Fugitive Offenders Bill.⁴ The medical and healthcare profession held a rally at Edinburgh Place on 2 August and around ten thousand participants from the Civil Service also gathered at Chater Garden on the same day to demand an independent inquiry into recent incidents.⁵ On Saturday 3 August, protesters holding a banner with the words “Police have too much power” marched from Tai Kok Tsui to Mong Kok and Tsim Sha Tsui.⁶ On Sunday 4 August, protesters blocked roads in Tseung Kwan O, Kwun Tong, Mei Foo, Wong Tai Sin, Tin Shui Wai and Causeway Bay, all necessitating law enforcement action, resulting in clashes with the Police.⁷

² Police estimate figure: around 100 000 at peak. Stand News (2019-07-27). 【7.27 元朗】「遊元朗」撤離期間 警方連放催淚彈海綿彈 速龍小隊入西鐵站揮棍打人. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/7-27-元朗-遊元朗-撤離期間-警方連放催淚彈海綿彈-速龍小隊入西鐵站揮棍打人/>

³ Ming Pao (2019-07-28). 【遮打集會·不斷更新·短片】警方中環驅散示威者 示威者沿不同方向撤退 (23:53). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190728/s00001/1564298470146/> 【遮打集會-不斷更新-短片】警方中環驅散示威者-示威者沿不同方向撤退

⁴ RTHK (2019-08-01). 金融界「快閃」集會促獨立調查站滿遮打花園. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1471963-20190801.htm>

⁵ Ming Pao (2019-08-02). 【逃犯條例】逾千醫護集會 醫生嘆業界撕裂促設獨立調查 (19:31). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190802/s00001/1564745343401/> 【逃犯條例】逾千醫護集會-醫生嘆業界撕裂促設獨立調查

HK01 (2019-08-02). 【公務員集會】大會宣布 4 萬人冒雨出席 警方：最高峰 1.3 萬人參與.

Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/359454/公務員集會-大會宣布 4 萬人冒雨出席-警方-最高峰 1-3 萬人參與>

⁶ BBC (2019-08-03). 香港旺角遊行偏離線路 多處衝突警方發催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.bbc.com/zhongwen/trad/chinese-news-49219057>

⁷ The Initium (2019-08-04). 0804 將軍澳及港島西示威：入夜示威者包圍多區警署，在多處堵路. Retrieved from <https://theinitium.com/article/20190804-whatsnew-tseungkwano-hkislandwest-assembly/>

11.6 Following the siege of Yuen Long Police Station on 27 July, sieges and attacks of police stations, mostly near MTR stations, became commonplace. During the two weeks leading to Sunday 11 August 2019, at least 15 police stations had been attacked by protesters.

11.7 On 30 July, hundreds of protesters assembled outside Kwai Chung Police Station.⁸ Police officers used pepper spray and batons to disperse the crowd. One police station sergeant raised a shotgun loaded with bean bag rounds to protect himself and his colleagues from protesters.

11.8 For three consecutive days on 1, 2 and 3 August, protesters besieged Ma On Shan Police Station.⁹ Earlier on 1 August, protesters targeted Shatin Police Station.¹⁰

11.9 On 3 August, there were violent clashes between protesters and the Police in Wong Tai Sin, where violent protesters were seen hurling hard objects and umbrellas and discharging a fire extinguisher at police officers.¹¹ Violent protesters and some local residents besieged Wong Tai Sin Police Station and Disciplined Services Quarters next to it, attacking both with numerous miscellaneous objects. Police officers fired multiple rounds of tear gas for dispersal.

11.10 That night, Mong Kok Police Station and Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station were under siege by violent protesters throwing bricks and hard objects. Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station was in particular the target of violent protesters. They set fire at various locations in its surroundings, damaged several vehicles inside the station with bamboo sticks and hurled bricks and hard objects into the building. On 4 August, hundreds of violent protesters staged another stand-off outside Wong Tai Sin Police Station, with occasional attacks with bricks and miscellaneous objects.¹² Police officers responded with tear gas, rubber rounds (i.e. rubber baton rounds and rubber slugs) and react rounds in attempts at dispersal.

⁸ HK01 (2019-07-30). 【728 集會】示威者葵涌警署聲援變衝突 警員持長槍指向示威者. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/358160/728_集會-示威者葵涌警署聲援變衝突-警員持長槍指向示威者

⁹ Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-02). 【逃犯條例】示威者一度拉起馬鞍山警署捲閘 防暴警採驅散行動. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1058152/即時-香港-逃犯條例-示威者一度拉起馬鞍山警署捲閘-防暴警採驅散行動>

HK01 (2019-08-02). 【逃犯條例】馬鞍山警署遭示威者包圍 防暴警湧出馬路清場. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/359133/逃犯條例-馬鞍山警署遭示威者包圍-防暴警湧出馬路清場>

Apple Daily (2019-08-03). 【逆權運動】逾百市民再圍馬鞍山警署 速龍胡椒彈射街坊. Retrieved from <https://hk.appledaily.com/breaking/20190802/DABLP3IODR3RAIEUJS4LH5XZ4A/>

¹⁰ RTHK (2019-08-02). 過百人到沙田警署聲援疑被警方帶走人士 有人擲雜物. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1471993-20190802.htm>

¹¹ Commercial Radio Hong Kong (2019-08-04). 防暴警察午夜前黃大仙向聚集人士舉黑旗警告施放催淚煙. Retrieved from https://www.881903.com/Page/ZH-TW/newsdetail.aspx?ItemId=1148600&csid=261_341

¹² Now TV (2019-08-04). 黃大仙警署及紀律部隊宿舍爆警民衝突 警施放催淚彈驅散. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357846>

11.11 The Cross Harbour Tunnel at Hung Hom was also a target. In the late afternoon of 3 August, some protesters barricaded the toll booths at the entrance in Hung Hom, blocking the traffic into and out of the tunnel. On 3, 4, 5 and 10 August, protesters again placed various objects at the toll booths, paralysing the tunnel traffic temporarily.¹³

11.12 On Monday 5 August, the protesters escalated the scale of their action, while social media was awash with calls to launch a city-wide strike and uncooperative campaign.¹⁴ Protesters resorted to urban guerrilla tactics in multiple districts in Hong Kong Island, Kowloon and the New Territories, blocking roads at many busy traffic locations: suddenly cropping up and barricading the roads before vanishing very quickly. Violent protesters also moved on to a number of police stations including Kwai Chung Police Station, Shatin Police Station, Sham Shui Po Police Station and Tin Shui Wai Police Station, hurling hard objects, petrol bombs and setting fire outside the stations. That evening, some protesters had fights in North Point and Tsuen Wan with people dressed in white and holding wooden poles who, according to some media, were members of the Fujianese community.¹⁵ On this day, the Police discharged about a thousand rounds of tear gas, 170 rubber rounds and 11 super sock (bean bag) rounds in 14 districts – a record high up to 11 August.

11.13 On the night of 6 August, a few hundreds of protesters assembled outside Sham Shui Po Police Station, chanting “triad cops” and “triad society”, and some violent protesters again shining laser beams, hurling bricks and glass bottles at the station.¹⁶

11.14 On 7 August, hundreds of protesters gathered at Hong Kong Space Museum and shone their laser pointers on the egg-shaped dome of the museum in protest against the arrest of the Student Union President of Hong Kong Baptist University for Possession of Offensive

-
- ¹³ HK01 (2019-08-03). 【旺角遊行】示威者快閃紅隧 步行隧道屬違法 最高可判監 6 個月. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/359803/旺角遊行-示威者快閃紅隧-步行隧道屬違法-最高可判監 6 個月>
- Now TV (2019-08-04). 示威者銅鑼灣遊行至灣仔 堵塞紅隧港島出入口. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=357936>
- Now TV (2019-08-05). 示威者傍晚佔領紅隧九龍入口 阻塞來回路線. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=358047>
- Bastille Post (2019-08-10). 示威者指揮車輛免費過海 紅隧職員：會被扣薪金. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/4883285-【堵塞紅隧】示威者指揮車輛通過收費亭-紅隧職員>
- ¹⁴ Ming Pao (2019-08-06). 八五罷工 多區集會 示威變游擊. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/圖輯/photo3/album/s00014/1565084593516/八五罷工-多區集會-示威變游擊>
- ¹⁵ The Standard (2019-08-06) Attacks in North Point, Tsuen Wan. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news/section/11/210378/Attacks-in-North-Point,-Tsuen-Wan>
- ¹⁶ Hong Kong Free Press (2019-08-07). Angry protests and tear gas in Sham Shui Po after arrest of Hong Kong student leader for possessing laser pens. Retrieved from <https://hongkongfp.com/2019/08/07/angry-protests-tear-gas-sham-shui-po-arrest-hong-kong-student-leader-possessing-laser-pens/>

Weapons (POOW), i.e. “laser guns”, the day before.¹⁷

11.15 On 10 August, there were protests in Tai Po, Tai Wai, Sha Tin, Kwun Tong, Wong Tai Sin, Tsuen Wan, Tsim Sha Tsui, and other districts.¹⁸ On this day, protesters set barricades with railings and road signs, blocked a number of thoroughfares including the Kowloon entrances of the Cross Harbour Tunnel. Clashes occurred in at least seven districts with riot police officers firing tear gas in Tai Wai and Tsim Sha Tsui while some violent protesters threw petrol bombs and hurled miscellaneous objects and stones at police officers. Some violent protesters laid siege to Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station setting fire outside, shining laser beams, and blocking the station with miscellaneous objects. The Police used tear gas and rubber rounds for crowd dispersal.

11.16 In this atmosphere, the events of Sunday 11 August unfolded. A Chronology of the protests of this day appears as Annex to this Chapter.

General Picture of the Protests on 11 August 2019

11.17 For 11 August, three large-scale public meetings against the Fugitive Offenders Bill were planned by the protesters. The first was a public meeting at Victoria Park to be followed by a Hong Kong Island East procession from Victoria Park to Java Road Playground in North Point for a public meeting there. The second was a public meeting at Maple Street Playground in Sham Shui Po to be followed by a procession from Maple Street Playground to Sham Shui Po Sports Ground for a public meeting there. The first two were notified to the Police for LoNO. The third, a mass rally at the Airport, had not been notified to the Police for LoNO.

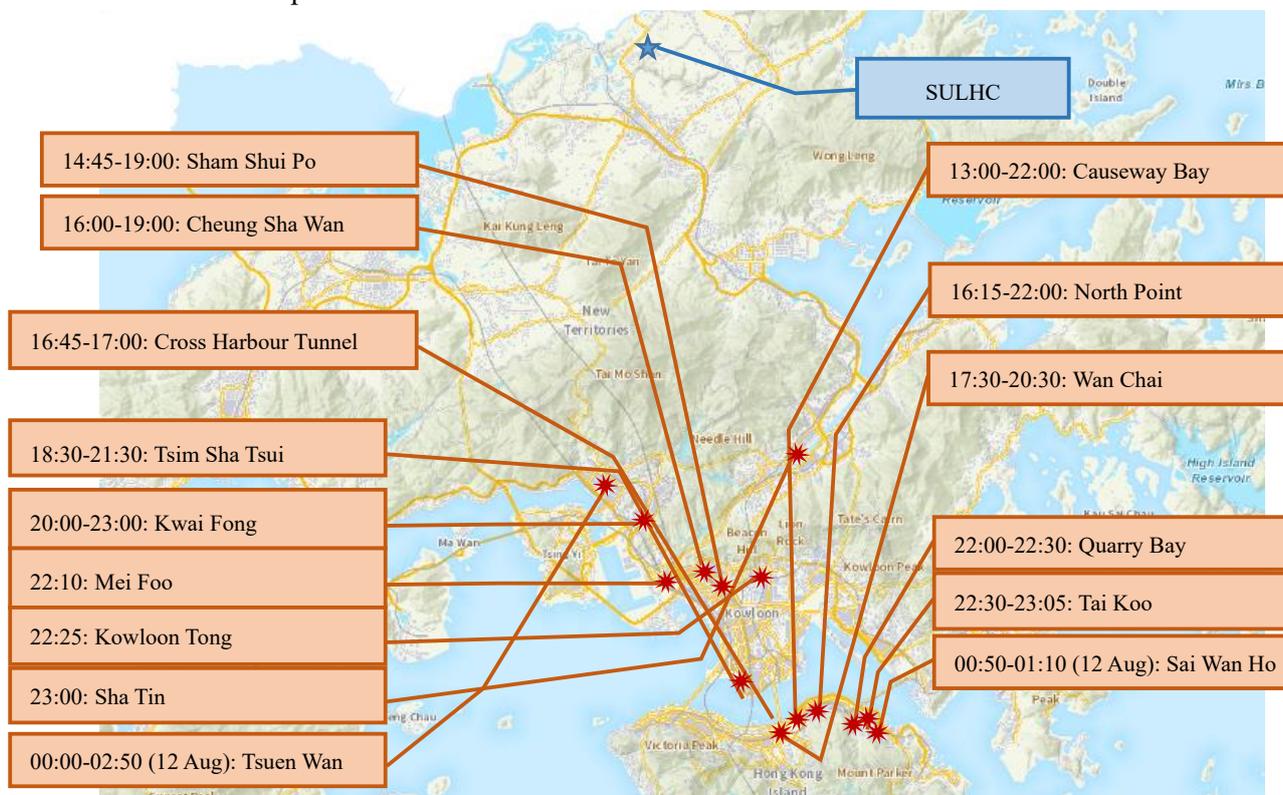
11.18 The Police had issued a LoNO only for the public meeting in Victoria Park, but for safety concern, had refused the other public meetings and processions in Sham Shui Po and Hong Kong Island East. According to the Police, beginning in August 2019, messages had appeared on the internet inciting people to adopt urban guerrilla tactics for extensive damage and blockage of thoroughfares. Calls for escalation of protest action and violence also continued to circulate on the internet. In respect of the Victoria Park public meeting and subsequent procession, the Police anticipated that at some stage of the procession, possibly near the end, it would degenerate into road blockages and aggressive action against officers on duty. The Police also anticipated protesters to proceed with the other public meetings and processions on 11 August despite Police objection. They further expected violent protesters would

¹⁷ Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-08). 千人響應號召 太空館外用雷射筆觀星. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/daily/article/detail/2044955/日報-港聞-千人響應號召-太空館外用雷射筆觀星>

¹⁸ Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例】示威者多區快閃堵路 稱要消耗警力免被捕 (01:23). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190811/s00001/1565457389190/【逃犯條例】示威者多區快閃堵路-稱要消耗警力免被捕>

escalate action to paralyse city traffic and attack police officers with highly offensive weapons and great violence. In the light of these potential developments, the Police deployed some 3 850 officers for contingencies across various districts, in addition to 250 officers for safeguarding the integrity of Central Government Complex and Legislative Council Complex and 128 officers for handling Police Headquarters (PHQ) duties.

11.19 On 11 August, as anticipated by the Police, protests arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill took place in multiple locations (see Map 11-1). The public meeting in Victoria Park was held as scheduled. At around 16:00, protesters branched out from Victoria Park, while some other protesters were seen moving from Hung Hom Station to barricade the toll booths of the Cross Harbour Tunnel to block the traffic there. Another group of protesters marched to Wan Chai. Some of them sprayed graffiti on the base of the Golden Bauhinia sculpture, while others blocked the roads outside PHQ and set different objects on fire. From 17:00 till after midnight, protesters were seen adopting urban guerrilla tactics, using the MTR to mobilise themselves swiftly to occupy roads at different locations in the vicinity and moving on to other spots. On Hong Kong Island, they occupied roads in North Point, Wan Chai, Causeway Bay, Quarry Bay, Tai Koo and Sai Wan Ho. Clashes broke out when the Police took action for dispersal.



Map 11-1: Protests in multiple locations on 11 August
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

11.20 In Kowloon, the procession in Sham Shui Po started at about 15:20 with about 1 000 participants. Reaching Cheung Sha Wan, protesters started to occupy roads. From 16:00 to after midnight, like those on Hong Kong Island, groups of protesters reportedly travelled by MTR to different districts to block roads including Tsim Sha Tsui, Mei Foo, Kowloon Tong, Kwai Fong, and Sha Tin. They staged protests outside Cheung Sha Wan Police Station, Sham Shui Po Police Station, Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station, Kwai Chung Police Station and Shatin Police Station. Among these, Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station was under the most serious attack from bricks, hard objects, and petrol bombs with violent protesters using gun-like equipment.

11.21 In this context, the incidents at Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations took place.

11.22 On 11 August, the Police fired a total of 361 rounds of tear gas, 27 rubber rounds and 14 super sock (bean bag) rounds, along with the use of batons, OC foam and pepper ball launcher. Police officers and police stations were attacked by protesters with a miscellany of offensive weapons, including bricks, sling shots firing steel ball bearings, petrol bombs and fire extinguishers. Multiple roads were blocked with barricades of various kinds. A total of 18 police officers were injured on 11 August, including one with serious burns on his legs. The Hospital Authority at various hospitals treated a total of 71 persons related to the incidents on 11 August.

11.23 A total of 117 persons were arrested during police operations in response to protests at multiple locations across the territory on 11 August and 53 of them were taken directly to San Uk Ling Holding Centre (SULHC).¹⁹ The detention arrangements at SULHC will be discussed at Chapter 14.

11.24 As at 29 February 2020, the number of arrest persons have climbed to 124 persons (94 male and 30 female) in connection with the incidents on 11 August for various offences, including “Unlawful Assembly”, “POOW”, “Taking Part in a Riot”, “Assault on Police Officer”, “Failing to Produce Proof of Identity/Failing to Carry HKID Card”, “Possession of Instruments Fit for Unlawful Purpose”, “Possession of Firearms and/or Ammunitions without Licence” and “Unlawful Public Meeting and Processions”. Among them, 33 persons had been charged in Court pending trial, 79 were still under police investigation and 12 had been released.

11.25 There is a civil claim against the Police for physical and psychological damage arising from Police action at the Kwai Fong Station on 11 August. As at 29 February 2020, details of the civil claim and its progress were not yet available to the IPCC.

¹⁹ SULHC was located in Man Kam To, near the Hong Kong border with the Mainland. There were spells of allegations in the social media on arrestees being tortured or raped by police officers, delayed from receiving medical treatment and legal service while at the Centre after the arrests on 11 August.

Sources of Information

11.26 For the purpose of its study of the events of 11 August, the IPCC has scrutinised the following materials:

- (a) Documents provided by the Police in respect of police deployment and operation, prior intelligence received, use of police weapons, casualties and arrests on the incident day;
- (b) Footage recorded by the Police pertaining to the operations on 11 August. A total of 14 video clips of 2 hours 30 minutes long were viewed;
- (c) News reports and news footage produced by different television companies, newspapers and media outlets. A total of 213 news articles and 102 video clips of 101 hours long were examined;²⁰
- (d) Photos and footage provided by the public in response to IPCC's appeal;
- (e) MTR Corporation Limited (MTRC) CCTV footage, damage reports and audio recordings. A total of 39 CCTV clips of around 77 hours, damage reports of three MTR stations and 18 audio recordings of about eight minutes were examined; and
- (f) Press statements from the websites of the Information Services Department (*news.gov.hk* and *isd.gov.hk*), the Police (*police.gov.hk*) and MTRC (*www.mtr.com.hk*).

The Events

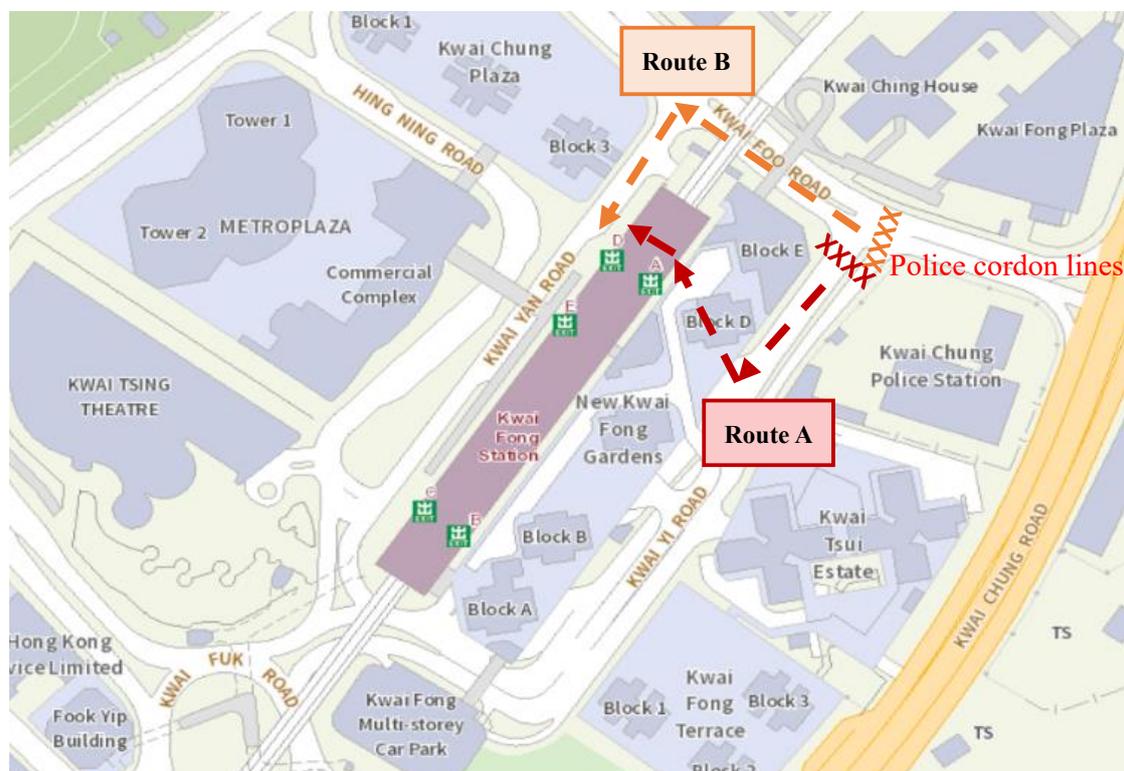
11.27 The events on 11 August leading to Police use of force in Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations are analysed in two parts, namely:

- (I) Police firing of tear gas inside Kwai Fong Station; and
- (II) Police use of force and shooting of pepper balls at close-range at protesters inside Tai Koo Station.

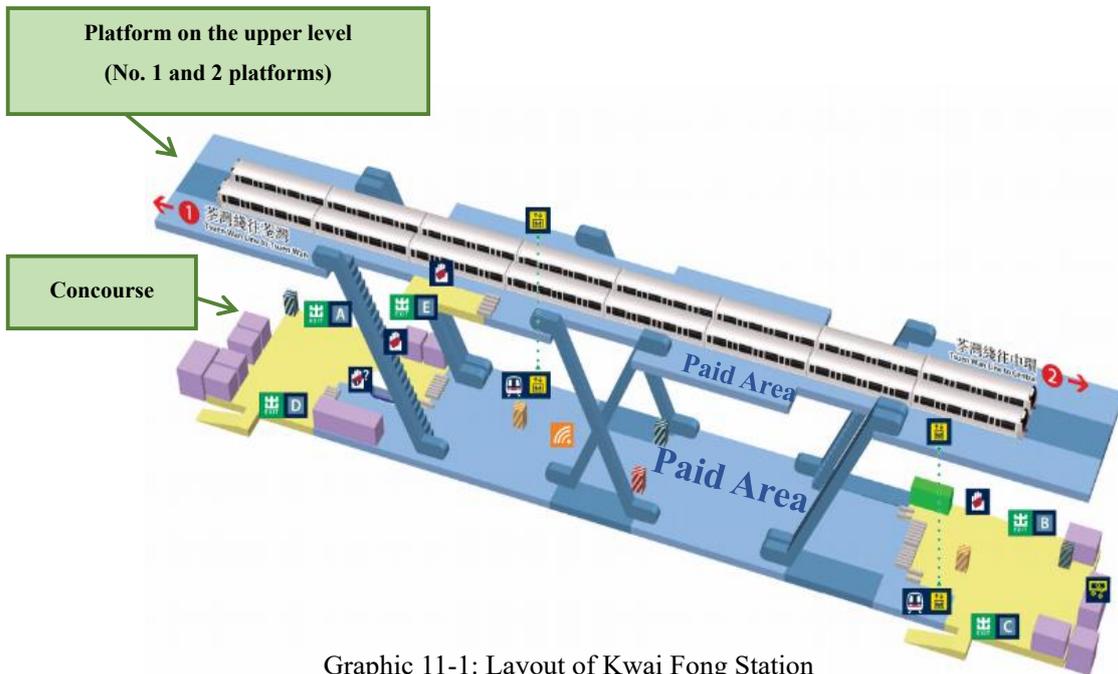
²⁰ This figure includes print media, while the IPCC has also viewed mainstream online media/sources such as HK01, Stand News, Hong Kong Free Press, and CitizenNews.

Part I – Police Firing of Tear Gas inside Kwai Fong Station*Kwai Fong Station*

- Kwai Fong Station, situated in Kwai Tsing District, is surrounded by residential blocks, housing estates and shopping centres (see Graphic 11-1 and Map 11-2). Unlike most other MTR stations which are underground, it is an elevated MTR station on the Tsuen Wan Line with two levels. On the ground level is the main concourse with four exits, Exits A to D respectively at the four corners of the MTR station. Passengers move into the paid area of concourse after the ticket gates. From there, nine escalators connect passengers to the platforms on the upper level on both sides of the MTR tracks. The entire upper level, including the MTR tracks, is covered with a roof but is open at both ends for the trains to enter and leave the MTR station on open tracks. Exit E, on one side of the upper platform, is connected to Metroplaza. In the vicinity of Kwai Fong Station are Kwai Foo Road, Kwai Yan Road and Kwai Yi Road. Kwai Chung Police Station, at the junction of Kwai Chung Road and Kwai Foo Road, is about 300 metres from Kwai Fong Station.



Map 11-2: Kwai Fong Station
(Source of base map: Lands Department)



Graphic 11-1: Layout of Kwai Fong Station
(Source of base graphic: MTRC)

Outside Kwai Chung Police Station in Vicinity of Kwai Fong Station

- Around 20:00, some protesters blocked roads outside Kwai Chung Police Station (source: media reports).
- Around 20:35, while the protesters continued to move barricades to block roads outside Kwai Chung Police Station (source: media report), about 200 protesters were seen heading to Kwai Chung Police Station from Kwai Fong Station (source: HKPF).
- Around 20:45, the Police formed a cordon line outside Kwai Chung Police Station at the junction of Kwai Yi Road and Kwai Foo Road (source: HKPF). Protesters then began to retreat in the direction of Kwai Fong Station (source: live video footage).
- Around 20:50, about 200 protesters were present in the vicinity of Kwai Fong Station, some of them inside the MTR station while some others near Kwai Chung Plaza and Metroplaza. Another group of police officers were seen heading to Kwai Fong Station from Kwai Chung Police Station (see Route A of Map 11-2). When these police officers arrived outside Kwai Fong Station Exit A, several dozens of protesters, mostly dressed in black with helmets and respirators, were seen near the paid area inside Kwai Fong Station, scattered in front of and behind the ticket gates, yelling, flashing laser beams and throwing water bottles at the police officers (source: live video footage).

- Around 20:51, there was station announcement that Kwai Fong Station would be closed due to emergency (source: live video footage) and evacuation of the station was activated at around 20:55 for the safety of passengers and station staff (source: media report and MTRC).²¹
- Around 20:53, protesters near the ticket gates continued to flash laser beams, throw objects, and started to spurt water and discharge fire extinguisher towards police officers outside Exit A. Several protesters outside Exit D were seen using a fire hose to spurt water towards the officers at Exit A (see Image 11-1) (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 11-1: Protesters used a fire hose to spurt water towards the officers
(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

- Around 20:55, the police officers at Exit A walked over to the unpaid area in the concourse to Exit D on the other side without taking action against the protesters who remained inside the paid area (see Image 11-2). At this point, the police officers stayed at their positions outside Exit D and a stand-off ensued. Some people outside Metroplaza and on the footbridge connecting the shopping centres shone light and laser beams at the police officers who then raised black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” in the direction of Kwai Chung Plaza and Metroplaza (source: live video footage).

²¹ It was until around 22:39 that the MTRC announced the temporary closure of Kwai Fong Station upon evacuation of passengers (source: media reports).

CHAPTER 11 • INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 11 AUGUST 2019
KWAI FONG STATION AND TAI KOO STATION

Image 11-2: Protesters stayed inside the paid area of Kwai Fong Station
(Image source: Sing Tao Daily)

- Around 20:57, police officers were seen leaving Kwai Fong Station and heading towards Kwai Chung Police Station. Several dozens of protesters standing near the front door of Metroplaza were seen walking to the direction of Kwai Fong Station Exit D (source: live video footage).
- Around 20:59, some protesters shone blue and green laser beams at the police officers at the cordon line at the junction of Kwai Yi Road and Kwai Foo Road. Black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” was displayed outside Kwai Chung Police Station (source: HKPF and live video footage).
- Around 21:02, Police reinforcement arrived at the cordon line outside Kwai Chung Police Station. The police officers then started to advance along Kwai Foo Road in the direction of Kwai Fong Station and fired tear gas to disperse protesters after warning them (see Route B of Map 11-2) (source: HKPF and live video footage).
- Around 21:03, MTRC announced that Tsuen Wan Line trains in both directions would not stop at Kwai Fong Station, but special trains were arranged to pick up passengers at the station (source: media report).
- Around 21:05, the police officers advancing along Kwai Foo Road reached Kwai Yan Road outside Kwai Fong Station Exit D (source: media report and live video footage).

Firing of Tear Gas inside Kwai Fong Station

- Around 21:06, protesters were seen splashing water and discharging fire extinguishers from the paid area near Exit D (source: live video footage). According to the Police, sling shots firing steel ball bearings were also used to attack the police officers (source: HKPF). At this juncture, some police officers entered Exit D and one of them fired one round of tear gas in the direction of the paid area near Exit D and stepped out from the entrance (see Image 11-3 and Graphic 11-2). This had the effect of dispersing some of the protesters, but others stayed and continued to use fire hoses to spurt water from behind the ticket gates. The police officers then resumed their action, re-entering the station, firing two rubber baton rounds at the protesters in the paid area, and dispersing some of them (source: media reports and live video footage).



Image 11-3: Police fired one round of tear gas inside Kwai Fong Station
(Image source: RTHK)



Graphic 11-2: Illustration of Police firing of tear gas inside Kwai Fong Station
 (Source of base graphic: MTRC)

- Around 21:09, protesters dashed up to the upper platform of the MTR station, escaping and dispersing into Metroplaza at Exit E from the upper platform. Some protesters left the scene by trains from the two platforms (see Graphic 11-3). Police officers did not give chase and retreated from Exit D where they remained on guard until around 21:12 (source: media reports and live video footage).



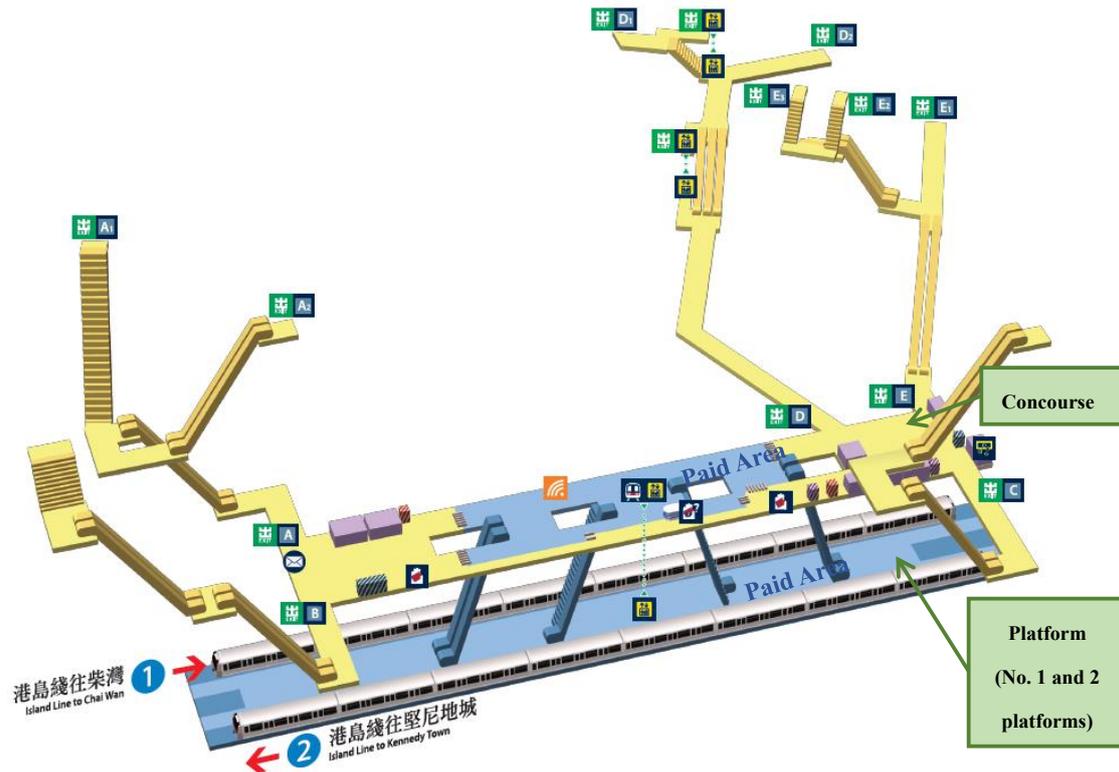
Graphic 11-3: Illustration of the escape routes of protesters
 (Source of base graphic: MTRC)

After Tear Gas Was First Used inside Kwai Fong Station

- Around 21:12, about 20 people were present on the footbridge connecting Metroplaza and Kwai Chung Plaza, some of whom pointed laser beams at the police officers outside Kwai Fong Station Exit D. The police officers outside Exit D left the scene by police vehicles (source: live video footage). According to the Police, around 21:16, a platoon of officers was going to reform with two platoons of officers there to carry out high profile patrol in Kwai Fong (Source: HKPF).
- Around 21:50, protesters gathered again outside Kwai Chung Police Station and shone laser beams at the station. Police raised black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” from inside the police station (source: HKPF, media report and live video footage).
- Around 21:54, fireworks were seen discharging near Kwai Chung Police Station (source: HKPF, media report and live video footage).
- Around 22:00, Police fired tear gas near Kwai Chung Police Station and Kwai Fong Station to disperse the protesters (source: media report and live video footage).
- Around 22:35, protesters shone blue and green laser beams to attack officers defending Kwai Chung Police Station (source: HKPF and live video footage).
- Around 22:40, protesters gathering outside Kwai Fong Station blocked roads with rubbish bins and foam boxes (source: live video footage).
- Around 22:55, according to the Police, Kwai Fong Station would resume the MTR service (source: HKPF).
- Around 23:00, protesters again shone laser beams at Kwai Chung Police Station. After giving warnings to the protesters, the Police conducted dispersal action along Kwai Foo Road outside Kwai Chung Police Station and fired tear gas (source: live video footage).

Part II – Police Use of Force and Shooting of Pepper Balls at Close-range at Protesters inside Tai Koo Station

Tai Koo Station

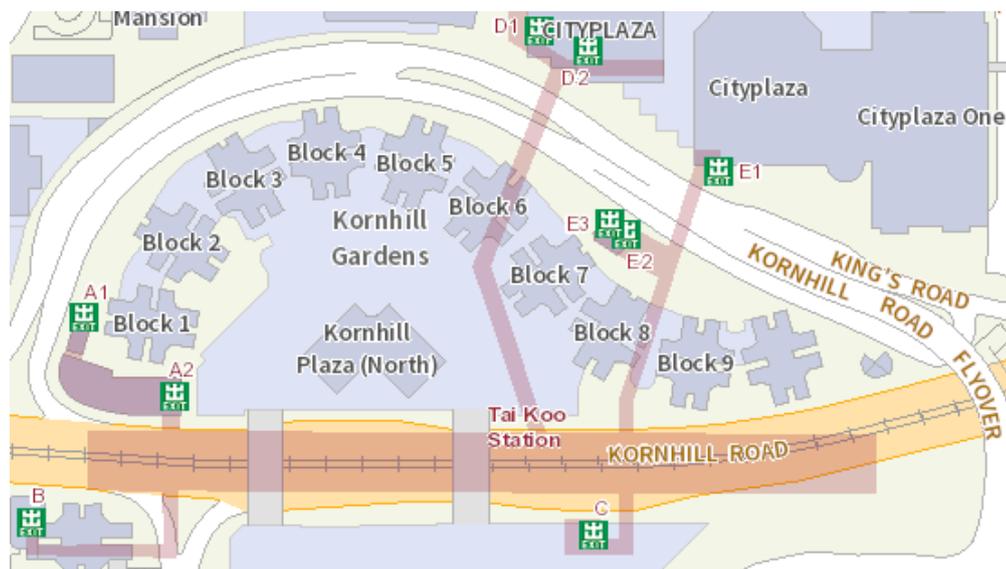


Graphic 11-4: Layout of Tai Koo Station

(Source of base graphic: MTRC)

- Tai Koo Station is situated in Kornhill and Taikoo Shing. Unlike Kwai Fong Station, Tai Koo Station is an underground MTR station with two levels. The main concourse is on the first level and the train platforms on the second level underground. The MTR station has nine exits, all at ground level (see Graphic 11-4 and Map 11-3).

CHAPTER 11 • INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 11 AUGUST 2019
 KWAI FONG STATION AND TAI KOO STATION



Map 11-3: Tai Koo Station
 (Source of base map: Lands Department)

- Around 22:30, Police officers took action to disperse protesters who had occupied King's Road near Quarry Bay Station. Protesters on King's Road were seen fleeing in the direction of Tai Koo Station while those behind the ticket gates of Quarry Bay Station were reported to have taken trains to Tai Koo Station (source: media reports and live video footage).
- Around 22:33, according to the Police, about 100 protesters alighted from the train at Tai Koo Station (source: HKPF).
- Around 22:38, 300 protesters in protective gear came out from Exit C of Tai Koo Station and blocked Kornhill Road. A police vehicle passing by was attacked by those protesters with hard objects and sling shots (source: HKPF).
- Around 22:44, about 200 protesters appeared at the westbound lane of Kornhill Road near Exit C of Tai Koo Station. At this juncture, two police vehicles arrived. The protesters on Kornhill Road turned around and rushed towards Exit C of Tai Koo Station (source: live video footage). According to the Police, the officers alighted from the police vehicles to pursue the violent protesters, who immediately fled towards Exit C and threw smoke bombs to evade (source: HKPF). White smoke was seen in the pedestrian area outside Exit C of Tai Koo Station (see Image 11-4). Some news reports stated that the white smoke was from tear gas fired by the Police (source: live video footage and media reports). According to the Police, they did not fire any tear gas (source: HKPF).



Image 11-4: White smoke was seen outside Tai Koo Station when police officers charged in
(Image source: Now TV)

- Around 22:45, police officers chased after protesters and entered Tai Koo Station from Exit C (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).
- At Exit C, there are two escalators, one going down to and the other one coming up from the concourse of Tai Koo Station. There is video footage which captured the incident lasting two to three minutes starting from 22:45 when some ten police officers subdued a number of protesters in the area, some right before reaching the two escalators and others coming down the two escalators (see Graphic 11-5). Both escalators came to a halt at the time of the incident (source: HKPF, media reports and live video footage).



Graphic 11-5: Illustration of Police chasing protesters inside Tai Koo Station
(Source of base graphic: MTRC)

- At that time, more than 50 people, most of them wearing helmets, some wearing a respirator or a goggle, and some carrying backpacks and/or umbrellas, tried to get to the escalators to go down to the concourse. About ten police officers chased after them. Some persons carrying cameras also followed behind. Many people were stuck at the spot before reaching the escalators. The police officers tried to capture those people at the rear. Some of the police officers used their batons to subdue a few of them (source: media reports and live video footage).
- A police officer holding a pepper ball launcher once grabbed a male who was wearing a helmet. That male dashed forward into the crowd swarming to reach the escalators. The police officer moved back two to three steps and fired pepper balls from a distance of approximately one to two metres at shoulder level at the escaping crowd. A number of pepper balls seemed to have hit the helmet of one of the people at scene (source: media reports).
- There were struggles between the protesters and the police officers using batons to subdue them (see Images 11-5 and 11-6). During the process, one protester was seen refusing to let go his grip on the handrail of the escalator before he was finally subdued by two to three officers with batons. Some of the police officers chased down the escalators. In the struggle on the escalators, a police officer and some protesters tumbled down (source: live video footage).



Image 11-5: Police chased after protesters on the escalator
(Image source: Now TV)



Image 11-6: Police subdued protesters with batons along the escalator
(Image source: Now TV)

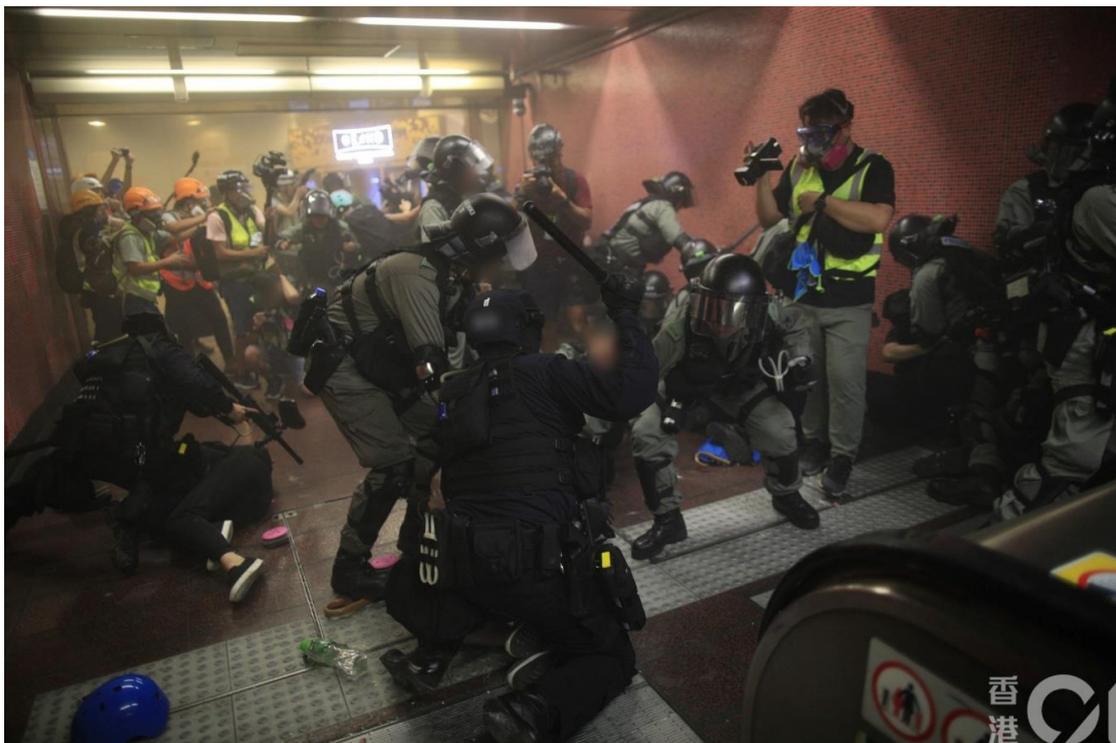


Image 11-7: Protesters were arrested at Exit C of Tai Koo Station
(Image source: HK01)

- According to the Police, 19 persons were arrested at Tai Koo Station (see Image 11-7). Around 23:05, the arrested persons were taken to the police vehicles in the vicinity (source: HKPF and live video footage).
- At a media briefing on 19 August, a Police spokesman said that their initial review revealed that pepper ball projectiles were shot at one to two metres from the targets in Tai Koo Station, which is a safe distance in line with the relevant manufacturer's safety guidelines (source: media reports).²²

Complaints against Police

11.28 The two events above gave rise to public concern about Police use of tear gas inside MTR station and pepper balls at close-range and at shoulder level. This was mainly from media comments and a number of non-governmental organisations.

11.29 After the incident, Civil Rights Observer and Physicians for Human Rights commented that the use of tear gas in a train station “*violated the safety guidelines by the*

²² HKPF (2019-08-19). Live footage of Police media briefing. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/videos/vb.960526577368640/371436143529541/>

supplier”, as “tear gas can only be used in outdoor area or spaces with good ventilation”.²³

11.30 On 12 August, the Director of Amnesty International Hong Kong commented that “pepper ball projectiles were fired within a short range inside a train station ..., sometimes aiming at [the targets’] heads and upper bodies”, and “[a]ny heavy-handed policing approach will only increase tension and provoke hostility, leading to the overall escalation of the situation”.²⁴ There was a view from Civil Rights Observer that the irritant effect of pepper balls could temporarily affect the targets’ eyesight who were moving on the escalators, and that could lead to risks of people falling down the escalators and causing a stampede.²⁵

11.31 MTRC Staff Union criticised the Police use of tear gas inside Kwai Fong Station, without regard to the safety of MTR staff and commuters at the MTR station.²⁶

11.32 Members of the public, in particular residents in the Kwai Fong neighbourhood, also expressed concern about health hazard of tear gas.

11.33 As at 29 February 2020, Police action at various locations on 11 August gave rise to 12 RCs and 22 NCs, of which four RCs and five NCs concern what occurred at Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations. All four RCs are related to Police use of tear gas in Kwai Fong on 11 August. Among them, one RC was lodged by a complainant travelling at Kwai Fong Station alleging Police improper use of tear gas inside the station, two RCs were lodged by residents in Kwai Fong complaining of Police improper use of tear gas near Kwai Fong Station in a

²³ Civil Rights Observer (2019-08-11). 室內使用催淚彈可致命 完全違反供應商的安全指引. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/hongkongcro/photos/a.1559419977629436/2376549622583130>
SCMP (2019-08-12). Tear gas fired in Kwai Fong station: Hong Kong police told by MTR Corporation to think of public safety after unprecedented indoor deployment during protest. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3022367/tear-gas-fired-kwai-fong-station-hong-kong-police-told-mtr>

Post Magazine (2019-08-16). The truth about tear gas: how Hong Kong police violated all guidelines for the ‘non-lethal weapon’. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/magazines/post-magazine/long-reads/article/3022942/truth-about-tear-gas-how-hong-kong-police>

²⁴ Amnesty International (2019-08-12). Hong Kong: Police should exercise restraint to avoid escalating violence. Retrieved from <https://www.amnesty.org/en/latest/news/2019/08/hong-kong-police-should-exercise-restraint-avoid-escalating-violence/>

²⁵ RTHK (2019-08-12). 民權觀察形容警員近距離向示威者開槍是將人當活靶發洩. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474112-20190812.htm?sid=O7i114>

HK01 (2019-08-12). 【811 衝突】民權監察：警港鐵站內放催淚彈具致命風險. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362628/811_衝突-民權監察王浩賢-警港鐵站內放催淚彈具致命風險
Hong Kong Free Press (2019-08-12). Hong Kong police shoot projectiles at close range in Tai Koo, as protester suffers ruptured eye in TST. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/08/12/hong-kong-police-shoot-projectiles-close-range-tai-koo-protester-suffers-ruptured-eye-tst/>

²⁶ SCMP (2019-08-12). Police defend firing tear gas and pepper balls in Hong Kong MTR stations during clashes with protesters, despite condemnation by residents and rail unions. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3022506/police-defend-operations-hong-kong-mtr-stations-where>

residential area and amidst the residential area in Kwai Fong respectively, and one RC was lodged by a resident in Kwai Fong complaining about officers' impoliteness and improper manner, and failure to give warning before using tear gas.

11.34 Among the 22 NCs, there are four concerning Police use of tear gas inside or in the vicinity of Kwai Fong Station. There is only one NC concerning Police use of tear gas at Tai Koo Station to disperse the protesters going down the escalator.

Police Response

11.35 In response to the events of this day, the Police has made various observations to the IPCC, as set out below:

Firing of Tear Gas in Kwai Fong Station

11.36 Around 20:35, about 200 protesters exited from Kwai Fong Station and proceeded to Kwai Chung Police Station. They gathered outside Kwai Chung Police Station and set up barricades on the road, paralysing the traffic. The number of violent protesters near Kwai Chung Police Station and Kwai Fong Station grew, and they intermittently used "laser guns" to attack police officers at cordon line.

11.37 Around 21:02, police officers conducted sweeping with the use of tear gas along Kwai Yi Road after displaying dispersal warning banners without compliance. The violent protesters pulled back and gathered at Kwai Fong Station where they confronted Police again by discharging sling shots and suspected smoke bombs, hurling fire extinguishers which could explode upon excessive pressure on the compressed gas, and using fire hoses to spray water against police officers. The officers discharged one tear gas round and two rubber baton rounds against the violent protesters.

11.38 The discharge of one tear gas round and two rubber baton rounds against the violent protesters were considered reasonable and justified to create a safe distance and prevent the situation from worsening. The use of force by the Police immediately ceased after the purpose of dispersing the violent protesters had been achieved.

11.39 Despite warnings given, the violent protesters did not disperse but continued their unprovoked attacks, the police officers therefore had to use minimum force necessary to create a safe distance and prevent the situation from worsening.

11.40 To maintain a safe distance with the violent protesters and to avoid close-range combat with the violent protesters, which would inevitably cause more severe injuries to both

parties and possibly other innocent people, such as passers-by and press members. The Police found it necessary to use the minimum force, i.e. tear gas, for dispersal.

11.41 Kwai Fong Station is in fact a semi-open structure with the concourse at the ground floor and the train platform at the upper floor. Such semi-open structure has sufficient ventilation for the tear gas to be blown away reasonably quickly.

11.42 Regarding the use of tear gas in semi-enclosed area, there is no specific provision in Police guidelines.

Shooting Pepper Balls at Close-range and Use of Force in Tai Koo Station

11.43 Around 22:38, some 300 protesters in protective gear came out from Tai Koo Exit C and blocked Kornhill Road. A police convoy passed by and was attacked by the violent protesters with hard objects and sling shots. The officers alighted from the police vehicles to pursue the protesters, who immediately fled towards the entrance of Exit C and threw smoke bombs to evade the Police. Having encountered the resistance and violence from the protesters, the officers used appropriate force to control and effect arrest, including the use of pepper ball launcher. As the protesters ran down the escalator and escaped into the MTR station, the officers arrested a total of 19 protesters at the scene with three “laser guns”, one sling shot with 90 metal pellets (i.e. steel ball bearings). Plenty of protective gear, such as helmets, respirators, masks, goggles, limb guards, gloves were seized at the scene.

11.44 Some units in other law enforcement agencies in Hong Kong, namely the Immigration Department and Correctional Services Department, are also equipped with pepper ball launcher for use in a confined environment. This is a piece of equipment designed to be used in close proximity.

11.45 At the material time, a police convoy passing by Tai Koo Station was proactively attacked by violent protesters with hard objects and sling shots without any provocation. When police officers alighted from the police vehicles to pursue the violent protesters, they fled towards the entrance of Exit C and threw smoke bombs to evade, emitting the smoke outside the Exit C of Tai Koo Station as shown in some pictures and videos of the press. Encountered with violent and unprovoked attacks by protesters, police officers had to use minimum force necessary to control and arrest offenders, including those inside the MTR station.

IPCC Observations

11.46 IPCC notes that by 11 August, many public order events (POEs) involved clashes between the Police and the protesters. In late July, the protesters escalated their level of violence in the protests. Umbrellas, wooden shields, helmet, tear gas masks and other self-made weapons were frequently used. Hurling bricks, other hard objects and petrol bombs at police officers was seen in clashes. On 3 August, some protesters aggressively besieged and violently attacked a number of police officers in Wong Tai Sin, when these officers tried to board a police vehicle. These violent protesters discharged a fire extinguisher at the officers, attacked them with umbrellas and other objects and threw hard objects at them, preventing them to leave the spot. Afterwards, the protesters besieged Wong Tai Sin Police Station and the adjacent Disciplined Services Quarters.

11.47 The protesters not only escalated their use of violence and attacked police stations and other places, they also extended the scale and frequency of protests. On 4 August, they blocked roads in Tseung Kwan O, Kwun Tong, Mei Foo, Wong Tai Sin, Tin Shui Wai and Causeway Bay. On 5 August, the protesters further launched a city-wide strike and uncooperative campaign, resorting to urban guerrilla tactics to block roads at busy traffic locations. Police stations in various districts (including Sham Shui Po, Kwun Tong, Tin Shui Wai, Tuen Mun, Tai Po, Sha Tin, Tsuen Wan, Tseung Kwan O, North Point) were also besieged and attacked. Police stations accessible by MTR were targets of frequent attack by protesters. On this single day, the Police responded with about a thousand rounds of tear gas and arrested 165 protesters. Beginning in late July and early August, there were violent protests almost every day or night. It was in this context that the two incidents at Kwai Fong Station and Tai Koo Station took place.

11.48 On 11 August, protesters staged another series of territory-wide protests at multiple locations along different MTR lines, again using urban guerrilla tactics. They blocked roads at different busy traffic locations and staged protests outside various police stations. They hurled bricks and petrol bombs at police officers and set fires at various spots. On that day, the Police arrested 117 persons and fired 361 rounds of tear gas.

Use of Tear Gas inside Kwai Fong Station

11.49 On 11 August, Kwai Chung Police Station was a target. It was during dispersal action that police officers fired one round of tear gas and two rubber baton rounds at the protesters in Kwai Fong Station. In this regard, the IPCC has the following observations:

- (a) On 13 August, the Office of the United Nations High Commissioner for Human Rights gave its view on the POEs in Hong Kong, noting “*credible evidence of*

*employing less-lethal weapons such as tear gas in ways that are prohibited by international norms and standards. For example, officials can be seen firing tear gas canisters into crowded, enclosed areas and directly at individual protesters on multiple occasions, creating a considerable risk of death or serious injury”.*²⁷ The issue is whether the firing of tear gas inside Kwai Fong Station was necessary and proper under the circumstances.

- (b) The IPCC notes that protesters inside the MTR station spurted water from the fire hose and discharged fire extinguishers in the direction of police officers. According to the Police, they even discharged sling shots and hurled fire extinguishers at the police officers. The police officers fired one round of tear gas and two rubber baton rounds in this direction. The Police explained that the use of tear gas and rubber baton rounds was to create a safe distance and to disperse the protesters. Subsequently, most of them did move up the escalators and leave the scene through Exit E on the upper platform, which was partially open-air. IPCC observes that the use of the tear gas did create a distance and successfully disperse the protesters without the Police resorting to any close-range combat with them or any further use of force that might result in injuries to both parties. The Police did not fire any further rounds as soon as the purpose of dispersing the protesters had been achieved.
- (c) According to the latest Police guidelines on the use of force, police officers have the option to use irritant agent devices, including tear gas, when they encounter active resistance (i.e. physical action to prevent control that might cause injury to oneself or others) and use less-lethal weapons, including rubber baton rounds, in the face of aggressive assault (i.e. physical assault to cause or likely to cause bodily injury). The police officer, when circumstances permit, shall give a warning of the intention to use force and the nature and degree of such force. Persons shall be given every opportunity, wherever practicable, to obey police orders before force is used. The principle governing the use of force is that only the minimum force necessary to achieve the purpose may be used and once that purpose has been achieved, the use of such force shall cease. The force used must be reasonable in the circumstances. It is the officer’s own judgement to determine which level of force he is justified to use and should use in the situation he is faced with. The officer will be held accountable for his own action.

²⁷ Office of the United Nations High Commissioner for Human Rights (2019-08-13). Press briefing note on Hong Kong, China. Retrieved from <https://www.ohchr.org/EN/NewsEvents/Pages/DisplayNews.aspx?NewsID=24888>

- (d) According to the Police guidelines, tear gas, although normally incapable of causing permanent injury to general health, can be damaging if it is sufficiently concentrated or where ventilation is poor. In view of the potential fire risk, where projectiles containing tear gas are used in built-up areas, care should be taken to ensure that they do not enter rooms inadvertently. The decision to use tear gas within buildings rests with the senior officer present and that officer will be accountable for the decision. The senior officer must ensure that if tear gas is to be used, the crowd will have an escape route. When encountering with a target who barricades himself in a protected area, room or building, the choice of weapons is important. The risk of fire or exposure of innocent persons to heavy concentration of tear gas must be carefully considered and follow-up action, such as checking every room, must be immediately taken.
- (e) It is printed on the tear gas canister “USE ONLY OUTDOORS. MAY START FIRE” (see Images 11-8 and 11-9 below). Aside from the warning printed on the canister, the manufacturer’s product safety information specifies a precautionary statement “Use only outdoors or in a well-ventilated area” (see Image 11-10 below).²⁸

²⁸ Nonlethal Technologies (2016-06-23). Safety Data Sheet acc. to OSHA HCS (29 CFR 1910.1200). Retrieved from <http://www.nonlethaltechnologies.com/pdf/SDS/SDS-MP-6M5-CS.pdf>

CHAPTER 11 • INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 11 AUGUST 2019
KWAI FONG STATION AND TAI KOO STATION



Image 11-8: a tear gas canister found inside Kwai Fong Station on 11 August night after Police retreated
(Image source: HK01)



Image 11-9: Warnings shown on a tear gas canister of the same model captured by the media on 28 July in Sheung Wan
(Image source: HK01)



Safety Data Sheet
 acc. to OSHA HCS (29 CFR 1910.1200)

Printing date: 06/23/2016

Revision: 06/23/2016

Trade name: **CS Smoke Projectile**

	(Cont'd. of page 1)
H317	May cause an allergic skin reaction.
H335	May cause respiratory irritation.
Precautionary statements:	
P210	Keep away from heat/sparks/open flames/hot surfaces. No smoking.
P250	Do not subject to grinding/shock/friction.
P260	Do not breathe dust.
P284	In case of inadequate ventilation wear respiratory protection.
P264	Wash thoroughly after handling.
P280	Wear protective gloves/protective clothing/eye protection/face protection.
P270	Do not eat, drink or smoke when using this product.
P271	Use only outdoors or in a well-ventilated area.
P272	Contaminated work clothing must not be allowed out of the workplace.
P305+P351+P338	If in eyes: Rinse cautiously with water for several minutes. Remove contact lenses, if present and easy to do. Continue rinsing.
P373	DO NOT fight fire when fire reaches explosives.
P370+P380	In case of fire: Evacuate area.
P302+P352	IF ON SKIN: Wash with plenty of water.
P304+P340	IF INHALED: Remove person to fresh air and keep comfortable for breathing.
P342+P311	If experiencing respiratory symptoms: Call a POISON CENTER/doctor.
P372	Explosion risk in case of fire.
P312	Call a POISON CENTER/doctor if you feel unwell.
P333+P313	If skin irritation or rash occurs: Get medical advice/attention.
P337+P313	If eye irritation persists: Get medical advice/attention.
P301+P310	IF SWALLOWED: Immediately call a POISON CENTER/ doctor.
P330	Rinse mouth.
P361+P364	Take off immediately all contaminated clothing and wash it before reuse.
P401	Store in accordance with local/regional/national/international regulations.
P405	Store locked up.
P403	Store in a well-ventilated place.
P501	Dispose of contents/container in accordance with local/regional/national/international regulations.

Other hazards There are no other hazards not otherwise classified that have been identified.	
Explosive Product Notice	
PREVENTION OF ACCIDENTS IN THE USE OF EXPLOSIVES - The prevention of accidents in the use of explosives is a result of careful planning and observance of the best known practices. The explosives user must remember that he is dealing with a powerful force and that various devices and methods have been developed to assist him in directing this force. He should realize that this force, if misdirected, may either kill or injure both him and his fellow workers.	
WARNING - All explosives are dangerous and must be carefully handled and used following approved safety procedures either by or under the direction of competent, experienced persons in accordance with all applicable federal, state, and local laws, regulations, or ordinances. If you have any questions or doubts as to how to use any explosive product, DO NOT USE IT before consulting with your supervisor, or the manufacturer, if you do not have a supervisor. If your supervisor has any questions or doubts, he should consult the manufacturer before use.	

(Cont'd. on page 3)

Image 11-10: Extract information of the product safety data sheet
 (Image source: Nonlethal Technologies)

- (f) Regarding fire risk, available product information from the website of the manufacturer reveals that there is a warning “Pyrotechnic devices may cause fires” (see Image 11-11 below).

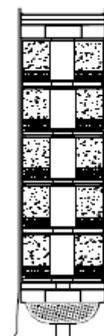


TEL: +1 724-479-5100
 FAX: +1 724-479-5105
 www.nonlethaltechnologies.com
 sales@nonlethaltechnologies.com

MP-6M5-CS - MULTI-SMOKE PROJECTILE (CS) - 37/38mm

DESCRIPTION

The MP-6M5-CS Multi-Smoke Projectile contains 5 separate submunitions that release a CS Smoke agent. The multiple submunitions provide a wide area of coverage for quick dispersal and control of crowds. The submunitions are launched up to 80 meters and release smoke for approximately 20 seconds each.



SPECIFICATIONS

Type	Projectile, Multi-Smoke
Discharge	CS Irritant Smoke
Application	Riot and Crowd Control
Projectiles	5, Aluminum Cased
Projectile Weight	27 grams
Emission Ports	2 per submunition
Discharge Time	20 ± 5 seconds
Cartridge Material	Aluminum
Length Overall	150 mm
Diameter	38 mm
Overall Weight	225 grams
Chemical Weight	94 grams
Net Irritant Agent	26 grams
Maximum Range	80 meters
Waterproof	Lacquer Coated Primer and Paint Sealed Top
Launched With	37mm / 38mm Riot Launchers, and 40 x 46mm Grenade Launchers

SHIPPING INFORMATION

UN Number	UN 0301
Shipping Name	Ammunition, Tear-Producing
Hazard Class	1.4G (6.1, 8)
Quantity Per Package	60 Cartridges
Packaging	Metal 1A2 UN/DoT Approved Pail w/Lever Lock Lid and Carry Handle

WARNING

Pyrotechnic devices may cause fires. Product should only be used outdoors.
 Do not fire directly at personnel, or serious injury or death may occur.



NonLethal Technologies, Inc. 9419 Rt 286 Hwy West Homer City, PA 15748 USA

All specifications are average and are subject to change without notice

NOVEMBER 2018

Image 11-11: Extract information of the product data sheet of tear gas projectile
 (Image source: Nonlethal Technologies)

- (g) Based on the information available from the website of the tear gas manufacturer, ventilation, which is pertinent to factors like fire risk and the speed at which tear gas dissipates in an environment, appears to be the essence of the safety precautions concerning the use of tear gas.
- (h) The Police explained that Kwai Fong Station is a semi-open structure with the concourse and multiple entrances on the ground floor. It has sufficient ventilation to allow the tear gas to be blown away reasonably quickly. The IPCC understands that some members of the public had concern about the potential health hazard caused by firing of tear gas by the Police inside the station. In this regard, the IPCC notes that the ventilation of the concourse area of Kwai Fong Station is aided by the four exits on the ground level and openings for the escalators that go up to the upper level which is almost an open space at both ends of the MTR track. The police officer fired that round of tear gas near Exits A and D, which would make for faster dissipation of the tear gas. The incident took place around 21:06 on 11 August, which was a Sunday. From a footage that captured the incident, it can be seen that not many people other than the protesters were inside the MTR station. In fact, MTRC had activated evacuation of Kwai Fong Station around 20:55. The risk of exposing innocent persons to heavy concentration of tear gas was not high. Though it could not be ruled out that some innocent persons might have been affected, when there was lead time for passengers and people at the station to leave and MTR staff remained on duty there.
- (i) In respect of Police guidelines on the use of tear gas, IPCC observes that the guidelines are not clear as to whether a police officer can use tear gas at a place other than outdoors and how an officer, and the senior officer if present, should assess the physical environment and the circumstances for using tear gas. This will be addressed in the Recommendations.
- (j) After the incident, the concern of MTR staff and the general public is understandable. The issue of health effect of chemical irritants in tear gas is addressed in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing. It is noted that the effects of chemical irritants when used appropriately are normally transient, lasting up to approximately three hours. However, there is scarce literature on the long-term or side-effect of tear gas on health and life.²⁹ In view of the possible unintended effect of tear gas on innocent parties, such as the frontline staff at the MTR station on 11 August and residents in a densely populated area like Kwai Fong,

²⁹ EYY Chan et. al. (2019-10-14). “Use of tear gas for crowd control in Hong Kong”, *The Lancet*. Retrieved from [https://www.thelancet.com/journals/lancet/article/PIIS0140-6736\(19\)32326-8/fulltext](https://www.thelancet.com/journals/lancet/article/PIIS0140-6736(19)32326-8/fulltext)

the Police use of tear gas in densely populated areas and MTR stations, especially given the urban guerrillas tactics of the protesters, will be addressed in the Recommendations.

Use of Force and Pepper Balls at Close-range inside Tai Koo Station

11.50 The event started with about 300 protesters blocking Kornhill Road. According to media reports, some protesters took the MTR to flee from Police dispersal action in Quarry Bay to Kornhill Road. According to the Police, the violent protesters attacked a police vehicle with sling shots and other hard objects when it drove past the location. In response to the violence of the protesters, the police officers alighted from the police vehicle to take arrest action. Immediately, the protesters fled into Tai Koo Station via Exit C. During the chase and arrest action at the escalators inside the MTR station, batons and pepper balls were used.

11.51 After the incident, Tai Koo Station users, MTRC Staff Union, human rights organisations and the media raised concern over Police use of force, in particular using pepper ball launcher at close-range in the MTR station. In this connection, IPCC has the following observations:

- (a) According to Police, the police officers had encountered resistance and violence from the protesters. Under these circumstances, it is the Police view that the officers had to use appropriate force to control and effect arrest. From a video footage capturing the incident, it is seen that some protesters put up struggle when the police officers tried to arrest them.
- (b) According to the latest Police guidelines on the use of force, the appropriate level of force that can be used depends on the level of resistance put up by the subject. When an officer encounters active resistance (i.e. physical action to prevent control that might cause injury to oneself or others), the officer can use pepper ball. In the face of aggressive assault (i.e. physical assault to cause or likely to cause bodily injury), the use of less-lethal weapons, including baton, is an option. To control a subject effectively, the officer is justified to use a level of force greater than the resistance of the subject.
- (c) Whether the use of pepper ball launcher and baton was appropriate depended on the violence met by the officers concerned and the degree of resistance encountered upon arrest. A finer question, however, is whether pepper ball launcher can be used in close-range and at shoulder level.
- (d) Pepper balls, containing powdery pepper substance, are launched by compressed

gas instead of ignition of gun powder. These balls are in the size of a playing marble and would burst into a powder on impact, producing an effect similar to pepper spray. According to the Police, pepper ball launcher can be used in close-range, and is designed to be used in close proximity. Pepper balls are non-penetrating and will turn into a powdery smoke when hitting a surface, producing irritant effect to assist dispersal of a menacing crowd. At a media briefing on 19 August, a Police spokesman said that their initial review revealed that pepper balls were shot at one to two metres from the targets in Tai Koo Station, which is a safe distance in line with the relevant manufacturer's safety guidelines.³⁰

- (e) In the demonstration given by the Police to IPCC Members at Police Tactical Unit (PTU) Headquarters, pepper balls were shot at the torso of a PTU officer at a close distance of about 1.5 metres. The PTU officer, who only wore PTU summer uniform, experienced some discomfort but sustained only minor redness on his skin.
- (f) According to the “United Nations Human Rights Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement (Advance Edited Version)”, “*kinetic impact projectiles should not be targeted against the heads, face, or neck*”.³¹ Available information from the website of a manufacturer of pepper ball launcher also shows in its user manual the important warning “DANGER: Never aim at the face, eyes, ears, throat or spine”.³² As to whether pepper balls should not be aimed at shoulder level or above, IPCC notices that the Police does not have any clear guidelines on this and the general instruction is that only the torso should be aimed at. Although a pepper ball does not cause any injury if it hits the torso or the hands or feet, it might cause serious injury if it hits the eyes or other vulnerable parts on the face. In the incident, the police officer launched pepper balls behind the protesters.
- (g) It can be seen from the footage that the protesters whom the police officer aimed at wore helmets (a number of pepper balls apparently hit one of the protesters' helmet) and some of them had goggles covering their eyes. Though serious injury was not likely caused to them, the police officer should not have aimed at the protester's head according to international guidelines. As to the absence of

³⁰ HKPF (2019-08-19). Live footage of Police media briefing. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/HongKongPoliceForce/videos/vb.960526577368640/371436143529541/>

³¹ Office of the United Nations High Commissioner for Human Rights (2020). United Nations Human Rights Guidance on Less-Lethal Weapons in Law Enforcement (Advance Edited Version), paragraph 7.5.8. Retrieved from https://www.ohchr.org/Documents/HRBodies/CCPR/LLW_Guidance.pdf

³² PepperBall (2016). Custom SX/TX PepperBall User Manual. Retrieved from http://www.pepperball.com/wp-content/uploads/2018/12/SX_TX-Manual_2016.pdf

Police guidelines forbidding officers from aiming pepper balls above shoulder level, this will be addressed in the Recommendations.

- (h) In the arrest action on the escalator, a police officer and a protester tumbled down the escalator. The scene at the escalator was chaotic. As to whether the police officers should chase the protesters down the escalators is a judgement to be made by the police officers at the scene. IPCC notes that the protesters made use of the MTR lines in their urban guerrilla tactics to go to different places to block roads and whenever the Police took action against them, they would flee into the MTR stations to evade arrest, perhaps hoping that the Police would stop pursuing them once they were inside. MTR stations then became safe havens for the protesters. As the protests progressed, police officers would follow into MTR stations to make arrest. The Police has since changed their operational plans to anticipate the protesters entering MTR stations for escape or refuge. In this regard, the Police should give clear instructions to advise police officers on the action they should or should not take in different operational situations and indoor public space such as MTR stations. This will be addressed in the Recommendations.

11.52 The IPCC notes the Police response set out in paragraphs 11.36 – 11.42 in relation to the firing of tear gas at Kwai Fong Station and these will be fully taken into account when the IPCC considers the RCs now under investigation by CAPO.

Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance

11.53 The above two instances of use of force by the Police both took place inside an MTR station. The protesters adopted urban guerrilla tactics utilising the MTR network to access different locations across the city and blocked major traffic locations or caused damage to public infrastructure and transport facilities and fled into MTR stations to evade arrest by the Police. In this light, dispersal action by the Police was inevitable, and therefore use of force, including tear gas and pepper balls, would follow inside or in the vicinity of MTR stations. These are often crowded and usually located in close proximity to residential or commercial areas, thus potentially affecting innocent passers-by or occupiers of nearby premises. In these circumstances, Police action naturally would give rise to public complaints.

11.54 The IPCC has observed that since these events and those of 31 August, the Police has refined their strategy by proactively securing stations likely to be used as exits or refuge, and co-ordinating with the MTR Operating Department to redirect trains as necessary. This has prevented the recurrence of similar incidents. As observed above, the MTR is a key device used by protesters in staging protests. To avoid collateral damage to innocent bystanders, the IPCC welcomes continuing efforts by the Police to work closely with the MTR to make the

MTR system safe and to prevent its use to facilitate violent unlawful protest.

11.55 Another area of improvement is to achieve better communications of Police action in or near MTR stations to the general public and passengers so that they may take early precautions. For example, for Police action where tear gas is most likely to be used, the Police Public Relations Branch should send out a general cell phone SMS, as it has done in relation to large-scale POEs. Such communications could be accompanied by information on the precautions to be taken, such as closing windows, using wet cloth to seal doors and windows. The MTRC should in coordination broadcast similar messages for trains making their way to areas of conflict, warning passengers in advance. The local Police Community Relations network together with Home Affairs Department should devise a quick warning system to property managers and local Mutual Aid Committees to advise residents to take early precaution and avoid places where conflict is taking place.

11.56 While the Police considers that the use of tear gas inside Kwai Fong Station and firing of pepper balls inside Tai Koo Station are justified, these two events clearly indicate that the urban setting and circumstances at scenes of protests are diverse and complex. Police guidelines and training for crowd management, arrests and use of force, in particular the Police tactics in pursuing protesters into MTR stations or other premises, and the choice of using tear gas and less-lethal projectiles in non-outdoor setting should be reviewed. The Police has to strike a balance between operational effectiveness and protection of innocent citizens at the scene of action.

11.57 The IPCC is of the view that there are lessons to be learnt from the events that took place inside Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations on 11 August. The Police management should conduct the following reviews:

- (a) Review the operational plans for occasion of POEs involving breach of peace and violent acts of protesters, in particular the strategies, gear and weapons for officers to quell disorder;
- (b) Enhance the provisions and guidelines on the use of tear gas in the urban populated setting of Hong Kong, in particular giving clear guidelines on the factors police officers should take into account when making assessment on the physical environment, degree of ventilation and the circumstances in considering the use of tear gas, making reference to international standards and manufacturers' rules;
- (c) Devise clear guidelines on the use of pepper ball launcher, including the suitable range and target area of the body, and take into consideration of manufacturers' safety guidelines and warnings on under what circumstances pepper ball launchers should or should not be used;
- (d) Devise scenario-based practical training for officers on the use of tear gas, pepper

- ball launchers and other police weapons, including periodic accreditation of officers on the use of force in handling protests;
- (e) Devise scenario-based exercises in the training of officers on tactics to be used in handling POEs in different urban settings, in particular MTR stations and enclosed-areas with many people;
 - (f) Delineate the role of command and frontline officers on their accountability in the use of force in different scenarios;
 - (g) Devise means to enhance communications with the public on the intention to use force and related precautionary measures; and
 - (h) Strengthen and refine the relevant protocols, guidelines and training manuals for clearer advice to officers and the public.

11.58 The above recommendations should be read in conjunction with the IPCC's recommendations in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing.

CHRONOLOGY – SUNDAY 11 AUGUST 2019**Key Incidents**

- A. Daytime rally and clashes at Causeway Bay and Wan Chai
- B. Daytime rally and clashes at Sham Shui Po and Cheung Sha Wan
- C. Clashes at Tsim Sha Tsui
- D. Clashes at Kwai Fong
- E. Clashes at North Point and Quarry Bay
- F. Clashes at Tai Koo and Sai Wan Ho
- G. Flash mob and blockage at various locations
- H. Confrontations at Tsuen Wan

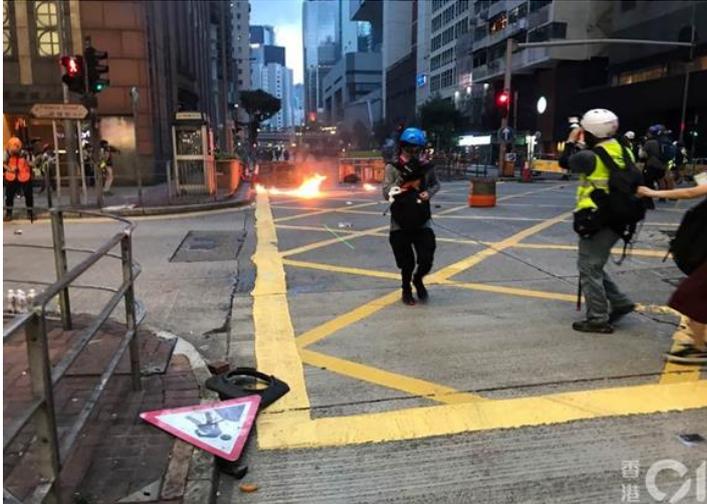
Detailed Chronology of Events**A. Daytime rally and clashes at Causeway Bay and Wan Chai**

Time (Approx.)	Incident
13:00	<p>Causeway Bay, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>The public meeting at Victoria Park (with LoNO) scheduled to start (source: conditions imposed for Public Meeting POE RN 19009418).</p>
13:45	<p>Organiser made opening announcement and asked participants to be seated. About 1 000 participants were present. The rally went peacefully and no police deployment could be observed at scene (source: media reports and live video footage¹).</p> <div> </div> <p>(Image source: Sing Tao Daily)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
14:30	<p>Several thousand people turned up at football pitches at Victoria Park, many huddled under umbrellas (source: media report and live video footage²).</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
16:12	<p>About 100 protesters left Victoria Park and moved to Causeway Bay area. Participation at peak at 16:00 was about 4,600 (source: HKPF).</p>
16:39	<p>About 1 000 protesters in Victoria Park were proceeding to Causeway Bay area (source: HKPF). Meanwhile, several hundred people occupied Hennessy Road off Sogo Department Store in Causeway Bay (source: live video footage³).</p>
17:03	<p>Wan Chai, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>Protesters proceeded towards Wan Chai. Some protesters set up makeshift barricades at junctions along Hennessy Road, Percival Street and Luard Road (source: HKPF and media reports⁴).</p>  <p>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
17:30	<p>Some protesters went on to Golden Bauhinia Square in Wan Chai, spraying graffiti and put up posters on the base of the statue (source: media reports⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
18:15	<p>A large group of protesters, many of whom marched from the rally at Victoria Park, were blocking at the junction of Lockhart Road and Fenwick Street, and setting barricades near PHQ (source: media report⁶).</p>
18:30	<p>Police set up cordon line at Hennessy Road and Arsenal Street (source: HKPF).</p>

CHAPTER 11 • INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 11 AUGUST 2019
KWAI FONG STATION AND TAI KOO STATION

Time (Approx.)	Incident
18:42	<p>Outside PHQ, violent protesters threw petrol bombs and shone laser beams at police officers. After repeated warnings, the Police started firing tear gas for dispersal on Hennessy Road. Several small fires were seen burning near the police cordon (source: media report and live video footage⁷).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
19:30	<p>Police fired several rounds of tear gas on Hennessy Road and further advanced near Luard Road, while protesters retreated towards Causeway Bay and some left via Wan Chai Station (source: media reports⁸).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
20:09	<p>Police conducted sweeping in Wan Chai and formed cordon line at Hennessy Road and Heard Street (source: HKPF).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21:35	<p>Causeway Bay, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>Several hundreds of protesters assembled near the crossing of Hennessey Road and Percival Street and near Sugar Street in Causeway Bay (source: media report⁹). Burning of a rubbish bin was seen under a Sugar Street footbridge (source: HKPF).</p>
22:00	<p>Police officers advanced from Percival Street to arrest a number of protesters who had been occupying the roads in Causeway Bay. Some arrests were seen to be assisted by black-clad men who dressed like protesters and some arrested persons were seen bleeding. These black-clad men were later escorted by the Police and left the scene in a white van (source: media reports and live video footage¹⁰).</p> <div> </div> <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p> <div> </div> <p><i>(Image source: Cable TV)</i></p>

B. Daytime rally and clashes at Sham Shui Po and Cheung Sha Wan

Time (Approx.)	Incident
14:45	<p>Sham Shui Po, Kowloon</p> <p>Several hundreds of people gathered at Maple Street Playground, starting point of a public procession which was given letter of objection by the Police and the appeal for which was turned down (source: media reports¹¹).</p>
15:15	<p>About 1 400 people were present at Maple Street Playground (source: HKPF).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
15:20	<p>The crowd walked out from Maple Street Playground to the direction of Cheung Sha Wan Road, chanting slogans “光復香港，時代革命 (Liberate Hong Kong, revolution of our times)”, “五大訴求 缺一不可 (Five demands, not one less)”. Several plainclothes officers were seen video-taping the scene (source: media reports¹²).</p>
16:00	<p>Cheung Sha Wan, Kowloon</p> <p>Protesters occupied three westbound lanes of Cheung Sha Wan Road and marched to Cheung Sha Wan Police Station. Police appealed to the participants to leave as this was an “unauthorised assembly” affecting the traffic in the area (source: media reports¹³).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
16:10	<p>Some protesters removed barricades to set up makeshift roadblocks near Cheung Sha Wan Government Offices (source: media report and live video footage¹⁴).</p>  <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>
16:30	<p>Sham Shui Po, Kowloon</p> <p>Several hundreds of protesters turned to gather outside Dragon Centre on Yen Chow Street near Sham Shui Po Police Station, and built barricades (source: media reports¹⁵).</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p> <p>Plastic barriers had earlier been erected around Sham Shui Po Police Station, in an apparent attempt to shield it from bricks and other projectiles thrown by violent protesters. Police officers at Sham Shui Po Police Station raised black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” and orange warning flag indicating “DISPERSE OR WE FIRE” from a top platform of the station and used loudspeakers to tell people to leave immediately. Protesters remained at scene (source: media reports and live video footage¹⁶).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
17:09	<p>Police fired tear gas and moved forward to disperse the protesters (source: HKPF and media report¹⁷).</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
17:21	<p>Protesters gathered bricks and clutches outside Dragon Centre to attack Sham Shui Po Police Station and police officers (source: HKPF).</p>
17:25	<p>According to the Police, around 20-30 protesters were changing their black clothes to other clothing at Apliu Street ‘7-11’ convenience store (source: HKPF).</p>
17:29	<p>Further round of tear gas was fired, which was spreading through the streets and was reported to be flown on a populated footbridge in the neighborhood. By 17:30, several protesters were subdued and at least four people were arrested (source: media reports¹⁸).</p>  <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
17:38	<p>Cheung Sha Wan, Kowloon</p> <p>At a distance outside Cheung Sha Wan Police Station, violent protesters set roadblocks and confronted the Police by throwing bricks and shining laser beams (source: HKPF and media report¹⁹).</p>
18:00	<p>After repeated warning from Cheung Sha Wan Police Station, tear gas was fired to disperse protesters. Protesters retreated in the direction of Castle Peak Road, and hurled petrol bombs along Tai Nan West Street (source: media reports²⁰).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Sing Tao Daily)</i></p>
19:00	<p>Dispersal operation in Sham Shui Po District ended (source: media report²¹).</p>

C. Clashes at Tsim Sha Tsui

Time (Approx.)	Incident
18:30	<p>Tsim Sha Tsui, Kowloon</p> <p>Protesters gathered at the section of Nathan Road next to Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station near Park Lane Shopper’s Boulevard. Violent protesters set up roadblocks on the car lanes, hurled objects and petrol bombs towards the police station (source: media report and live video footage²²).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: AM730)</i></p> <p>Police behind the gate of the police station raised black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” and orange warning flag indicating “DISPERSE OR WE FIRE”, and fired tear gas to disperse the protesters outside (source: media report and live video footage²³).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
19:00	<p>According to the Police, the violent protesters escalated their violence by using bricks, stones, sling shots, rifle-like objects and petrol bombs to intermittently attack Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station. Despite repeated police warnings, the protesters did not disperse but continued their violence. Police therefore responded with tear gas and super sock bean bag rounds inside the police station (source: HKPF).</p>

CHAPTER 11 • INCIDENT DAY – SUNDAY 11 AUGUST 2019
KWAI FONG STATION AND TAI KOO STATION

Time (Approx.)	Incident
19:12	One police constable was hit by a petrol bomb that was thrown into the Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station and sustained severe skin burn during station defence (source: HKPF).
19:24	<p>A female was seen lying on ground with her eye seriously injured near a bus stop pane at Park Lane Shopper's Boulevard. She was later reported to be a voluntary first-aider at scene. Some speculated the injury was caused by police bean bag round but some alleged that it was caused by sling shots used by protesters (source: media reports and live video footage²⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Bastille Post)</i></p>
19:28	<p>Police officers arrived and set up a defense line at the intersection of Austin Road and Nathan Road (source: HKPF). In brief periods, the Police charged forward along Nathan Road while firing tear gas for dispersal and subdued a number of protesters (source: media report and live video footage²⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
21:22	The remaining police officers left and the scene was cleared (source: media report ²⁶).

D. Clashes at Kwai Fong

Time (Approx.)	Incident
20:00	<p>Kwai Fong, New Territories</p> <p>Protesters gathered outside Kwai Chung Police Station to block roads in the vicinity with objects such as barricades (source: media reports²⁷).</p>
20:35	<p>While the protesters continued to move barricades to block roads outside Kwai Chung Police Station (source: media report²⁸), about 200 protesters were seen heading to Kwai Chung Police Station from Kwai Fong Station (source: HKPF).</p>
20:45	<p>The Police formed a cordon line outside Kwai Chung Police Station at the junction of Kwai Yi Road and Kwai Foo Road (source: HKPF). Protesters then began to retreat in the direction of Kwai Fong Station (source: live video footage²⁹).</p>
20:50	<p>About 200 protesters were present in the vicinity of Kwai Fong Station, some of them inside the MTR Station while some others near Kwai Chung Plaza and Metroplaza. Another group of police officers were seen heading to Kwai Fong Station from Kwai Chung Police Station. When these police officers arrived outside Kwai Fong Station Exit A, several dozens of protesters, mostly dressed in black with helmets and respirators, were seen near the paid area inside Kwai Fong Station, scattered in front of and behind the ticket gates, yelling, flashing laser beams and throwing water bottles at the police officers (source: live video footage³⁰).</p>
20:51	<p>There was station announcement that Kwai Fong Station would be closed due to emergency (source: live video footage³¹) and evacuation of the station was activated at around 20:55 for the safety of passengers and station staff (source: media report and other source³²).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
20:53	<p>Protesters near the ticket gates continued to flash laser beams, throw objects, and started to spurt water and discharge fire extinguisher towards police officers outside Exit A. Several protesters outside Exit D were seen using a fire hose to spurt water towards the officers at Exit A (source: media reports and live video footage³³).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)</i></p>
20:55	<p>The police officers at Exit A walked over to the unpaid area in the concourse to Exit D on the other side without taking actions against the protesters who remained inside the paid area. At this point, the police officers stayed at their positions outside Exit D and a stand-off ensued. Some people outside Metroplaza and on the footbridge connecting the shopping centres shone light and laser beams at the police officers who then raised black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” in the direction of Kwai Chung Plaza and Metroplaza (source: live video footage³⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Sing Tao Daily)</i></p>
20:57	<p>Police officers were seen leaving Kwai Fong Station and heading towards Kwai Chung Police Station (source: live video footage³⁵). Several dozens of protesters standing near the front door of Metroplaza were seen walking to the direction of Kwai Fong Station Exit D (source: live video footage³⁶).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
20:59	<p>Some protesters shone blue and green laser beams at the police officers at the cordon line at the junction of Kwai Yi Road and Kwai Foo Road. Black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” was displayed outside Kwai Chung Police Station (source: HKPF and live video footage³⁷).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Cable TV)</i></p>
21:02	<p>Police reinforcement arrived at the cordon line outside Kwai Chung Police Station. The police officers then started to advance along Kwai Foo Road in the direction of Kwai Fong Station and fired tear gas to disperse protesters after warning them (source: HKPF and live video footage³⁸).</p>
21:03	<p>MTRC announced that Tsuen Wan Line trains in both directions would not stop at Kwai Fong Station, but special trains were arranged to pick up passengers at the station (source: media report³⁹).</p>
21:05	<p>The police officers advancing along Kwai Foo Road reached Kwai Yan Road outside Kwai Fong Station Exit D (source: media report and live video footage⁴⁰).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21:06	<p>Protesters were seen splashing water and discharging fire extinguishers from the paid area near Exit D (source: live video footage⁴¹). According to the Police, sling shots firing steel ball bearings were also used to attack the police officers (source: HKPF). At this juncture, some police officers entered Exit D and one of them fired one round of tear gas in the direction of the paid area near Exit D and stepped out from the entrance. This had the effect of dispersing some of the protesters, but others stayed and continued to use fire hoses to spurt water from behind the ticket gates. The police officers then resumed their action, re-entering the station, firing two rubber baton rounds at the protesters in the paid area, and dispersing some of them (source: media reports and live video footage⁴²).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21:08	Several protesters were staying at the staircase/escalator in the paid area near Kwai Fong Station Exit D. Some of them discharged fire extinguisher, filling the area near Exit D with white smoke (source: live video footage ⁴³).
21:09	<p>Protesters dashed up to the upper platform of the station of the MTR station, escaping and dispersing into Metroplaza at Exit E from the upper platform. Some protesters left the scene by trains from the two platforms. Police officers did not give chase and retreated from Exit D where they remained on guard until around 21:12.</p> <p>Meanwhile, several dozens of protesters appeared inside an entrance of Metroplaza at Kwai Fong Station Exit E. They blocked the glass doors connecting the footbridge with various objects, confronting police officers who reached the footbridge from Kwai Fong Station side (source: media reports and live video footage⁴⁴).</p>
21:12	About 20 people were present on the footbridge connecting Metroplaza and Kwai Chung Plaza, some of whom pointed laser beams at the police officers outside Kwai Fong Station Exit D. The police officers outside Exit D left the scene by police vehicles (source: live video footage ⁴⁵). According to the Police, around 21:16, a platoon of officers was going to reform with two platoons of officers there to carry out high profile patrol in Kwai Fong (source: HKPF).
21:13	The special train on platform 1 of Kwai Fong Station departed (source: live video footage ⁴⁶).
21:16	The special train on platform 2 of Kwai Fong Station departed (source: live video footage ⁴⁷).
21:50	Protesters gathered again outside Kwai Chung Police Station and shone laser beams at the station. Police raised black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE” from inside the police station (source: HKPF, media report and live video footage ⁴⁸).
21:54	Fireworks were seen discharging near Kwai Chung Police Station (source: HKPF, media report and live video footage ⁴⁹).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:00	Police fired tear gas near Kwai Chung Police Station and Kwai Fong Station for crowd dispersal after warning. Live footage showed that some onlookers and passers-by were present (source: media report and live video footage ⁵⁰).
22:35	Protesters shone blue and green laser beams to attack officers defending Kwai Chung Police Station (source: HKPF and live video footage ⁵¹).
22:40	MTRC announced that Kwai Fong Station was closed. Protesters gathering outside Kwai Fong Station blocked roads with rubbish bins and foam boxes (source: live video footage ⁵²).
22:55	According to the Police, Kwai Fong Station would resume the MTR service (source: HKPF).
23:00	Protesters again shone laser beams at Kwai Chung Police Station. After giving warnings to the protesters, the Police conducted dispersal actions along Kwai Foo Road outside Kwai Chung Police Station and fired tear gas (source: live video footage ⁵³).

E. Clashes at North Point and Quarry Bay

Time (Approx.)	Incident
16:15	<p>North Point, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>A large group of red-clad pro-government supporters gathered in the area of King's Road in North Point, ending point of a banned procession on Hong Kong Island East (source: media reports⁵⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Passion Times)</i></p> <p>Heavy police deployment was seen near North Point Station and nearby area during the day. A man was seen to be chased by a dozen of people outside a restaurant, and there were news reports on reporters being attacked by people there. Media liaison officers were sent to the scene to settle the incident (source: media reports and live video footage⁵⁵).</p>
21:30	<p>There were tensions during the night. A large group of protesters arrived at North Point Station but decided to go to Quarry Bay after a discussion. Police were deployed outside the station and formed a cordon line at King's Road. Some members of the public who expressed support to the Police gathered and stood on King's Road. Police told them to leave the scene (source: media report and live video footage⁵⁶). According to the Police, two opposing parties were disputing at King's Road in North Point. Police reinforcement arrived (source: HKPF).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: TVB News)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:00	<p>Quarry Bay, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>A group of protesters arrived Quarry Bay Station. Some of them raised umbrellas, piled up iron bars and spurted water from a fire hose behind the ticket gates inside the station. They confronted the police officers who were with shields standing outside the station. Around 22:35, protesters retreated towards Tai Koo Station (source: media reports and live video footage⁵⁷).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>

F. Clashes at Tai Koo and Sai Wan Ho

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:30	<p>Quarry Bay, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>Police officers took action to disperse protesters who had occupied King’s Road near Quarry Bay Station. Protesters on King’s Road were seen fleeing in the direction of Tai Koo Station while those behind the ticket gates of Quarry Bay Station were reported to have taken trains to Tai Koo Station (source: media reports and live video footage⁵⁸).</p>
22:33	<p>Tai Koo, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>According to the Police, about 100 protesters alighted from the train at Tai Koo Station. Around 22:38, 300 protesters in protective gear came out from Exit C of Tai Koo Station and blocked Kornhill Road. A police vehicle passing by was attacked by those protesters with hard objects and sling shots (source: HKPF).</p>
22:44	<p>About 200 protesters appeared at the westbound lane of Kornhill Road near Exit C of Tai Koo Station. At this juncture, two police vehicles arrived. The protesters on Kornhill Road turned around and rushed towards Exit C of Tai Koo Station (source: live video footage⁵⁹). According to the Police, the officers alighted from the police vehicles to pursue the violent protesters, who immediately fled towards Exit C and threw smoke bombs to evade (source: HKPF). White smoke was seen in the pedestrian area outside Exit C of Tai Koo Station. Some news reports stated that the white smoke was from tear gas fired by the Police (source: media reports and live video footage⁶⁰). According to the Police, they did not fire any tear gas (source: HKPF and other source⁶¹).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:45	<p>Police officers chased after protesters and entered Tai Koo Station from Exit C.</p> <p>At Exit C, there are two escalators, one going down to and the other one coming up from the concourse of Tai Koo Station. There is video footage which captured the incident that lasting two to three minutes starting from 22:45 when some ten police officers subdued a number of protesters in the area, some right before reaching the two escalators and others down the two escalators. Both escalators came to a halt at the time of the incident.</p> <p>At that time, more than 50 people, most of them wearing helmets, some wearing a respirator or a goggle, and some carrying backpacks and/or umbrellas, tried to get to the escalators to go down to the concourse. About ten police officers chased after them. Some persons carrying cameras also followed behind. Many people were stuck at the spot before reaching the escalators. The police officers tried to capture those people at the rear. Some of the police officers used their batons to subdue a few of them.</p> <p>A police officer holding a pepper ball launcher once grabbed a male who was wearing a helmet. That male dashed forward into the crowd swarming to reach the escalators. The police officer moved back two to three steps and fired pepper balls from a distance of approximately one to two metres at shoulder level at the escaping crowd. A number of pepper balls seemed to have hit the helmet of one of the people at scene.</p> <p>There were struggles between the protesters and the police officers using batons to subdue them. During the process, one protester was seen refusing to let go of his grip on the handrail of the escalator before he was finally subdued by two to three officers with batons. Some of the police officers chased down the escalators. In the struggle on the escalators, a police officer and some protesters tumbled down (source: media reports and live video footage⁶²).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: Now TV)</p>
	 <p>(Image source: Now TV)</p>
	 <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>
	 <p>(Image source: HK01)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:50	Police conducted arrests and checking of persons outside Exit C of Tai Koo Station (source: live video footage ⁶³).
23:05	<p>According to the Police, 19 persons were arrested at Tai Koo Station. Arrested persons were taken to a police vehicle in the vicinity (source: HKPF and live video footage⁶⁴).</p> <p>After the Tai Koo incident, according to the Police, some protesters took MTR to Sai Wan Ho Station and started to gather outside Sai Wan Ho Civic Centre. As the gathering crowd was increasing, police officers requested for reinforcement (source: HKPF).</p>
00:50 12 Aug	<p>Sai Wan Ho, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>Protesters surrounded police vehicles outside Tai Koo and Sai Wan Ho Stations. According to the Police, there were over 1 000 protesters, while some of whom hit the police vehicles with unknown hard objects. Police were reported to have used batons and applied pepper spray inside and near Sai Wan Ho Station (source: HKPF). Police who had been besieged successfully retreated after around 20 minutes of confrontation with protesters (source: media reports⁶⁵).</p>

G. Flash mob and blockage at various locations

Time (Approx.)	Incident
16:45	<p>Hung Hom, Kowloon</p> <p>Some protesters at the rally in Causeway Bay took way across the harbour and staged a flash mob at Cross-Harbour Tunnel. The protesters disrupted the operations briefly to allow some vehicles to pass through without paying tolls. Protesters fled before the Police arrived (source: media reports and live video footage⁶⁶). According to the Police, around 16:48, 150 protesters proceeded from Tsim Sha Tsui Station to Hung Hom Cross Harbour Tunnel (source: HKPF).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Sing Tao Daily)</i></p>
16:50	<p>According to the Police, the protesters ran towards Hung Hom Station from the Cross Harbour Tunnel (source: HKPF).</p>
17:00	<p>According to the Police, Hung Hom Cross Harbour Tunnel was re-opened (source: HKPF).</p>
22:10	<p>Mei Foo, Kowloon</p> <p>Protesters set up roadblocks with iron bars on a section of Lai Chi Kok Road toward Kwai Chung (source: media report⁶⁷).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:25	<p>Kowloon Tong, Kowloon</p> <p>Dozens of protesters set up flash roadblocks in Kowloon Tong, blocking a section of Waterloo Road to Sha Tin. The roadblocks were cleared by the drivers soon after the protesters fled (source: media report⁶⁸).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
23:00	<p>Sha Tin, New Territories</p> <p>Some people gathered outside Shatin Police Station. After raising warning black warning flag indicating “WARNING TEAR SMOKE”, Police were reported to have fired tear gas from outside the police station and subdued some ten people (source: media reports⁶⁹).</p>

H. Confrontations at Tsuen Wan

Time (Approx.)	Incident
mid-night 12 Aug	<p>Tsuen Wan, New Territories</p> <p>Around midnight, three people were reported to have been attacked by several white-clad people outside Tsuen Wan Station and sustained injuries (source: media reports⁷⁰).</p>
01:00 12 Aug	<p>A group of white-clad people holding brandishing sticks and bamboo poles appeared at Yi Pei Square in Tsuen Wan and confronted with another group of people there (source: media report⁷¹).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
01:12 12 Aug	<p>Police officers were seen conducting stop-and-search and patrol nearby. The white-clad people were reported to have left the scene before the Police arrived. Police found some sharpened bamboo sticks and one knife in the litters (source: media report⁷²).</p>
02:50 12 Aug	<p>Police left after conducting search in Tsuen Wan Park and area near Tsuen Wan Pier (source: media reports⁷³).</p>

- 1 RTHK (2019-08-11). 維園集會發起人批警方拖延發出不反對通知書致宣傳不足. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473955-20190811.html>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例】維園集會 有參與人士掛「港獨」旗. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1064945/即時-香港-逃犯條例-維園集會-有參與人士掛-港獨-旗>
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 2 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·銅鑼灣】黑衣人助警制服示威者 有人頭破血流. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565499944254>
Live video footage of Now TV and RTHK
- 3 Live video footage of Now TV and Stand News
- 4 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·銅鑼灣】黑衣人助警制服示威者 有人頭破血流. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565499944254>
Stand News (2019-08-11). 【不斷更新】示威者多區「快閃」 警方葵芳站內施放催淚彈 突衝入太古港鐵站制服多人. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-8-11-港島東-深水埗遊行遭反對-僅批維園集會市民陸續到達>
- 5 RTHK (2019-08-11). 部分示威者往金紫荊廣場「快閃」抗議. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473990-20190811.html>
SCMP (2019-08-11). As it happened: how Hong Kong police fired tear gas in an MTR station, as another weekend ended in protest violence. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3022206/illegal-anti-government-march-sets-hong-kong>
- 6 RTHK (2019-08-11). 示威者警察總部外與警員對峙. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473995-20190811.html>
- 7 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·銅鑼灣】黑衣人助警制服示威者 有人頭破血流. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565499944254>
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 8 HK01 (2019-08-11). 【港島東遊行】荃灣二陂坊械鬥遺滿地玻璃 檢削尖竹枝菜刀. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/362452/港島東遊行-荃灣二陂坊械鬥遺滿地玻璃-檢削尖竹枝菜刀>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 警方在灣仔警總外施放催淚彈 示威者路障前擲物品起火. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473997-20190811.html>
Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·銅鑼灣】黑衣人助警制服示威者 有人頭破血流. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565499944254>
- 9 HK01 (2019-08-11). 【港島東遊行】荃灣二陂坊械鬥遺滿地玻璃 檢削尖竹枝菜刀. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/362452/港島東遊行-荃灣二陂坊械鬥遺滿地玻璃-檢削尖竹枝菜刀>
- 10 Hong Kong Free Press (2019-08-12). Video: Hong Kong police make bloody arrest, assisted by officers suspected to be undercover as protesters. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2019/08/12/video-hong-kong-police-make-bloody-arrest-assisted-officers-suspected-undercover-protesters/>
Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·銅鑼灣】黑衣人助警制服示威者 有人頭破血流. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565499944254>
RTHK (2019-08-12). 銅鑼灣有示威者被制服後 警員仍繼續將他的頭按在地上. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474075-20190812.html>
Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 11 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·深水埗】長沙灣道再有示威者衝擊防線 警撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565495563921>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 警禁深水埗遊行 起步點市民幾近坐滿看台. Retrieved from

- <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473959-20190811.html>
- 12 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例・深水埗】長沙灣道再有示威者衝擊防線 警撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565495563921>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-11). 【深水埗遊行】長沙灣警署警察舉黑旗後施放催淚彈 示威者後退. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1065040/即時-香港-深水埗遊行-長沙灣警署警察舉黑旗後施放催淚彈-示威者後退>
- 13 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例・深水埗】長沙灣道再有示威者衝擊防線 警撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565495563921>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 長沙灣警署向示威者舉藍旗警告 要求到場人士盡快離開. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473968-20190811.html>
- 14 RTHK (2019-08-11). 有示威者折返深水埗並架設路障. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473973-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 15 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例・深水埗】長沙灣道再有示威者衝擊防線 警撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565495563921>
HK01 (2019-08-11). 【葵涌衝突】防暴警多次放催淚彈 街坊踢拖激烈對罵. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362448/葵涌衝突-防暴警多次放催淚彈-街坊踢拖激烈對罵>
- 16 RTHK (2019-08-11). 警方由深水埗警署施放多枚催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473977-20190811.html>
Stand News (2019-08-11). 【不斷更新】示威者多區「快閃」 警方葵芳站內施放催淚彈 突衝入太古港鐵站制服多人. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-8-11-港島東-深水埗遊行遭反對-僅批維園集會市民陸續到達>
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 17 HK01 (2019-08-11). 【葵涌衝突】防暴警多次放催淚彈 街坊踢拖激烈對罵. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362448/葵涌衝突-防暴警多次放催淚彈-街坊踢拖激烈對罵>
- 18 RTHK (2019-08-11). 警方欽州街再放催淚彈 防暴警快速推進驅散示威者. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473982-20190811.html>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-11). 【深水埗遊行】防暴警欽州街快速制服多名示威者 展橙旗持防暴槍警告. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1065133/即時-香港-深水埗遊行-防暴警欽州街快速制服多名示威者-展橙旗持防暴槍警告>
- 19 HK01 (2019-08-11). 【葵涌衝突】防暴警多次放催淚彈 街坊踢拖激烈對罵. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362448/葵涌衝突-防暴警多次放催淚彈-街坊踢拖激烈對罵>
- 20 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例・深水埗】長沙灣道再有示威者衝擊防線 警撤退. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565495563921>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-11). 【深水埗遊行】長沙灣警署警察舉黑旗後施放催淚彈 示威者後退. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1065040/即時-香港-深水埗遊行-長沙灣警署警察舉黑旗後施放催淚彈-示威者後退>
- 21 HK01 (2019-08-11). 【深水埗遊行】催淚彈逼退示威者 白煙湧民居 街坊與警爆罵戰. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362575/深水埗遊行-催淚彈逼退示威者-白煙湧民居-街坊與警爆罵戰>
- 22 RTHK (2019-08-11). 示威者抵尖沙咀警署 警方施放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473996-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 23 RTHK (2019-08-11). 警員由尖沙咀警署發射催淚彈 示威者掙磚還擊. Retrieved from

- <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474008-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Now TV
- 24 RTHK (2019-08-12). 多區衝突 13 人傷 2 人情況嚴重包括一名眼部受傷女子. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474068-20190812.html>
Sky Post (2019-08-30). 未提受傷過程 有否報案 爆眼少女譴責警暴 警方：申請醫療紀錄尋原因. Retrieved from https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2440168/未提受傷過程_有否報案_爆眼少女譴責警暴_警方：申請醫療紀錄尋原因
Stand News (2019-08-11). 【不斷更新】示威者多區「快閃」 警方葵芳站內施放催淚彈 突衝入太古港鐵站制服多人. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-8-11-港島東-深水埗遊行遭反對-僅批維園集會市民陸續到達>
Ta Kung Pao (2019-08-17). 高永文：爆眼女傷勢由彈珠造成. Retrieved from <http://www.takungpao.com.hk/news/232109/2019/08/17/337308.html>
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 25 RTHK (2019-08-11). 警方栢麗大道快速推進制服多名示威者. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474009-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 26 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·尖沙嘴】尖沙嘴防暴警撤退 有外國遊客一度受驚哭泣. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190811/special/1565523269961>
- 27 Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-11). 【反修例】防暴警察首度於葵芳站施放疑似催淚彈 濃煙攻陷葵芳站大堂【有片】. Retrieved from https://topick.hket.com/article/2424111/【反修例】防暴警察首度於葵芳站施放疑似催淚彈_濃煙攻陷葵芳站大堂【有片】
Ming Pao (2019-08-12). 警港鐵站施催淚彈 胡椒彈兩米內射人 人權團體：嚴重違指引 不符最低武力. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190812/s00001/1565551348407/警港鐵站施催淚彈-胡椒彈兩米內射人-人權團體-嚴重違指引-不符最低武力>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-12). 【逃犯條例】葵芳站留刺鼻氣味 戴防毒面罩市民站外派口罩. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1065449/即時-香港-逃犯條例-葵芳站留刺鼻氣味-戴防毒面罩市民站外派口罩>
Stand News (2019-08-11). 【8.11 葵芳】防暴警清場 港鐵站內放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/8-11-葵芳-防暴警清場-港鐵站內放催淚彈>
- 28 Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-11). 防暴警葵芳站放催淚彈及橡膠子彈驅散示威者 列車不停站. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1065233/即時-香港-防暴警葵芳站放催淚彈及橡膠子彈驅散示威者-列車不停站>
- 29 Live video footage of Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 30 Live video footage of Now TV and Stand News
- 31 Live video footage of Now TV and Stand News
- 32 Commercial Radio (2019-08-11). 示威者防暴警察葵芳港鐵站對峙車站將關閉. Retrieved from https://www.881903.com/Page/ZH-TW/newsdetail.aspx?ItemId=1151771&csid=261_341
Facebook Page of “MTR Service Update” (2019-08-11). Evacuation of Kwai Fong Station at 11/Aug (Sun) night. Retrieved from <https://www.facebook.com/mtrupdate/posts/3192402954103960/>
- 33 HK01 (2019-08-11). 【葵涌衝突】防暴警多次放催淚彈 街坊踢拖激烈對罵. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362448/葵涌衝突-防暴警多次放催淚彈-街坊踢拖激烈對罵>
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-11). 【反修例】防暴警察首度於葵芳站施放疑似催淚彈 濃煙攻陷葵芳站大堂【有片】. Retrieved from https://topick.hket.com/article/2424111/【反修例】防暴警察首度於葵芳站施放疑似催淚彈_濃煙攻陷葵芳站大堂【有片】
Oriental Daily (2019-08-11). 修例風波：防暴警葵芳站內放催淚煙 尖沙咀中彈女示威者眼球破裂. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190811/bkn-20190811141003035-0811_00822_001.html

- Oriental Daily (2019-08-12). 警追捕示威者 太古站激戰. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190812/00174_001.html
Live video footage of Now TV and Stand News
- 34 Live video footage of Now TV and Stand News
- 35 Live video footage of Cable TV and Stand News
- 36 Live video footage of Now TV
- 37 Live video footage of Cable TV and Stand News
- 38 Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 39 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 港鐵葵芳站已關閉 (22:39). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190811/s00001/1565522316609/港鐵葵芳站已關閉>
- 40 RTHK (2019-08-12). 警方稱葵芳站屬半開放式 發放催淚彈驅散因情況危急. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474207-20190812.htm>
Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV and RTHK
- 41 Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV and RTHK
- 42 HK01 (2019-08-11). 【葵涌衝突】防暴警多次放催淚彈 街坊踢拖激烈對罵. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362448/葵涌衝突-防暴警多次放催淚彈-街坊踢拖激烈對罵>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 警方在葵芳站外施放催淚彈 濃煙攻入車站大堂. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474019-20190811.html>
RTHK (2019-08-12). 警方稱葵芳站屬半開放式 發放催淚彈驅散因情況危急. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474207-20190812.htm>
Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV and RTHK
- 43 Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV and RTHK
- 44 Apple Daily (2019-08-11). 多區民居中招 警射入葵芳站催淚彈恐襲. Retrieved from <https://hk.appledaily.com/local/20190811/GGEVABWO6BWNW6SUYABB73KWRY/>
HK01 (2019-08-11). 【葵涌衝突】防暴警多次放催淚彈 街坊踢拖激烈對罵. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362448/葵涌衝突-防暴警多次放催淚彈-街坊踢拖激烈對罵>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 警方在葵芳站外施放催淚彈 濃煙攻入車站大堂. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474019-20190811.html>
Stand News (2019-08-12). 【8.11】示威者多區「快閃」 疑似警喬裝示威者拉人 太古站近距離掃射. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/8-11-示威者多區-快閃-疑似警喬裝示威者拉人-太古站棍毆示威者>
Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 45 Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News
- 46 Live video footage of Cable TV and RTHK
- 47 Live video footage of Cable TV
- 48 RTHK (2019-08-11). 警方再在葵芳站施放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474028-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Apple Daily and Cable TV
- 49 Oriental Daily (2019-08-11). 修例風波：防暴警葵芳站內放催淚煙 尖沙咀中彈女示威者眼球破裂. Retrieved from https://hk.on.cc/hk/bkn/cnt/news/20190811/bkn-20190811141003035-0811_00822_001.html
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV and Now TV

- 50 RTHK (2019-08-11). 警方再在葵芳站施放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474028-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV and Now TV
- 51 Live video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV and Now TV
- 52 Live video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV and Now TV
- 53 Live video footage of Apple Daily, Cable TV and Now TV
- 54 Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-11). 【反修例】大批操福建口音男子出沒北角 紅衫白字「林被福建人」「塞林木」是粗口. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2424102/> 【反修例】大批操福建口音男子出沒北角 紅衫白字「林被福建人」「塞林木」是粗口
Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·港島東】市民西灣河包圍警車指罵防暴警 (23:55). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190811/s00001/1565507896837/> 【逃犯條例-港島東】市民西灣河包圍警車指罵防暴警
- 55 CitizenNews (2019-08-12). 【8.11 北角】福建人在街頭 多名記者遇襲警沒拘捕行動. Retrieved from <https://www.hkcnnews.com/article/22788/811>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 北角有白衣及紅衣人士與傳媒推撞阻拍攝. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473992-20190811.html>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 北角有穿「福建人」紅色上衣者追打他人. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473971-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Now TV, RTHK and Stand News
- 56 Ming Pao (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例·港島東】市民西灣河包圍警車指罵防暴警 (23:55). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190811/s00001/1565507896837/> 【逃犯條例-港島東】市民西灣河包圍警車指罵防暴警
Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News
- 57 HK01 (2019-08-12). 【港島東遊行】速龍闖太古站 近距離連射胡椒彈 棍毆快閃示威者. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/362598/港島東遊行-速龍闖太古站-近距離連射胡椒彈-棍毆快閃示威者>
HK01 (2019-08-11). 【港島東遊行】荃灣二陂坊械鬥遺滿地玻璃 檢削尖竹枝菜刀. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/362452/港島東遊行-荃灣二陂坊械鬥遺滿地玻璃-檢削尖竹枝菜刀>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 示威者聚集鯉魚涌港鐵站內 站外有防暴警戒備. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474034-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News
- 58 HK01 (2019-08-12). 【港島東遊行】速龍闖太古站 近距離連射胡椒彈 棍毆快閃示威者. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/362598/港島東遊行-速龍闖太古站-近距離連射胡椒彈-棍毆快閃示威者>
HK01 (2019-08-11). 【港島東遊行】荃灣二陂坊械鬥遺滿地玻璃 檢削尖竹枝菜刀. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/362452/港島東遊行-荃灣二陂坊械鬥遺滿地玻璃-檢削尖竹枝菜刀>
RTHK (2019-08-11). 示威者聚集鯉魚涌港鐵站內 站外有防暴警戒備. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474034-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Cable TV, Now TV and Stand News
- 59 Live video footage of Cable TV
- 60 Apple Daily (2019-08-12) 多區民居中招 警射入葵芳站 催淚彈恐襲. <https://hk.appledaily.com/local/20190811/GGEVABWO6BWNW6SUYABB73KWRY/>
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-12) 【反修例】警港鐵葵芳太古站內施放催淚彈 公共醫療醫生協會轟如開槍殺人. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2424418/> 【反修例】警港鐵葵芳太古站內施放催淚彈 公共醫療醫生協會轟如開槍殺人
Ming Pao Weekly (2019-08-11) 【圖輯】8.11 港島東. Retrieved from

- <https://www.mpweekly.com/culture/鯽魚涌-西灣河-港島東大遊行-120077>
Now TV (2019-08-12) 防暴警及速龍太古站外圍捕示威者. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=358792>
- RTHK (2019-08-11) 有警員在太古站追捕示威者 雙雙跌落扶手電梯底部. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474054-20190811.htm>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-12) 【逃犯條例】網民聚集太古站播衝突片 包圍車務控制室促港鐵交代. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1066121/即時-香港-逃犯條例-網民聚集太古站播衝突片-包圍車務控制室促港鐵交代>
- Sky Post (2019-08-12) 尖咀掙汽油彈 警員雙腳燒傷 多區攻防戰 催淚彈射入葵芳站太古站. Retrieved from <https://skypost.ulifestyle.com.hk/article/2424160/尖咀掙汽油彈 警員雙腳燒傷 多區攻防戰 催淚彈射入葵芳站太古站>
- SCMP (2019-08-11) As it happened: how Hong Kong police fired tear gas in an MTR station, as another weekend ended in protest violence. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3022206/illegal-anti-government-march-sets-hong-kong>
- Stand News (2019-08-11) 【8.11】示威者多區「快閃」 疑似警喬裝示威者拉人 太古站近距離掃射. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/不斷更新-8-11-港島東-深水埗遊行遭反對-僅批維園集會市民陸續到達/>
Live video footage of Now TV
- 61 Eastern District Council (2019). 嚴正跟進 8.11 港鐵太古站事件，譴責警方粗暴行為妄顧市民安全 保安局和香港警務處的綜合回覆. Retrieved from https://www.districtcouncils.gov.hk/east/doc/2016_2019/en/committee_meetings_doc/clcbsc/16131/e_clcbsc_2019_041_tc_reply.pdf
- 62 Apple Daily (2019-08-12). 【逆權運動】太古站內近距離行刑式開槍 民權觀察：當示威者靶咁射. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/breaking/realtime/article/20190812/59921962>
- HK01 (2019-08-12). 【811 衝突】區議員目擊太古站內煙霧瀰漫 警方長電梯前驅散. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362687/811 衝突-區議員目擊太古站內煙霧瀰漫-警方長電梯前驅散>
- Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-12). 【反修例】警港鐵葵芳太古站內施放催淚彈 公共醫療醫生協會轟如開槍殺人. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2424418/>【反修例】警港鐵葵芳太古站內施放催淚彈 公共醫療醫生協會轟如開槍殺人
- Ming Pao Weekly (2019-08-11). 【圖輯】8.11 港島東. Retrieved from <https://www.mpweekly.com/culture/鯽魚涌-西灣河-港島東大遊行-120077>
- RTHK (2019-08-11). 有警員在太古站追捕示威者 雙雙跌落扶手電梯底部. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474054-20190811.html>
Live video footage of Cable TV and Now TV
- 63 Live video footage of Cable TV and Now TV
- 64 Live video footage of Cable TV and Now TV
- 65 RTHK (2019-08-12). 警向西灣河包圍警車市民施放胡椒噴劑 多人不適. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474060-20190812.html>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-11). 【逃犯條例】群眾西灣河包圍警車投擲雜物 警察揮警棍出催淚水劑. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1065314/即時-香港-逃犯條例-群眾西灣河包圍警車投擲雜物-警察揮警棍出催淚水劑>
- 66 RTHK (2019-08-11). 示威者抵紅隧九龍出入口 一度走出行車線. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1473975-20190811.html>
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-11). 【堵塞紅隧】黑衣示威者再堵九龍出入口後快閃 轉往深水埗. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1065106/即時-香港-堵塞紅隧-黑衣示威者再堵九龍出入口後快閃-轉往深水埗>
Live video footage of Now TV
- 67 Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-12). 【反修例】8.11 港九多區爆衝突 示威者堵路擲物起火警

- 施催淚彈【不斷更新】. Retrieved from <https://topick.hket.com/article/2423948/>【反修例】8.11 港九多區爆衝突 示威者堵路擲物起火警施催淚彈%20【不斷更新】
- 68 RTHK (2019-08-11). 示威者一度堵塞窩打老道北行線 有司機自行搬開路障. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474031-20190811.html>
- 69 RTHK (2019-08-12). 沙田警署被圍 警方展示黑旗後施放催淚彈. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474061-20190812.html>
RTHK (2019-08-12). 居民沙田警署外聚集 防暴警察制服 10 人. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474069-20190812.html>
- 70 HK01 (2019-08-12). 【811 衝突】荃灣站外疑白衣人打人 據報三人受傷 有人血流披面. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/362609/811_衝突-荃灣站外疑白衣人打人-據報三人受傷-有人血流披面
RTHK (2019-08-12). 荃灣站對出有市民被白衣人襲擊 施襲者逃去. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474064-20190812.html>
- 71 RTHK (2019-08-12). 荃灣站對出有市民被白衣人襲擊 施襲者逃去. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474064-20190812.html>
- 72 RTHK (2019-08-12). 荃灣有市民疑被穿白衫者施襲 警於附近發現菜刀等武器. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474077-20190812.html>
- 73 Ming Pao (2019-08-12). 荃灣二陂坊市民衝突 有人血流披面 現場遭玻璃碎 (02:12). Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190812/s00001/1565543278583/荃灣二陂坊市民衝突-有人血流披面-現場遭玻璃碎>
RTHK (2019-08-12). 荃灣二陂坊有市民衝突 現場傳出玻璃樽爆裂聲. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1474080-20190812.html>



獨立監察警方處理投訴委員會
Independent Police Complaints Council

Rooms 1006-10, 10/F, China Resources Building,
No. 26 Harbour Road, Wan Chai, Hong Kong

Tel : 2524 3841
Fax : 2524 1801 / 2525 8042
Email : enq@ipcc.gov.hk
Website : www.ipcc.gov.hk



IPCC Website



IPCC YouTube Channel

A Thematic Study by the IPCC
on the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill
since June 2019 and the Police Actions in Response

Volume 4



Independent Police Complaints Council

CONTENTS

VOLUME 4

CHAPTER 12

INCIDENT DAY – SATURDAY 31 AUGUST 2019

12.1	Introduction	2
12.34	Sources of Information	12
12.35	The Events	13
12.36	Complaints against Police	44
12.39	Police Response	45
12.62	IPCC Observations	49
12.96	Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance Annex	60 62

CHAPTER 13

POLICE IDENTIFICATION DURING THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS

13.1	Introduction	104
13.3	Background	104
13.6	Public Sentiment and Expectation of Accountability	105
13.9	Internal Rules Governing Police Identification	107
13.20	Exceptional Circumstances and Threats Faced by Frontline Officers	109
13.23	Following up with Police on Identification Issue	110
13.38	Research Report of Keele University	113
13.42	Research Findings on International Practices	114
13.51	Current Measures Taken by the Hong Kong Police	117
13.53	IPCC Observations	117

CHAPTER 14

DETENTION ARRANGEMENT AT SAN UK LING HOLDING CENTRE

14.1	Introduction	120
14.8	Sources of Information	122
14.9	Information on SULHC and Its Use on 11 August	123
14.22	Complaints against Police	127
14.23	Police Response	128
14.32	IPCC Observations	130
14.41	Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance	133

CHAPTER 15

PERCEPTIONS OF POLICE OFFICERS, PROTESTERS AND GENERAL PUBLIC

15.1	Introduction	136
15.5	Survey on Police Officers by Academics from UCL	137
15.24	Survey on Protesters and the Public by CCPOS of CUHK	144
15.45	IPCC Observations	155

CHAPTER 16

CONCLUSION

16.1	Introduction	156
16.5	The Broad Picture: the Public Order Events since 9 June 2019	157
16.13	The Role of the Police	160
16.28	IPCC's Observations on Aspects Studied	163
16.32	Lessons Learnt	167
16.34	Partnership with Private Bodies	172
16.35	The Complaints System	172
16.39	The Commissioner's Supervisory Powers	173
16.41	Scope and Limitations of this Report	173
16.44	Acknowledgements	173
16.47	Concluding Observations	174
	Annex	176

	GLOSSARY	184
--	----------	-----

CHAPTER 12

INCIDENT DAY – SATURDAY 31 AUGUST 2019

Introduction

12.1 This Chapter deals with the events that happened inside Prince Edward Station on the night of Saturday 31 August, which is widely known as the Prince Edward Station Incident and continues to be an assertion for staging Public Order Events (POEs). That night, police officers, with the use of OC Foam and batons, subdued and arrested 52 persons inside Prince Edward Station.¹ News footage captured some of the Police action. After the operation, a special train conveyed 45 Arrested Persons (APs), among whom seven were injured, to Lai Chi Kok Station, where they were then taken to Princess Margaret Hospital, Caritas Medical Centre and Kwai Chung Police Station respectively. Some members of the public were highly critical of the Police action that night, condemning the Police for using force indiscriminately inside Prince Edward Station. There were claims on websites popularly visited by protesters that the Police had killed several people inside Prince Edward Station and that the authorities had covered it up.

12.2 In this Chapter, the IPCC will examine what happened that night. The events which happened throughout the day of 31 August attracted four Reportable Complaints (RCs) and 19 Notifiable Complaints (NCs) (see paragraphs 12.36 – 12.38 below for details). These complaints are investigated by CAPO and each RC will be monitored by the IPCC assigning observer(s) to attend interview(s) and observe the collection of evidence conducted by CAPO. The purpose of this Chapter is to enable the IPCC to inform itself of the facts of the incidents giving rise to these complaints and the context under which these complaints took place, so that the IPCC is in a better position to undertake its function under section 8(1)(a) of the IPCC Ordinance in monitoring and reviewing the investigations of the individual complaints by CAPO. At the same time, the opportunity is taken to make recommendations to the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) under section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance so that complaints from future Police operations may be prevented.

POEs Leading to the Events on Saturday 31 August 2019

12.3 Following the incidents on Sunday 11 August, the protests continued to rage on with increasing levels of violence as time went on.

¹ The Government (2019-11-13). Legislative Council's reply on 831 incident. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201911/13/P2019111300525.htm?fontSize=1>

12.4 The incident on 11 August which was accorded the most prominence in media reports and traffic on the internet was the incident in which a female sustained injuries in the eye allegedly caused by the Police outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station on the night of 11 August. The female, however, refused to cooperate with the Police to investigate what caused her eye injury and even refused to let the Police have sight of her medical report. As a result, the Police obtained the document by means of a search warrant. Following the court ruling over her judicial review application against Police action, on 22 January 2020, the female filed an appeal. As at 29 February 2020, a hearing date has yet to be fixed.

12.5 Also, on 12 August, thousands of protesters gathered at the Hong Kong International Airport (Airport) alleging “police brutality”, with signs proclaiming “Evil Police - An Eye for An Eye” alleging the female’s injured eye was caused by the Police.² They swamped the Departure Hall, blocking passengers’ access to the departure gates, resulting in cancellation of all remaining departing and arriving flights after 16:00 that day.

12.6 Other reported incidents on 11 August propelled further protest action. On 12 August, about a hundred people gathered in Tai Koo Station to vent grievance against police operation at the station on 11 August. They surrounded station staff and control room of the station to demand for explanation as to MTR Corporation Limited (MTRC)’s handling of the incident during and after the event.

12.7 Each POE was widely reported in the media (both press and internet) and there was much internet traffic discussing the incidents, condemning the Police, and calling for protest action.

12.8 On 13 August, some protesters gathered at the Airport and blocked the passageways to the restricted area.³ Passengers were unable to go through the immigration procedures. The Airport Authority suspended all check-in service for departure flights after 16:30. As there were many protesters and passengers in the Departure Hall, disputes between them arose. In the evening, some protesters even tied up a male passenger whom they suspected to be an undercover police officer. Around 23:00, the Police accompanied a number of ambulance officers to go inside the Airport to take the male to hospital. After the ambulance officers had rescued the male, many protesters attacked the police officers guarding at the airport entrance. The officers defended themselves with OC Foam and batons. One officer was so fiercely

² HK01 (2019-08-12). 機管局與航空公司將視情況於明早 6 時重編航班. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362757/機場集會-直擊-機管局與航空公司將視情況於明早 6 時重編航班>

³ Airport Authority Website (2019-08-13). Check-in Service for Departure Flights Suspended due to Public Assembly at HKIA, Retrieved from https://www.hongkongairport.com/en/media-centre/press-release/2019/pr_1348

assaulted with his baton snatched. He pulled out his revolver to ward off the protesters attacking him.⁴ Shortly after, a reporter was seen being beaten and tied up by protesters at the Airport. On the following day, the Airport Authority said it had been granted an interim injunction order from the High Court (on 13 August) for restraining protesters from attending any protests or public events outside areas designated by them.⁵

12.9 Reaction within the medical profession to the alleged shooting of the female in the eye was strong. On 12 August, over one hundred medical staff at Pamela Youde Nethersole Eastern Hospital held a peaceful rally to protest against police “use of excessive force”.⁶ On 13 August, health care staff in seven other hospitals held another rally. They wore black masks and bandaged their right eye. On 14 August, the staff of two other hospitals joined the demonstration. On the same day, protesters gathered outside Police Stations in Sham Shui Po, Tai Po and Tin Shui Wai to mark the Ghost Festival, burning joss paper (used in offerings to the dead) and shone laser beams at these stations. The protest in Sham Shui Po led to police firing tear gas for dispersal.

12.10 On 17 August, Hong Kong Professional Teachers’ Union launched a rally at Chater Garden and a procession covered by a Letter of No Objection (LoNO) from there to the Government House⁷, to support students and protesters arrested by the Police.⁸ On the same day, another group of protesters took to the street to “Reclaim Hung Hom and To Kwa Wan”, where they deviated from the approved route and occupied roads along their way in Hung Hom to Mong Kok. Protesters blocked Nathan Road and laid siege to Mong Kok Police Station. Some protesters on a footbridge near Mong Kok Road hurled miscellaneous objects at police officers and police vehicles underneath, including a litterbin.

⁴ RTHK (2019-08-13). Police storm airport as protesters hold ‘suspects’. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1474483-20190813.htm>

⁵ RTHK (2019-08-14). Airport Authority confirms injunction order. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1474538-20190814.htm>

HK01 (2019-08-14). Continuation of the interim injunction order, as varied, was granted to Airport Authority on 23 August until trial or further order of the court. 與示威者爆衝突 警擊左輪佩槍解圍 首現致命武器. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/突發/363494/機場集會-與示威者爆衝突-警擊左輪佩槍解圍-首現致命武器>

⁶ HK01 (2019-08-13). 東區醫院逾百醫護靜默抗議 批警使用過度武力. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/362819/811 衝突-東區醫院逾百醫護靜默抗議-批警使用過度武力>

⁷ Hong Kong Professional Teachers’ Union. 「守護下一代 為良知發聲」教育界 817 大遊行 和平表達訴求. Retrieved from <https://www.hkptu.org/61744>

⁸ Ming Pao (2019-08-17). 教師遮打花園遊行至禮賓府 教協:2.2 萬人參與 警:高峰 8300 人. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190817/s00001/1566016420127/>【逃犯條例】教師遮打花園遊行至禮賓府-教協-2.2 萬人參與-警-高峰 8300 人

12.11 On Sunday 18 August, Civil Human Rights Front (CHRF) organised a procession from Victoria Park.⁹ According to CHRF, 1.7 million people took part but the Police had a lesser count of 128 000 at peak time.

12.12 On 20 August, about a hundred people gathered in Tai Koo Station to again vent grievance against police operation at the station on 11 August. They surrounded station staff and control room of the station to demand for explanations as to MTRC's handling of the incident during and after the event.¹⁰

12.13 On 21 August, about a thousand protesters assembled at Yuen Long Station to protest in commemoration of the Yuen Long Incident on 21 July.¹¹ The POE started with a silent sit-in inside the station. Smaller groups of protesters went out to set up barriers on roads outside the station. When police officers took action to clear away the barriers, these protesters retreated into Yuen Long Station. The Police formed a cordon line at a distance from the station, while protesters barricaded station entrances with objects including metal fences and rubbish bins and let down the roller shutters to bar entry. Inside Yuen Long Station, some protesters discharged foam from fire extinguishers, while others used a firehose to wet the floor and poured liquid soap on the floor, which would cause obstruction to the Police's entry to the station. They sprayed paints on walls and on CCTV cameras inside the station. They removed the stands and bins inside the station and damaged other amenities including an escalator, before they took special trains arranged by MTRC to leave Yuen Long Station while the Police was on guard outside the station.

12.14 From nighttime of 22 August till early hours on 23 August, about 200 protesters assembled in Kwai Fong Station to protest, again in apparent commemoration of the use of tear gas at Kwai Fong Station on 11 August. Some of the protesters verbally abused some MTR station staff and shone laser lights at them, sprayed graffiti both inside and outside the station. MTRC stopped train service at Kwai Fong Station at around 00:30 on 23 August. The protesters eventually left in the early morning of 23 August.

12.15 On 23 August, the MTRC announced that “[a]s there will be upcoming protest activities, depending on the actual circumstances, the Corporation will make necessary

⁹ HK01 (2019-08-19). 維園一帶有 170 萬人 警高峰期 12.8 萬. Retrieved from <https://www.hk01.com/政情/365191/818> 集會-民陣-維園一帶有 170 萬人-警-高峰期 12-8 萬

¹⁰ Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-08-21). 逾百市民太古站內聚集 促港鐵交代警方站內執法情況. Retrieved from <https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2226091/逾百市民太古站內聚集+促港鐵交代警方站內執法情況>

¹¹ Ming Pao (2019-08-21). 防暴警元朗站外佈防 西鐵安排特別車載乘客離開元朗站. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190821/s00001/1566388054020/> 【元朗襲擊-多圖-短片】防暴警元朗站外佈防-西鐵安排特別車載乘客離開元朗站

*regulations on station and train operations. If fights, vandalism or other acts of violence occur, and under high risks or emergency situations, train service to and from the concerned stations may be stopped immediately, and / or the station may be closed, with little or no prior notice. The Police may need to enter stations to take suitable law enforcement action when necessary.”*¹² At around 22:00 on the same day, MTRC announced that they had obtained an interim injunction order¹³ to restrain people from obstructing or interfering with the operation of the railway, damaging any property at any station or using any threatening language or behaving in a riotous or disorderly manner at any station.¹⁴

12.16 On Saturday 24 August and Sunday 25 August, public meetings and processions with LoNO were held in Kwun Tong District and Kwai Tsing District respectively. On 24 August, large numbers of protesters walked in Kowloon Bay area to protest against the installation of smart lampposts which they believed to be used for covert surveillance.¹⁵ Some protesters used an electric saw to pull down a smart lamppost before others proceeded to Ngau Tau Kok Police Station, outside which they clashed with some police officers. Since then protesters dubbed MTRC the “Railway of the Communist Party”, accusing it of taking sides to help suppress protesters travelling on MTR on protest days.

12.17 On 25 August, a large crowd of protesters took part in a march from Kwai Chung to Tsuen Wan¹⁶, with some protesters setting up barricades with water-filled barriers and bamboo sticks to block various roads in Tsuen Wan. Some protesters threw petrol bombs, bricks and other hard objects at police officers who in return fired tear gas to disperse them. For the first time, the Police used the Specialised Crowd Management Vehicle (SCMV), but whilst it had some temporary effect in dispersing the crowd, the violent protests continued. At nightfall, some protesters attacked shops and a mahjong house in Yi Pei Square, Tsuen Wan, where protesters attacked police officers with long metal poles. At this point, these protesters were violent and outnumbered the police officers at the scene. They were about to attack the officers with various kinds of self-made weapons when, to protect themselves, several police

¹² MTRC (2019-08-23). Condemnation of Vandalism at MTR Stations. Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PR-19-049-E.pdf

¹³ Stand News (2019-08-23). 葵芳站今晚九時關閉 市民圍堵 港鐵獲禁制令. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/葵芳站今晚九時關閉-港鐵-針對有人損車站罷員工-考慮申禁制令/>

MTRC. Interim injunction order to restrain unlawful and wilful acts on the railway. Retrieved from <http://www.mtr.com.hk/en/customer/main/interim-injunction-order.html>

¹⁴ Continuation of the interim injunction order, as varied, was granted to MTRC on 30 August until trial or further order of the court.

¹⁵ The Government. “Multi-functional Smart Lampposts” Pilot Scheme. Retrieved from https://www.ogcio.gov.hk/en/our_work/strategies/initiatives/smart_lampposts/

¹⁶ Epoch Times (2019-08-25). 荃葵青遊行 港人冒雨上街頭. Retrieved from <https://hk.epochtimes.com/news/2019-08-25/87025041>

officers drew their revolvers. One of them fired a warning shot into the air, enabling him and his colleagues to make an escape from the scene. That night, persistent violent protests spread to different locations including Kwun Tong, Sham Shui Po, Tsim Sha Tsui and Wong Tai Sin. On that day, the Police fired 145 tear gas rounds and 50 rubber rounds.

12.18 Unlike previous occasions, MTRC decided to close stations and stop services in advance of the public meetings in East Kowloon on 24 August and in Tsuen Wan and Kwai Fong area on 25 August after communication with the Government and the Police.

12.19 Starting from 25 August, hundreds of protesters surrounded Shum Shui Po Police Station for five consecutive days.

12.20 In this atmosphere, the events of 31 August unfolded. A Chronology of the POEs of this day appears as Annex to this Chapter.

General Picture of the POEs on Saturday 31 August 2019

12.21 On 31 August 2014, the Standing Committee of the National People's Congress made a Decision Concerning the Election of the Chief Executive and Legislative Council (LegCo) of the HKSAR.¹⁷ The Occupy Movement in 2014 followed this Decision.

12.22 In commemoration of the 2014 POEs against this Decision, CHRF planned to organise an assembly at Chater Garden on the afternoon of 31 August to be followed by a march to Liaison Office of the Central People's Government (LOCPG). For public safety reasons, the Police refused CHRF's applications for LoNO. The refusal of the LoNO was widely publicised in the media. Nonetheless, the Police found on the internet that the protesters would proceed despite police objection and the internet traffic suggested attacks on police officers and damage to different Government premises with a high level of violence. According to a news article¹⁸, democratic LegCo Member(s) asked citizens to "Be Water" and to avoid being arrested by the Police.

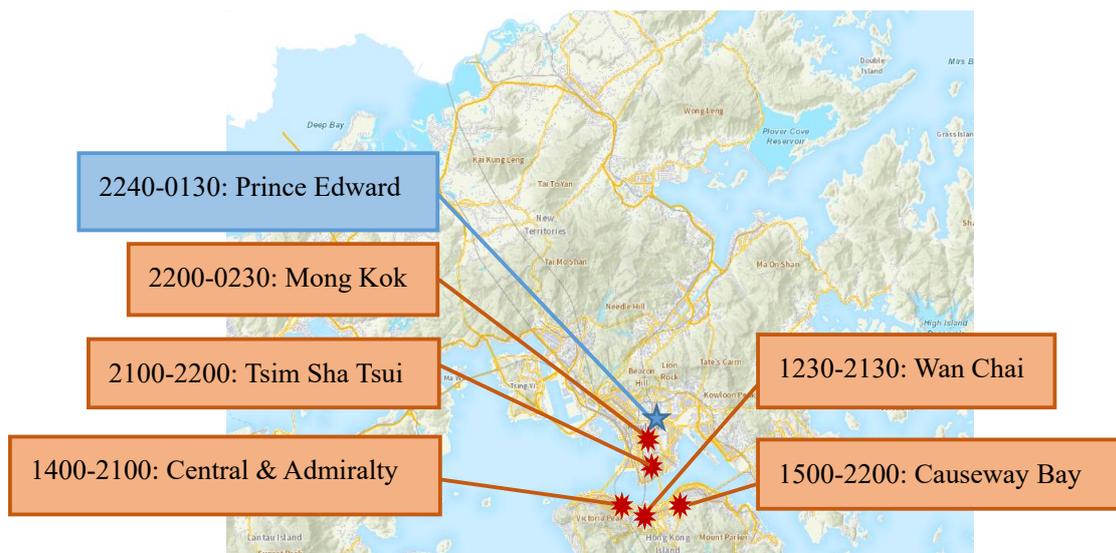
12.23 On 31 August, the Police assigned 262 officers to defend Central Government Complex (CGC) and 4 287 officers to respond to contingencies in multiple locations (see Map

¹⁷ Hong Kong Legal Information Institute. Decision of the Standing Committee of the National People's Congress on Issues Relating to the Selection of the Chief Executive of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region by Universal Suffrage and on the Method for Forming the Legislative Council of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region in the Year 2016. Retrieved from <https://www.hklii.org/eng/hk/legis/instrument/A212/decision.html>

¹⁸ CitizenNews (2019-08-13). 「網民 831 自由行、祈禱遊行 警：按環境執法 泛民：Be Water」, Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/23223/831-泛民-反對通知書-23228/網民_831_自由行_祈禱遊行-警%EF%BC%9A按環境執法-泛民%EF%BC%9Abe-water

12-1). In the morning, they put up water-filled barriers around CGC and closed Connaught Road West, Des Vieux Road West and other major roads on Hong Kong Island. SCMV's were prepared for deployment and a number of plainclothes officers were tasked for arrest action against violent protesters.

12.24 There were violent protests in multiple locations on 31 August.



Map 12-1: Multiple confrontations on 31 August
(Source of base map: Lands Department)

12.25 After 12:00 on 31 August, over a thousand protesters gathered at Southern Playground in Wan Chai and assembled at Chater Garden in Central. Around 14:00, those at Chater Garden marched off to the LOCPG, while some 100 protesters gathered outside Police Headquarters, setting up barricades on Arsenal Street and Lockhart Road. At 15:00, the protesters at Southern Playground walked towards Central, occupying Connaught Road and Hennessy Road of Wan Chai section. By this time, some protesters had already blocked Hennessy Road in Causeway Bay with traffic cones, rubbish bins, mills barriers and other large objects.

12.26 At around 17:30, thousands of protesters occupied Harcourt Road in Admiralty. Some of the protesters used mills barriers and dismantled railings to block the road while others threw bricks and petrol bombs at the police officers and set off fires at the water-filled barriers outside CGC.¹⁹ The Police fired tear gas to disperse the crowds and deployed an SCMV to discharge water with blue dye from behind the water-filled barriers. The clashes in Admiralty

¹⁹ RTHK (2019-08-31). 示威者多次投擲汽油彈 警方水馬陣內帳篷一度著火。 Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1477996-20190831.htm>

were intense and violent. Such protests subsequently spread in the direction of Causeway Bay and Tin Hau on Hong Kong Island and Tsim Sha Tsui and Mong Kok in Kowloon. In the late evening, violent protesters set fire to objects they had heaped on Hennessy Road outside SOGO Department Store.²⁰ Around 21:00, dozens of protesters confronted several plainclothes police officers in Victoria Park and assaulted them with iron rods and umbrellas, even attempting to snatch their revolvers. As a result, two plainclothes officers fired two warning shots to stop the violent protesters.²¹ Eight people were arrested in that incident.

12.27 In Kowloon, the situation in Tsim Sha Tsui deteriorated from around 21:00 onwards. Some protesters caused obstruction at Canton Road, set fire at different spots along Nathan Road and threw petrol bombs at the police cordon line near Humphreys Road.²² The Police responded with tear gas rounds in attempts to drive the protesters off Nathan Road. Some protesters fled to Yau Ma Tei and Mong Kok, continuing to cause obstruction along Nathan Road. Some of them entered Mong Kok Station to damage the facilities inside with iron bars and hammers. By the time the Police arrived, some of them had already left by train or different exits. The Police believed that some of them had fled to Prince Edward Station.

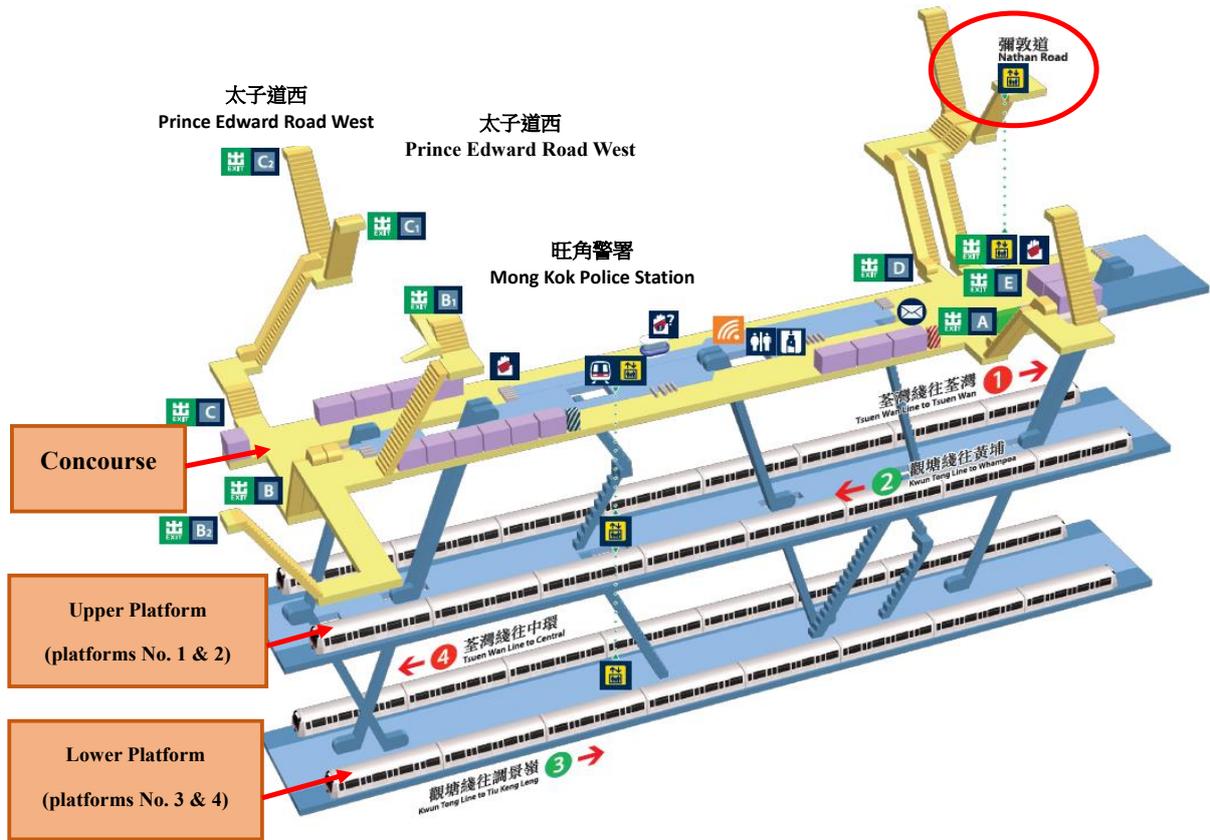
12.28 It was in this context that the Prince Edward Station Incident took place.

12.29 Prince Edward Station is underground at the junction of Nathan Road and Prince Edward Road where Mong Kok Police Station, which had been a frequent target of attack by the protesters, is located. It has seven exits, two of which, Exits B1 and E, were pertinent to the incident that night. Exit B1 is at the corner of Nathan Road and Prince Edward Road right outside the main entrance of Mong Kok Police Station. Exit E, installed with a lift going directly down to the concourse, is about 400 meters from Exit B1 diagonally north across Nathan Road, on Playing Field Road, west of Nathan Road. The station being a cross-platform interchange point on the Kwun Tong Line and the Tsuen Wan Line has three levels underground. The concourse is on the first level, No. 1 and 2 platforms are on the second level known as the Upper Platform and No. 3 and 4 platforms on the third level known as the Lower Platform. The events on 31 August mainly took place on the Lower Platform. The trains on platform No. 3 heading to the direction of Tiu Keng Leng and the trains on platform No. 4 heading to the direction of Central (see Graphic 12-1 and Map 12-2).

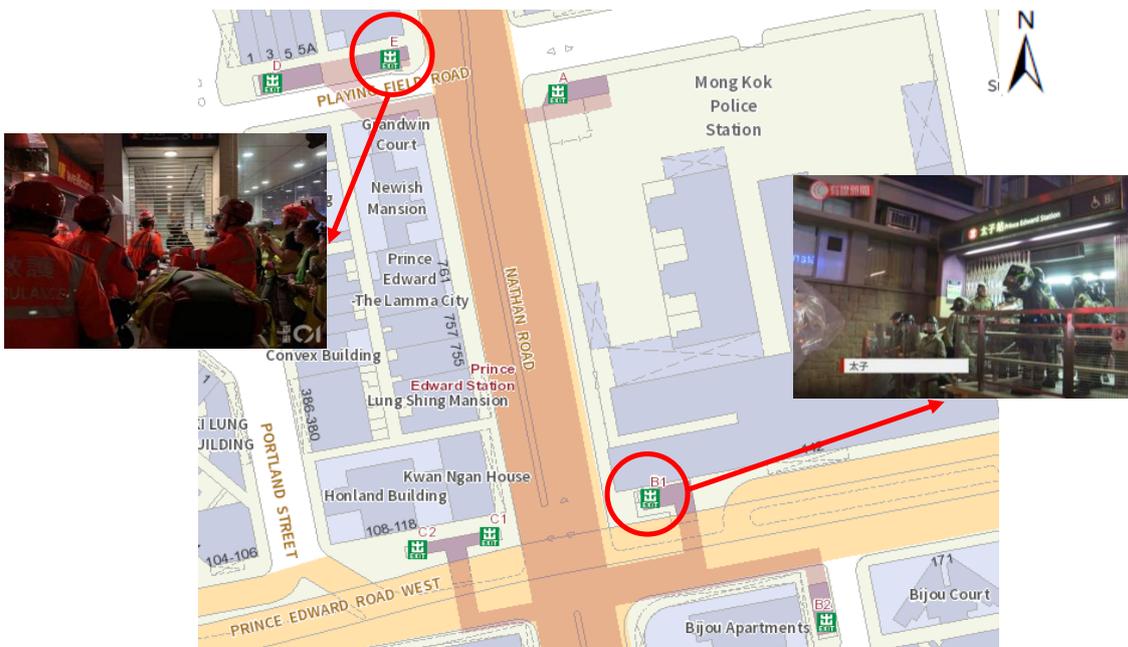
²⁰ HK01 (2019-08-31). 【8.31 遊行·全日總覽】警方：港經歷浩劫 太子站行動屬適當武力。 Retrieved from http://www.hk01.com/政情/369452/8-31_遊行-全日總覽-警方-港經歷浩劫-太子站行動屬適當武力

²¹ Ming Pao Daily News (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例·831 銅鑼灣·短片】消息：警維園開兩槍實彈維園地面遺彈殼。 Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190831/special/1567232542076>

²² Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例】速龍小隊廣東道推進 示威者擲燃燒彈。 Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1081064/即時-香港-逃犯條例-速龍小隊廣東道推進-示威者擲燃燒彈>



Graphic 12-1: Layout of Prince Edward Station
(Source of base graphic: MTRC)



Map 12-2: Map showing all exits of Prince Edward Station
(Source of base map: Lands Department) (Source of image: (left) HK01 and (right) Cable TV)

12.30 Around 22:45, 999 Console received reports from individuals of a dispute between a group of protesters and some passengers on a train that had stopped at platform No. 3 of Prince Edward Station. Soon afterwards, MTRC made another report to 999 about smoke seen coming out from the train. The Police immediately deployed officers to go into the station. The Police took arrest action inside the station. At 23:14 and 00:09, two batches of ambulance officers were seen outside the Exits B1 and E. Ambulance officers did not enter the station until 23:30 and 00:23 respectively, apparently after discussions with the Police, as police officers were seen guarding Exits B1 and E. Within hours of this event, the internet was flooded with rumours that the Police had killed people inside the station and then disposed of the bodies. These accusations were accompanied by rumours, also on the internet, that the number of casualties had been improperly altered to hide the alleged killings. Large numbers of protesters then gathered outside the station, calling for the MTRC to publish CCTV footage inside the station, and some called for the appointment of an independent inquiry. Many others began to mourn with flowers and various traditional Chinese offerings. A shrine of sorts was established outside the station and continued to be in place from time to time.

12.31 On 31 August, a total of six police officers were injured. The Hospital Authority (HA) at various hospitals treated a total of 46 persons related to the incidents on 31 August.

12.32 As at 29 February 2020, the Police had arrested 69 persons (58 male and 11 female) in connection with the incidents on 31 August 2019 for various offences, including “Unlawful Assembly”, “Possession of Offensive Weapon” and “Unlawful Detention”. Among them, two persons had been charged in Court pending trial, 67 were still under police investigation.

12.33 The Police action in the news footage inside Prince Edward Station, especially the use of force in effecting arrests, attracted widespread criticism of the Police for its use of force. What was reported by the media and alleged on the internet traffic to have happened inside the Prince Edward Station on 31 August has given rise to the following concern:

- (a) Police entering Prince Edward Station to take enforcement action;
- (b) Police and MTRC closing Prince Edward Station Exits;
- (c) Police enforcement and arrest action inside Prince Edward Station;
- (d) Police request for a special train to take APs to Lai Chi Kok Station;
- (e) Police communication and coordination with Fire Services Department (FSD); and
- (f) Police handling of rumours and speculations.

Sources of Information

12.34 For the purpose of its study of the events of 31 August, the IPCC has scrutinised the following materials:

- (a) Documents provided by the Police in respect of police deployment and operation, prior intelligence received, police weapons used and casualties involved on 31 August;
- (b) Footage recorded by the Police pertaining to the operation on 31 August. A total of three video clips of 38 minutes;
- (c) News reports and news footage produced by different television companies, newspapers and media outlets. A total of 252 news reports²³ and 112 video clips of 117 hours;
- (d) Photos and footage provided by the public in response to the IPCC's appeal;
- (e) Information provided by MTRC²⁴, including 107 CCTV footage clips of 161 hours, and 27 audio recording of 20 minutes;
- (f) MTRC press releases on the events on 31 August;
- (g) Information provided by FSD;
- (h) Information provided by FSD in a press conference held on 12 September in relation to the Prince Edward Station Incident;
- (i) Records of LegCo Meeting held on 13 November relating to the Prince Edward Station Incident; and
- (j) Information provided by the HA on the number of persons receiving medical treatment as a result of the incident on 31 August.

²³ This figure counts the paper media, while the IPCC has also viewed mainstream online media/sources including but not limited to HK01, Stand News, Hong Kong Free Press, and Hong Kong In-media etc.

²⁴ On 18 Mar 2020, the High Court ordered the MTRC to hand over CCTV footage from Prince Edward and Lai Chi Kok Stations to a student who sought damages from the Police for alleged assault. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2020/03/18/breaking-court-rules-mtr-must-release-cctv-footage-student-caught-prince-edward-station-police-raid/>

The Events

12.35 What happened at Prince Edward Station on 31 August and the subsequent events may be described in five parts, namely:

- (I) Prior events at Mong Kok Station and Prince Edward Station;
- (II) Police action inside Prince Edward Station;
- (III) Fire officers and ambulance officers entering Prince Edward Station;
- (IV) Arrangement of a special train to Lai Chi Kok Station; and
- (V) Police handling of rumours and speculations.

Part I – Prior Events at Mong Kok Station and Prince Edward Station

Mong Kok Station

Two Separate Incidents Happened inside this Station:

Occupation of the Station by Protesters Who Then Fled

- At 22:05, some violent protesters stormed Mong Kok Station and damaged the facilities there by tearing off cable, smashing CCTV cameras and windows of the control room and even breaking into the office of the station. At 22:06, about 100 protesters gathered at Mong Kok Station (source: HKPF). The protesters also damaged the CCTV cameras with umbrellas, and smashed the glass panel of the control room (see Image 12-1 and 12-2) and ticketing machines. They eventually stormed into the control room. (source: media reports). At 22:30, MTRC requested police assistance. When police officers arrived, the protesters had already left the concourse. Some of the fleeing protesters (unknown in number) left by train (source: HKPF). It should be noted that the station right after Mong Kok on Kwun Tong Line heading Tiu Keng Leng direction is Prince Edward.



Image 12-1 and 12-2: Protesters broke Mong Kok Station Control Room glass panel
(Image source: TVB)

Activities in Platforms No. 3 and 4 of Prince Edward Station Arising from Incoming Train from Mong Kok

- From 22:42 to 22:53, protesters on board a Tsuen Wan bound train at Prince Edward Station disputed with several passengers in a train compartment at platform No. 3 (source: HKPF). The train doors could not be closed after passengers alighted and boarded the train (source: MTRC).
- Media footage also showed the situation on board the same train coming in from Mong Kok Station. On the train, for unknown reason, there was a dispute between a middle-aged male passenger and some protesters. When the train was approaching Prince Edward Station, a protester slapped that male passenger on his face (see Image 12-3). The brawl continued when the train reached Prince Edward Station. The protesters got

off the train and stayed close to the train door apparently to argue with that male passenger and a few other middle-aged male passengers inside the train compartment. After a while, some protesters went into the compartment and attacked the male passengers with umbrellas (According to the Police, the violent protesters assaulted the passengers with sticks, umbrellas, sling shots and fire extinguishers). Those male passengers fought back. One of the male passengers took out and swung a hammer, and then the protesters came out of the train compartment and threw water bottles and umbrellas at male passengers inside (see Image 12-4). The fight stopped for a brief moment. Later, several protesters dashed into the train compartment and attacked the male passenger who had been slapped and was now being targeted. That male passenger fought back but he was outnumbered by the protesters. The protesters came out of the train compartment. Someone (believed to be one of the protesters) discharged a fire extinguisher into the train compartment from the platform. That train compartment was then filled with smoke (source: media reports).



Image 12-3: A protester slapped a male passenger on his face inside a train compartment
(Image source: SocRec)



Image 12-4: Protester throwing an umbrella into the train compartment
(Image source: SocRec)

- The media footage also showed that a lady standing on the platform recorded the incident and the acts of the protesters with her phone. There is no indication that she was involved in the dispute or the fight. She was however also assaulted by the protesters (source: media report).
- According to the Police, the violent protesters assaulted the passengers inside the train compartment with umbrellas, iron poles and a fire extinguisher. The incident subsequently developed into a fight (source: HKPF).
- At 22:44, at Prince Edward Station, the driver of the train which was about to depart platform No. 3 noticed that he could not close the train doors. He then noted that there

was a dispute between two groups of people in a train compartment. At 22:45, MTRC made a report to the Police. At 22:47, the passenger alarm on the train was activated (source: MTRC).

- Between 22:49 and 23:15, 999 Console received over 50 reports about what had happened inside Prince Edward Station, including the assault incident, protesters throwing smoke bombs, protesters besieging the control room at the platform and chaos inside Prince Edward Station (source: HKPF). MTR staff also noticed smoke emitting from the train (It is believed that the smoke was discharged by the protesters from the fire extinguisher). Someone also activated the alarm on another train that had stopped at platform No.4 on the other side. The trains at both platforms No.3 and 4 remained at the two platforms without departing the station (source: MTRC).
- At around 22:50, media footage captured a large group of protesters coming out from a compartment of the train from Mong Kok and began taking off their black clothing and changing into clothes of different colours (see Image 12-5 and 12-6) at the far corner of the platform, disguising themselves as ordinary passengers. Some people held open umbrellas to shield the protesters taking off their clothes (source: media reports).



Image 12-5 and 12-6: Some protesters were changing clothes on the platform of Prince Edward Station (Image source: TVB)

Part II – Police Action inside Prince Edward Station

- At 22:50, the Police deployed officers to go into Prince Edward Station (source: HKPF). Between 22:50 to 22:52, 999 Console received reports from citizens about seeing smoke coming out from a train compartment and people being injured (source: FSD). Around the same time, the Police requested MTRC to suspend all trains at Prince Edward Station. At 22:53, MTRC decided to evacuate Prince Edward Station and broadcast an announcement asking all passengers to leave immediately (source: MTRC). The Police requested all reporters to leave the station for the reason that it was a crime scene where the Police had to take investigative action (source: media reports).
- At 22:53, police officers entered Prince Edward Station via Exit C2 (source: MTRC). Around 200 police officers commanded by a senior superintendent were deployed to deal with the incident inside the station (source: HKPF).
- Some of Police action and protesters' acts inside Prince Edward Station were recorded on media footage as follows:

Police Chasing after Protesters and Making Arrests

- (a) At 22:56, police officers arrived at the Lower Platform and carried out operations on both trains (see Image 12-7) (source: MTRC). Some police officers chased after a few protesters on platform No. 4 and in the train compartments (see Image 12-8). The police officers subdued a number of protesters on the platform. One protester was seen trying to escape, and ran past some police officers, but was finally subdued onto the ground by the police officers with the use of batons (source: media reports).



Image 12-7: Police officers arrived at platform No. 3 and 4
[The CCTV cameras at platform No. 4 were damaged starting from 22:52]
(Image source: MTRC CCTV)

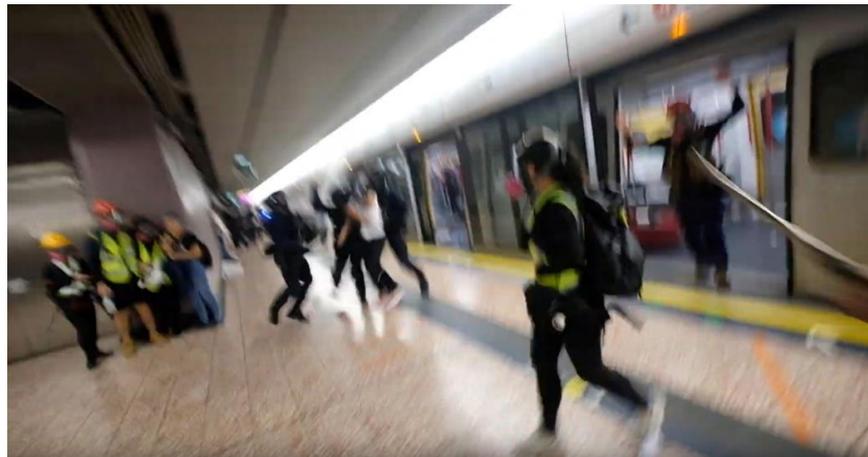


Image 12-8: Police officers were chasing protesters, who kept running away
 and putting up resistance
(Image source: Pakkin Leung@Rice Post)

- (b) The police officers arrested a number of people, some of whom wore black T-shirts and protective outfits with protective pads on shoulders, elbows and other body parts. Some people had sustained injuries, some with bleeding (source: media reports).
- (c) Police officers on arrival at the Lower Platform spotted some protesters in the train compartment. The officers asked them to leave the train but the protesters did not comply (see Image 12-9) (source: media reports).



Image 12-9: Police officers asked some of the protesters to come out from the train compartment but those protesters did not comply
(Image source: Pakkin Leung@Rice Post)

- (d) There were other people on the platform and the train at platform No. 3 was full of people. Some people dressed like reporters (with reporter helmets, light reflection vests and cameras) also appeared on the platform taking photos or videos. The police officers did not use force on any of these people (source: media reports).

Protesters Helping an Arrested Protester to Escape on Platform No. 4

- (a) After a number of protesters had been subdued onto the floor by the police officers, a female walked to those protesters and asked them one by one for their names and HKID Card numbers. They accordingly gave her their particulars. It is believed the information would help identify who had been arrested so that assistance could be made available to them. It is not known who that lady was because she did not appear on the footage. Only her voice could be heard on the video (source: media reports).
- (b) A male in black shirt who was being subdued on the ground tried to put up resistance before police officers could secure his hands behind his back with a plastic zip tie. He jumped up and ran (see Image 12-10 and 12-11). Some police officers tried to stop him. Almost at the same time, a person in green shirt who also wore a black mask hit the police officers with an umbrella to stop them from getting hold of that male (see Image 12-12). Another person pushed the police officers away. The police officers reacted with their batons, but he

jumped onto a nearby stationary escalator crowded with people (some of whom with masks) and disappeared (see Image 12-13). The person in green shirt then ran off down the platform. During the chaotic situation, the male in black shirt also ran away to a direction that could not be captured by the camera. Police officers used OC Foam and batons in the episode (source: media reports).



Image 12-10 and 12-11: A male already subdued on the ground took the opportunity to escape when a lady asked for his name and HKID Card number
(Image source: SocRec)



Image 12-12: A male in green shirt hit the police officer with an umbrella
(Image source: SocRec)



Image 12-13: A male jumped onto a stationary escalator crowded with people
(Image source: SocRec)

Police's Search on People Believed to Be Protesters

- (c) One of the compartments of the train at platform No. 3 was crowded with passengers. Several police officers spotted among the passengers, four persons wearing helmets, masks, light reflection vests, black T-shirts and black trousers, and carrying backpacks. The police officers repeatedly asked them to get off the train but they did not do so. The police officers did not get on the train to take action but waited on the platform. There was a brief moment of stand-off. Eventually, the four persons came out from a train compartment (see Image 12-14). The police officers then conducted a search on them. It is not known whether the police officers took any arrest action afterwards (source: media reports).



Image 12-14: Police officers requested four persons who were believed to be protesters to get off a train for a search
(Image source: SocRec)

Handling APs at Platform No. 3

- A group of APs, most of them young people, were detained at the bottom of an escalator at the far end of platform No. 3. There were many of them. Some squatted on the floor facing the wall or the side of the escalator. Some held their hands on the top of their heads and a few had their hands tied behind their back with plastic zip ties (source: media reports). All APs were then arranged to the end of platform No. 3 near the first train compartment heading towards Tiu Keng Leng direction (source: HKPF).

Police Action inside Train Compartments

- (a) Police officers attempted to take enforcement action inside a train compartment at platform No. 4. One police officer pointed a rubber baton launcher at the train compartment and another police officer discharged OC Foam into it. Some protesters inside the compartment opened umbrellas to cover themselves (see Image 12-15). Some pointed their umbrellas at the police officers. Despite Police action, the protesters did not leave the train (source: media reports).



Image 12-15: Police officers instructing the protesters to come out from the train compartment

(Image source: Pakkin Leung@Rice Post)

- (b) In another episode, several police officers entered the train compartment at platform No. 4 to take enforcement action (see Image 12-16). Some protesters resisted, striking the police officers with their umbrellas and the officers used batons and OC Foam. The scene was quite chaotic (source: media reports). More than ten violent protesters attacked the officers with umbrellas and other

sharp objects (source: HKPF).



Image 12-16: Police officers taking enforcement action inside the train compartment

(Image source: Pakkin Leung@Rice Post)

- (c) Many of the protesters retreated to the end of the train compartment and opened their umbrellas to form a barrier, while the clash between some of the protesters and a few police officers was taking place. Two young men and two women in masks, who were in close proximity to the protesters, were cowering on the ground (see Image 12-17), apparently in a state of panic under the chaotic situation. At one time, the police officers discharged OC Foam into the train from outside the train compartment. The man in front put up his hands. The police officers did not arrest them or any person but instead got off the train. It could be seen that the train doors closed and opened several times, suggesting that the train was about to depart. Eventually the train doors were closed. The police officers remained on guard at the platform whereas some people inside the train pointed their fingers at them seemingly scolding them (source: media reports²⁵).

²⁵ CCTV footage provided by the MTRC did not capture the Police's use of force / how the protesters were subdued on the platform clearly, and the situation inside the train compartments at the material time. Some CCTV footage was not available because the CCTV cameras were not functioning at that time.



Image 12-17: Two young men and two women were covering on the ground inside a train compartment

(Image source: Pakkin Leung@Rice Post)

- (d) According to the Police, while conducting sweeping at platforms No. 3 and 4 of Prince Edward Station, the officers exercised observation and professional judgement and successfully located some mobsters, who disguised themselves as ordinary passengers and scattered around the MTR platforms, including some hiding inside the train compartments at platform No. 4 (Tsuen Wan Line to Central), i.e. opposite to platform No. 3. The police officers were immediately attacked by more than ten violent protesters with umbrellas and sharp-edged objects. In response, the Police used minimum force necessary to control and subdue them, including the use of police batons and OC Foam. During the confrontation, officers successfully put a couple (a male and a female) under control inside a train compartment at platform No. 4. However, two other violent protesters (a male and a female) were spotted hiding behind the couple and strongly resisted arrest with force. Officers thus used minimum force necessary to control those two protesters. However, at that juncture, the doors of the train began to close unexpectedly. Police officers would be outnumbered by the protesters if they were trapped in the compartment. The officers therefore immediately retreated from the train compartments for their safety. The train doors then closed. Subsequently, the train departed the platform (source: HKPF).
- According to MTRC, at 23:04, the train doors eventually closed and the train at platform No. 4 departed in the direction of Yau Ma Tei (source: MTRC). [According to the

Police, the train departed at 23:02]

- At 23:05, the Police requested MTRC to stop the train from departing Prince Edward Station. They had requested MTRC earlier at 22:52 to stop the train service at the station but MTRC did not do so (source: HKPF).
- At 23:09, the train which carried some of the protesters skipped Mong Kok Station (upon police request) and arrived at Yau Ma Tei Station (source: HKPF). At 23:10, MTRC suspended the train services on the Kwun Tong Line and the Tsuen Wan Line (source: MTRC).
- By the time police officers reached Yau Ma Tei Station, most of the passengers and protesters had left the train. Police officers eventually arrested ten persons on the train including a couple cowering on the train floor as seen on the news footage (source: HKPF).
- According to the Police, at 23:41, more than a hundred people were gathering outside Prince Edward Station. At 23:45, over 200 protesters with gear were going to Mong Kok Police Station from the junction of Nathan Road and Argyle Street. At 00:36, about 800 violent protesters had gathered near Prince Edward Station (source: HKPF).
- Police arrest action continued inside Prince Edward Station until 00:55. During the incident, the Police arrested a total of 63 persons, including one in Mong Kok area, 52 in Prince Edward Station and ten in Yau Ma Tei Station. Petrol bombs, laser pointers, catapults, steel marbles, helmets, respirators and other equipment were found on them (source: HKPF).
- Police arrested the protesters at different locations inside Prince Edward Station. For the purpose of easy handling and treatment by ambulance and police officers, the Police arranged for all the APs to stay at the end of platform No. 3 heading Tiu Keng Leng direction (see Image 12-18 and 12-19) (source: HKPF).



Image 12-18 and 12-19: Police arranging the APs to the end of platform No. 3
(Image source: MTRC CCTV)

Part III – Fire Officers and Ambulance Officers Entering Prince Edward Station

Exit B1 – First and Second Batch of Fire Officers Entered

- At 23:01, in response to a citizen report that smoke was seen inside the station, the first batch of fire officers arrived at Exit B1 (source: FSD).
- According to the CCTV footage at Exit B1, some police officers arrived at Exit B1 almost at the same time as the fire officers. The gate was closed at that time and no one was guarding at the exit (source: MTRC CCTV). It was believed that the gate was actually locked, because according to FSD, they had to cut the lock in order to enter (source: FSD).

- According to the CCTV footage at Exit B1, at 23:06, the gate of Exit B1 opened and 13 fire officers entered the station (More than 20 police officers entered the station as well) (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV).
- At 23:12, fire officers inside Prince Edward Station reported to FSD Console that there was no fire (source: FSD).
- According to the CCTV footage at Exit B1, at 23:20, another six fire officers entered the station via Exit B1 (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV). By then, a total of 19 fire officers were inside the station. According to FSD, the fire officers had the “First Responders” (先遣急救員) qualification and could provide first aid to the injured persons. Their mission was to provide prompt basic life support to patients before the arrival of ambulance officers to increase their survival rate (source: FSD). Some police officers closed the gate and stood guard at the exit after the entry of the fire officers (source: MTRC CCTV).

Exit B1 – A Probationary Ambulance Officer (PAO) Entered

- According to FSD, at 23:14 (8 minutes after the fire officers entered), in response to a report from Police Console that people were injured inside the station, the first batch of ambulance officers (one PAO and his team) arrived at Exit B1. According to the FSD, the police officers on guard at Exit B1 told the PAO that no one had been injured inside the station (source: FSD and media reports).
- The PAO stayed at Exit B1 and was seen communicating with a police officer at Exit B1 (see Image 12-20) (source: FSD and media reports). According to FSD, at 23:30, the PAO entered the station by himself (see Image 12-21) (source: FSD). The CCTV at Exit B1 captured the moment (time of the MTRC CCTV is 23:35) when the PAO entered Exit B1 (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV).



Image 12-20: PAO communicated with a police officer at Exit B1
(Image source: RTHK)



Image 12-21: PAO entered the Station via Exit B1
(Image source: RTHK)

- After entering the station, the PAO conducted a brief headcount of the injured persons inside the station. At 23:46, he reported to FSD Console that there were about ten to 15 injured persons. At 00:01, the PAO revised the number of casualties to nine. At 00:15, he further changed it to ten. At 01:02, he gave a final count of seven, all APs. According to the information given by FSD at a press conference on 12 September, the PAO revised the number a few times because the situation inside the station was chaotic and the injured persons were not found or kept at the same location, but spotted at different places (source: FSD).

Exit E – Three Ambulance Officers Entered

- At 23:17, in response to a call made by a citizen to the FSD Console that some people had been assaulted inside Prince Edward Station, three ambulance officers arrived at Exit E (source: FSD). The CCTV at Exit E captured at 23:20 the ambulance officers entering the station with a stretcher before MTR staff closed the gate at Exit E (source: FSD and MTRC CCTV).
- According to the CCTV footage at Exit E, at 23:34, 17 minutes later, the three ambulance officers appeared inside Exit E with a female on the stretcher, accompanied by four police officers. MTRC staff opened the gate for the departure of the fire officers with the female on the stretcher (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV).

Exit E – Third Batch of Four Fire Officers Entered

- At 23:34, the third batch of fire officers (four in total) entered the station, just as the three ambulance officers came out with a female on the stretcher from Exit E (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV).

Exit E – 19 Ambulance Officers Entered

- According to FSD, ambulance officers proceeded to Exit E and tried to enter because there was a lift located in that exit (source: FSD).
- According to the CCTV footage at Exit E, at 00:09, a number of ambulances arrived at Exit E where the gate was closed (source: MTRC CCTV). According to FSD, media reports and news footage, at 00:15, ambulance officers at Exit E were told by a police officer that no one was injured inside the station (see Image 12-22) (source: FSD and media reports). At one point, a fire officer came up from the station and told the ambulance officers outside the gate that there were injured persons inside (see Image 12-23) (source: media reports).



Image 12-22: Ambulance officers outside Exit E of Prince Edward Station
(Image source: HK01)



Image 12-23: A fire officer told two ambulance officers that there were injured persons inside Prince Edward Station
(Image source: RTHK)

- From the CCTV footage, a police officer intermittently appeared at the gate and communicated with a MTR staff there (source: MTRC CCTV). At 00:23, the MTR staff opened the gate for 19 ambulance officers to enter the station (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV).

Part IV – Arrangement of a Special Train to Lai Chi Kok Station

- The Police arrested a total of 52 persons at Prince Edward Station. Around 23:20, the Police escorted seven of them directly to Kwai Chung Police Station by police vehicles (source: HKPF).
- According to the Police, at 00:36, about 800 violent protesters had gathered outside Prince Edward Station. The Police assessed that it was unsafe to take APs out of Prince Edward Station, and so decided to ask MTRC to arrange a special train to take the remaining 45 APs, seven of whom were injured, to Lai Chi Kok Station, where they could escort the APs respectively to hospitals and a police station (source: HKPF).
- At 00:54, MTRC arranged a special train on police request to run from Prince Edward Station to Lai Chi Kok Station (source: MTRC). At 01:23, a special train carrying 45 APs, seven of them injured, left Prince Edward Station for Lai Chi Kok Station (source: MTRC and HKPF).
- At 01:28, the special train arrived at Lai Chi Kok Station (source: MTRC). From 01:35 to 01:55, the seven injured APs were escorted to Princess Margaret Hospital and Caritas Medical Centre respectively, and the 38 others to Kwai Chung Police Station (source: MTRC, FSD and HKPF)

Part V – Police Handling of Rumours and Speculations

- While the Police was still taking enforcement action inside Prince Edward Station, posts and messages began to appear on the internet, such as LIHKG, HKGOLDEN, DISCUSS and YouTube, claiming that the Police had indiscriminately used force on people inside the station. Starting from the small hours on Sunday 1 September, speculations that someone might have been killed inside Prince Edward Station started sprouting on the internet. Netizens queried the genuineness of the number of casualties inside the station given by FSD. From then on, allegations that people had been killed by the Police in Prince Edward Station began to burgeon on the internet and in the days that followed, these allegations seemed to have taken root, as people began to believe them and started bringing flowers and various traditional Chinese offerings to a shrine of sorts outside Exit E at Prince Edward Station. The following is a chronology of the

appearance of some of the posts and messages on various internet platforms and how the Government, the Police, FSD and MTRC responded to those messages, some of which were unsupported claims.

31 August

- At 22:59, a television station had a live broadcast of what was happening inside Prince Edward Station (see Image 12-24) (source: media reports and live video footage). Posts and messages began to appear on the internet.



Image 12-24: Live broadcast showing police officers taking enforcement inside train compartment

(Image source: TVB)

- At 23:01, while the Police was still taking action inside the station, a post entitled “cls 黑警走左入太子站列車 見人就打” on LIHKG (Translation: Crazy, after getting into Prince Edward Station, police officers hit whoever they saw.). In the messages that followed this post, some netizens criticised the Police for using excessive force and beating people indiscriminately on the platform and inside the train compartment similar to the attack by those people dressed in white in 721 Yuen Long Incident (see Image 12-25) (source: LIHKG).



Translation

7. Police officers assaulted and arrested civilians inside Mong Kok (sic) MTR Station, which was violent and an abuse of power.

8. Police officers rushed into the train compartment to hit people vigorously, like what the people dressed in white had assaulted others in the 721 Yuen Long Incident.

Image 12-25 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 23:18, a post entitled “太子站 警察發動恐襲 必要向國際求救” appeared on LIHKG (Translation: The Police launched terrorist attack in Prince Edward Station. Must seek international assistance.) (see Image 12-26).



Translation

Right away! Seek international assistance immediately. Uniformed police officers attacked citizens in the MTR indiscriminately. Hong Kong is in an inhumane condition. Must let everyone know about this.

Image 12-26 (Image source: LIHKG)

Sunday 1 September

- At 02:19, a posts entitled “太子站啲傷者係咪仲未出黎” (Translation: Have the injured persons still not come out from Prince Edward Station?) appeared on LIHKG (source: LIHKG). The post creator commented that “無記者影入面做咩左都無人知” (Translation: No reporter video recorded or took photos inside the station. No one would know what had been done inside.). At 02:21, a netizen put up a message to this post saying “現場有傳打死左人，

未FC！！！！！” (Translation: People at the scene claimed that someone had been beaten to death. Haven’t fact checked yet.)” (see Image 12-27). This was the first time speculation of people might have died inside Prince Edward Station emerged on the internet.



Image 12-27 (Image source: LIHKG)

- Around 03:00, the Police (Police Public Relations Branch (PPRB)) held a stand-up briefing to give an overview of the POE situation on 31 August. Regarding Police action inside Prince Edward Station, the police representative stated that officers had used their professional judgement to distinguish protesters from regular passengers. The PPRB officer did not give details of the casualties inside Prince Edward Station (source: media report). The Police did not say whether anyone had died in the station. Nor did the reporters ask about it.
- At 08:16, a post entitled “政府唔好再包庇黑警濫用暴力，應該盡快拉晒呢班黑警去坐監” (Translation: The Government should no longer allow the Police to use violence, should take the triad police officers to jail as soon as possible) appeared on the DISCUSS forum. The post creator claimed that the police officers were terrorists and assaulted the people inside the train (source: DISCUSS).
- At 16:37, a post entitled “冇人覺得封太子站好奇怪？” (Translation: Anyone felt the closure of Prince Edward Station strange?) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator commented that “琴晚傷者冇人知去左邊,依家仲要封埋站,入面 0 消息,難道真係有人死左?” (Translation: Last night, no one knew where the injured had been taken to. Now, the station is even closed. No news from inside. Is it really that someone had died?) In the messages that followed this post, some netizens suspected that the Police had killed people inside the station, saying “似打死人” (Translation: Seems people were beaten to death), “我信死左人” (Translation: I believe that someone has died) (source: LIHKG). More speculation of people being killed came to light.
- At 17:15, a post entitled “封站係因為黑狗太子恐襲 死左幾個市民 依加要執手尾” (Translation: The reason for closing station was that the Police had killed

several citizens, so the Police had to tidy up the scene) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator stated that “若果不能毀滅 就開始整理現場 想造成死者係因為自己失誤或被示威者襲擊而身亡” (Translation: If the evidence could not be destroyed, the scene had to be tidied up to create an impression that the deceased died of their/his own mistakes or attacks by protesters.) (source: LIHKG). This appears to be the first time bare speculative allegations with no factual support affirming that people were killed appeared on the LIHKG. LIHKG postings were heavily watched and it would not be surprising that this posting would have gone viral on the internet web very quickly.

- Around 18:00, Kowloon West Region (Crime) of the Police gave a briefing to the media regarding the arrest operations mounted inside Prince Edward Station on 31 August. There was no mention whether any person had died during police enforcement (source: media report).
- At 20:19, a post entitled “嚴重懷疑尋晚太子死咗人” (Translation: Seriously suspecting that someone had died at Prince Edward last night) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator stated “結果封站封一日。真毀屍滅跡” (Translation: The station ended up being closed for one day. Undoubtedly destroying evidence) (source: LIHKG).
- In the afternoon, the Hong Kong Journalists Association (HKJA) and the Hong Kong Photographers Association issued a statement condemning the Police for obstructing news coverage inside Prince Edward Station. According to the statement, “...many reporters and photographers were expelled during their reporting and filming without any reasonable explanation. The closing of the Prince Edward Station barred any members of the press from entering the station for reporting, hence the lack of media monitoring on the police conduct inside the station.” (source: HKJA).

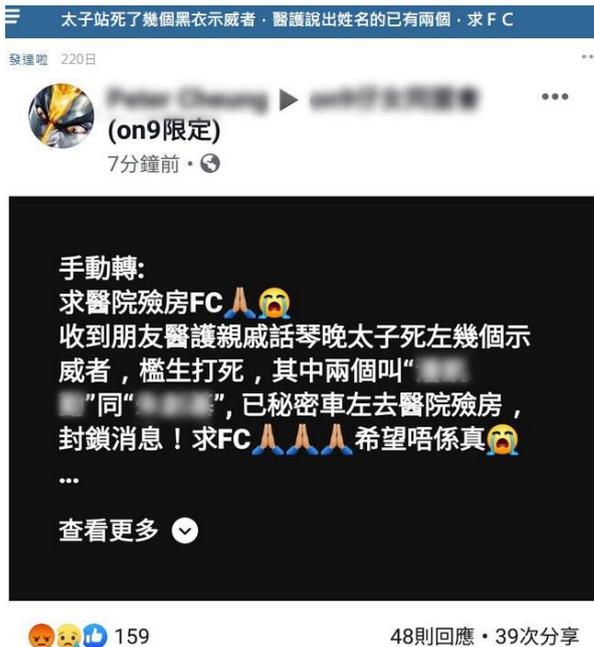
2 September

- At 01:29, a post entitled “正式宣佈八月三十一日，一位香港人被黑警活生生打死” (Translation: Formally announce that a Hong Kong person was beaten to death by police officers on 31 August.) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator, referring to a live broadcast video (see Image 12-28), claimed that a protester was unconscious when being subdued by a police officer on the platform and said that the protester was actually dead at that time (source: LIHKG).



Image 12-28 (Image source: LIHKG, the video was originally from Apple Daily)

- At 02:26, a post entitled “太子站死了幾個黑衣示威者，醫護說出姓名的已有兩個，求 FC” (Translation: Several protesters in black outfits died inside Prince Edward Station. Health care workers gave the names of at least two people. Please fact check it) appeared on HKGOLDEN. The post creator showed a screen capture of a Facebook page (see Image 12-29), which stated that two persons (with two Chinese names given) were killed inside Prince Edward Station and their dead bodies had been sent to mortuary (source: HKGOLDEN).



Translation

“Please check with the mortuary of the hospital.

My friend’s relative, a medical worker, claimed that several protesters were beaten to death in Prince Edward Station Incident last night. Two of them named “XXX” and “XXX” (Name deleted by the IPCC) had been sent to the mortuary. The news are blocked. Please do a fact check. Hope this is not real.”

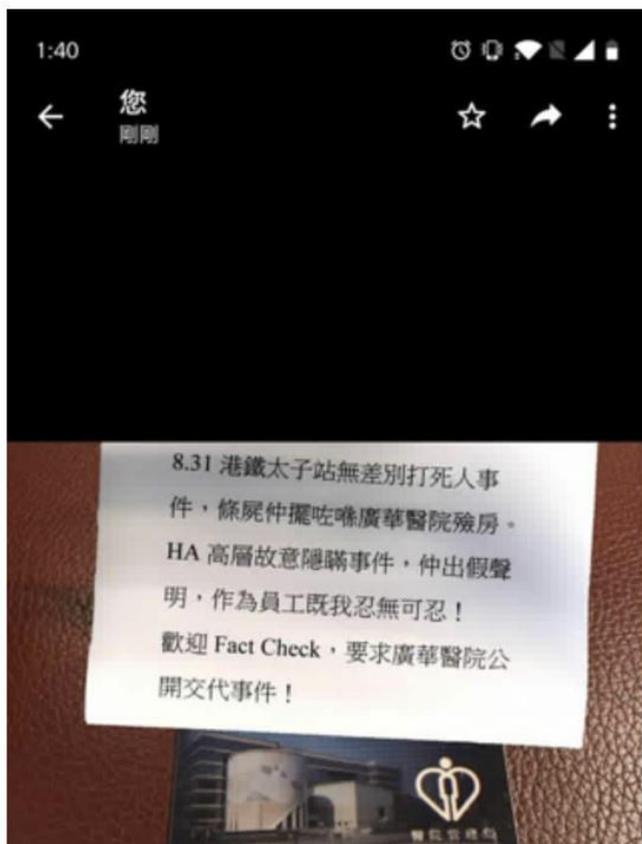
Image 12-29 (Image source: HKGOLDEN, originally from Facebook)

- In the morning (on 2 September), the Chief Secretary for Administration (CS), together with the Secretary for Security, the Secretary for Transport and Housing, and the Secretary for Education held an inter-departmental press conference in relation to the POEs that happened over the weekend on 31 August and 1 September. A reporter asked CS to comment on the action of the Police in Prince Edward Station and to respond to the alleged death incident inside the station. CS replied that there was no death report in connection with the incidents on 31 August according to the information from HA (source: The Government). This was the first occasion that a Government official rebutted the claim that someone had died in the Prince Edward Station Incident.
- At 12:19, a post entitled “幫手出:831 前線救護爆料” (Translation: Help to disseminate: 831 frontline medical staff give information) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator claimed that he was an ambulance officer who was on duty on 31 August and went to Prince Edward Station. He had heard that the number of casualties that initially reported to FSD control room was ten. However, only seven injured persons were sent to the hospitals at the end. In the messages that followed this post, some netizens queried why three injured persons were missing. Had these three injured persons died? “點解有三個消失”, “消失咗 3 個去咗邊 係咪死咗?” (Translation: Why did three people disappear? Where were they taken to? Are they dead?) (source: LIHKG).
- At 13:46, a post entitled “831 太子站死人消息” appeared on LIHKG. (Translation: Information on those dead at 831 Prince Edward Station) The post creator posted a photo with a message. A person who claimed to be an HA staff (not named) said that a dead body in connection with the Prince Edward Station Incident had been located at Kwong Wah Hospital (see Image 12-30) (source: LIHKG).

← 831太子站死人消息

#1 · 7 個月前

相入面唔係我黎，
有人冇幫手check到？
急呀大佬



Translation

“...The corpse is now at the mortuary of Kwong Wah Hospital...the HA senior management issued a false statement to cover up the incident...Welcome to do a fact check on it...”

Image 12-30 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At the regular Police press conference at 16:00, a police spokesman stated that on 31 August, the police officers had taken enforcement action inside Prince Edward Station based on their intelligence and their professional judgement at the scene. He added that when police officers took enforcement action inside the station, they were attacked by protesters with umbrellas and hard objects. In response, the officers used proportionate force in defence. He said that there was no instance of death that night (source: media report). This was the first time that the Police refuted the claim that someone had died on 31 August. A FSD representative who was present at the press conference provided an overview of their operations on 31 August and stated that seven injured persons were sent to the hospitals, but did not say whether the number of casualties had been revised over time.

3 September

- At 12:35, another post update on “831 太子死亡事件整合(3.9.2019) 及行動討論” (Translation: 831 Prince Edward death incident and operational discussion.) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator posted a “Missing Person Notice” on LIHKG purporting to look for missing persons (see Image 12-31). The messages stated that the two persons did not leave the Prince Edward Station that evening, and asked people to provide more information on the whereabouts of the two missing persons. Messages following the post claimed that some APs had died (source: LIHKG).



Translation

“ *Missing Person*

The person in this picture lost consciousness after being beaten by police officers. The Police then requested to cordon off the station and expel reporters and medical workers therefrom. No injured person was seen leaving the station afterwards...”

Image 12-31 (Image source: LIHKG)

- At 16:00, the Police stated at a regular press conference that there was no case of death in the Prince Edward Station incident.

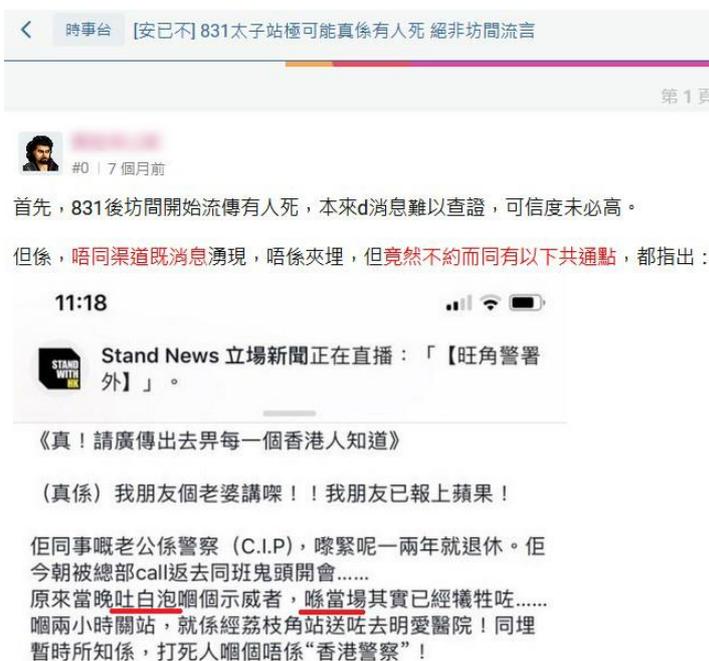
4 September

- A netizen uploaded a video clip entitled “跟進 831 太子站懷疑警方打死人事件” (Translation: Follow up on 831 Prince Edward Station Incident, suspecting that the Police had killed someone.) onto YouTube. The video contained media footage, which covered the Prince Edward Station Incident. The person who made the video added textual descriptions, including that (i) there was proof that someone had been killed inside the station; (ii) the Police did not allow ambulance

officers to enter Prince Edward Station; (iii) some netizens demanded MTRC to release the complete CCTV footage to uncover the truth; and (iv) the Police had unreasonably beaten protesters.’ (source: YouTube).

5 September

- At the 16:00 regular Police press conference, reporters questioned why police officers used batons and OC Foams on innocent citizens inside train compartments. A police representative replied that reporters should not only focus on a clip that had lasted for several seconds, and reiterated that the officers were taking enforcement action in response to the violence at the material time. He repeated that no protesters had been beaten to death in the Prince Edward Station Incident (source: media report).
- At 23:13, a post entitled “831 太子站極可能真係有人死 絕非坊間流言” (Translation: Very likely that someone had died inside Prince Edward Station on 831. It is not a rumour) was created on HKGOLDEN. It was mentioned in the post that according to a Chief Inspector of Police (CIP), one protester was dead inside the Prince Edward Station that evening (see Image 12-32) (source: HKGOLDEN).



Translation

“...A CIP revealed that a protester was confirmed dead on the spot ...”

[Note: no CIP has so far come forward to confirm this]

Image 12-32 (Image source: HKGOLDEN)

6 September

- At 01:58, a post entitled “太子站一共有 6 人死 全部死於斷頸” (Translation: Six people had died inside Prince Edward Station, all died of broken necks.) appeared on LIHKG. It claimed that police officers had broken the necks of six people and killed them. The post, however, did not give any details of these six people (see Image 12-33) (source: LIHKG).

Translation: “...A neighbour came to say that his friend, a staff of mortuary, told him that six persons had died at Prince Edward MTR Station and all of them died of broken necks. It was the police officers who twisted their necks to 90 degrees. His friend asserted that it was true, and that the medical workers and police officers knew about it. The information on the internet was disseminated by police officers. However, whether the dead body which was found floating in Sai Kung is related to this incident is not known.”

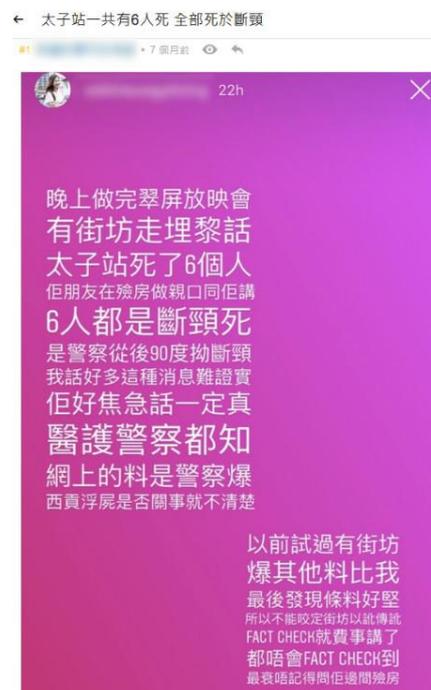


Image 12-33 (Image source: LIHKG, originally from Instagram)

- At 20:12, in response to the rumour that FSD had concealed the actual number of casualties inside Prince Edward Station, FSD issued a press release which stated:
 - (a) the situation in the station was chaotic and the injured persons were dispersed at different locations and they moved around on the platform. Some injured persons may have been repeatedly counted at the initial headcount by the ambulance personnel;
 - (b) when handling incidents with multiple casualties, the officer at the scene would firstly conduct a brief headcount of casualties and report the preliminary estimation to the Fire Services Communications Centre for its prompt dispatch of additional resources and manpower in order to enhance the efficiency of the rescue operation; and

- (c) the number of casualties initially counted would be updated from time to time (source: FSD).

7 September

- At 17:09, the Government issued a press release, stating that there were no death cases over the past 3 months caused by law enforcement agencies during operation. The Government rejected the rumour that there was death in Prince Edward Station Incident (source: The Government).

9 September

- FSD officers joined the regular Police press conference at 16:00. FSD representatives rebutted the rumours that FSD officers had deliberately altered the number of casualties on 31 August in the Prince Edward Station Incident, and explained FSD practice for counting the number of casualties (source: HKPF).

10 September

- In the morning, the Police, FSD, HA and MTRC held a joint press conference for the first time in response to the Prince Edward Station Incident. Spokespersons from the Police, FSD, HA and MTRC asserted that no one had died inside Prince Edward Station. A police representative reiterated that the so-called death incident inside Prince Edward Station was a malicious and groundless rumour. The Police had not received any missing person report stemming from the Prince Edward Station Incident (source: media report).

11 September

- At 16:00, a LegCo Member held a press conference. She showed FSD internal records on the counting of casualties on 31 August and queried why FSD changed the number of casualties several times. (It is not known how the LegCo Member had got the information.) (source: media report).
- At 21:48, a news article was released (see Image 12-34). The article stated that the ambulance officer inside Prince Edward Station had amended the number of casualties on his own, and questioned why a male patient in coma was taken out of the station by FSD at an earlier time (source: media report).



Translation

“An officer in charge had changed the number of injured persons on his own. Did FSD take the unconscious man away before counting the number of injured?”

Image 12-34 (Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)

12 September

- In the small hours, netizens spread information on Facebook and LIHKG that MTRC had closed the Prince Edward Station to perform a funeral ceremony for the deceased inside the station. A netizen, after seeing the information on the internet, went to the vicinity near the station and conducted a live broadcast on the internet. The 122- minutes long live broadcast video captured the vicinity of the Prince Edward Station, mainly near Exit E. At that time, the station, as well as the gates of the various exits, had already been closed after service hours. The netizen taking the video walked around the station and talked to passers-by. Some passers-by indicated that they came to check if any funeral ceremony was taking place. However, no such ceremony could actually be seen throughout the broadcast video. At 20:22, a media reported on the internet that around 120 000 persons had watched the video after it was made available online for 11 hours and the video was subsequently shared by 700 persons with more than 1 000 comments received [As at 6 March 2020, there are over 189 000 had viewed this video] (source: media report).
- In the afternoon, FSD held a press conference to address the concern over the counting of casualties. FSD spokesperson reiterated the clarification given in their press release on 6 September and confirmed that there was no death case at all in the Prince Edward Station Incident (source: media report).

17 September

- At 15:00, another LegCo Member held a press conference and showed FSD incident log records. (It is not known how the LegCo Member obtained those incident log records.) He queried why FSD amended the incident log records

in relation to (i) counting the number of casualties and their injury conditions (amended on 3 September); and (ii) the Police taking the injured persons to Lai Chi Kok Station (amended on 10 September) (source: media report).

19 September

- In the afternoon, FSD held another press conference. FSD stated that it was a common practice to amend the incident log records after reviewing the information following an incident. There was a possibility that the PAO may have double-counted injured persons during the initial assessment (source: FSD and media report).

From 30 September Onward

- Between September 2019 and January 2020, on the last day of each month, i.e. on 30 September, 31 October, 30 November, 31 December and 31 January 2020, some people continued to place flowers outside Prince Edward Station (see Image 12-35 and 12-36) (source: media reports).



Image 12-35 and 12-36: People placed flowers at Exit B1 of Prince Edward Station, blocking the entrance

(Image source: (left) *Epoch Times* and (right) *Now TV*)

- On 29 February 2020, protesters gathered again to commemorate the 31 August event. Protesters chanted slogans and placed flowers at different Exits of Prince Edward Station (see Image 12-37). Some of them pointed laser beams at police officers on guard nearby, and built barricades and set fires on roads. The Police fired tear gas to disperse the crowd, and took arrest action in the evening (source: media report).



Image 12-37: People placed flowers at Prince Edward Station on 29 February 2020 and MTRC closed the exit
(Image source: HK01)

Complaints against Police

12.36 The 31 August incidents gave rise to four RCs and 19 NCs.

12.37 Out of the four RCs received, one RC was related to the Prince Edward Station Incident. The case was about police's handling of a reporter inside Prince Edward Station. The other RCs related to an arrest action in Wan Chai, police's failing to facilitate reporters in Mong Kok area, and police's firing of tear gas in Central.

12.38 The nature of the NCs is as follows:

- One NC raised by 25 complainants against officers for inappropriate use of force inside Prince Edward Station;
- One NC raised by 24 LegCo Members against police's handling inside Prince Edward Station;
- Six other NCs raised about police's handling inside Prince Edward Station such as hindering ambulance officers' access to the station, excessive use of force on the platform and altering the number of casualties; and

- 11 NCs about matters which took place in other locations, namely Yau Ma Tei, Wan Chai, Admiralty and Causeway Bay.

Police Response

12.39 In response to the events of this day, Police Management has made various observations to the IPCC, as set out below:

Police Closing of the Station Exits

12.40 At 22:05, some mobsters stormed Mong Kok Station and damaged the facilities there by tearing off cable, smashing CCTV cameras and windows of the control room and even broke into the office of Mong Kok Station. At 22:06, about 100 protesters gathered at Mong Kok Station. At 22:30, MTRC requested police assistance. Police officers shortly entered the station but the mobsters had already left by train or different exits. Between 22:42 and 22:53, mobsters on board a Tsuen Wan-bound train in Prince Edward Station disputed with several passengers in a train at platform No. 3. They later assaulted the passengers with sticks, umbrellas, sling shots and fire extinguishers. The train was stopped by MTRC at Prince Edward Station due to the emergency situation. At 22:44, around 100 protesters were getting off at Prince Edward Station. Some mobsters left the train compartment and changed into different clothing at the platform to disguise themselves as ordinary passengers.

12.41 Between 22:49 and 23:15, Police 999 Console received 18 fighting and one dispute reports between violent mobsters and other passengers inside the train compartment at Prince Edward Station (out of over 50 odd 999 reports, such as “assault”, “mobsters throwing smoke bomb”, “mobsters besieging MTRC platform control room” and “chaos inside Prince Edward Station”, that the Police had received in relation to the incident in this period). In view of the situation, police officers were re-directed to Prince Edward Station in order to stop the fight and effect arrest as appropriate including those who had vandalised Mong Kok Station.

12.42 During the incident, the commanders took steps to stop the violence inside Prince Edward Station, arrest the perpetrators who had vandalised Mong Kok Station or involved in the fighting inside Prince Edward Station, and preserve the crime scene for evidence gathering.

12.43 The whole was not a pre-planned operation but an instant response towards the emergency encountered with very fluid operational environment both inside and outside the Prince Edward Station.

12.44 After the incident, the Command Post directed police officers to close all exits of Prince Edward Station in order to contain the crime scene and ensure the safe control of the

substantial number of APs.

12.45 There was no relevant police records as to whether any reporters had requested to go into the station but were refused by the officers on guard.

Police Enforcement Action and Arrest Action

12.46 While conducting sweeping at platforms No. 3 and 4 of Prince Edward Station, the officers exercised observation and professional judgement and successfully located some mobsters, who disguised themselves as ordinary passengers and scattered around the MTR platforms, including some hiding inside the train compartments. When police officers entered the train compartments at platform No. 4 (Tsuen Wan line to Central), i.e. opposite to platform No. 3, they were immediately attacked by more than ten violent mobsters with umbrellas and sharp-edged objects. In response, the Police used minimum force necessary to control and subdue them, including the use of police batons and OC Foam.

12.47 During the confrontation, officers successfully put a couple (a male and a female) under control inside a train compartment at platform No. 4. However, two other violent mobsters (a male and a female) were spotted hiding behind the couple and strongly resisted officers' arrest with force. Officers thus used minimum force necessary to control those two violent mobsters. However, at that juncture, the doors of the train began to close unexpectedly. Police officers would be outnumbered by the radical mobsters if they were trapped in the compartment. The officers therefore immediately retreated from the train compartments for their safety. The train doors then closed and the train departed the platform.

12.48 Despite first police request at 22:52 to stop all trains at Prince Edward Station, a train at platform No. 4 still managed to leave Prince Edward Station at 23:02. At 23:05, the Police requested MTRC to stop that departing train again. As arranged by MTRC, the train skipped Mong Kok Station and arrived at Yau Ma Tei Station at 23:09, waiting for police's arrival. At 23:18, police reinforcement reached Yau Ma Tei Station and located the subject train for enquiry. However, most of the passengers and mobsters had departed the train and left the Station. After enquiry, police officers arrested ten persons on the train including the couple who were previously controlled by officers in the train compartment at Prince Edward Station.

12.49 Throughout the incidents at the stations, the Police had arrested a total of 63 persons, including one person in Mong Kok area, 52 persons in Prince Edward Station and ten in Yau Ma Tei Station. Petrol bombs, laser pointers, catapults, steel marbles, helmets, respirators and other equipment were found on the APs.

12.50 The Police Senior Management's view was that the incident was a response to an emergency arising from the violent mobsters' assault on other passengers inside the confined MTR train compartment. The objective of deployment was to stop the fight and effect arrest as appropriate, including those who had vandalised Mong Kok Station. When police officers arrived at the Prince Edward Station platform, they exercised observation and professional judgement and successfully located some mobsters, who disguised themselves as ordinary passengers and scattered around the MTR platforms and the train compartments. The violent mobsters then attacked officers with umbrellas and sharp-edged objects and put up strong resistance upon arrest. As a result, the officers had to use minimum force necessary, including baton and OC Foam, to subdue and arrest them.

Management of the Scene inside the Station

Counting and Handling of Casualties

12.51 The APs were at first arrested at different locations inside Prince Edward Station. For the purpose of easy handling and treatment by ambulance officers and police officers respectively, all APs were then arranged to the end of platform No. 3 near the first train compartment heading towards Tiu Keng Leng direction.

Arranging a Special Train to Lai Chi Kok Station

12.52 That evening, 52 persons were arrested in Prince Edward Station. At around 23:20, the first batch of seven APs were escorted to leave Prince Edward Station who were to be sent to Kwai Chung Police Station. At 23:41, there were around 100 violent mobsters proceeding to Mong Kok Police Station from Nathan Road near Argyle Street.

12.53 At 23:45, the tension outside Prince Edward Station kept escalating such that over 200 mobsters with gear were proceeding to Mong Kok Police Station from the junction of Nathan Road and Argyle Street. At 00:36, there were about 800 violent mobsters gathering outside Mong Kok Police Station. At 00:38, after coordination with the FSD, all 45 APs at Prince Edward Station, including the seven injured APs, were sent to Lai Chi Kok Station. This was to facilitate further delivery of uninjured APs to Kwai Chung Police Station and injured APs to hospitals as it was unsafe to leave from the exits of Prince Edward Station with the presence of a large number of violent mobsters who might snatch the APs from the Police. At 01:23, seven casualties were escorted to Lai Chi Kok Station via a specially arranged empty MTR train and were sent to Princess Margaret Hospital and Caritas Medical Centre by ambulance.

Police Communication with FSD

12.54 According to live news broadcast and CCTV footage at Prince Edward Station, there was no evidence showing the Police had deliberately delayed ambulance officers from entering Prince Edward Station on the night of 31 August. Instead, the police officers at Exits B1 and E were trying to clarify with other police officers inside the station about the situation at the platforms before facilitating the safe entry of ambulance officers.

12.55 At 23:34, a senior police officer reported to the Command Post inside Prince Edward Station that some ambulance officers outside Exit B1 were inquiring about the situation inside the Prince Edward Station and whether they could go in. After coordination between the senior police officer and the Command Post, the PAO entered Exit B1 at 23:35 (according to the time on the CCTV footage of MTRC). In the meantime, according to the media footage, some ambulance officers, who could be the PAO's teammates, were setting up triage outside Exit B1 including a large triage mat. In this regard, the ambulance officers might not have been delayed from entering the station since their reported arrival time at 23:14, instead they might actually be working on the preparation of the triage outside Exit B1 to receive injured persons. However, such plan was disrupted later due to the escalating tension.

12.56 Regarding the situation at Exit E at around 00:10, police officers were actually making efforts to facilitate the entry of ambulance officers at Exit E since 00:09. The process was interrupted due to misunderstanding that MTRC staff had once informed police officers that there were only police and MTRC staff at the platform. Around 80 violent mobsters were surrounding Exit E with some of them hitting the metal gate of Exit E that also escalated the situation. After confirming that the passage was safe, the ambulance officers entered the station at 00:23.

12.57 Besides, the Police had in fact planned to escort the APs to leave Prince Edward Station from Exit B1, which was eventually aborted due to the significant threats to safety later presented by the violent mobsters in the vicinity of Prince Edward Station.

12.58 As such, it can be observed that police officers did not willfully obstruct the ingress of ambulance officers into the Prince Edward Station.

12.59 There was an ambulance officer stationed at Kowloon West Command Post for facilitating communication and resources coordination between both departments. On the other hand, the Regional Command and Control Centre of Police also maintained the usual communication mechanism by telephone hotline with Fire Services Communications Centre of the FSD.

Police Handling of Speculations

12.60 The Force Public Relations Strategy has been in place with the objectives of (i) proactively enhancing the reputation of the Police; (ii) maintaining public confidence in the Police; and (iii) leveraging support among the public and gaining public support for policing activities.

12.61 During the recent public disorder, many rumours and false accusations against the Police have been spreading around. To proactively address identified issues and seek clarification, the Police has adopted a proactive approach to disseminate vetted facts via different channels.

IPCC Observations

12.62 After 11 August, protesters continued to step up the scale and frequency of their protests and used urban guerillas tactics to cause disturbances and “Be Water” tactics to evade arrest. They kept escalating their use of violence to create disorder. In addition to blocking roads and throwing petrol bombs at police officers, they paralysed the Airport and the Cross Harbour Tunnel, vandalised station facilities, attacked police officers who had wandered loose from his team, and set fires on Chinese banks or shops connected to the Mainland. By way of “vigilantism” (私了) some violent protesters beat up people who did not agree with their opinions or actions or people who just took photos or videos of them. In many of the vigilante incidents, violent protesters often acted in a pack so that they could outnumber the victims they beat up. They used weapons to attack the target victims and even tied them up and humiliated them. These happened territory-wide and not uncommon during protests. On 31 August, territory-wide violent protests took place. That evening, when the Police took action against some of the protesters in Mong Kok Station, they fled to Prince Edward Station. The public raised a number of issues in relation to Police action in Prince Edward Station. Regarding these issues and other matters stemming from the incident, the IPCC has the following observations.

Police Entering Prince Edward Station to Take Enforcement Action

12.63 What happened in Prince Edward Station was not an isolated incident. It was part of police enforcement action against those violent protesters who had caused disturbances throughout the territory. Before fleeing to Prince Edward Station, the protesters had severely damaged the facilities inside Mong Kok Station. At 22:05, they caused serious damage to the CCTVs, ticket issuing machines and the control room inside Mong Kok Station. When police officers arrived at Mong Kok Station upon MTRC’s report of their criminal acts, some of the protesters had taken the MTR to go to Prince Edward Station.

12.64 Since early August, the protesters had used urban guerilla tactics in their violent protests, taking advantage of the MTR line to go to different places to create disorder and to hide when the Police took dispersal and arrest action. This is very clear from what happened at Kwai Fong Station and Tai Koo Station on 11 August, already examined in the previous Chapter. The protesters did the same on 31 August. They used MTR lines for logistical purposes and MTR stations became their safe haven. Live broadcast by a television station captured images of many of the protesters taking off their black outfits and gear and putting on clothes in other colours to disguise themselves as ordinary passengers after they had arrived at Prince Edward Station. The live television news broadcast covered only one spot on the platform. There could be other spots where protesters changed clothes. From what can be seen on the news footage on what happened in Prince Edward Station subsequently there were many other people inside the station wearing masks, helmets and holding umbrellas. Many of them could be protesters. They certainly were a threat to law and order in the station.

12.65 Given what the protesters had done to Mong Kok Station and the fact that many of them had fled to Prince Edward Station, it was necessary for the Police to take timely and decisive law enforcement action against the protesters to stop them from committing further violence. Otherwise, the protesters would vandalise the facilities inside Prince Edward Station and hurt innocent people, after which they could move on to other stations to commit the same crime, or go up to the ground level to block roads outside Prince Edward Station, set fire at different places and besiege Mong Kok Police Station, causing widespread disturbances as before. In fact, the protesters did carry out further violent acts inside Prince Edward Station when they arrived there. As a result, police officers were deployed to enter Prince Edward Station.

12.66 Before the protesters arrived at Prince Edward Station, they had already attacked people on the train. While on the train, they entered into a fierce argument with a few middle-aged male passengers. Suddenly one of the protesters slapped a male passenger on his face. When the train arrived at Prince Edward Station, the brawl turned into a fight. The protesters, who outnumbered the middle-aged male passengers as in other vigilante incidents, attacked the male passengers with umbrellas. As the train arrived at Prince Edward Station, the fight stopped for a brief moment as the protesters got off the train, but six to seven protesters suddenly rushed back into the train compartment and fiercely attacked with umbrellas a middle-aged male passenger, who was staying put inside the train compartment. As the male passenger refused to leave the train compartment, the protesters discharged smoke from a fire extinguisher into the train compartment. They even attacked a lady standing on the platform using her mobile phone to record what happened and snatched her mobile phone. The protesters were extremely ferocious. Even though the place was a station full of people, they displayed no restraint, despite dangers to other passengers. The disorderly situation at Prince Edward

Station demanded the Police immediate law enforcement action. The Police stated that in view of the situation, the police officers were re-directed to Prince Edward Station in order to stop the fight and effect arrest as appropriate including those who had vandalised Mong Kok Station.

12.67 The acts of the protesters, attacking people on the train and on the platform and discharging smoke from a fire extinguisher, paralysed the operation of Prince Edward Station. The driver of the involved train could not close the train doors, as a result of which the train could not depart from Prince Edward Station. Someone had also activated the passenger alarm on the train. MTRC made a report seeking police assistance and asked people to leave the train at the platform. Between 22:49 and 23:15, the Police 999 Console received over 50 reports about the assault incident, a protester throwing smoke bombs, besieging the control room on the platform, chaos inside Prince Edward Station and so on. At 22:53, MTRC declared evacuation of the station. At 23:10, MTRC suspended all services on the Kwun Tong line and the Tsuen Wan line. The activities of the protesters created disorder inside Prince Edward Station, which is a major station. A stampede with disastrous consequences could have happened after the protesters discharged smoke from a fire extinguisher as people could mistake the smoke for a fire. In fact, FSD did receive reports of fire. Fortunately, the incident took place at around 23:00 when Prince Edward Station was not so crowded. Police prompt enforcement action was indispensable to restore law and order in the station.

Police and MTRC Closing Prince Edward Station Exits

12.68 According to the Police, the Command Post of the Police directed officers to close all exits of the station in order to contain the crime scene and to ensure the safe control of the substantial number of APs. Since many protesters changed their clothes to disguise themselves as ordinary passengers and some others also hid among ordinary passengers inside train compartments.

12.69 Enquiry had to be made to identify protesters inside the station. There was a chance that these protesters would leave the station. Closing the exits set up an effective barrier to stop protesters, many of them in disguise themselves as ordinary passengers, from leaving whilst police officers took enforcement action or made enquiry inside the station.

12.70 It can clearly be seen from some of the news footage that many of the protesters tried to run away to evade arrest, as a result of which some police officers had to chase after them. Even when stopped by the police officers, some of the protesters still put up strenuous resistance to free themselves. One news footage recorded a protester escaping after being subdued on the floor. The protesters were desperate not to be arrested by the Police. Closing the exits could prevent these protesters from leaving the station.

12.71 The Police arrested a total of 52 protesters in Prince Edward Station that evening. According to the Police, while the officers were taking enforcement action inside the station, violent protests were still going on in the streets. At 23:45, over 200 protesters dressed in protective gear and equipped with umbrellas and various weapons proceeded from the junction of Nathan Road and Argyle Street to Mong Kok Police Station where Prince Edward Station was located. By 00:36, about 800 protesters had gathered near the Prince Edward Station.

12.72 The IPCC notes that prior to 31 August, there were instances of protesters making attempts to snatch APs from the Police. Closing the exits was a practical measure to stop other protesters from entering Prince Edward Station: (1) to reinforce those protesters whom the Police was trying to arrest, (2) to launch attack against the police officers who were taking enforcement action inside the station, and (3) to cause further damage to the facilities of the station, which would make controlling the situation inside the station very difficult, if not impossible. Given the chaos inside the station and the fact that MTRC had declared evacuation of Prince Edward Station at 22:53 and suspended all train services on the Kwun Tong Line and Tsuen Wan Line at 23:10, no ordinary person would want to enter the station. The decision to close the exits appears to the IPCC as justifiable under these circumstances.

Police Enforcement Action and Arrest Action inside Prince Edward Station

12.73 The Police did use force in their arrest action inside the station. It may be seen from some news footage that some protesters attempted to run away. Hence, police officers gave chase. Some protesters put up resistance to evade arrest and even used umbrellas to hit the police officers. In response, the police officers used batons and OC Foam to subdue them. Even after being subdued by the police officers, some protesters put up a fierce struggle to try to escape. A news footage captured images of a protester who had been subdued onto the ground successfully escaping up an escalator full of people. When he absconded, other protesters attacked the police officers trying to get hold of him. Despite the use of force, that protester still successfully ran away.

12.74 According to the Police, the action was a response to an emergency arising from the violent protesters' assault of other passengers inside the confined MTR train compartment. The objective of deployment was to stop the fight and effect arrest as appropriate, including those who had vandalised Mong Kok Station. When police officers arrived at the platforms of Prince Edward Station, they exercised observation and professional judgement and successfully located violent protesters, who disguised themselves as ordinary passengers and scattered around the MTR platforms and the train compartments. The violent protesters then attacked officers with umbrellas and sharp-edged objects and put up strong resistance upon arrest. As a result, the officers had to use minimum force necessary to subdue and arrest them.

12.75 The IPCC notes that Police action inside a train compartment was widely discussed by the public and the Police was criticised for excessive use of force. Whilst it is not the purpose of this Report to make any judgement on any particular incident or action taken by individual officers that may give rise to complaints, the IPCC notices that while the police officers took action inside the train compartment, the train doors kept closing and opening. The police officers on the platform asked the officers inside the train compartment to leave the train. After the police officers had left the train, they remained on guard at the train doors. The train doors eventually closed and the train departed the station in the direction of Mong Kok. Upon police request, the train skipped Mong Kok Station and stopped at Yau Ma Tei Station. When the Police arrived, they managed to arrest ten persons, including a couple who were seen sitting on the floor of the train when police officers used force in the train compartment at Prince Edward Station.

12.76 Regarding the confrontation in the train compartment, the Police explained that while conducting sweeping at platforms No. 3 and 4 of the Prince Edward Station, the officers exercised observation and professional judgement and successfully located violent protesters, who disguised themselves as ordinary passengers and scattered around the MTR platforms, including some hiding inside the train compartments at platform No. 4 (Tsuen Wan line towards Central), i.e. opposite to platform No. 3. When the police officers entered the train compartments at platform No. 4, they were immediately attacked by more than ten violent protesters with umbrellas and sharp-edged objects. According to the Police, in response, the officers used minimum force necessary in order to control and subdue them, including the use of police batons and OC Foam. During the confrontation, officers successfully put a couple (a male and a female) under control inside a train compartment at platform No. 4. However, two other violent protesters (a male and a female) were spotted hiding behind the couple and strongly resisted officers' arrest with force. Officers thus controlled those two protesters. However, at that juncture, the doors of the train began to close intermittently. The Police is of the view that police officers would be outnumbered by the protesters if they were trapped in the compartment. The officers therefore immediately retreated from the train compartments for their safety. The train doors then closed, and the train departed the platform.

12.77 As to whether the level of force used by police officers when effecting arrest is justified, the IPCC observes that according to the police latest guidelines on the use of force, the appropriate level of force that can be used depends on the level of resistance put up by the subject. When an officer encounters active resistance (i.e. physical action to prevent control which might cause injury to oneself or others), he could consider using irritant agent devices such as OC Foam. In the face of aggressive assault (i.e. physical assault to cause or likely to cause bodily injury), the use of less lethal weapons, including baton, is an option. To control a subject effectively, the officer is justified to use a level of force greater than the resistance of

the subject.

12.78 It is subject to the officer's own judgement based on his knowledge and understanding of Police guidelines from training, and that officer will be held accountable for his own action. The use of force is, therefore, under the current legal regime, a matter of personal responsibility of each police officer who is held accountable to uphold the law and the rules of the Police on the use of force.

12.79 It is a practice of the Police to conduct a review after each deployment to ensure that all officers abide by the relevant guidelines and procedures, and to learn from the experience. It is therefore expected that the Police will review all incidents and, if justified, to bring to book any officer who did not follow Police guidelines and the law in their handling of the POEs. If the Police finds any officer having exceeded the bounds imposed by the law and Police regulations, the IPCC, and indeed the community, would expect the Police to take necessary action to prosecute or discipline the officer concerned. On 2 and 7 March 2020, the Commissioner disclosed publicly that the Police Management had taken immediate action to admonish 21 officers for probable misconduct in the handling of these POEs against the Fugitive Offenders Bill. The Commissioner had further stated this did not mean that no further investigation would be undertaken.

Police Request for a Special Train to Lai Chi Kok Station

12.80 According to the Police, they arrested a total of 52 persons in Prince Edward Station that evening. Around 23:20, the Police escorted seven of them to Kwai Chung Police Station by police vehicles. At 23:45, the tension outside Prince Edward Station kept escalating such that over 200 protesters with gear were proceeding to Mong Kok Police Station from the junction of Nathan Road and Argyle Street. At 00:36, about 800 violent protesters had gathered near the Prince Edward Station. The Police assessed that it was unsafe to take the APs out of Prince Edward Station. Hence, they requested MTRC to arrange a special train to carry the remaining 45 APs, seven of whom were injured to Lai Chi Kok Station. At 01:23, the special train departed Prince Edward Station. The seven injured APs were escorted to Princess Margaret Hospital and Caritas Medical Centre, whereas the remaining 38 were taken to Kwai Chung Police Station.

12.81 The IPCC notes that the Police had conducted risk assessment before requesting MTRC to arrange for the special train. There had been violent situations in which some protesters tried to snatch APs from police custody. It happened at the airport on 13 August. In addition to the consideration of the gathering of protesters outside the station, the IPCC notes the facts that the roads in the vicinity of Mong Kok Police Station where Prince Edward Station were a common scene of protests and frequently blocked by protesters. Furthermore, before

31 August, Mong Kok Police Station had been a target of attack by protesters. Had the Police escorted the APs by police vehicles and ambulances and the protesters chose to block the roads there, the police vehicles and ambulances would have been stuck on the road. The safety of the APs and the escorting officers would be a concern. Treatment of the injured APs would also be delayed. Obviously, MTR is the fastest means to escort the APs out of Prince Edward Station to Lai Chi Kok Station which is close to Kwai Chung Police Station and Princess Margaret Hospital and Caritas Medical Centre. The decision to arrange a special train was prudent and sensible although it was one of the factors that provided fuel to the spread of the unsupported death rumour.

Police Communication with FSD

12.82 According to FSD records, the first batch of ambulance officers (the PAO and his team mate) arrived at Exit B1 at 23:14. A police officer at the gate told the PAO no one was injured inside. After communication, the PAO entered the station at 23:30 (16 minutes later) (CCTV footage of MTRC showed that the entry time was 23:35 but the footage did not show the time the PAO arrived at Exit B1. The times from FSD records are, therefore, used in the Report). Before the PAO entered the station, 19 fire officers were already inside the station, providing first aid to the injured persons inside. 13 fire officers entered the station at 23:06 and another six at 23:20.

12.83 According to CCTV footage at Exit E, a number of ambulance vehicles arrived at Exit E at 00:09. A police officer at the gate also told the ambulance officers that no one was injured inside. According to some news footage, a fire officer came up to the exit gate and told the ambulance officers that there were injured persons inside. An MTR staff was also seen near the gate in discussion with police and ambulance officers. After this communication, the MTR staff opened the gate and the ambulance officers entered at 00:23 (14 minutes later).

12.84 According to the Police, at 23:34, a senior police officer reported to the Command Post that some ambulance officers outside Exit B1 were inquiring about the situation inside the Prince Edward Station and whether they could go in. After coordination between the senior police officer and the Command Post, the PAO entered Exit B1 at 23:35. In the meantime, according to some media footage, some ambulance officers, who could be the PAO's teammates, set up triage outside Exit B1. The Police explained that the ambulance officers might not have been delayed from entering the station as they were actually preparing for the triage outside Exit B1 to receive injured persons. However, such plan was disrupted later due to the escalating tension.

12.85 Regarding the situation at Exit E, the Police clarified that police officers had made efforts to facilitate the entry of ambulance officers at Exit E since 00:09. The process was

interrupted due to misunderstanding that MTRC staff had once informed the Police that there were only police and MTRC staff at the platform. Around 80 violent protesters were surrounding Exit E and hitting the metal gate of the exit. After confirming that the passage was safe, the ambulance officers entered the station via Exit E at 00:23. The Police stressed that the police officers did not willfully obstruct the ingress of ambulance officers into the Prince Edward Station. They were ensuring safety for their entry.

12.86 The IPCC notes that based on FSD records, it took the PAO at Exit B1 16 minutes and the ambulance officers from the five ambulance vehicles at Exit E 14 minutes to gain entry into the station. It does not appear from the chronology of what happened inside Prince Edward Station that the Police would deliberately disallow the ambulance officers to enter the station. Some ambulance officers did do some preparatory work outside the exit for receiving injured persons as the Police explained. Before the PAO and the ambulance officers from the five ambulance vehicles entered the station, 19 fire officers were already inside the station, handling the fire and smoke reports and treating injured person. With the presence of the fire officers, there should not have been any delay in the treatment of the injured persons even without the ambulance officers. In fact, three ambulance officers entered the station at 23:20 via Exit E and came out of the same exit at 23:34 with a female on a stretcher. Had the Police had any intention to prevent ambulance officers from entering the station, the fire officers and the three ambulance officers would not have been allowed entrance in the first place. It appears from the chronology that as soon as coordination work was effected, the ambulance officers were allowed in. Certainly, it would be ideal that the ambulance officers were allowed into the station as soon as they arrived at the gate. Certainly, the information initially provided by the police officer that no one was injured inside the station was not correct.

12.87 The situation inside Prince Edward Station at that time was chaotic and the station is big. 200 police officers were deployed and a number of protesters were arrested. The exit gates were closed to stop protesters inside the station from escaping and those outside entering. Before allowing any person to enter, the police officers on guard at the gates had to seek instruction from their supervisors and the Command Post. The arrest operation was not planned. According to the Police, an ambulance officer stationed at Kowloon West Command Post was designated to facilitate communication between the two departments. The Police Regional Command and Control Centre also maintained communication by a telephone hotline with Fire Services Communications Centre. From what transpired, communication and coordination among the police officers and with the FSD were ineffective.

Police Handling of Rumours and Speculations

12.88 The rumour on the internet of people being killed inside Prince Edward Station developed and spread very quickly. From a mere speculative comment at the start, it rapidly

transformed into a rumour and then into what purported to confirmation, without any evidence in support at any stage of this transformation. The following critical events and messages on the internet give an overview of how such an unsupported allegation developed:

31 August

- At 22:53, police officers entered Prince Edwards Station.
- At 22:59, there was a live broadcast of Police action by news media.
- At 23:01, messages criticizing the Police for excessive use of force appeared on the internet.

1 September

- At 02:19, messages speculating death in the station surfaced.
- At 17:15, speculation about several people being killed emerged.

2 September

- At 01:29, a post on LIHKG formally announced that a person had been killed by the Police in the incident, with no supporting evidence.
Remark : Formal announcement was claimed.
- At 02:26, a post on HKGOLDEN quoted unknown health care workers' confirmation of two persons being killed, without naming the workers, and providing no evidence. The post claimed several people had died.
Remark: Unnamed health care workers were quoted. No one has so far come forward.
- At 12:19, a post on LIHKG further claimed that a health care worker gave information about three persons disappearing (apparently from FSD counting of casualties).
Remark: The health worker was not named and no one has come forward. FSD counting of the casualties was mentioned.
- At 13:46, a person claiming himself to be an HA staff said the body of a person who had been killed was in the mortuary of Kwong Wah Hospital.
Remark: HA staff was unnamed and never came forward, dead body and Kwong Wah Hospital Mortuary were used.

4 September

- Someone uploaded a video clip onto YouTube with clips of news footage showing Police use of force inside Prince Edward Station. The narrative said

there was proof that someone had been killed inside the station and the Police did not allow ambulance officers to enter the station.

Remark: Ambulance officers not immediately entering the station upon arrival at the gates was mentioned. News footage of Police use of force was also used.

5 September

- At 23:13, a post on HKGOLDEN quoted information from a CIP claiming that death in the incident was definitely not fake but it was not the Police who had killed that person.

Remark: CIP was unnamed and no one has come forward.

6 September

- At 01:58, a post on LIHKG claimed six persons died of broken neck in the incident, again with no supporting evidence at all.
- Remark: Number of alleged death exaggerated. Cause of death given.

12.89 It can be seen how the messages claiming police killing of persons at the Prince Edward Station on the internet had quickly escalated from speculation, to rumour and then to purported confirmation, all without any factual support at any stage of this transformation. Carl Sagan, the cosmologist, is credited with popularising a standard for examining extraordinary claims, called ECREE, which in long form, is “Extraordinary Claims Require Extraordinary Evidence”. This is, of course, not new. It is simply a statement of the scientific method for the layman, reflecting no more than the common-sense notion that whoever makes extraordinary claims bears the burden of providing extraordinary evidence to support the claims.

12.90 The claim that the Police had killed someone in Prince Edward Station and then had the event covered up is, on any view, an extraordinary claim. The perpetrators of this allegation did not offer any evidence to support this claim. Instead, they resorted to speculation, rumour and then, purported confirmation by persons said to be a health care worker, an HA staff and even a CIP. None of these persons was named and none has subsequently come forward. The fact that the Police closed all the exit gates and the fact that injured persons were not seen being taken out from the station, were clearly exploited to fuel the allegation that officers did not allow entry to the station so that the Police could cover up the alleged killing. Discrepancies in the FSD record keeping could also have fueled the rumours.

12.91 It may be noted that there were reporters inside the station and they recorded the Police action in Prince Edward Station before the Police asked them to leave. There were passengers on both the platforms and on the train at platform No. 3. None of them reported any

incident that people had been killed or so seriously injured that would lead to death.

12.92 Hong Kong is one of the world's most densely populated cities and people live in close proximity to one another. If people had been killed inside the station, relatives of the deceased would soon report them missing and would come forward to tell the public. Equally, a person who has no relatives would be called upon either to pay rent or management fees and their being missing would soon become a matter for concern. Further, employers would likewise be concerned. However, no one reported anyone as having been missing on 31 August in connection with the incident. The Police has confirmed that they have carefully gone through missing persons reports and found no such connection.²⁶

12.93 Spokespersons from the Police, HA, FSD and MTRC have all refuted the rumours that someone had died or been killed inside the station. Even the CS confirmed that no one had died in the incident. Had any of them not told the truth, the staff from FSD, HA and MTRC and officers in the Police would certainly have come forward to expose the lie. To conceal even one death in a public place in densely populated Hong Kong requires collusion of so many parties, departments and institutions that it is well-nigh impossible, let alone multiple deaths with broken necks, as claimed by one post. The claim that someone had died in the station by the hand of the Police and was then covered up, is an extraordinary claim completely unsupported by evidence and therefore, devoid of credence. However, the virulence of the propagation of this wholly unsupported claim and its continuing use as a rallying call by protesters despite the total lack of supporting evidence is a matter which should concern right thinking members of the community. The making of such unsupported claims poisons the legitimacy of peaceful POEs and abuses the freedom of expression we hold dear in our community. It also unjustifiably erodes the trust which the Police has earned over the years. It is also a disservice to the Police as an efficient force underpinning the foundation of any law-abiding society. These rumours would strike at the foundation of law and order and should not be allowed to prevail.

12.94 According to the Police, in response to the speculations, rumours or false accusations, the Force Public Relations Strategy has been in place with the objectives of (i) proactively enhancing the reputation of the Police; (ii) maintaining public confidence in the Police; and (iii) leveraging support among the public and gaining public support for policing activities. During the recent public disorders, many rumours and false accusations against the Police have been spreading in different media. The Police proactively identifies these issues, seeks clarification and adopts a proactive approach to vet facts and disseminates information via different channels.

²⁶ Metroradio News (2019-09-10). 警稱沒收過涉 831 失蹤人口報告. Retrieved from <https://www.metroradio.com.hk/news/live.aspx?NewsID=20190910135437>

12.95 The response from the Police, FSD, HA and MTRC to refute the unsupported claims, however, was not quick enough. The Police did not make use of the two stand-up briefings at 03:00 and 18:00 on Sunday 1 September to rebut the untrue death rumours, allowing them to fester on the internet, as the rumours were just beginning to spread at that point. The first person to say that no one had died in the incident was the CS at the press conference on the morning of 2 September on a reporter's question. The Police rejected the claim at the Police press conference in the afternoon on the same day. By then, the untrue death rumours had already sprouted. At the Police press conference on 3 September, the police spokesperson firmly stated that the death rumour was fabricated. FSD did not timely explain how and why the number of casualties on FSD records changed from ten to seven. FSD only issued a press statement on 6 September. FSD, HA or MTRC did not hold any joint press conference or issued any press statement to explicitly say that no one had died in the incident. It was not until 10 September did the Police, FSD, HA and MTRC do so at a press conference to state together that the rumours was untrue. However, by then the rumour of the police killing several people inside the station had already gone viral on the internet and purportedly confirmed by unnamed persons. Had the Police acted promptly and taken the lead to organise the joint press conference to refute the rumours, there could have been a chance of stunting these rumours and preventing their spread on the internet, giving the protesters excuses to stage further protests. The protests have continued as a monthly ritual of violent protests outside Prince Edward MTR Station coupled with road blockages and attacks on Mong Kok Police Station.

Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance

12.96 As pointed out in the previous Chapter, as protesters started to adopt urban guerrilla tactics by utilising the MTR network to access different locations across the city and block major traffic locations or cause damage to public infrastructure and transport facilities thereat and fled into MTR stations to evade arrest by the Police, it was inevitable that enforcement action would occur inside MTR stations. In the Prince Edward Station Incident, what the protesters had done, i.e. vandalising Mong Kok Station and subsequently engaging in a fight with MTR passengers using weapons, render it necessary for police officers to enter the station to take enforcement action. Nonetheless, it should be reasonably foreseeable by the Police that when an MTR station is closed, target persons are subdued onto the floor with force and arrested, and reporters are not allowed to conduct news coverage thereat, the passengers inside the station might panic, and the public would want to know what has happened inside. Unfounded speculations and rumours would emerge.

12.97 The IPCC is of the view that there are lessons to be learnt from the events of 31 August and recommends that the Police Management conduct the following reviews:

- (a) Review Police strategy on taking enforcement action that involve making a large

number of individual arrests with the use of force;

- (b) Review Police strategy on taking enforcement action inside MTR stations or premises crowded with people;
- (c) Review the coordination among the Police themselves and with other departments in major operations, especially where closure of entrances to a premises is involved, and devise procedures and clarify the chain of command to facilitate efficient communication and coordination work;
- (d) Devise means to enhance communications with the public about enforcement action that the Police has taken or is taking to increase transparency of Police work and to prevent unnecessary, unfounded or malicious speculations and rumours. In this regard, there should be more publicity and public education on Police procedures and practices for dealing with missing persons and death in Hong Kong;
- (e) Given the increase in the use and popularity of social media, enhance the ability of the responsible teams in the Police to monitor the social media and devise procedures and protocols to deal with public concerns and untrue or malicious messages promptly and effectively by using the same media to propagate rebuttal;
- (f) Review how to facilitate the work of reporters in a major operation without causing undue hindrance to Police enforcement action;
- (g) Review the mechanism for the Police to disseminate information to the public to enhance transparency, for instance, PPRB to make timely announcement and update to the public on the situation inside Prince Edward Station to ease public concern and quash speculations or rumours; and
- (h) Review the protocols for taking the lead to organise press conferences with other departments or institutions.

12.98 The above recommendations should be read in conjunction with the IPCC's recommendations in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing.

CHRONOLOGY – SATURDAY 31 AUGUST 2019**Key Incidents**

- A. Daytime Procession
- B. Clashes on Hong Kong Island
- C. Clashes in Kowloon and Mong Kok Station
- D. Incidents Related to Prince Edward Station
- E. Rumours Related to the Prince Edward Station Incident

Detailed Chronology of Events**A. *Daytime Procession***

Time (Approx.)	Incident
12:30	<p>Wan Chai, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>People launched a ‘Pray for Hong Kong Sinners’ parade, which planned to march from the Southorn Playground at Wan Chai to Central. The organisers advised people to arrive at 12:30 and start the march at 13:00 (source: media reports¹). About 1 000 protesters gathered at Southorn Playground (source: HKPF).</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
14:00	<p>Central, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>People started to gather in Chater Garden in Central for an assembly scheduled at 15:00 (source: media report²).</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>  <p>(Image source: RTHK)</p>
15:00	<p>People who gathered at the Southern Playground started to march. Some people walked past Central. Some protesters blocked Hennessey Road in Causeway Bay with traffic cones, rubbish bins, mills barriers and other large objects (source: media reports and live video footage³).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>The situations of Hong Kong Island at 15:00 (Image source: Now TV)</p>

B. Clashes on Hong Kong Island

Time (Approx.)	Incident
16:30	<p>Admiralty, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>Protesters besieged and attacked CGC and LegCo Complex with different weapons (source: HKPF).</p>
17:22	<p>To stop protesters' violent attack, Police's dispersal action commenced from Central towards Causeway Bay direction with different level of force used, including SCMV, REACT rounds and CS smoke. Protesters split into two groups for dispersal with part of them further proceeded to Kowloon area by taking MTR, bus and ferries while the other group retreated towards Causeway Bay and Tin Hau areas by foot (source: HKPF).</p>
17:24	<p>Protesters threw petrol bombs to the armoury area of Police Headquarters (PHQ) (source: HKPF).</p>
17:30	<p>Protesters threw petrol bombs for many times near CGC. The places inside the water-filled barriers were on fire. The Police fired tear gas and deployed SCMV to disperse the protesters (source: media reports and live video footage⁴).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
17:41	A protester smashed the glasses of LegCo Complex with a metal pole. Five petrol bombs were thrown to CGC (source: HKPF).
17:42	Protesters destroyed the security room at CGC (source: HKPF).
17:45	<p>The Police deployed SCMV's and discharged water with blue dye at the protesters near CGC (source: media reports⁵).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
18:00	Two petrol bombs were thrown to CGC which burnt up the marquee thereat (source: HKPF).
18:35	Protesters occupied the flyover outside Caine House and kept throwing objects at police officers on the ground. Police officers fired tear gas (source: HKPF).
19:10	<p>Wan Chai, Hong Kong Island</p> <p>Protesters went to Hennessy Road outside PHQ in Wan Chai to block the road. A huge fire was set by protesters by burning a large number of items (source: media reports⁶).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>
19:19	Protesters threw petrol bomb to the main gate of PHQ at Arsenal Street (source: HKPF).
19:30	A large number of protesters gathered outside the SOGO Department Store in Causeway Bay (source: media report ⁷).
19:48	<p>The Police deployed two SCMVs and one UNIMOG to proceed along Hennessy Road towards the fire scene (source: HKPF).</p> <p>The protesters retreated after the Police discharged water with blue dye from the SCMV. The SCMV also helped to put off the fire on the road (source: media report and live video footage⁸).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p>
20:35	The Police pushed to Hysan Place in Causeway Bay and protesters threw petrol bombs at the Police. Traces of arson caused by the protesters were seen on the road (source: media reports and live video footage ⁹).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: Sing Tao Daily)</i></p>
20:46	<p>Protesters marched towards police cordon line, and set fire on the barricades at SOGO Department Store crossing on Hennessy Road. During the confrontation, the Police fired multiple 40mm REACT round and volleys of tear gas to disperse protesters (source: HKPF).</p>
21:00	<p>Dozens of protesters confronted several plainclothes officers at Victoria Park. As a result, two plainclothes officers fired two warning shots to the sky (source: media reports¹⁰).</p> <p>According to the Police, the two officers performing special duties at Victoria Park fired two warning shots because they were chased and attacked by a large number of protesters (source: HKPF).</p>

C. Clashes in Kowloon and Mong Kok Station

Time (Approx.)	Incident
21:16	<p>Tsim Sha Tsui, Kowloon</p> <p>About 500-700 protesters were gathering at Canton Road junction Haiphong Road (source: HKPF).</p>
21:26	<p>Some protesters used garbage bins to block roads in Nathan Road. The Police fired tear gas at the Park Lane Shopper's Boulevard outside Tsim Sha Tsui Police Station. Riot police officers moved forward along Park Lane Shopper's Boulevard and cleared the roadblocks (source: media report and live video footage¹¹).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: Now TV)</p>
21:37	Protesters used petrol bomb at Humphreys Road in Tsim Sha Tsui (source: HKPF).
22:05	<p>Mong Kok, Kowloon</p> <p>Protesters retreated to Mong Kok and blocked the road with trash cans and other objects near the Bank Centre. Some protesters entered Mong Kok Station and broke the glass panel of the control room with iron poles and hammers. A hole was found on the panel (source: MTRC¹², media reports and live video footage¹³).</p>  <p>(Image source: TVB)</p>
22:06	About 100 protesters gathered at Mong Kok Station (source: HKPF).
22:30	MTRC requested police assistance. Police reinforcement shortly entered the station but the protesters had already left either by train or by different exits (source: HKPF).

D. Incidents Related to Prince Edward Station

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:42 to 22:53	<p>Protesters disputed with several passengers in a train compartment at platform No. 3 heading to the direction of Tiu Keng Leng (source: HKPF).</p> <p>When the train was approaching Prince Edward Station, in the heat of the dispute, a protester slapped a male passenger on his face (source: media report¹⁴).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: SocRec)</i></p> <p>The train arrived at platform No. 3 of Prince Edward Station. Train doors could not be closed after passengers alighted and boarded the train (source: MTRC¹⁵).</p> <p>The brawl continued when the train reached Prince Edward Station. The protesters got off the train and stayed close to the train door apparently to argue with that male passenger and a few other middle-aged male passengers who were inside the train compartment.</p> <p>After a while, some protesters went into the compartment and attacked the male passengers with umbrellas. Those male passengers fought back.</p> <p>One of the male passengers took out and swung a hammer, and then the protesters came out of the train compartment and threw water bottles and umbrellas at male passengers inside. The fight stopped for a brief moment. Later, several protesters dashed into the train compartment and attacked the male passenger who had been slapped and was now being targeted. That male passenger fought</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>back but he was outnumbered by the protesters. The protesters came out of the train compartment. Someone (believed to be one of the protesters) discharged a fire extinguisher into the train compartment from the platform (source: media reports¹⁶).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: SocRec)</i></p> <p>Violent protesters assaulted the passengers with umbrellas, iron poles and fire extinguishers (source: HKPF).</p> <p>A lady standing on the platform recorded the incident and the acts of the protesters with her mobile phone. There is no indication that she was involved in the dispute or the fight. She was however also assaulted by the protesters (source: video footage¹⁷).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:44	The driver of the train which was about to depart platform No. 3 noticed that he could not close the train doors. He then noted that there was a dispute between two groups of people in a train compartment (source: MTRC ¹⁵). Around 100 protesters were getting off at Prince Edward Station (source: HKPF).
22:45	MTRC reported the passenger disputes on the Kwun Tong Line train to the Police for assistance (source: MTRC ¹⁵).
22:47	The passenger alarm devices on the train at platform No. 3 were activated (source: MTRC ¹⁵).
22:49 to 23:15	Police 999 Console received over 50 reports about what had happened inside Prince Edward Station, including the “assault”, “mobsters throwing smoke bombs”, “mobsters besieging MTRC platform control room” and “chaos inside Prince Edward Station” (source: HKPF).
Around 22:50	Media footage captured a large group of protesters coming out from a compartment of the train from Mong Kok and began taking off their black clothing and changing into clothes of different colours at the far corner of the platform, disguising themselves as ordinary passengers. Some people held open umbrellas to shield the protesters taking off their clothes (source: media reports and live video footage ¹⁸).



Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p><i>(Image source: TVB)</i></p>
22:50	<p>Commander gave instruction to deploy all available resources to go into Prince Edward Station for assistance (source: HKPF).</p> <p>MTR staff noted that smoke emitted from the train. Someone also activated the alarm on another train that had stopped at No. 4 platform. Both trains stopped at platforms No. 3 and 4 (source: MTRC¹⁵).</p> <p>FSD Console received a report that three persons were assaulted at Prince Edward Station (source: FSD).</p>
22:52	<p>999 Console received reports from citizens about seeing smoke coming out from a train compartment (source: FSD).</p> <p>The Police requested MTRC to suspend all trains at Prince Edward Station (source: HKPF).</p>
22:53	<p>MTRC decided to evacuate Prince Edward Station and broadcast an announcement asking all passengers to leave immediately. CCTV of MTRC captured that police officers entered the station via Exit C2. (source: MTRC¹⁵).</p>
22:56	<p>Police officers arrived at platform No. 3 and 4 and carried out operations on both trains (source: MTRC¹⁵).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: MTRC CCTV)</i></p> <p>Some police officers chased after a few protesters on platforms No. 3 and 4 and in the train compartments while the protesters were running away and trying to escape (source: media reports¹⁹).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Pakkin Leung@Rice Post)</i></p> <p>An officer chased a female in white shirt, who was running away from the Police at that time. At one point, the officer pushed the female once, and she fell down onto the floor.</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: TVB)</i></p> <p>After a number of protesters had been subdued onto the floor by the police officers, a female walked to those protesters and asked the protesters one by one for their names and HKID Card numbers and they accordingly gave her their particulars. It is not known who that lady was because she did not appear on the footage. Only her voice could be heard on the video.</p> <p>A male in black shirt who was being subdued on the ground tried to put up resistance before police officers could secure his hands behind his back with a plastic zip tie. He jumped up and ran. Some police officers tried to stop him. Almost at the same time, a person in green shirt who also wore a black mask hit the police officers with an umbrella to stop them from getting hold of that male. Another person pushed the police officers away. The police officers reacted with their batons, but he jumped onto a nearby stationary escalator crowded with</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>people (some of whom with masks) and disappeared. The person in green shirt then ran off down the platform. During the chaotic situation, the male in black shirt also ran away to a direction that could not be captured by the camera. Police officers used OC Foam and batons in the episode (source: media report²⁰).</p>   <p>A male already subdued on the ground took the opportunity to escape when a lady asked for his name and HKID Card numbers</p>  <p>A male in green shirt hit the police officer with an umbrella</p>

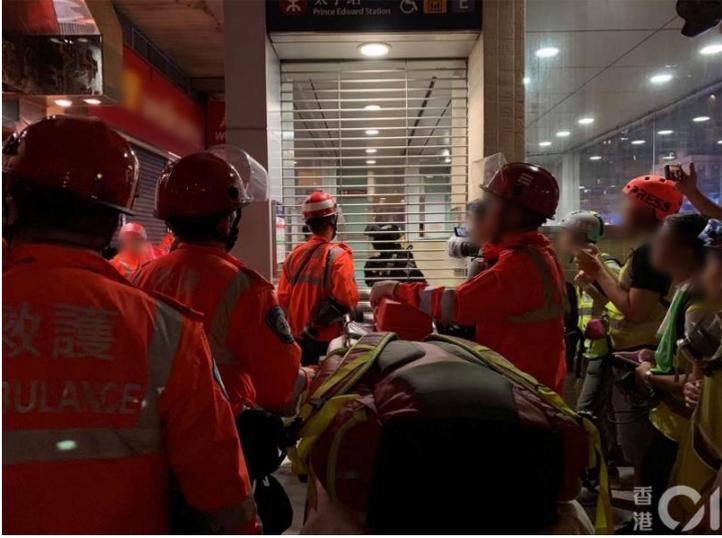
Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>A male jumped onto a stationary escalator crowded with people (Image source: SocRec)</p> <p>One of the compartments of the train at platform No. 3 was crowded with passengers. Several police officers spotted that among the passengers, four persons wearing helmets, masks, light reflection vests, black T-shirts and black trousers, and carrying backpacks. The police officers repeatedly asked them to get off the train but they did not do so. The police officers did not get on the train to take action but waited on the platform. There was a brief moment of standoff. Eventually, the four persons came out from a train compartment.</p> <p>Police officers attempted to take enforcement action inside a train compartment at platform No. 4. One police officer pointed a rubber baton launcher at the train compartment and another police officer discharged pepper spray into it. Some protesters inside the compartment opened umbrellas to cover themselves. Some pointed their umbrellas at the police officers. Despite Police action, the protesters did not leave the train.</p> <p>Many of the protesters retreated to the end of the train compartment and opened their umbrellas to form a barrier, while the clash between some of the protesters and a few police officers was taking place. Two young men and two women in masks, who were in close proximity to the protesters, were cowering on the ground, apparently in a state of panic under the chaotic situation. At one time, the police officers discharged OC Foam into the train from outside the train compartment. The man in the front put up his hands. The police officers did not arrest them or any person but instead got off the train. It could be seen that the train doors closed and opened several times, suggesting that the train was</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>about to depart. Eventually the train doors closed (source: media reports²⁰).</p>  <p>Two young men and two women were covering on the ground inside a train compartment (<i>Image source: Pakkin Leung@Rice Post</i>)</p> <p>According to the Police, when police officers entered the train compartment at platform No. 4, they were attacked by more than ten violent protesters with umbrellas and other sharp-edged objects. In response, the Police used minimum force necessary to control and subdue them, including the use of police batons and OC Foam (source: HKPF).</p>   <p>(<i>Image source: HK01</i>)</p> <p>The Police requested reporters to leave Prince Edward Station for the reason that it was a crime scene where the Police had to take investigative action. Media footage recorded police officers requesting reporters to leave the station (source: media report²⁰).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>The Police arrested the protesters at different locations inside Prince Edward Station. All APs were then arranged to the end of platform No. 3 near the first train compartment heading towards Tiu Keng Leng direction (source: HKPF).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: MTRC CCTV)</i></p>
23:01	In response to a citizen’s report that smoke was seen inside the station, the first batch of fire officers arrived at Exit B1 (source: FSD).
23:02	Despite first police request at 22:52 to stop all trains at Prince Edward Station, a train at platform No.4 still managed to leave Prince Edward Station (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
23:04	The train at platform No. 4 of Prince Edward Station departed for Yau Ma Tei Station (source: MTRC ¹⁵).
23:05	Commander requested MTRC again to stop all trains at Prince Edward Station (source: HKPF).
23:06	<p>The first batch of fire officers (13 in total) entered Prince Edward Station via Exit B1 (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV).</p> <p>The fire officers cut off the lock of the iron gate (source: FSD).</p> <p>Police officers followed the fire officers to go inside the station via Exit B1. From then on, a number of police officers were seen guarding the exit (source: MTRC CCTV).</p>
23:09	The train containing violent protesters arrived at Yau Ma Tei Station (source: HKPF).
23:10	MTRC suspended the train services on the Kwun Tong Line and Tsuen Wan Line (source: MTRC ¹⁵).
23:12	Fire officers inside Prince Edward Station reported to FSD Console that there was no fire (source: FSD).
23:14	<p>In response to a report from Police Console that people were injured inside the station, the first batch of ambulance officers (one Probationary Ambulance Officer (PAO) and his team) arrived at Exit B1.</p> <p>The police officers on guard at Exit B1 told the PAO that no one had been injured inside the station (source: FSD and media reports²¹).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: RTHK)</i></p>
23:17	<p>In response to a call made by a citizen to the FSD Console that some people had been assaulted inside Prince Edward Station, three ambulance officers arrived at Exit E (source: FSD).</p> <p>MTR staff were closing the gate of the exit but they allowed the ambulance</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	officers to enter. The ambulance officers then entered via Exit E (source: FSD).
23:18	Though the train departing from Prince Edward Station platform No.4 at 23:02 was stopped at Yau Ma Tei Station, the doors of the train compartment in fact opened after arriving at Yau Ma Tei Station. Hence, some violent protesters on the train had absconded before the police arrival. Nevertheless, the Police still managed to locate and arrest ten suspects at Yau Ma Tei Station (source: HKPF).
23:20	<p>Second batch of fire officers (six in total) entered Prince Edward Station via Exit B1 (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV).</p> <p>Three ambulance officers entering the Prince Edward Station via Exit E with a stretcher before MTR staff closed the gate at Exit E. Six fire officers entered the station via Exit B1 (source: MTRC CCTV).</p> <p>According to FSD, the fire officers with “First Responders” (先遣急救員) qualification could provide first aid to the injured persons. Their mission was to provide prompt basic life support to patients before the arrival of ambulance officers to increase their survival rate.</p> <p>(source: FSD).</p> <p>According to the Police, they had sent the first seven APs from Prince Edward Station to Kwai Chung Police Station by police vehicles (source: HKPF).</p>
23:30	<p>The PAO stayed at Exit B1 and was seen communicating with a police officer at Exit B1. According to FSD, at 23:30, the PAO entered the station by himself. The CCTV of at Exit B1 captured the moment (the time shown on CCTV was 23:35) when the PAO entered Exit B1</p> <p>(source: FSD and media report²²).</p> <p>(Note: According to records of HKPF and MTRC, the PAO entered Prince Edward Station via Exit B1 at 23:35.)</p>
23:34	The third batch of fire officers (four in total) entered the station, just as the three ambulance officers came out with a female on the stretcher from Exit E (source: HKPF and MTRC CCTV).
23:41	There were around 100 violent protesters proceeding to Mong Kok Police Station from Nathan Road near Argyle Street (source: HKPF).
23:45	There were over 200 violent protesters with gear proceeding to Mong Kok Police Station from the junction of Nathan Road and Argyle Street (source: HKPF).
23:46	The PAO reported to the Console that there were about ten to 15 injured persons (source: FSD).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
23:56	A police officer had locked the gate of Exit B1 due to the increasing number of violent protesters gathering outside the exit (source: HKPF).
00:01 1 Sep	The PAO revised the number of casualties to nine (source: FSD).
00:09 1 Sep	A number of ambulances arrived at Exit E where the gate was closed (source: MTRC CCTV).
00:15 1 Sep	<p>Ambulance officers at Exit E were told by a police officer that no one was injured inside the station. At one point, a fire officer came up from the station and told the ambulance officers outside the gate that there were injured persons inside (source: FSD and media report²³).</p>  <p>(Image source: HK01)</p> <p>CCTV footage of MTRC captured that there was communication between police officers, fire officers, ambulance officers and MTR staff near the gate (source: MTRC CCTV).</p> <p>The PAO further changed the number of casualties to ten (source: FSD).</p>
00:23 1 Sep	The MTR staff opened the gate for 19 ambulance officers to enter Prince Edward Station via the Exit E (source: MTRC CCTV and HKPF).
00:25 1 Sep	FSD Console was informed by MTRC that the station was clear with no more passenger inside (source: FSD).
00:36 1 Sep	There were about 800 violent protesters gathering outside Mong Kok Police Station (source: HKPF).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
00:38 1 Sep	Due to the situation outside Prince Edward Station, it was unsafe to convey the injured persons from Prince Edward Station to hospital. The Police decided to arrange injured persons to be sent to Lai Chi Kok Station for subsequent transportation to hospital (source: HKPF).
00:54 1 Sep	MTRC arranged a special train on police request to run from Prince Edward Station to Lai Chi Kok Station (source: MTRC ¹⁵).
00:55 1 Sep	Police's arrest action inside the Prince Edward Station was completed (source: HKPF).
01:02 1 Sep	The PAO gave a final count of casualties as seven (source: FSD).
01:03 1 Sep	Lai Chi Kok, Kowloon Ambulance vehicles were standing by at Lai Chi Kok Station to convey injured persons to hospitals (source: FSD).
01:23 1 Sep	A special train carrying 45 APs, seven of them injured, left Prince Edward Station for Lai Chi Kok Station (source: MTRC ¹⁵ and HKPF).
01:28 1 Sep	The special train arrived at Lai Chi Kok Station (source: MTRC ¹⁵).
01:35 to 01:55 1 Sep	The Police and ambulance officers escorted a total of seven injured APs to leave Lai Chi Kok Station via station lift. (source: MTRC ¹⁵). The seven injured APs were escorted to Princess Margaret Hospital and Caritas Medical Centre respectively, and the 38 others to Kwai Chung Police Station (source: FSD and HKPF).

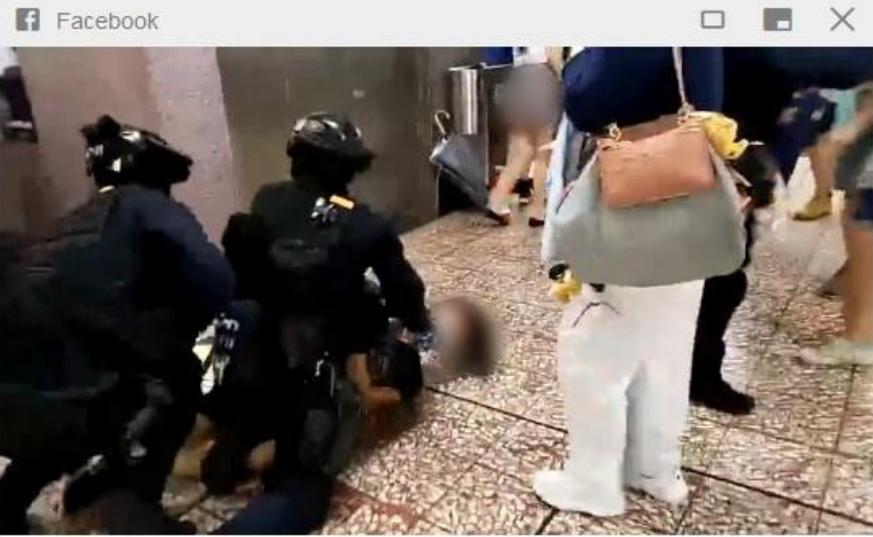
E. Rumours Related to the Prince Edward Station Incident

Time (Approx.)	Incident
22:59 31 Aug	A television station had a live broadcast of what was happening inside Prince Edward Station (source: live video footage ²⁴). Posts and messages began to appear on the internet.

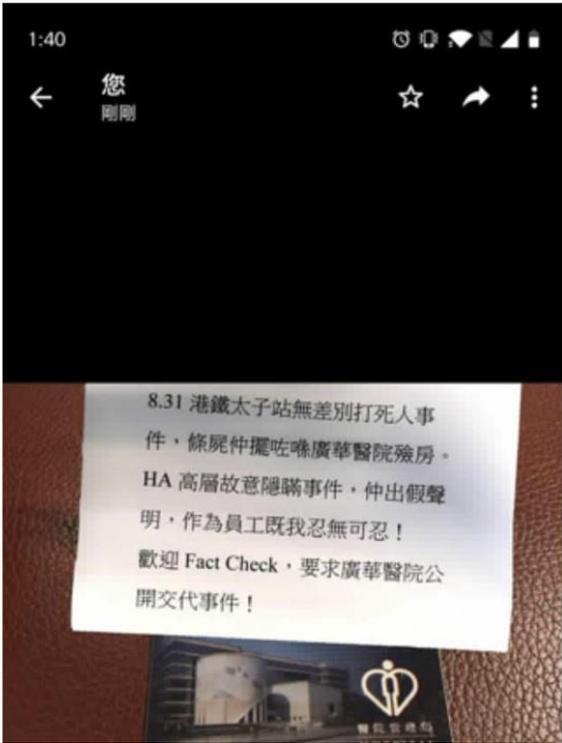
Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p>(Image source: TVB)</p>
23:01 31 Aug	<p>While the Police was still taking action inside Prince Edward Station, a post entitled “cls 黑警走左入太子站列車 見人就打” (Translation: Crazy, after getting into Prince Edward Station, police officers hit whoever they saw) on LIHKG. In the messages that followed this post, some netizens criticised the Police for using excessive force and beating people indiscriminately on the platform and inside the train compartment similar to the attack by those people dressed in white in the 721 Yuen Long Incident (source: LIHKG²⁵).</p> <p>← cls 黑警走左入太子站列車 見人就打 <small>1.於女廁內強行拘捕2名女工 嚴重侵犯私隱</small></p> <p>831</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1.再次射擊市民眼部 2.再有休班/卧底警員攜帶武器如警棍槍械參加非法集會 3.再有休班/卧底警員投擲氣油彈及對市民方向使用槍械掃射 4.休班/卧底警員在拘捕市民時未有表明身份及出示有效證件 5.休班/卧底警員在拘捕市民時使用過份武力 6.警方使用載有有色染料水炮車進行驅散,嚴重污染環境 7.於旺角站內圍毆市民及將市民拘捕,暴力執法及濫捕 8.衝入車廂虐打市民,情況有如721白衫人襲擊元朗MTR <p>↑ 2 ↓ 0 🔊 1</p> <p><i>Translation</i> 7. Police officers assaulted and arrested civilians inside Mong Kok (sic) MTR Station, which was violent and an abuse of power.</p> <p>8. Police officers rushed into the train compartment to hit people vigorously, like what the people dressed in white had assaulted others in the 721 Yuen Long Incident.</p> <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>
23:18 31 Aug	<p>A post entitled “太子站 警察發動恐襲 必要向國際求救” (Translation: The Police launched terrorist attack in Prince Edward Station, must seek international assistance) appeared on LIHKG (source: LIHKG²⁶).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>Translation</i> Right away! Seek international assistance immediately. Uniformed police officers attacked citizens in the MTR indiscriminately. Hong Kong is in an inhumane condition. Must let everyone know about this.</p> <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>
02:19 1 Sep	<p>A posts entitled “太子站啲傷者係咪仲未出黎” (Translation: Have the injured persons still not come out from Prince Edward Station) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator commented that “無記者影入面做咩左都無人知” (Translation: No reporter video recorded or took photos inside the station, no one would know what had been done inside). At 02:21, a netizen put up a message to this post saying “現場有傳打死左人，未 FC！！！！！” (Translation: People at the scene claimed that someone had been beaten to death. Haven’t fact checked yet!”) (source: LIHKG²⁷).</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG)</p>
03:00 1 Sep	<p>Police Stand-up Press Conference</p> <p>The Police (PPRB) held a stand-up briefing to give an overview of the POE situation on 31 August. The PPRB officer did not give details of the casualties inside Prince Edward Station. The Police did not say whether anyone had died in the station. Nor did the reporters ask about it (source: media report²⁸).</p>
08:16 1 Sep	<p>A post entitled “政府唔好再包庇黑警濫用暴力，應該盡快拉晒呢班黑警去坐監” (Translation: The Government should no longer allow the Police to use violence. Should take the triad police officers to jail as soon as possible)</p>

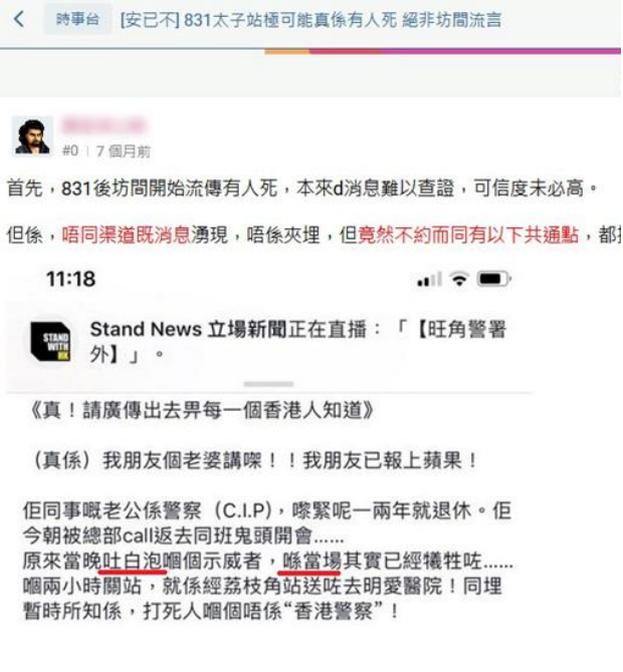
Time (Approx.)	Incident
	appeared on the DISCUSS forum. The post creator claimed that the police officers were terrorists and assaulted the people inside the train (source: DISCUSS ²⁹).
16:37 1 Sep	A post entitled “有人覺得封太子站好奇怪？” (Translation: Anyone felt the closure of Prince Edward Station strange?) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator commented that “琴晚傷者冇人知去左邊,依家仲要封埋站,入面 0 消息,難道真係有人死左?” (Translation: Last night, no one knew where the injured had been taken to. Now, the station is even closed. No news from inside. Is it really that someone had died?) In the messages that followed this post, some netizens suspected that the Police had killed people inside the station, saying “似打死人” (Translation: Seems people were beaten to death), “我信死左人” (Translation: I believe that someone has died). More speculation of people being killed came to light (source: LIHKG ³⁰).
17:15 1 Sep	A post entitled “封站係因為黑狗太子恐襲 死左幾個市民 依加要執手尾” (Translation: The reason for closing the station was that the Police had killed several citizens, so the Police had to tidy up the scene) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator stated that “若果不能毀滅 就開始整理現場 想造成死者係因為自己失誤或被示威者襲擊而身亡” (Translation: If the evidence could not be destroyed, the scene had to be tidied up to create an impression that the deceased died of their/his own mistakes or attacks by protesters) (source: LIHKG ³¹).
18:00 1 Sep	Kowloon West Region (Crime) of the Police gave a briefing to the media regarding the arrest operations mounted inside Prince Edward Station on 31 August. There was no mention whether any person had died during police enforcement (source: media report ³²).
20:19 1 Sep	A post entitled “嚴重懷疑尋晚太子死咗人” (Translation: Seriously suspecting that someone had died at Prince Edward last night) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator stated “結果封站封一日。真毀屍滅跡” (Translation: The station ended up being closed for one day. Undoubtedly destroying evidence) (source: LIHKG ³³).
PM 1 Sep	The Hong Kong Journalists Association (HKJA) and the Hong Kong Photographers Association issued a statement condemning the Police for obstructing news coverage inside Prince Edward Station (source: HKJA ³⁴).
01:29 2 Sep	A post entitle “正式宣佈八月三十一日，一位香港人被黑警活生生打死” (Translation: Formally announce that a Hong Kong person was beaten to death

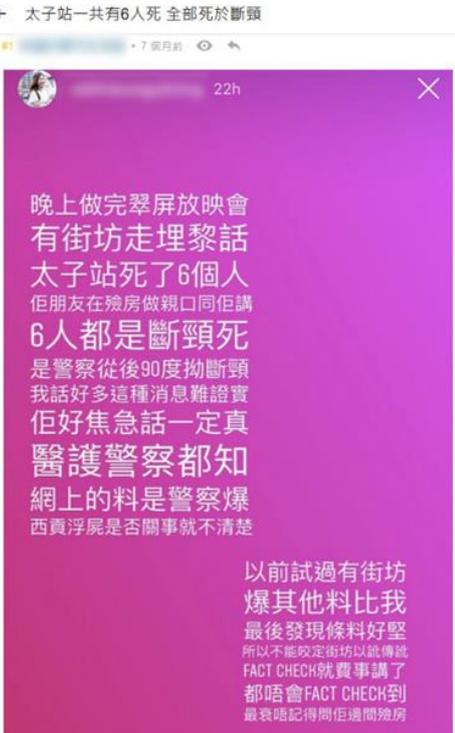
Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>by police officers on 31 August.) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator, referring to a live broadcast video, claimed that a protester was unconscious when being subdued by a police officer on the platform and said that the protester was actually dead at that time (source: LIHKG³⁵).</p> <p>← 正式宣佈八月三十一日，一位香港人被黑警活生生打死</p> <p>#1 [redacted] • 7 個月前 [eye icon] [share icon]</p> <p>8.31 太子站後續！！同我推到佢爆炸！！</p> <p>https://lih.kg/dNrdcS</p> <p>樓主多次證實100%有人無反應下被抬走</p>  <p>https://www.facebook.com/hk.nextmedia/videos/724119284717359/</p> <p>片段2分58秒開始睇起</p> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG, the video was originally from Apple Daily)</i></p>
02:26 2 Sep	<p>A post entitled “太子站死了幾個黑衣示威者，醫護說出姓名的已有兩個，求FC” (Translation: Several protesters in black outfits died inside Prince Edward Station. Health care workers gave the names of at least two people. Please fact check it) appeared on HKGOLDEN. The post creator showed a screen capture of a Facebook page, which stated that two persons (with two Chinese names given) were killed inside Prince Edward Station and their dead bodies had been sent to mortuary (source: HKGOLDEN³⁶).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>Translation</i> <i>“Please check with the mortuary of the hospital. My friend’s relative, a medical worker, claimed that several protesters were beaten to death in Prince Edward Station Incident last night. Two of them named “XXX” and “XXX” (Name deleted by the IPCC) had been sent to the mortuary. The news are blocked. Please do a fact check. Hope this is not real.”</i></p> <p>(Image source: HKGOLDEN)</p>
AM 2 Sep	<p>Government Press Conference</p> <p>A reporter asked CS to comment on the action of the Police in Prince Edward Station and to respond to the alleged death incident inside the station. CS replied that there was no death report in connection with the incidents on 31 August according to the information from HA (source: the Government³⁷).</p>
12:19 2 Sep	<p>A post entitled “幫手出:831 前線救護爆料” (Translation: Help to disseminate: 831 frontline medical staff give information) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator claimed that he was an ambulance officer who was on duty on 31 August and went to Prince Edward Station. He had heard that the number of casualties that initially reported to FSD control room was ten. However, only seven injured persons were sent to the hospitals at the end. In the messages that followed this post, some netizens queried why three injured persons were missing (source: LIHKG³⁸).</p>
13:46 2 Sep	<p>A post entitled “831 太子站死人消息” (Translation: Information on those dead at 831 Prince Edward Station) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator posted a photo with a message. A person who claimed to be an HA staff (not named) said that a dead body in connection with the Prince Edward Station Incident had been located at Kwong Wah Hospital (source: LIHKG³⁹).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>← 831太子站死人消息</p> <p>#1 [Profile] · 7 個月前</p> <p>相入面唔係我黎， 有人冇幫手check到？ 急呀大佬</p>  <p><i>Translation</i> “...The corpse is now at the mortuary of Kwong Wah Hospital...the HA senior management issued a false statement to cover up the incident...Welcome to do a fact check on it...”</p> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p>
16:00 2 Sep	<p>Police Press Conference</p> <p>A police spokesman stated that on 31 August, the police officers had taken enforcement action inside Prince Edward Station based on their intelligence and their professional judgement at the scene. He said that there was no instance of death that night (source: the Government⁴⁰).</p> <p>A FSD representative who was present at the press conference provided an overview of their operations on 31 August and stated that seven injured persons were sent to the hospitals, but did not say whether the number of casualties had been revised over time (source: HKPF and media report⁴¹).</p>
12:35 3 Sep	<p>The post update on “831 太子死亡事件整合(3.9.2019) 及 行動討論” (Translation: 831 Prince Edward death incident and operational discussion) appeared on LIHKG. The post creator posted two a “Missing Person Notice” on LIHKG purporting to look for missing persons.</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>The messages stated that the two persons did not leave the Prince Edward Station that evening, and asked people to provide more information on the whereabouts of the two missing persons. Messages following the post claimed that some APs had died (source: LIHKG⁴²).</p> <div style="border: 1px solid black; padding: 5px;"> <p>← [沉寔待雪] 831 太子死亡事件整合(3.9.2019) 及 行動討論</p> <p style="text-align: center;">第 1 頁 ▾</p> <p>7 個月前</p> <p>影片中懷疑死亡人士 第一位: https://na.cx/i/KT54KW.gif</p>  </div> <p><i>(Image source: LIHKG)</i></p> <p>Translation “Missing Person</p> <p><i>The person in this picture lost consciousness after being beaten by police officers. The Police then requested to cordon off the station and expel reporters and medical workers therefrom. No injured person was seen leaving the station afterwards...”</i></p>
16:00 3 Sep	<p>Police Press Conference</p> <p>The Police stated at a regular press conference that there was no case of death in the Prince Edward Station incident (source: HKPF and media report⁴³).</p>
4 Sep	<p>A netizen uploaded a video clip entitled “跟進 831 太子站懷疑警方打死人事件” (Translation: Follow up on 831 Prince Edward Station Incident, suspecting that the Police had killed someone) onto YouTube. The video contained media footage, which covered the Prince Edward Station Incident.</p> <p>The person who made the video added textual descriptions, including that:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> ➤ there was proof that someone had been killed inside the station; ➤ the Police did not allow ambulance officers to enter Prince Edward Station, and some netizens demanded MTRC to release the complete CCTV footage to uncover the truth; and ➤ the Police had unreasonably beaten protesters (source: YouTube⁴⁴).
16:00 5 Sep	<p>Police Press Conference</p> <p>Reporters questioned why police officers used batons and pepper sprays on innocent citizens inside train compartments. A police representative replied that reporters should not only focus on a clip that had lasted for several seconds,</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	and reiterated that the officers were taking enforcement action in response to the violence at the material time. He repeated that no protesters had been beaten to death in the Prince Edward Station Incident (source: HKPF).
23:13 5 Sep	<p>A post entitle “831 太子站極可能真係有人死 絕非坊間流言” (Translation: Very likely that someone had died inside Prince Edward Station on 831. It is not a rumour) was created on HKGOLDEN. It was mentioned in the post that according to a CIP, one protester was dead inside the Prince Edward Station that evening (source: HKGOLDEN⁴⁵).</p>  <p>(Image source: HKGOLDEN)</p>
01:58 6 Sep	<p>A post entitled “太子站一共有 6 人死 全部死於斷頸” appeared on LIHKG. (Translation: Six people had died inside Prince Edward Station, all died of broken necks) It claimed that police officers had broken the necks of six people and killed them. The post, however, did not give any details of these six people (source: LIHKG⁴⁶).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p><i>Translation</i> “...A neighbour came to say that his friend, a staff of mortuary, told him that six persons had died at Prince Edward MTR Station and all of them died of broken necks. It was the police officers who twisted their necks to 90 degrees. His friend asserted that it was true, and that the medical workers and police officers knew about it. The information on the internet was disseminated by police officers. However, whether the dead body which was found floating in Sai Kung is related to this incident is not known.”</p>  <p>(Image source: LIHKG, originally from Instagram)</p>
20:12 6 Sep	<p>FSD Press Release</p> <p>In response to the rumour that FSD had concealed the actual number of casualties inside Prince Edward Station, FSD issued a press release which stated:</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> the situation in the station was chaotic and the injured persons were dispersed at different locations and they moved around on the platform. Some injured persons may have been repeatedly counted at the initial headcount by the ambulance personnel; when handling incidents with multiple casualties, the officer at the scene would firstly conduct a brief headcount of casualties and report the preliminary estimation to the Fire Services Communications Centre for its prompt dispatch of additional resources and manpower in order to enhance the efficiency of the rescue operation; and the number of casualties initially counted would be updated from time to time (source: FSD⁴⁷).

Time (Approx.)	Incident
17:09 7 Sep	<p>Government Press Release</p> <p>The Government issued a press release, stating that there were no death cases over the past 3 months caused by law enforcement agencies during operation. The Government denied the rumour that there was death in Prince Edward Station Incident (source: the Government⁴⁸).</p>
16:00 9 Sep	<p>Police Press Conference</p> <p>FSD officers joined the Police to hold the regular Police press conference. In the said press conference, FSD representatives rejected the rumours that FSD officers had deliberately altered the number of casualties on 31 August in the Prince Edward Station incident, and gave explanation on how FSD officers counted the number of casualties (source: HKPF and FSD).</p>
AM 10 Sep	<p>Police, FSD, HA and MTRC Joint Press Conference</p> <p>A police representative reiterated that the so-called death incident inside Prince Edward Station was a malicious and ungrounded rumour. She added that the Police had not received any missing person report stemming from the Prince Edward Station Incident (source: media report⁴⁹).</p>
16:00 11 Sep	<p>LegCo Member Press Conference</p> <p>A LegCo member held a press conference. She showed FSD internal records on the counting of casualties on 31 August and queried why FSD changed the number of casualties several times (It is not known how the LegCo Member had got the information.) (source: media report⁵⁰).</p>
21:28 11 Sep	<p>A news article was released. The article stated that the ambulance officer inside Prince Edward Station had amended the number of casualties on his own, and questioned why a male patient in coma was taken out of the station by FSD at an earlier time (source: media report⁵¹).</p>
	
<p>(Image source: From Stand News Facebook public page)</p>	

Time (Approx.)	Incident
AM 12 Sep	<p>Netizens claiming MTRC performed a funeral ceremony</p> <p>In the small hours, netizens spread information on Facebook and LIHKG that MTRC had closed the Prince Edward Station to perform a funeral ceremony for the deceased inside the station. A netizen, after seeing the information on the internet, went to the vicinity of the station and conducted a live broadcast on the internet. The 122-minutes long live broadcast video captured the vicinity of the Prince Edward Station (mainly near Exit E).</p> <p>At that time, the station, as well as the gates of the various exits, had already been closed after service hours. The netizen taking the video walked around the station and talked to passers-by. Some passers-by indicated that they came to check if any funeral ceremony was taking place. However, no such ceremony could actually be seen throughout the broadcast video.</p> <p>At 20:22, a media reported on the internet that around 120 000 persons had watched the video after it was made available online for 11 hours and the video was subsequently shared by 700 persons with more than 1 000 comments received (source: media report⁵²).</p> <p>[As at 6 March 2020, over 189 000 viewed this video.]</p>
PM 12 Sep	<p>FSD Press Conference</p> <p>In the afternoon, FSD held a press conference to address the concern over the counting of casualties. FSD spokesperson reiterated the clarification given in their press release on 6 September and confirmed that there was no death case at all in the Prince Edward Station Incident (source: media report⁵³).</p>
15:00 17 Sep	<p>LegCo Member Press Conference</p> <p>Another LegCo Member held a press conference and showed FSD incident log records. He queried why FSD amended the incident log records in relation to (i) counting the number of casualties and their injury conditions (amended on 3 September); and (ii) the Police taking the injured persons to Lai Chi Kok Station (amended on 10 September) (source: media report⁵⁴).</p>
PM 19 Sep	<p>FSD Press Conference</p> <p>FSD held another press conference. FSD stated that it was a common practice to amend the incident log records after reviewing the information following an incident. There was a possibility that the PAO may have double-counted injured persons during the initial assessment (source: FSD and media report⁵⁵).</p>
From 30 Sep onward	<p>People continued to mourn</p> <p>Between September 2019 and January 2020, on the last day of each month, i.e. on 30 September, 31 October, 30 November, 31 December and 31 January 2020,</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	<p>some people continued to place flowers outside Prince Edward Station (source: media reports⁵⁶).</p>  <p><i>(Image source: Epoch Times)</i></p>  <p><i>(Image source: Now TV)</i></p> <p>On 29 Feb 2020, protesters gathered again to commemorate the 31 August event. Protesters chanted slogans and placed flowers at different Exits of Prince Edward Station. Some of them pointed laser beams at police officers on guard nearby, and built barricades and set fires on roads. The Police fired tear gas to disperse the crowd, and took arrest action in the evening (source: media report⁵⁷).</p>

Time (Approx.)	Incident
	 <p><i>(Image source: HK01)</i></p>

- ¹ HK01 (2019-08-30). 831 遊行-上訴被駁回-民陣取消遊行集會. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/政情/369596/831_遊行-上訴被駁回-民陣取消遊行集會
 Apple Daily (2019-08-30). 8.31 各自爬山! 教徒號召祈禱大遊行 網路紅人辦流動見面會. Retrieved from <http://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190830/59990705>
 CitizenNews (2019-08-31). 網民 831 自由行、祈禱遊行-警:按環境執法-泛民:be-water. Retrieved from http://www.hkcnnews.com/article/23223/831-泛民-反對通知書-23228/網民_831_自由行、祈禱遊行-警:按環境執法-泛民:be-water
 Ming Pao Daily News (2019-09-01). 數百教徒毋懼涉違法 稱自由是底線 「為罪人祈禱」遊行 赴禮賓府讀經被截.
 Oriental Daily News (2019-09-01). 狂掙燃燒彈 火攻政總警總 警維園開兩槍 831 暴亂焚城.
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 民陣取消今集會遊行 泛民籲「港島見」.
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【基督徒遊行】遊行人士行經警總 警方一度舉黃旗警告. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1080779/即時-香港-基督徒遊行-遊行人士行經警總-警方一度舉黃旗警告>
- ² Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例】毛孟靜留守遮打花園 監察警方行動. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1080875/即時-香港-逃犯條例-毛孟靜留守遮打花園-監察警方行動>
- ³ RTHK (2019-08-31). 大批市民下午於遮打花園聚集後向上環方向前行. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1477964-20190831.htm>
 HK01 (2019-08-31). 【8.31 遊行·全日總覽】警方:港經歷浩劫 太子站行動屬適當武力. Retrieved from http://www.hk01.com/政情/369452/8-31_遊行-全日總覽-警方-港經歷浩劫-太子站行動屬適當武力
 Live video footage of Now TV
- ⁴ RTHK (2019-08-31). 示威者多次投擲汽油彈 警方水馬陣內帳篷一度著火 and 警方夏慤道多次施放催淚煙驅散示威者. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1477996-20190831.htm> and <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1477983-20190831.htm>
 HK01 (2019-08-31). 【8.31 遊行·全日總覽】警方:港經歷浩劫 太子站行動屬適當武力. Retrieved from http://www.hk01.com/政情/369452/8-31_遊行-全日總覽-警方-港經歷浩劫-太子站行動屬適當武力
 Apple Daily (2019-09-01). 港島區混戰 灣仔路障陷火海.
 Live video footage of Now TV
- ⁵ RTHK (2019-08-31). 警方稱已使用顏色水及催淚煙驅散金鐘暴力示威者. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1477997-20190831.htm>
 Apple daily (2019-09-01). 記者染藍 皮膚灼痛似火燒.
 Apple daily (2019-09-01). 港島區混戰 灣仔路障陷火海.
 Hong Kong Commercial Daily (1 September 2019). 暴徒向警狂掙汽油彈 水炮車首射藍水顯威力.
 Metro Daily (2019-09-02). 被指「無差別」向乘客施襲 警解釋太子站武力適當.
 Ming Pao Daily News (1 September 2019). 示威者 6 區縱火 水炮車首噴藍液 警維園兩槍示警 港鐵車廂圍捕棍打.
 Sing Pao (2019-09-01). 含食用色素 以大量清水可洗掉 識別示威者水炮車首噴顏色水柱.
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-09-01). 水炮車首射顏色水驅散示威者 喬裝警蒐證遇襲 向天鳴兩槍.
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-09-01). 太子站大搜捕拘 63 人 最年輕僅 13 歲 身懷兩汽油彈.
 Ta Kung Pao (2019-09-01). 「藍色水」噴中 變「藍精靈」走唔甩.
 The Standard (2019-09-02). Police defend beatings in train. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=211226&sid=11>
 South China Morning Post (2019-09-01). Police unleash water cannons armed with bright blue dye.
 Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-09-01). 暴徒警總前縱火 政總立會再遭打砸.
 Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例】港島區下午或有混亂 水炮車中聯辦附近戒備. Retrieved

- from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1080770>/即時-香港-逃犯條例-港島區下午或有混亂-水炮車中聯辦附近戒備
- 6 RTHK (2019-08-31). 夏慳道仍有少量示威者聚集 防暴警察清理水馬. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1478008-20190831.htm>
HK01 (2019-08-31). 烈火灣仔 拆修頓看台 警總外縱火 火柱五層樓高. Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/370216/8-31_遊行-烈火灣仔-拆修頓看台-警總外縱火-火柱五層樓高
- 7 RTHK (2019-08-31). 示威者由金鐘轉到銅鑼灣聚集 不時高叫口號. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1478011-20190831.htm>
- 8 RTHK (2019-08-31). 警方推進至銅鑼灣 水炮車多次射水驅散示威者. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1478022-20190831.htm>
Live video footage of Now TV
- 9 Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例】防暴警銅鑼灣崇光連開多槍 示威者燃燒彈還擊. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1081049>/即時-香港-逃犯條例-防暴警銅鑼灣崇光連開多槍-示威者燃燒彈還擊
Lion Rock Daily (2019-09-02). 燃燒彈頻掙灣仔人驚心 火舌與行人天橋齊高焚燒痕跡處處. Retrieved from <http://www.lionrockdaily.com/2019/09/02/03.pdf>
Live video footage of Now TV
- 10 Apple Daily (2019-09-01). 扮示威者被識破 警開真槍.
Ming Pao Daily News (2019-09-01). 記者查詢黑衣「臥底」遭圍困 警稱「特別行動」.
Oriental Daily News (2019-09-01). 狂掙燃燒彈 火攻政總警總 警維園開兩槍 831 暴亂焚城.
Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-09-02). 8·31 衝突爆烈焰槍聲 太子站拘 63 人.
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-09-02). 8.31 衝突太子站拘 63 人 最小 13 歲.
Lion Rock Daily (2019-09-02). 金鐘懷槍擲彈男證實非警員.
Ming Pao Daily News (2019-09-01). 示威者 6 區縱火 水炮車首噴藍液 警維園兩槍示警 港鐵車廂圍捕棍打.
Oriental Daily News (2019-09-02). 維園衝突 警向天開槍阻嚇.
Sing Pao (2019-09-01). 警維園遭包圍 向天開兩槍.
Sing Tao Daily (2019-09-01). 水炮車首射顏色水驅散示威者 喬裝警蒐證遇襲 向天鳴兩槍.
Sing Tao Daily (2019-09-02). 兩警生命受威脅 向天開槍合情合法.
Sky Post (2019-09-02). 否認扮示威者擲汽油彈 喬裝警前晚遭圍攻 開 2 槍示警.
South China Morning Post (2019-09-02). Undercover officers fire shots after being attacked.
Ming Pao Daily News (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例·831 銅鑼灣·短片】消息：警維園開兩槍實彈維園地面遺彈殼. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190831/special/1567232542076>
CitizenNews (2019-09-01). 831 警再喬裝示威者 維園向天開兩槍. Retrieved from <https://www.hkcnnews.com/article/23243/831>
Ming Pao Daily News (2019-09-01). 警：太子站 40 人被捕 兩警維園遇襲鳴槍. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190901/s00001/1567303314337/>【逃犯條例-831】警-太子站 40 人被捕-兩警維園遇襲鳴槍
South China Morning Post (2019-09-01). Police say two undercover officers who fired warning shots during Hong Kong protests identified themselves as police before shooting in the air. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/article/3025274/police-say-two-undercover-officers-who-fired-warning-shots-during>
- 11 Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例】速龍小隊廣東道推進 示威者擲燃燒彈. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1081064>/即時-香港-逃犯條例-速龍小隊廣東道推進-示威者擲燃燒彈
Live video footage of Now TV
- 12 MTRC (2019-09-01). 港鐵嚴厲譴責針對鐵路車站的惡意攻擊. Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PS-2019-9-1-C.pdf

- ¹³ Sing Tao Daily (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例】示威者擊碎控制室玻璃 警進入旺角站. Retrieved from <http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1081103/即時-香港-逃犯條例-示威者擊碎控制室玻璃-警進入旺角站>
- Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-08-31). 港鐵旺角站控制室被示威者破壞 報警求助. Retrieved from <http://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2237131/港鐵旺角站控制室被示威者破壞+ 報警求助>
- CitizenNews (2019-09-01). 【多片】831 警速龍小隊入太子站 車廂打人月台追捕. Retrieved from <http://www.hkcnews.com/article/23245/港鐵-速龍小隊-831 警察太子站打人-23246/mtr-hong-kong?page=2>
- HK01(2019-08-31). 831 遊行-示威者破壞旺角站控制室-防暴警入內驅散. Retrieved from <http://www.hk01.com/政情/370249/831 遊行-示威者破壞旺角站控制室-防暴警入內驅散>
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-09-01). 【逃犯條例·831 九龍】警旺角警署舉藍旗黑旗 向尖沙嘴方向推進. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190901/s00001/1567267784997/> 【逃犯條例-831 九龍】警旺角警署舉藍旗黑旗-向尖沙嘴方向推進
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-09-02). 暴徒地鐵毆長者 反屈警察打市民 月台換裝黑變白視頻揭太子站真相 Live video footage of TVB
- ¹⁴ SocRec (2019-09-01). 31AUG2019 市民打記者抗爭者抱不平. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VX9YHVqUiBg>
- ¹⁵ MTRC (2019-09-10). Occurrence at Prince Edward Station on 31 August. Retrieved from https://www.mtr.com.hk/archive/corporate/en/press_release/PR-19-053-E.pdf
- ¹⁶ RTHK (2019-09-09). Minimal Force? Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3OnkZMdJgVY>
- HK01 (2019-09-01). 【8.31 遊行】還原太子車廂暴力因由 示威者與大叔衝突速龍揮棍. Retrieved from <http://www.hk01.com/突發/370265/8-31 遊行-還原太子車廂暴力因由-示威者與大叔衝突-速龍揮棍>
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-09-02). 警共拘 63 人 稱 13 歲少年藏汽油彈 太子追捕被轟無差別攻擊 乘客：想起 7·21
- Oriental Daily News (2019-09-01). 血濺太子站 藍衫漢揮錘大戰示威者. Retrieved from https://orientaldaily.on.cc/cnt/news/20190901/00176_002.html
- Oriental Daily News (2019-09-02). 警車廂搜捕 揮棍噴椒多人傷.
- Sing Pao (2019-09-02). 泛民主派炮轟警方太子站使用過渡武力 即場拘捕準則之一警檢武器及危險品.
- Sing Pao (2019-09-02). 藍衣大叔持鐵鎚襲黑衣人 雙方由口角變動武.
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-09-02). 太子站大搜捕拘 63 人 最年輕僅 13 歲 身懷兩汽油彈.
- Bastille Post (2019-09-01). 拆局：還原太子站事件 示威者打阿伯觸發報警拉人. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/5007744-拆局-還原太子站事件-示威者打阿伯觸發報警拉人>
- ¹⁷ YouTube (2019-09-01). (8.31)太子港鐵站 列車駛往太子站途中 一批示威者在車廂內與其他乘客發生爭執 雙方展開車廂攻防戰 有示威者向車廂內噴入大量滅火劑. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=TphH0X2M3Vc>
- ¹⁸ Bastille Post (2019-08-31). 警方形容 8.31 「香港經歷浩劫」 指太子站激進示威者喬裝市民. Retrieved from <https://www.bastillepost.com/hongkong/article/5007324-【逃犯條例】太子站拘 40 人-警指有黑衣示威者更衣>
- HK01 (2019-09-01). 【8.31 遊行】太子站爆衝突 40 人被捕 警：激進示威者換衫喬裝市民. Retrieved from <http://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/370270/8-31 遊行-太子站爆衝突 40 人被捕-警-激進示威者換衫喬裝市民>
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-09-02). 暴徒地鐵毆長者 反屈警察打市民 月台換裝黑變白視頻揭太子站真相
- Sing Pao (2019-09-02). 泛民主派炮轟警方太子站使用過渡武力 即場拘捕準則之一警檢武器及危險品.
- Wen Wei Po (2019-09-02). 暴民扮良民 換衫玩變身 還原太子站暴行車廂一地裝備有圖有片有真相.

Live video footage of TVB

- ¹⁹ HK01 (2019-08-31). 【8.31 遊行·全日總覽】警方：港經歷浩劫 太子站行動屬適當武力。 Retrieved from http://www.hk01.com/政情/369452/8-31_遊行-全日總覽-警方-港經歷浩劫-太子站行動屬適當武力
- Cable TV (2019-08-31). 太子 831 - 速龍小隊衝落太子站月台拘捕多人 車廂內多人頭破血流 有人掩著後腦。 Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=z9Ltt4LdIDk>
- CitizenNews (2019-09-01). 831 警速龍小隊入太子站-車廂打人月台追捕。 Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/23245/港鐵-速龍小隊-831_警察太子站打人-23249/【多片】831 警速龍小隊入太子站-車廂打人月台追捕
- ²⁰ SocRec (2019-09-01). 31AUG2019 太子車廂警拉人足本。 Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=vIau2kwxzZA>
- Apple Daily (2019-09-01). 【逆權運動】親睹警恐襲市民釀屍殺列車 中年父：見後生咩色衫都打。 Retrieved from hk.news.appledaily.com/local/realtime/article/20190901/59998273
- Stand News (2019-08-31). 警衝入太子站列車 噴胡椒揮警棍拘多人 市民車廂跪地求饒照被噴。 Retrieved from <http://www.thestandnews.com/politics/警衝入太子站列車-噴胡椒揮警棍拘多人-市民車廂跪地求饒照被噴/>
- Apple Daily (2019-09-01). 港鐵大搜捕 釀元朗恐襲 2.0 速龍無差別毆市民。
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-09-01). 港鐵報警 消息：有人擲煙霧餅 警衝太子站圍捕 乘客頭破血流。
- InmediaHK (2019-08-31). 8.31 港島自由行 警太子站內狂毆市民。 Retrieved from <https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1066899>
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-08-31). 【逃犯條例·831 九龍】警太子站闖列車噴胡椒棍毆市民港鐵 5 線列車暫停。 Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190831/special/1567255538758>
- Metro Daily (2019-09-02). 被指「無差別」向乘客施襲 警解釋太子站武力適當。
- RTHK (2019-09-02). 李家超回應警察入太子站打市民 稱警方執法按實情考慮。 Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1478358-20190902.htm>
- RTHK (2019-09-02). 回應太子站行動 李家超：單看一段片下結論未必公道。 Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/ch/component/k2/1478406-20190902.htm>
- Ming Pao Daily News (2 September 2019). 警共拘 63 人 稱 13 歲少年藏汽油彈 太子追捕被轟無差別攻擊 乘客：想起 7·21
- Sing Tao Daily (2019-09-02). 【831 事件】警方衝入太子站車廂打人惹爭議 李家超：按實際情況行動。 Retrieved from http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1081867/即時-香港-831_事件-警方衝入太子站車廂打人惹爭議-李家超-按實際情況行動
- Wen Wei Po (2019-09-02). 李家超：警方太子站執法有依據 單看片段指責警方不公。 Retrieved from <http://news.wenweipo.com/2019/09/02/IN1909020028.htm>
- CitizenNews (2019-09-03). 大律師公會：警 831 太子站無合理情況下暴力對待市民。 Retrieved from <https://www.hkcnews.com/article/23303/831>
- HK01 (2019-09-01). 港鐵太子暴力車廂速龍揮棍出椒口罩人舉手。 Retrieved from https://www.hk01.com/突發/370254/8-31_遊行-港鐵太子暴力車廂-速龍揮棍出椒-口罩人舉手
- Ming Pao Daily News (2019-09-01). 【逃犯條例·831·圖輯】警登港鐵列車亂棍毆市民。 Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/逃犯條例/article/20190901/special/1567268192038>
- South China Morning Post (2019-09-01). Chaos on Hong Kong's MTR network as police chase protesters into station and arrest 63. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/law-and-crime/article/3025241/chaos-hong-kongs-mtr-network-police-chase-protesters>
- CitizenNews (2019-09-02). 8.31 速龍太子站車廂打人是 7.21 元朗恐襲翻版？眾新聞比對未經剪接錄像看警方執法是否適當。 Retrieved from https://www.hkcnews.com/article/23284/831_警察太子站打人-速龍小隊-逃犯條例-23289/831_速龍太子站車廂打人是 721 元朗恐襲翻版？眾新聞比對未經剪接錄像看警方執法是否適當
- Lion Rock Daily (2019-09-02). 太子旺角站拘 63 人 13 歲童藏汽油彈。 Retrieved from <http://www.lionrockdaily.com/2019/09/02/02.pdf>
- The Standard (2019-09-02). Police defend beatings in train. Retrieved from <http://www.thestandard.com.hk/section-news.php?id=211226&sid=11>
- HK01 (2019-09-02). 太子站車廂衝突 毛孟靜：令人心痛得無以復加。 Retrieved from

- https://www.hk01.com/社會新聞/370491/8-31_遊行-太子站車廂衝突-毛孟靜-令人心痛得無以復加
Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-09-02). 網傳 831 太子站有人死亡 醫管局澄清：46 人受傷無死亡個案. Retrieved from [https://topick.hket.com/article/2442158/網傳 831 太子站有人死亡 醫管局澄清：46 人受傷無死亡個案](https://topick.hket.com/article/2442158/網傳_831_太子站有人死亡_醫管局澄清：46_人受傷無死亡個案)
- 21 RTHK (2019-09-17). 視點 31：反修例一百日；831 未還原的真相；國慶前局勢. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cxFOyKkrHB0>
CitizenNews (2019-09-13). 【8.31 太子站】消防處：至少兩次警員稱無傷者 警方：承認一次、看不到刻意阻撓救援. Retrieved from [https://www.hkcnews.com/article/23480/831 警察太子站打人-消防處-香港警務處-23484/](https://www.hkcnews.com/article/23480/831_警察太子站打人-消防處-香港警務處-23484/) 【831 太子 站】消防處：至少兩次警員稱無傷者-警方：承認一次、看不到刻意阻撓救援
HK01 (2019-09-01). 太子站外現紅黃綠「分流墊」 救護員：有大量傷者. Retrieved from [https://www.hk01.com/政情/370258/831 遊行-太子站外現紅黃綠-分流墊-救護員-有大量傷者](https://www.hk01.com/政情/370258/831_遊行-太子站外現紅黃綠-分流墊-救護員-有大量傷者)
Now News (2019-09-12). 831 太子站 警方承認有警員曾向救護員指站內無傷者消防處重申未有死亡或失蹤個案. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=362547>
- 22 RTHK (2019-09-17). 視點 31：反修例一百日；831 未還原的真相；國慶前局勢. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=cxFOyKkrHB0>
- 23 HK01 (2019-09-13). 【831 太子站】消防接報多人傷 警稱無傷者 在場救護：聽到呆咗. Retrieved from [http://www.hk01.com/01 偵查/374556/831 太子站-消防接報多人傷-警稱無傷者-在場救護-聽到呆咗](http://www.hk01.com/01_偵查/374556/831_太子站-消防接報多人傷-警稱無傷者-在場救護-聽到呆咗)
CitizenNews (2019-09-12). 消防處：至少兩次警員稱無傷者 警方：承認一次、看不到刻意阻撓救援. Retrieved from [http://www.hkcnews.com/article/23480/831 警察太子站打人-消防處-香港警務處-23484/](http://www.hkcnews.com/article/23480/831_警察太子站打人-消防處-香港警務處-23484/) 【831 太子 站】消防處：至少兩次警員稱無傷者-警方：承認一次、看不到刻意阻撓救援
- 24 Live video footage of TVB
- 25 LIHKG (2019-08-31). cls 黑警走左入太子站列車 見人就打. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1522932/page/1>
- 26 LIHKG (2019-08-31). 太子站 警察發動恐襲 必要向國際求救. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1523076/page/1>
- 27 LIHKG (2019-09-01). 太子站啲傷者係咪仲未出黎. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1524823/page/1>
- 28 Now News (2019-09-01). 【Now.早晨。Now. Morning News.】2019 年 9 月 1 日. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=j-BkebxCj6Q>
- 29 HKGOLDEN (2019-09-01). 政府唔好再包庇黑警濫用暴力，應該盡快拉晒呢班黑警去坐監. Retrieved from <https://www.discuss.com.hk/viewthread.php?tid=28490620>
- 30 LIHKG (2019-09-01). 有人覺得封太子站好奇怪？. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1527026/page/1>
- 31 LIHKG (2019-09-01). 封站係因為黑狗太子恐襲 死左幾個市民 依加要執手尾. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1527165/page/1>
- 32 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-09-01). 警昨晚太子站執法 共拘 63 人. Retrieved from [https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2237282/警昨晚太子站執法+共拘 63 人](https://www2.hkej.com/instantnews/current/article/2237282/警昨晚太子站執法+共拘_63_人)
- 33 LIHKG (2019-09-01). 嚴重懷疑尋晚太子死咗人。 . Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1528016/page/1>
- 34 HKJA (2019-09-01). 香港記者協會及香港攝影記者協會嚴厲譴責警方阻撓記者採訪及將記者圍困的

- 行為。 Retrieved from <https://www.hkja.org.hk/聲明/香港記者協會及香港攝影記者協會嚴厲譴責警方阻/#more-7469>
- 35 LIHKG (2019-09-02). 正式宣佈八月三十一日，一位香港人被黑警活生生打死. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1529419/page/1>
- 36 HKGOLDEN (2019-09-02). 太子站死了幾個黑衣示威者，醫護說出姓名的已有兩個，求 F C. Retrieved from <https://forum.hkgolden.com/thread/7109652/page/1>
- 37 The Government (2019-09-02). 記者會答問內容（附短片） - 香港政府. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201909/02/P2019090200809.htm>
- 38 LIHKG (2019-09-02). 幫手出:831 前線救護爆料. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1530652/page/1>
- 39 LIHKG (2019-09-02). 831 太子站死人消息. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1530931/page/1>
- 40 The Government (2019-09-02). 警方行動針對違法人士. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/09/20190902/20190902_172437_596.html
- 41 Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-09-02). 【商報直播】警方記者會 (2019-9-2). Retrieved from https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=SD_wjSnJspk
- 42 LIHKG (2019-09-03). [沉冤待雪] 831 太子死亡事件整合(3.9.2019) 及 行動討論. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1534525/page/1>
- 43 Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-09-05). 【商報直播】警方記者會 (2019-9-5). Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oXzamEri7dk>
- 44 YouTube (2019-09-04). 跟進 831 太子站懷疑警方打死人事件. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=k29KGAZnjbE>
- 45 HKGOLDEN (2019-09-05). 831 太子站極可能真係有人死 絕非坊間流言. Retrieved from <https://forum.hkgolden.com/thread/7111985/page/1>
- 46 LIHKG (2019-09-06). 太子站一共有 6 人死 全部死於斷頸. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1544998/page/1>
- 47 FSD (2019-09-07). Fire Services Department clarifies rumours on Internet. Retrieved from https://www.hkfsd.gov.hk/eng/pressrelease/2019/20190906_eng_20190923_174707.pdf
- 48 The Government (2019-09-07). 政府指過去三個月並無執法導致死亡個案. Retrieved from <https://www.info.gov.hk/gia/general/201909/07/P2019090700687.htm>
- 49 Hong Kong Commercial Daily (2019-09-10). 【直播】9.10 警務處、消防處、醫管局及港鐵公司代表會見傳媒交代 8.31 警方襲擊太子站情況. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=HZWom11MEhc>
- 50 Epoch Times (2019-09-11). 【直播】泛民召集人毛孟靜披露消防內部文件紀錄 8.31 太子站當時情況，凸顯疑點重重。 Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wyGjh3k2s14>
- 51 Stand News (2019-09-11). 太子站消防指揮官疑擅改傷者人數 有被捕者稱點算前一昏迷男遭帶走. Retrieved from <https://www.thestandnews.com/politics/最新 fact-check-8-31 太子站消防指揮官疑擅改傷者人數-被捕者稱點算前已有昏迷男遭消防員帶走/>
- 52 Epoch Times (2019-09-12). 網傳太子站、新屋嶺今凌晨做法事. Retrieved from <https://hk.epochtimes.com/news/2019-09-12/12408060>

-
- ⁵³ Epoch Times (2019-09-12). 【直播】9月12日 消防局記者會. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=n7sdHTw3ZCo>
- ⁵⁴ Epoch Times (2019-09-17). 【直播】立法會議員楊岳橋記者會-公開 8.31 太子站事件消防處完整記錄，現職消防處人員提出五大疑點. Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=imr1T3eWLXI>
- ⁵⁵ LIVE Post (2019-09-19). 【LIVE 直播】消防處就 831 港鐵太子站事件唔傳媒 (19/9/2019). Retrieved from <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Ute7-QBKFGw>
- ⁵⁶ Epoch Times (2019-10-01). 組圖：9.30 港民聚集太子站 要求 8.31 真相. Retrieved from <https://hk.epochtimes.com/news/2019-10-01/41851812>
Sing Tao Daily (2019-10-31). 太子站外示威人群聚集獻花叫囂 旺角警署警員要求離開. Retrieved from <https://std.stheadline.com/special/KG2019/news-detail.php?y=2019&r=1126357>
Now News (2019-11-30). 有人到太子站紀念 831 事件. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=371783>
Passion Times (2019-12-31). 831 太子站事件發生 4 個月 防暴警察 B1 出口外制伏多人. Retrieved from <https://www.passiontimes.hk/article/12-31-2019/58714>
Now News (2020-01-31). 「831 事件」五個月 近百人在太子站外聚集. Retrieved from <https://news.now.com/home/local/player?newsId=378812>
- ⁵⁷ Hong Kong Free Press (2020-03-01). Tear gas, pepper spray, 115 arrests during clashes in Mong Kok, as police officer pulls gun on protesters. Retrieved from <https://www.hongkongfp.com/2020/03/01/pictures-tear-gas-pepper-spray-clashes-mong-kok-police-officer-pulls-gun-protesters/>

CHAPTER 13

POLICE IDENTIFICATION DURING THE PUBLIC ORDER EVENTS

Introduction

13.1. Police officers wear personal identification for accountability: both internally as a matter of discipline and externally as a matter of public accountability. This has been part of the Force's commitment to working in partnership with the community. There have been some departures from this policy in relation to work not conducted in the glare of publicity and not under observation by the public, such as covert police operations or in situations where identification would expose the officer(s) to grave personal danger. Examples are operations involving members of the Special Duty Unit (dubbed "Flying Tigers Unit"). These are, of course, special cases. However, with the nature and extent of the Public Order Events (POEs) encountered by the Police since 9 June 2019, the Police have had to make exceptions to normal practice, to deal with what they believed to be exceptional circumstances. These exceptions have inevitably excited public concern and criticism.

13.2. This chapter addresses the issue of identification of police officers in the exercise of their powers during the recent POEs by examining the different perspectives of the public and the Police. The IPCC has taken reference from international practices and measures recently adopted by the Police.

Background

13.3. Public concern was raised soon after POEs broke out on 9 June 2019, when the Police had to contain the situation as front-line protesters began violently attacking police cordons with bricks and a variety of weapons, triggering police response with the use of force. These tactics included the deployment of Special Tactical Contingent (STC). According to the Police, STC has been developed after the Mong Kok Riot in 2016 where a significant number of officers were injured. This Contingent was in tactical gear designed for protection from violent attacks and equipped with batons to fend off attackers, dispersing them with a short sharp tactical move, and effecting arrests where practicable. For its black tactical outfit, STC has been dubbed "Raptors" by the public.

Photo	Incident
 <p>Image 13-1</p>	<p>STC officer performing duty in 2016.</p> <p><i>(source: Sing Tao Daily</i> <i>http://std.stheadline.com/instant/articles/detail/1026695/即時-香港-逃犯條例-指速龍小隊 2016 年制服有編號-民權觀察-警方回應實屬荒謬</i></p>

13.4. STC did not display their ranks/unique identification (UI) numbers during operations. The Police explained that the tactical outfit did not have space for display of their identification numbers. Meanwhile, complaints came from the public and the press that certain plain-clothes officers had refused to show their warrant cards when requested or questioned, especially during stop and search operations. Police spokesman clarified that such practice should apply only where it was not feasible to show the warrant card. As the public expect police officers to wear identification and it is a well-known police practice (required under Police General Orders) that plain-clothes police officers in the discharge of duty do need to show their warrant cards to identify themselves, this recent departure from normal practice sparked widespread continuing concern and criticism, drawing persistent queries from the media, Legislative Council (LegCo) Members¹ and civil rights organizations².

13.5. As at 29 February 2020, there were 32 Reportable Complaints (RCs) and 89 Notifiable Complaints (NCs) with regard to the display of police identification. They accounted for 5.9% and 8.1% respectively of the total RCs and NCs received. Out of 32 RCs, eight of them involved plain-clothes officers and ten were in connection with STC or officers in anti-riot kits.

Public Sentiment and Expectation of Accountability

13.6. In the eyes of the public, the display of name plates or rank & UI number epaulettes by law enforcement officers is a basic requirement of transparency and accountability. The

1 For instance, the two urgent questions raised at the LegCo meeting on 19 June 2019 included queries on lack of identification of STC at the POE scene on 12 June 2019. At the LegCo meeting of 27 November 2019 alone, issues related to police identification formed the contents of as many as three questions (i.e. questions no. 3, 5 and 10) raised by various Members.

2 Notable examples are Amnesty International and Civil Rights Observers.

public has a right to identify any police officer exercising statutory powers in the course of law enforcement duties. Lack of such information makes it difficult for the public to identify officers and hold them accountable for any misconduct.

Photo	Incident
 <p>Image 13-2</p>	<p>STC officer showing his service number on his uniform when performing duty on 9 Jun 2019</p> <p>(right) STC officer showing his team number, but not his service number, when performing duty on 12 Jun 2019.</p> <p><i>(source: Mingpao https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190619/s00001/1560944306324/)</i></p>

13.7. In this context, allowing officers to operate without displaying proper identification when they interact with the public gives rise to potential mistrust. This undermines confidence in police legitimacy, particularly at a time when the community looks to the Police Force as the bulwark in maintaining law and order.

13.8. In the past months, apart from STC, there were other uniformed officers deployed for anti-riot operations also had their epaulettes undone and ranks/numbers covered from view. This attracted much media attention and public outcry.

Photo	Incident
 <p>Image 13-3</p>  <p>Image 13-4</p>	<p>Media reported that some anti-riot police officers covered their services number on their epaulettes during operation in Shatin on 14 Jul 2019.</p> <p><i>(source: HK01 https://www.hk01.com/ 突發/351848/沙田遊行-直擊軍裝警車尾換防暴衣-部分防暴警無證無號#media_id=3032930)</i></p>

Internal Rules Governing Police Identification

13.9. The Police, in its policies and General Orders, does recognize the public expectation.

Disclosure of Identity to Members of Public Upon Request

13.10. Police General Orders (PGO) Chapter 20-03 stipulates that without prejudicing operational efficiency, officers exercising statutory powers should disclose adequate personal information to identify themselves upon request, as follows:

Police Constable, Sergeant, Traffic Warden and Senior Traffic Warden	Station Sergeant and above
Rank and UI number	Rank and surname

Display of Warrant Cards

13.11. PGO Chapter 20-14 stipulated that an officer in plain-clothes when dealing with members of the public and exercising his police powers, whether on or off duty, shall identify himself and produce his warrant card. At the scene of a crime, officers in plain-clothes shall wear their warrant cards in such a manner that they may be readily identified.

13.12. Further, uniformed officers should produce their warrant cards upon request by members of the public unless:

- (a) circumstances do not allow;
- (b) to do so would prejudice the police action and/or safety of the officers concerned; or
- (c) the request is unreasonable.

13.13. If a police officer in uniform is unable to produce his warrant card at the time of the request as required by paragraph 12(a) and (b) above, he should produce the warrant card at the earliest opportune moment. Where police officers do not produce their warrant cards either because the request for production was unreasonable or it could not be subsequently complied with, they must make an explanatory notebook entry.

13.14. Where a group of uniformed police officers is operating together, for example during a licensing raid, only one of the uniformed police officers present shall produce his warrant card on request.

Uniform and Insignia

13.15. Chapter 15 of Force Procedures Manual (FPM) stipulates the 'Dress and Appearance' requirements for police officers. According to FPM Chapter 15, there are three sets of standard uniforms: Force Working Uniform, Ceremonial Uniform and Full Uniform.

13.16. For uniformed branch officers, when wearing working uniform, epaulettes with embroidered badges of rank are to be worn. Sergeants and Police Constables are to wear their epaulettes with both their rank and unique service number displayed on each shoulder. Officers at the rank of Station Sergeant or above should wear epaulettes with only their rank displayed.

13.17. Other than standard uniforms, officers working in specialized units or engaged in specific duties may wear non-standard uniforms as designed for their specific operational

requirements, e.g. Police Tactical Unit (PTU) staff and Rural Patrol Unit.

13.18. FPM Chapter 15 stipulates that epaulettes and cloth insignia are to be worn on standard and specified non-standard uniforms respectively.

13.19. Certain officers working in specialized units or engaged in specific duties (such as STC, Explosive Ordnance Disposal Bureau) may be required to put on clothing (which are not regarded as uniform for the purposes of PGO / FPM 15) designed for their specific duties. Officers wearing such clothing are not required to wear cloth insignia unless the Formation Commander identifies the need with formal approval from Director of Operations through the Force Uniform and Accoutrements Committee.

Exceptional Circumstances and Threats Faced by Frontline Officers

13.20. It has been generally accepted that under certain circumstances, the nature of the operation makes it impracticable or inappropriate for officers to display their rank or UI numbers. However, there are other circumstances in which officers may be reluctant to comply with the identification requirement for fear that someone may use that information later to harass them and/or their families.

13.21. In this connection, officers' concerns about personal security or family safety should not be taken lightly. Repeated cases of officers being attacked while off duty have raised legitimate concern about their personal safety³. Such fears were aggravated when threats and even death notes were made against identified officers and their families on various online platforms and residential quarters. Incidents of cyber-bullying and doxxing have added to the worry of officers that their safety and well-being would be at risk if their identities were exposed when performing POE-related duties.

13.22. As advised by the Police at a meeting with IPCC on 17 September 2019, over 2 000 police officers and their family members have been doxxed since June 2019. There has been a groundswell of online hate messages against police officers and their family members. Names and identity card numbers of police officers as well as information on their spouse's employment, children's schools and other personal information have been posted online. Incendiary messages and rumours about killing the officers can be seen on cyberspace and some have experienced actual harassment. There is anecdotal information of the children of police officers being bullied at school.

3 The most serious case happened on 4 October 2019 in which an off-duty officer shot a 14-year-old student after being attacked at Yuen Long.

Following up with Police on Identification Issue

13.23. As early as 18 June 2019 at the Joint Meeting with the Complaints & Internal Investigations Branch (C&IIB), the IPCC had raised concern over the lack of identification and, in particular, some STC officers whose UI numbers were not visible. In response, the Police explained that the uniforms of the STC had been specially designed for tactical purposes and therefore did not facilitate the display of insignia. Nevertheless, the Police undertook to conduct a review to address the issue.

13.24. On 21 June 2019, the IPCC Chairman wrote to the Police highlighting community-wide concern over the issue had evoked and asked whether officers on the ground had been strictly adhering to the relevant Police Manual and operations guidelines on display and disclosure of their identification. In reply, the Police confirmed that the matter was receiving due attention and steps were being taken to address the public concern.

13.25. To follow up, the IPCC again wrote to the Police on 9 July and 10 September 2019 requesting information on the exact steps to be taken to address public concern.

13.26. At the Joint Meeting with C&IIB on 17 September 2019, the Police informed the IPCC that they had just put in place an identification system in which a unique and identifiable combination was printed on helmets. It was a temporary measure subject to further refinement and review.

13.27. On 24 September 2019, the Police formally replied in writing and gave an account of the development of the clothing of STC officers and the implementation of the temporary measure (on helmets) as detailed in paragraphs 28 to 37 below.

Clothing for STC Officers

13.28. The purpose of STC is to provide special weapons or tactical capability to other units to help control, resolve and/or make arrests at incidents which involve or are anticipated to involve exceptional levels of public disorder (e.g. prolonged unlawful occupation or physical obstructions to roads, serious threats to public safety and violence against police officers). STC members are drawn from Police Tactical Unit (PTU) Headquarters, Counter Terrorism Response Unit, Airport Security Unit, Special Duties Unit & Tango Coy to perform duties on an ad hoc basis.

13.29. STC is deployed in small teams each comprising five members, including the team leader at the Inspectorate / Sergeant level. Each team member is assigned with special accessories, equipment and weapons.

13.30. When first deployed in 2014, the STC members wore non-standard PTU blue uniform. During the Mong Kok Riot in 2016, it was found that the blue PTU uniform did not offer sufficient protection and could not meet operational and occupational safety needs. An overseas off-the-shelf tactical suit with better protection was sourced in November 2016, but it does not come with shoulder strips for cloth insignia or service number. Images 5 to 8 below are photos of the suit.



Image 13-5



Image 13-6



Image 13-7



Image 13-8

13.31. The wearing of the new tactical suit was formally approved in January 2017. It is not regarded as a set of Police uniform and is not governed by the PGO / FPM-15 “Dress and Appearance”.

Identification and Insignia of STC

13.32. To identify designated teams of STC, a team call sign is allocated and each team member is issued with velcro embroidery badges with the team call sign for displaying at the rear of their tactical helmets. Images 9 and 10 below are photos of the call sign in use up to 12 June 2019.



Image 13-9



Image 13-10

13.33. On 9 June 2019, STC members wearing the new tactical suit described in paragraph 30 were deployed on the ground for the first time to handle violent protesters at the Central Government Complex.

13.34. In response to media reports⁴ that some STC officers had displayed their service numbers by putting on their cloth insignia during operations, the Police clarified that some STC officers had on their own initiative put on the cloth insignia issued for their primary duties by clipping it to the radio pouch or utility vest. However, there had never been any order to STC officers to clip, or not to clip, the cloth insignia on their tactical suit.

13.35. STC members can be identified by

- (a) call sign of the team;
- (b) the equipment and weapons individual officers were assigned with and carried in the team (given the small size of each team, it is unlikely for two members to be assigned with entirely the same equipment or weapons);
- (c) the officers' physical appearance including height and build; and
- (d) records of their deployment, including the location of the team.

4 For instance, on 21 June 2019, a news article headlined “速龍撤走編號 李家超呃立會” appeared on Apple Daily and another headlined “速龍小隊編號相隔 3 日 疑失蹤 警重申：制服無位置放” on Sky Post.

13.36. On 14 June 2019, the Police decided to display assigned alphabets at the back of STC members' helmets to enable those STC members, who shared the same call signs of their team, to be more easily identifiable (i.e. "a" to "e" if there are 5 members in a team). This, however, would not apply to certain individual members occupying specific positions whose helmets would show only their posts, e.g. "SP-TRG" (which stands for "Superintendent – Training"). Images 11 and 12 are photos of the modified call sign.



Image 13-11



Image 13-12

13.37. With the additional stickers showing their assigned alphabets on the helmets, the types of equipment and weapons assigned with and carried in the team / sub-team / as well as records of their deployment, including the location of the team / sub-team, individual STC members can be readily identified. For individuals whose posts are shown on their helmets, there is little difficulty in identifying them as the posts in question are either unique or limited in number. The modified arrangement is in line with the international practices and facilitates more effective and efficient deployment of STC members.

Research Report of Keele University

13.38. For more informed study, the IPCC in early September 2019 commissioned Keele University to produce a research⁵ report on international practices regarding the issue. The primary objective of the research is to benchmark the current police identification practice against existing standards in countries with legislative and policing structures similar to those in Hong Kong.

13.39. Under the coordination of Keele University, an international team of University-based scholars examined a broad array of practices adopted in different forms of government and legislative contexts. These include federal states like Canada, the United States, Germany, Switzerland and Australia as well as unitary states such as the United Kingdom, Denmark, Sweden and Norway.

⁵ The research also covers the wearing of masks during POEs.

Sweden and Norway.

13.40. It is worth noting that among the countries under study, the United States has experienced numerous instances of doxxing, harassment and targeting of police officers and their families. The United Kingdom also has considerable experience in addressing extreme safety threats to officers, most acutely in Northern Ireland where police officers have been a target of terrorist organisations.

13.41. The research report⁶ was issued in early October 2019 and a copy has also been furnished to Police management for reference. The report is informative and illuminating, with rich practical reference on the balance between fair protection of officers and police identification. Major findings are outlined in the ensuing paragraphs.

Research Findings on International Practices

13.42. All of the countries examined have put in place requirements for officers to be identifiable during the policing of POEs. In principle, it is evident that there is a universal requirement of sound policing practice to have clear insignia showing the identity of officers visibly from the front and rear. In actual practice, some flexibility in implementation is allowed when extreme circumstances prevail.

13.43. In some countries, there are specific provisions to allow suspending the obligation of legitimisation and identification in order to protect the officers, e.g. during operations targeting organised crime or terrorist groups. For instance, in Germany, officers serving in police special squads are exempt from wearing name tag. According to the Police Ordinance in Sweden, police officers must be able to identify themselves to the general population if a citizen requests to see Police ID (SFS, 2014)⁷. However, in stressful situations like heated protests or during arrests, police officers can omit to tell their names⁸.

13.44. The guiding principles driving the normative practice of ensuring police identification are ensuring public accountability (particularly with respect to police use of force), promoting public confidence in policing, maintaining professionalism on the part of individual officers and being operationally beneficial for police forces themselves. Any lack of police identification inhibits accountability and makes it difficult for police forces to earn the trust and confidence of those they are policing.

6 The full report is on IPCC website <https://www.ipcc.gov.hk>

7 SFS. (2014). Förordning (2014:1102) med instruktion för Polismyndigheten [Ordinance (2014: 1102) with instructions for the Police Authority]. Stockholm: Ministry of Justice.

8 Page 71 second para., of the Research Report refers.

13.45. Identification requirements are not always governed by legislation. The majority of countries manage the issue through requirements and obligations created by the police forces themselves. There is considerable diversity due to the complexity of police governance processes.

13.46. In some countries, there are clear instructions on the size and font type of identification markings. In the United Kingdom, the College of Policing Public Order Training Manual Module G3 (2018)⁹ at paragraph 3.7.2 states that helmet markings must be ‘visible from all directions’, whether the visor is up or down. The markings must include the officer’s Force Identifier (each has a unique 2-digit identifier; for example, West Midlands Police is YM); their rank insignia (two “pips” for an inspector, “crown” for a superintendent, etc); and their officer identification number (often referred to as their collar number). It also prescribes the size and font type of these markings. The pictures below, taken from the Module G3 manual, show these markings on the helmets.



Image 13-13

NATO style helmets with clear identifier codes for each individual officer.

13.47. It is noted that all of the countries sampled appear to have had some difficulties ensuring all officers abide by the regulations at all times. The research report provides a handful of newsworthy examples. In the United States, the police are reported to have removed or covered their nametags when handling the well-known World Trade Organization protests in 1999, with some officers refusing direct requests to provide names or badge numbers¹⁰. In Canada, dozens of officers were found to have removed their identification badges from their uniforms during the 2010 G-20 Summit in Toronto and the 2010 G-8 Summit

9 URL

https://www.whatdotheyknow.com/request/535605/response/1283809/attach/4/FOIA%202018%200097%20disclosure.pdf?cookie_passthrough=1

10 American Civil Liberties Union of Washington (2000). Out of Control: Seattle’s Flawed Response to Protests Against the World Trade Organization.

in Huntsville, Ontario. Nearly 100 officers were disciplined as a result¹¹.

13.48. In the United States, fear of doxxing and other types of social media ‘outing’ have caused some officers to cover their identification during protest or riot events. However, this type of behaviour is typically not in line with departmental policy. In Northern Ireland, police forces do not deviate from the identification guidance but have implemented a number of mitigation measures to ensure the safety of their officers and staff such as the use of specific code numbers with restricted capacity to link code numbers to officer identity. This is a practice commonly adopted by police forces worldwide, such as the use of codified identifier by Zürich City Police as shown below.



Image 13-14

The assignment of the numbers of each police officer at the Zürich City Police (© Andreas Moschin, Stadtpolizei Zürich).



Image 13-15

The positioning and size of the personal ID number on the public order vest of the Zürich City Police. (© Andreas Moschin, Stadtpolizei Zürich).

13.49. Similar to the STC setup in Hong Kong, the Delta Unit in Sweden enables the rapid mobilisation of small squads of tactically equipped and trained officers to deal with extremely conflictual and stressful situations such as riots. Each Delta squad comprises a commander and seven officers on a vehicle. In policing protests, each officer wears a fluorescent yellow

11 “90 Officers Facing Disciplinary Action for Hiding their Identity at G20,” The Star, November 4, 2010

vest or/and a “riot gear”. The sign on the back and front of their uniforms shows only the Delta unit and squad number which are the same for officers of the same squad. This sign is not for identification purpose, but serves to assist respective commanders in getting an overview of the manpower under their deployment.

13.50. In situations where police officers wear or carry their helmets, people in Sweden would be able to identify individual officers by checking the specially assigned number on both the front and back of the officers’ helmets. This number, made up of a letter standing for the region the police officer comes from and followed by four numerals (printed in black, 3 centimetres in height), is unique to each officer. It is the responsibility of the commanders to ensure visibility of the identification number on the helmets of their officers at all times, unless in circumstances where the police officer is at risk of threats or violence.¹²

Current Measures Taken by the Hong Kong Police

13.51. At the Special Council Meeting on 7 November 2019, the Police briefed IPCC Members on the background, objectives and implementation of the new “operational call signs” (OCS) since October 2019. On whether the OCS would eventually replace the existing insignia such as epaulettes showing rank and number, the IPCC noted that the matter was under review by the Police, and the IPCC would be informed of further developments in due course.

13.52. At the Legislative Council Meeting on 27 November 2019, Secretary for Security informed members that during recent major POEs, uniformed police officers on duty had displayed their UI numbers or identifiable OCS, while plain-clothes police officers exercising police powers would identify themselves by producing warrant cards or displaying identifiable OCS, as long as doing so would not be infeasible under the operational circumstances. The OCS was introduced as a pilot measure and its effectiveness would be reviewed.

IPCC Observations

13.53. The display of identification numbers or rank and name tags is important for accountability and transparency. The fact that individual police officers are identifiable is clear proof of the commitment of the Police to be accountable for their actions. This should help enhance public trust in and cooperation with the Police.

13.54. In the context of police identification during POEs, the internal orders and manuals that the Hong Kong Police has put in place, coupled with the current measures of additional

12 RPSFS. (2014). Rikspolisstyrelsens föreskrifter och allmänna råd om märkning av skyddshjälm m.m. [The National Police Board's regulations and general advice on labeling helmets etc.]. Stockholm: Rikspolisstyrelsens författningssamling [The National Police Board's constitutional collection].

markings on helmets (for STC in particular) and OCS (for anti-riot uniformed officers in general), are in conformity with prevailing international practices. In particular, the use of specific code numbers with restricted capacity to link codes to officer identity is an effective method to strike a proper balance between ensuring the protection of the police officers concerned and meeting the public expectation of accountability.

13.55. The current measures taken by the Police are steps in the right direction to give effect to a higher degree of transparency and accountability and a proper balance between these two principles. In the long run, the Police management should make displaying and providing identification a baseline practice of POE policing, and visible identification be an integral part of overall uniform management and accoutrement design. Exceptions should be allowed only in extreme and well-defined circumstances.

13.56. Meanwhile, applications have been filed in June 2019 for leave to apply for judicial review with respect to issues about the display of service numbers by STC officers¹³, the outcome of which may result in adjustment to relevant measures.

13 This is the status of the case as at the time of finalizing this report.

CHAPTER 14

DETENTION ARRANGEMENT AT SAN UK LING HOLDING CENTRE

Introduction

14.1 This Chapter deals with the Police use of San Uk Ling Holding Centre (SULHC) for processing and detaining persons arrested on 11 August 2019. On that night, 53 arrested persons (APs) were taken to SULHC, which was activated as a Temporary Holding Area (THA), for post-arrest processing and detention. The use of SULHC, especially in relation to the arrests made on 11 August, had aroused public concern on whether SULHC was suitable for processing APs that gave rise to allegations of police misconduct. This Chapter examines whether SULHC was suitable to serve as a THA and from the IPCC, based on the findings, exercise its function under section 8(1)(c) to identify areas for improvement when the Police has to activate a THA under situations similar to that of 11 August in future.

Background

14.2 On occasions of large-scale arrests, the Police would activate a THA for detention on the instructions of Headquarters Command Control Centre (HQCCC) or High Command (HICOM). The purpose is to ensure the lawful processing and safe handling of APs. THAs would usually be individual police stations with sufficient space for the purpose, for instance an open carpark at a police station.¹

14.3 SULHC had been used to detain APs on four occasions² by Police in handling the Public Orders Events (POEs) arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill. 11 August was the only occasion that SULHC was used as a THA for post-arrest processing in addition to detention. Such use attracted public concern. On the night of 11 August, a large number of POEs occurred, mostly involving police actions against protesters who used varying degrees of violence against the Police. Multiple roads in multiple districts throughout the territory were blocked. A general picture of these incidents can be found in Chapter 11. A total of 117 persons were arrested on that day. 53 of them were sent to SULHC directly from their scene of arrest, including 29 from Tsim Sha Tsui, 15 from Causeway Bay and nine from Tuen Mun. One was taken to hospital from the scene of arrest before being detained at SULHC. Among the 53 APs taken to SULHC directly, 30 of them requested medical treatment and were

¹ Information provided by HKPF on 2019-12-19

² A total of 182 APs were detained at SULHC on the four occasions: (i) 5 to 7 August 2019; (ii) 11 to 13 August 2019; (iii) 25 to 26 August 2019 and (iv) 1 to 2 September 2019 respectively.

to the North District Hospital by ambulances.

14.4 The 54 APs sent to SULHC on 11 August (including one sent directly to hospital from Tsim Sha Tsui) were being investigated in relation to offences including “Taking Part in a Riot”, “Unlawful Assembly”, “Possession of Offensive Weapon” and “Possession of Ammunition without Licence”. As at 29 February 2020, 29 of them have been charged in Court pending trial, 16 are still under police investigation and nine were released.

14.5 The use of SULHC, especially on 11 August, resulted in different allegations on the internet and in media reports, including APs being assaulted and/or sexually assaulted by police officers³; APs’ requests for medical treatment being denied or delayed.⁴ The Police has openly denied these allegations.^{5,6,7} There were allegations that legal visits requests by both APs and visiting lawyers were denied or delayed.⁸ However, in terms of complaints, the only Reportable Complaint (RC) received by the Police so far is about legal visit arrangements. There was also one Notifiable Complaint (NC) alleging assault of detainees based on information from the internet (see paragraph 14.22 below for complaint details).

- ³ LIHKG (2019-08-27). 回帶 13 日前 新屋嶺既爆料. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1511397/page/1>
 LIHKG (2019-08-27). 【推上熱門】新屋嶺 -16 歲抗爭者成隻手只剩一層皮連住. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1511293/page/1>
 LIHKG (2019-09-04). 新屋嶺個女仔比人強姦單野係真架!!!. Retrieved from <https://lihkg.com/thread/1537687/page/1>
- ⁴ Headline Daily (2019-08-28). 【逃犯條例】北區醫院護士指部分新屋嶺被捕者骨折嚴重 質疑警方濫用暴力. Retrieved from <http://hd.sheadline.com/news/realtime/hk/1578553/即時-港聞-逃犯條例-北區醫院護士指部分新屋嶺被捕者骨折嚴重-質疑警方濫用暴力>
- ⁵ RTHK (2019-08-29). Lawyers slam use of 'primitive detention centre'. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1477563-20190829.htm>
 Inmedia.hk (2019-08-27). 促請警方尊重被捕示威者的人權及法律權利. Retrieved from <https://www.inmediahk.net/node/1066813>
- ⁶ News.gov.hk (2019-08-27). 警方回應拘留新屋嶺相關指控. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/08/20190827/20190827_165319_923.html?type=ticker
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-08-28). 警否認新屋嶺虐打性侵 反駁全裸搜身控訴 陳淑莊批「口同鼻拗」. Retrieved from <http://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/articlePrint/id/2232270>
 Hong Kong Economic Journal (2019-08-29). 警指羈留者無骨折表徵 醫局：有兩宗澄清「汽油彈從警員方向擲出」片段被惡意刪改. Retrieved from <https://www1.hkej.com/dailynews/articlePrint/id/2233738>
- ⁷ Hong Kong Economic Times (2019-08-28). 新屋嶺扣留 6 人骨折 警：被捕反抗傷. Retrieved from <https://paper.hket.com/article/2438151/新屋嶺扣留6人骨折警：被捕反抗傷>
- ⁸ Ming Pao (2019-08-12). 【逃犯條例】警阻律師見新屋嶺拘留者 陳淑莊：警用無恥手段剝奪被捕者權利. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/ins/港聞/article/20190812/s00001/1565571849405/> 【逃犯條例】警阻律師見新屋嶺拘留者-陳淑莊-警用無恥手段剝奪被捕者權利
 Ming Pao (2019-08-13). 30 人移送文錦渡拘留 警稱無房安排會面 大狀斥警阻 被捕者未見律師已錄口供. Retrieved from <https://news.mingpao.com/pns/要聞/article/20190813/s00001/1565635192236/30人移送文錦渡拘留-警稱無房安排會面-大狀斥警阻-被捕者未見律師已錄口供>
 SCMP (2019-09-08). Hong Kong justices of the peace denied entry to police detention centre where anti-government protesters were allegedly mistreated. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3026162/hong-kong-justices-peace-denied-entry-police-detention>

Cessation of Using SULHC to Detain APs

14.6 On 26 September, the Chief Executive announced that the Police would stop using SULHC to detain APs.⁹ This was confirmed by the Police on 27 September.¹⁰ Despite the cessation of use, the public continued to be concerned as it gave rise to a number of serious allegations, none of which have so far been supported by complaints or concrete evidence.¹¹

14.7 In view of the public concern, the IPCC considers it necessary, from the perspective of section 8(1)(c) of the IPCC Ordinance, to study Police use of SULHC as a THA.

Sources of Information

14.8 For the purpose of this study, the IPCC has scrutinised the following materials:

- (a) Documents provided by the Police in respect of a summary of detention arrangements in large-scale disorders.
- (b) Information provided by the Police during IPCC visit to SULHC.
- (c) A summary report provided by the Police in relation to the incidents on 11 August with selected entries from the incident log.
- (d) Ambulance Journey Records, provided by Fire Services Department (FSD) in respect of persons injured in the incidents on 11 August.
- (e) A table provided by the Police containing the detention records of SULHC.
- (f) Meeting with the Police for information in respect of the operation of SULHC as a THA and general procedures regarding mass detention.
- (g) Meeting with the Police to view the Detention Registers and Occurrence Books of SULHC.

⁹ SCMP (2019-09-27). Hong Kong leader Carrie Lam sticks to her guns on police inquiry but vows no more protesters will be taken to San Uk Ling Holding Centre. Retrieved from <https://www.scmp.com/news/hong-kong/politics/article/3030566/hong-kong-leader-carrie-lam-sticks-her-guns-police-inquiry>

¹⁰ Sing Pao (2019-09-28). 新屋嶺停用 非因失實指控. Retrieved from <https://www.singpao.com.hk/index.php?fi=news1&id=107073>

¹¹ RTHK (2019-09-27). Thousands rally against alleged police abuse. Retrieved from <https://news.rthk.hk/rthk/en/component/k2/1482990-20190927.htm?spTabChangeable=0>

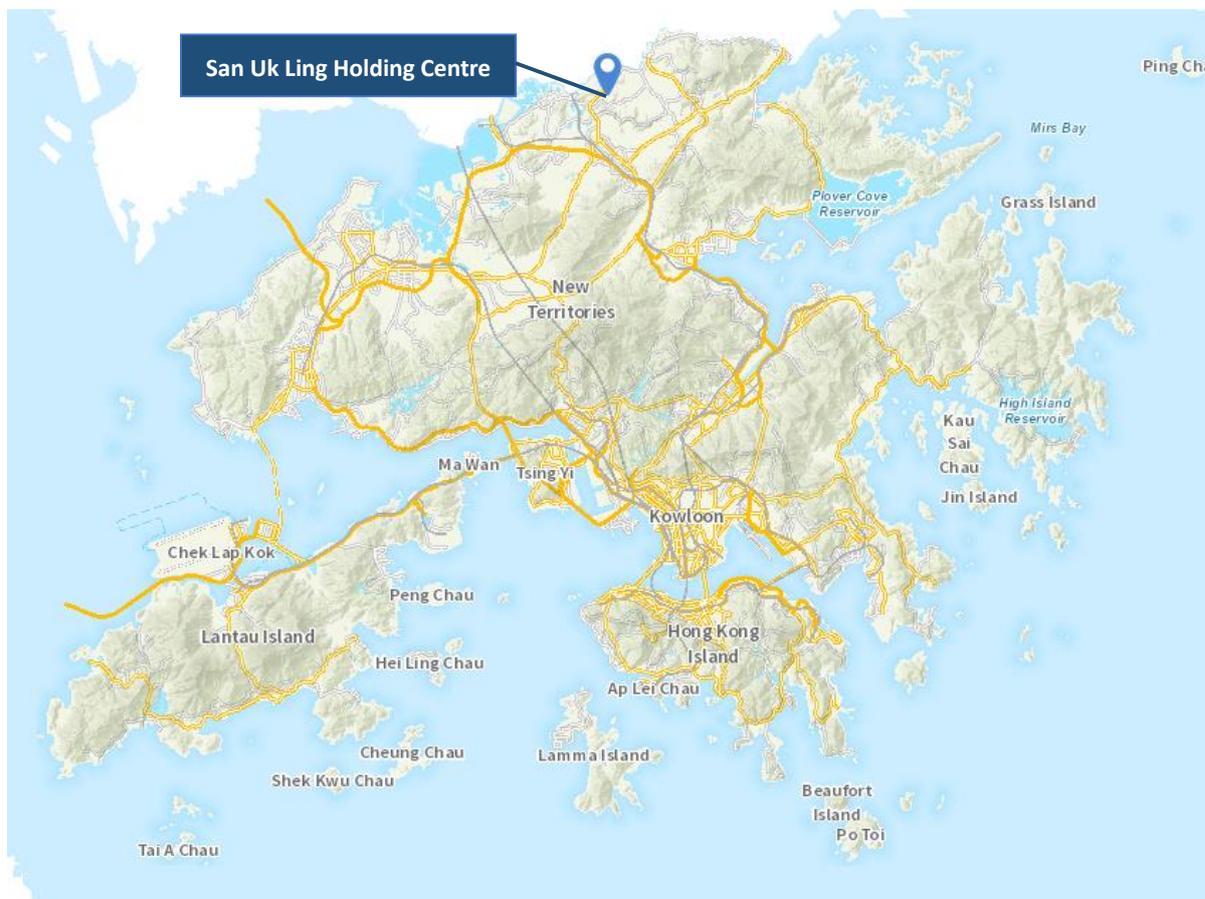
- (h) News reports produced by various newspapers. A total of 79 news reports were examined.
- (i) Press statements obtained from the websites of the Information Services Department (*news.gov.hk* and *info.gov.hk*) concerning the use of SULHC.
- (j) Footage and photos provided by the public upon IPCC's appeal.

Information on SULHC and Its Use on 11 August

Location and Usual Function

14.9 SULHC is situated at Man Kam To, a remote area near the border in the north of the New Territories (see Map 14-1). Prior to August 2019, SULHC had generally been used for post-arrest processing and repatriation of illegal immigrants.¹² The centre is capable of holding around 280 persons.

¹² According to Police, the intakes of illegal immigrants at the Centre in the past 5 years are 806 (2015), 509 (2016), 706 (2017), 597 (2018) and 275 (as of September, 2019).



Map 14-1: Location of SULHC

(Source of base map: Lands Department)

Facilities

14.10 In terms of facilities, there were two telephone landlines for outside communications. One for communications with other Police units and another for communications with external parties. Visitors may contact the officers inside the centre through the landline for external parties. Due to the remote location of SULHC, the mobile network coverage in the vicinity is generally unstable as it would depend on the quality or functionality of one's mobile phone and mobile service provider.

14.11 As for record keeping, no computer record was made on 11 August as the broadband capacity at SULHC was insufficient to ensure a stable connection to the Police centralised computer system. All detention and movement records of APs were done manually. On the night of 11 August, the Police used five Detention Registers for maintaining records of the APs' movement and 14 Occurrence Books for maintaining other records, including legal visits and medical treatment arrangements for them.

14.12 SULHC did not have the detention facilities generally available in police stations, including equipment for video-recording interviews (VRI), designated waiting area for visitors to detainees, CCTV system¹³, and interview room that could ensure full privacy when detainees meet their visitors. At SULHC, there were two rooms available for legal visits on 11 August. One was a room with no door. A board for partition was set up outside this room to provide privacy. The other room had a wooden door with no observation window. The door was kept ajar for security and safety.

Post-arrest Processing of APs at SULHC

14.13 On the evening of 11 August, respective police stations at seven locations, including PHQ, Sham Shui Po, Tsim Sha Tsui, Cheung Sha Wan, Mong Kok, Tai Po and Sha Tin, were under violent attack. According to Police records, SULHC was activated by HQCCC as a THA at 20:20 of 11 August. At 20:43, all HICOMs were informed that THA would be activated at SULHC for detaining all APs. Upon HQCCC instructions, the APs earlier arrested at different areas of Kowloon were taken at around 20:00 to be sent to SULHC for processing. Later, at 21:38, HICOM of Kowloon West was informed by HQCCC to transfer all APs back to Yau Tsim District (YTDIST) for initial processing since there was no computer system at SULHC for recording and processing APs. HQCCC later at 22:13 reinforced this instruction by informing all HICOMs that any new APs would be processed at respective Police divisions before sending them to SULHC for detention. At 22:52, HQCCC decided to take 15 persons arrested in Causeway Bay area to SULHC directly (see paragraph 14.25 below for the reason of the change of decisions).

14.14 According to Police information, the 53 APs directly sent to SULHC from their arrest scenes consisted of four batches (see Table 14-1).

Arrest Location	Number of APs	Time of Arrest		Arrival Time at SULHC	
		Date	Within Time Period	Date	Time
Tsim Sha Tsui	29	2019-8-11	19:35-20:18	2019-8-11	22:26
		2019-8-11	19:35-20:26	2019-8-11	23:35
Causeway Bay	15	2019-8-11	22:01-22:21	2019-8-11	23:55
Tuen Mun	9	2019-8-12	01:25-01:42	2019-8-12	02:35

Table 14-1: Information in relation to the 53 APs' arrest and arrival time at SULHC

¹³ CCTV has been installed on 28 September 2019 to monitor the outer area and the movement along the pathways to the detention blocks.

14.15 Upon APs' arrival at SULHC, receiving officers would make logistics arrangements such as confirming with the arresting or escorting officers the number of APs arrived, cordoning off the corridor area for handling APs. APs were then accompanied by the arresting or escorting officer to meet the Duty Officer (DO) of SULHC for making registration and recording any complaints or request for medical attention. In keeping with detention procedures, APs in a mass arrest would be served with notices informing them of general detainees' rights, such as the right to seek legal assistance and medical attention, and rights when being searched. The officer of the crime team administering the arrest and accompanying an AP to the THA would take the AP to the designated area for enquiry and statement taking.

14.16 On the night of 11 August, the 53 APs were interviewed by the DO upon arrival at the centre. The DO, who was a Station Sergeant, was assisted by four other police officers to go through the initial interview procedures and documentation. In principle, APs who feel they need medical treatment could raise their requests immediately upon meeting the DO and their requests would be recorded accordingly. APs who did not make any request with the DO would proceed to other work stations in the centre for processing, namely initial search, packing personal properties, fingerprint lifting and taking photographs. APs could still request medical treatment in the THA at any station while being processed.

Inadequate Record System

14.17 The record system of SULHC on 11 August were all manually operated, unlike the computerised systems in THAs in other police stations. The manual system proved inadequate for the occasion, as certain information including the data in relation to medical requests was incomplete. According to the Police records, 30 APs were attended to by ambulances but only the requests of 24 of them were recorded. For instance, an AP was recorded to have met the DO at 23:49 of 11 August and was attended to by an ambulance at 06:37 of 12 August, but the time of his medical request was not recorded. In the absence of the record in between the two events (i.e. the time of meeting the DO and the time of ambulance arrival), there was incomplete information as to what actually happened during the period.

14.18 Among the available records for the 24 APs, 12 of them made their requests upon being interviewed by the DO. In response to the medical requests, the Police called FSD for ambulances in batches¹⁴ instead of making individual requests. There was no detailed record as to which ambulance was called for which AP.

¹⁴ A total of seven batches of requests for ambulances were made by the Police for 30 APs

14.19 With respect to records relating to ambulances, FSD has provided real time records retrieved from their computer system. According to FSD records, a total of 30 persons at SULHC were attended to by ambulances on that night, which is consistent with the Police records as to how many persons had requested for medical treatment. According to the Police, in order to cope with the number of requests for medical treatment, SULHC requested further manpower from the Police management for escorting APs to the hospital. Officers were subsequently deployed to reinforce the escort duty at SULHC.

14.20 The issue of incomplete data also exists in the records about legal visits. According to the Police, 50 interviews were arranged for 39 APs at SULHC on request by lawyers or by APs themselves. The records contained data when the 50 interviews started and ended. However, as to the time of requesting the interviews, only those of 23 APs were recorded. Among these 23 APs, a total of 26 requests were made, 17 by lawyers and nine by APs. The earliest request for legal visit was made by lawyers at 02:10 on 12 August whereas the first one made by APs was at 06:34 in the same morning. All 26 requests were entertained, with three APs interviewed with lawyers twice. No time entry of requesting legal visits was available for the remainder of APs. Based on available records, lawyers initiated most of the legal visits requests and they were made generally earlier than those made by APs.

14.21 According to the Police, some of the APs needed to have VRI on the night of 11 August. They were subsequently transferred to other police stations for conducting VRI.

Complaints against Police

14.22 The use of SULHC gave rise to one RC and one NC¹⁵ as of 29 February 2020. The RC was lodged by three lawyers alleging that the Police had delayed access to their clients at SULHC in the small hours of 12 August 2019 and then failed to arrange a proper room for interview with their clients. The NC was about police officers assaulting APs at SULHC. This NC was lodged by persons not directly affected but upon learning the information from the internet.

¹⁵ There is another NC in which SULHC was mentioned. The relevant allegation in that NC concerned the lack of arrest action against people who spread rumours about what happened in SULHC.

Police Response

Reason of Using SULHC as a THA

14.23 Regarding the considerations in activating SULHC to process APs directly on 11 August, the Police explained that the handling of APs may vary case by case depending on a number of factors including but not limited to the merits of individual cases, safety of APs and officers. On 11 August, there was widespread disturbance in various areas in Hong Kong. Many police stations that could normally be used as THA were under attack that night or were too close to the areas of disturbance.¹⁶

14.24 The Police considered it necessary to identify a safe and sizable location to handle the large numbers of APs. The Police found SULHC the most suitable for detaining APs with its capacity, high level of security, distance from areas of disturbance and the low risk of attack by protesters.

14.25 With respect to the changes of decision on the use of SULHC as THA on 11 August, the Police explained that at 20:20 that night, HQCCC decided to activate SULHC as THA for processing APs. However, after considering the operational deficiency of SULHC due to the lack of computer systems to record and process the handling of APs, a further instruction was therefore made at 21:38 that detained persons should be processed at respective police stations before being sent to SULHC for detention. After further deliberation, HQCCC decided that the detained persons already being transported to SULHC would not be transferred back to YTDIST, taking into account their safety and the security en route. Likewise, they instructed that the 15 APs in Causeway Bay were also to be directly sent to SULHC where manual recording of APs' details would be conducted.

14.26 When transporting the APs to SULHC on 11 August, the Police encountered the following problems:

- (a) Large road junctions were blocked by barricades;
- (b) Violence on-street was ongoing and it took time to arrange for sufficient escorting officers; and
- (c) There were coaches held up at the unnamed one-way road connecting SULHC and Man Kam To Road.

¹⁶ Seven police stations were attacked on that night: PHQ in Wan Chai, Sham Shui Po, Tsim Sha Tsui, Cheung Sha Wan, Mongkok, Tai Po and Sha Tin.

Medical Arrangements

14.27 The Police explained that in order to fulfil their duty of care to persons in police custody, police officers will pay special attention to the physical condition of all arrested / detained persons. In general, whilst all police officers are professionally trained with first aid knowledge and skills, immediate care will be applied to those who are injured and medical treatment will also be arranged if considered necessary. Police further explained that when the APs arrived at SULHC, it was duly noted that for those with apparent injuries, the handling police officers had applied first aid. In addition, the Police at a press conference back on 27 August had explained that due to the large number of requests from APs for medical treatment, it was necessary to give priority to those with more serious injuries.¹⁷

14.28 The Police further stated that injuries of the APs were not caused while under police custody at SULHC. One injured AP was sent from the scene to the hospital directly for medical treatment, whereas other injured APs were given first aid as circumstances allowed at the material time. As at 29 February 2020, no CAPO complaint was made by any AP concerning alleged assault in SULHC.

14.29 The Police elaborated that in general, once the detained persons had made their request for medical treatment, officers at SULHC would immediately request for ambulance service. On the material night, there were circumstances that some detained persons had changed their mind upon the arrival of the ambulance. Example would be that the ambulance had arrived in the small hours while the detained persons preferred to proceed with their medical treatment later in the morning instead. Albeit such circumstances were not recorded due to the busy work at the time that SULHC was in operation, officers had made use of the best available resources to deal with the mass arrests.

Legal Visits

14.30 Regarding arrangements for legal visits, the Police explained that when some lawyers arrived at the main gate of SULHC for meeting APs, officers manning the main gate did not inform the officers inside and instead advised the lawyers to call the centre. Calls from lawyers were handled through the only landline available at the centre. The officers inside SULHC had knowledge of this only when the lawyers eventually succeeded in calling the centre

¹⁷ News.gov.hk (2019-08-27). 警方回應拘留新屋嶺相關指控. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/08/20190827/20190827_165319_923.html?type=ticker
Hong Kong Economic Times (28 Aug 2019). 新屋嶺扣留 6 人骨折 警：被捕反抗傷. Retrieved from <https://paper.hket.com/article/2438151/新屋嶺扣留 6 人骨折 警：被捕反抗傷>

to check whether their clients were there.

14.31 The records on legal visits were made manually under hectic and chaotic circumstances so that errors might be possible. At a press conference on 27 August, the Police denied any intention to disallow detainees to meet with lawyers. They stated that all the APs detained at SULHC on the night of 11 August had been informed of their rights of meeting lawyers. Some volunteer lawyers, who were not engaged by APs at SULHC, arrived and asked to meet APs that night to offer services pro bono. The Police had explained the procedures to them and later arranged for interview with the relevant AP for them. If an AP had requested to meet lawyers, the Police would take cautioned statements from them only after the lawyers had arrived. The Police emphasised that the decision whether or not to meet lawyers was independently made by each individual AP. To preserve AP's privacy, the Police wished to make all interviews in one-to-one mode. However, there was a vast number of APs but only two interview rooms. Eventually, some APs and their lawyers agreed to be interviewed in small groups.¹⁸

IPCC Observations

Inadequate Facilities

14.32 Prior to August 2019, SULHC had not been used as an arrest processing facility. Its structural limitations made it not at all ideal for processing APs and particularly not for mass detention. For instance, there was no CCTV system, a basic security system for handling APs. In the event of public accusations, CCTV footages would provide evidence for support or rebuttal. Moreover, while the IPCC appreciates the challenges the Police faced in processing a large number of APs, any omission of detention records is not satisfactory. When SULHC was used as a THA on 11 August, there was no centralised computer system, as was available in the police stations used as THAs. This led to inability to keep a complete set of records, including those regarding medical requests and legal visits. A desirable THA should be equipped with adequate facilities to enable accurate and contemporaneous records in relation to the detention and movement of APs. This would serve as credible records when audit trail is needed or when the records are tendered as evidence in Court, as is possible when statements (whether made under caution or not) given by APs are challenged. The IPCC notes that these inadequacies at one stage prompted Police senior management to re-consider the use of SULHC

¹⁸ News.gov.hk (2019-08-27). 警方回應拘留新屋嶺相關指控. Retrieved from https://www.news.gov.hk/chi/2019/08/20190827/20190827_165319_923.html?type=ticker
Apple Daily (2019-08-28). 拘 15 少年 兒童之家羈留. Retrieved from <https://hk.news.appledaily.com/local/daily/article/20190828/20757462>

as a THA on 11 August after it had been activated. However, when it became clear that many police stations that could normally be used as THA were under attack that night or were too close to the areas of disturbance, there was no alternative but to stay with the decision. This experience will inform future planning, if police stations again become unable to cope with large numbers of APs.

14.33 There was no parking area or waiting area for visitors to SULHC. Lawyers had to wait outside the centre at midnight on 11 August. When lawyers were admitted inside the centre to meet their clients, there was no proper interview rooms that could ensure complete privacy. The number and setting of interview rooms were simply not commensurate with the need, thus leading to long waiting time. The result was dissatisfaction from the legal profession with the arrangements for legal visits at SULHC.

14.34 As a THA handling a large number of APs at the same time, outsiders visiting APs at the centre, such as lawyers and family members of the APs, would need to contact the officers there. However, there was only one landline available for outside communications at SULHC. Lawyers could only call this single landline to contact the officers inside SULHC. Moreover, the mobile network in the area of SULHC was unstable (also see paragraph 14.38 below). It was therefore difficult for the lawyers to make calls and successfully reach out to the officers of the centre.

14.35 According to the relevant Police guidelines, VRI is to be used for cases in which the venue of trial may reasonably be expected to be the District Court. On the night of 11 August, APs might be expected to have been involved in riot-related offences for which the likely venue of trial would be the District Court. However, there was no VRI facilities at SULHC. As a THA activated for use during large-scale POEs, there should be such facilities available to avoid unnecessary logistics arrangements and movement of APs.

Remote Geographical Location

14.36 The remote geographical location of SULHC made for long the journeys for transporting APs from different arrest locations. This was further aggravated by the extra difficulties the Police encountered on 11 August as mentioned in paragraph 14.26. The journeys to SULHC for the 53 APs that night were largely in terms of hours. In principle, persons under arrest should be brought to the nearest police detention facility as soon as practicable. Long commuting time is not desirable under any circumstances. In extreme situations like 11 August, some APs might have already suffered injury at the time of arrest. In fact, Police records suggested that at least 12 APs had made medical requests immediately

upon meeting the DO at SULHC on 11 August. Against such background, transporting APs to a remote site like SULHC with long commuting time, coupled with inadequate facilities and the lack of contemporaneous and accurate records for audit trail, is not only undesirable but also vulnerable to speculations. In any event, any APs found injured at the time of arrest should be sent to hospital from the scene of arrest directly for medical treatment instead of being taken to police detention facilities first.

14.37 From the perspective of outside visitors, making visits to APs at SULHC was difficult as there is no parking space at the centre and only very limited public transportation is available in the vicinity. For those who take public transport to SULHC from city centre, it would probably take more than an hour. This is not desirable and might be considered as hindering APs' rights of being visited by interested parties like lawyers and family members.

14.38 Due to the remoteness of SULHC, the mobile network coverage in the area is unstable. Officers inside the centre might not be able to use their mobile phones to communicate with outsiders. As explained by the Police regarding the situation on the night of 11 August, officers on guard at the main gate did not inform the officers inside SULHC and instead advised the lawyers to call the centre. Lawyers arriving at SULHC might not be able to use their mobile phones to call the landline of the centre and were thus left with no means to contact police officers. A choice of a less remote site as a THA would reduce the risk of communications breakdown.

Manpower Strained

14.39 There was only one DO with four police officers to support his administrative work on 11 August. Such manpower strength was inadequate for the heavy administrative workload from the large number of APs on that night, such as arranging medical treatments and legal visits as well as maintaining accurate and contemporaneous records for these arrangements. In fact, the Police was unable to maintain a complete set of records in relation to the medical treatment and legal visit arrangements for all APs due to the chaotic situation.

14.40 In terms of logistical arrangements, SULHC had to request further manpower for escorting injured APs to hospital. Officers were subsequently deployed to reinforce such duty. This demonstrated that the original manpower allocated for operating SULHC as a THA was not sufficient to cater for extra contingencies.

Recommendations by the IPCC under Section 8(1)(c) of IPCC Ordinance*Manpower*

14.41 The arrest of a large number of APs at many locations on 11 August clearly presented logistical and law enforcement challenges for the Police management and the officers on site. The law enforcement challenges were of two different kinds: (1) maintaining law and order in the face of widespread continuing violent protests, and (2) dealing with a large number of APs spread over a large number of places. When faced with continuing violence, commanders on site would have no alternative but to give priority to crowd dispersal, clearance of blocked traffic routes and protection of the lives and property of those affected by the protests. However, those arrested do have the right to be read their rights and to have access to medical attention while at the same time for APs reasonably suspected to have committed crime, adequate arrangements must be made by the Police Force to perform its duty of bringing such persons to justice. This is an important balance of priorities which the IPCC recommends that the Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) should review.

14.42 In a situation where large numbers of arrests were likely, the Commissioner should review riot control manpower requirements with a view to strengthening the logistical and manpower deployments to deal with APs during large-scale POEs. The IPCC notes that crime wing officers were already deployed in POEs to deal with arrests. However, equal attention should be devoted to ensuring that APs are aware of their rights and are given access to timely medical attention. There are already Police guidelines for reading rights to APs and ensuring that persons injured are given access to medical treatment. This review should consider whether current guidance are sufficiently clear to ensure the attainment of the dual objectives of (1) maintaining law and order and (2) bringing offenders to justice while respecting their rights. This review should also consider whether the Police Force need augmentation in training, manpower and technology, bearing in mind the possibility of future large-scale POEs in which there could be large numbers of APs.

14.43 As to manning a THA, the experience on 11 August suggests that more manpower resources, along with improved facilities (see paragraph 14.44 below), should have been allocated to ensure the effective and efficient discharge of the Police administrative work in handling a large number of APs at the same time. For instance, all medical requests should be attended to immediately, instead of being handled in batches. Manpower is one of the areas that the Police should look into for achieving this.

Facilities

14.44 The Police would use police stations as THAs to process and detain APs, where sufficient space (such as carpark, waiting areas for visitors to APs) and facilities (such as stable connection to the centralised computer system and adequate telephone landline system) for processing APs are available. In this respect, the IPCC has in 2019 visited police stations where the Police Force was rolling out enhancements of the facilities for processing and detaining APs.¹⁹ The IPCC was informed that these facilities have been designed to ensure that APs are informed of their rights, that legal visits are facilitated to protect client/lawyer confidentiality and that there are adequate safeguards for APs during detention. These facilities also established an audit trail involving archived CCTV footage and computer records which can be used for supervision and complaint investigation. The IPCC recommends that these enhancements should be implemented soonest possible in all police stations. If a place outside a police station is used as a THA in future, then such THA should have equivalent facilities as those in police stations.

Location

14.45 It is understandable that, when deciding on a place to serve as a THA in case of extreme situations, the Police needs to strike an optimal balance between the accessibility of the THA and the risk of it being attacked. In the case of 11 August, SULHC was too remote and some of the outside visitors to APs might have been left with no means of contact with SULHC upon arrival because the mobile network coverage was unstable in the area. The structural setup in the centre and limited public transport access to the vicinity also made these visits difficult. With regard to the transportation of APs, long journey should be avoided in an extreme situation where APs might have been injured at the time of arrest. Having absorbed the experience of 11 August, the Police should consider identifying less remote sites as THAs in case such need arises in future. The location should also take into account the availability of hospitals and ambulance depots within reasonable distance.

Conclusion

14.46 SULHC was undoubtedly capable of holding a large number of APs but with its limitations in setup and equipment, it was not suitable for use as a THA on that occasion. Future THAs for mass arrests must be designed to match the standards now available in police stations for processing and detaining APs and operated with separate logistical and recording

¹⁹ IPCC Press Release (2019-04-04). IPCC visited the enhanced detention facilities at the North Point Police Station. Retrieved from https://www.ipcc.gov.hk/doc/en/pr/pr_20190404_e.pdf

arrangements to deal with APs as recommended above. The Police should also review and design a policy of requirements or factors for consideration in identifying a venue to be designated and activated as THA for mass arrests.

CHAPTER 15**PERCEPTIONS OF POLICE OFFICERS, PROTESTERS
AND GENERAL PUBLIC****Introduction**

15.1 In order to understand the perceptions of police officers on the one hand, and the perceptions of protesters and the general public on the other, the IPCC commissioned two studies independently conducted by academics. We believe that an independent survey is necessary to enable us to understand the facts on the ground we have found. Also, these surveys may provide a useful basis for the Commissioner and for the Administration to develop future policies. That said, it must be remembered that all surveys have limitations in terms of time and methodologies (including the questions asked). Thus, the reader must make his or her own judgment when considering the results of these surveys.

15.2 Complaints arise from police officers' execution of duty during their encounter with members of the public. Whilst it is natural to assume that a complaint is made on the basis of the objective facts of the interaction between the concerned police officer(s) and the complainant, the complainant's perception of (1) the legality of his own act, (2) the legitimacy of the police officer's action in response to the complainant's act, and (3) the police officer's attitude towards the complainant are actually the deciding factors leading to the complainant lodging a complaint. Conversely, the police officer's perception of and attitude towards the complainant / his act, and his role as a law enforcement officer all have bearing on the action he takes that gives rise to a complaint. The perception of the complainant and the concerned police officers on each other and their acts and action are pivotal in leading to a complaint, regardless of whether there is any substance in the complaint.

15.3 From June 2019 to February 2020, police action in the Public Order Events (POEs) gave rise to 542 Reportable Complaints (RCs) and 1 099 Notifiable Complaints (NCs), totaling 1 641 complaints. From complaints handling and complaints prevention points of view, it is useful for the IPCC to understand the perceptions of frontline police officers, protesters and general public in respect of the following, so as to facilitate the IPCC in the process of making relevant recommendations to the Force:

- (a) To find out the attitude of police officers towards members of the public, peaceful protesters, and the violent acts of some of the protesters.
- (b) To find out how police officers perceive their policing work in the POEs, the Police Force's handling of the POEs, in particular the use of force in response to the violent

acts of some of the protesters, and their supervisors and colleagues as a team.

- (c) To find out whether police officers have any job satisfaction given the high level of stress.
- (d) To find out causes as well as aspirations for actions in the POEs taken by the stakeholders (i.e. protesters) during the survey period.

15.4 To this end, the IPCC commissioned academics from the University College London (UCL) and the Centre for Communication and Public Opinion Survey (CCPOS) of The Chinese University of Hong Kong (CUHK) to conduct a survey on randomly selected police officers and to carry out a research on protesters and the general public respectively. This chapter presents a summary of the results of the two surveys.¹ Full reports of the two surveys can be found on IPCC's website.

Survey on Police Officers by Academics from UCL

15.5 The Hong Kong Police Force states the Common Purpose and Values of its members, as follows²:

“Our Common Purpose

The Hong Kong Police Force will ensure a safe and stable society by:

- upholding the rule of law
- maintaining law and order
- preventing and detecting crime
- safeguarding and protecting life and property
- working in partnership with the community and other agencies
- striving for excellence in all that we do
- maintaining public confidence in the Force

Our Values

- Integrity and Honesty
- Respect for the rights of members of the public and of the Force
- Fairness, impartiality and compassion in all our dealings

¹ In summarising the results of the two surveys in this chapter, i.e. paragraphs 15.6 -15.44, the term ‘protests’ is used to denote POEs for simplicity sake.

² HKPF Website, https://www.police.gov.hk/ppp_en/01_about_us/vm.html

- Acceptance of responsibility and accountability
- Professionalism
- Dedication to quality service and continuous improvement
- Responsiveness to change
- Effective communication both within and outwith the Force”

The community relies upon police officers sharing the above-stated Common Purpose and Values, when they perform their law enforcement duties. The last ten months have been a time of extreme stress for members of the Police Force. The purpose of this survey is to see if the Common Purpose and the Values shared by members of the Police Force have in any way been dented.

15.6 The survey on police officers conducted by the academics from UCL is comprised of three parts:

- (a) online survey done by way of a questionnaire with 485 randomly selected frontline police officers;
- (b) face-to-face individual interviews with 18 randomly selected police officers; and
- (c) discussion with two focus groups with seven randomly selected police officers in each group.

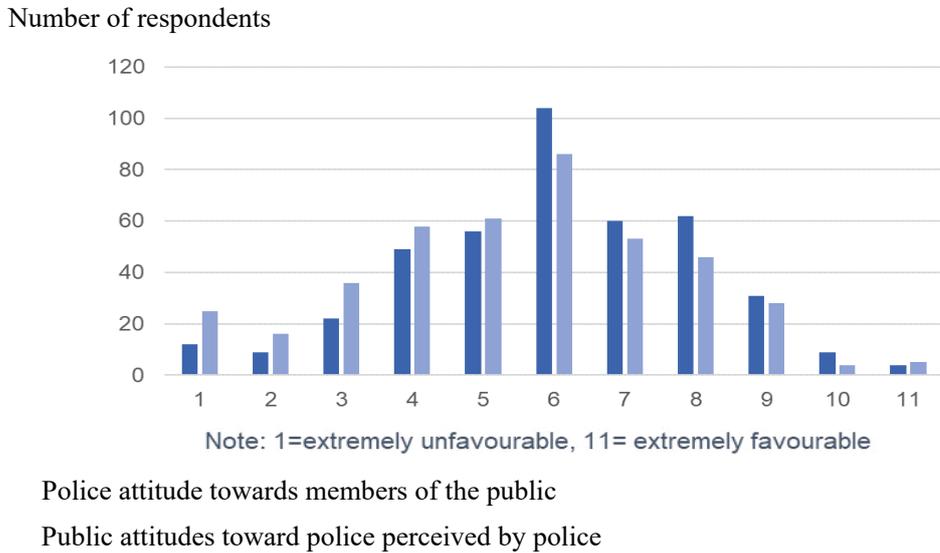
15.7 It was carried out between 21 October 2019 and 1 November 2019, at the mid-stage of the protests. The purpose of the survey is “*to provide insight into the current experiences, ideas, attitudes and perceptions of frontline police officers, many of whom had been dealing with the recent public order events.*”³ The results of the survey are summarised as follows:

Police Officers’ Attitude towards the Public

15.8 The respondents generally held positive attitudes towards members of the public and recognised the importance of having good police-public relations. They tended to think the public felt the same way about the Police. 75% agreed that it is valuable to understand the needs of communities and 59% concurred that it is important to listen to members of the public.

³ The full report is on the IPCC website <https://www.ipcc.gov.hk> (to be updated)

Perceptions of Overall Police-Public Attitudes



15.9 However, there were mixed and diversified views about whether the recent POEs had affected relationships between the Police and the public.

(The blue speaking bubbles in this chapter are selected quotes from the respondents denoting the typical or most representative responses/ views to the respective questions posted.)

“The police force has long received the very strong popular support from the public...I still believe the police force is commanding majority of support from citizens”

“I can feel that things have changed, mainly with the younger generation. They are very against the police”

Police Officers’ Perception of Peaceful Protestors

15.10 83% of the respondents concurred that peaceful protests should be facilitated and 58% agreed that ‘Police should work with these protesters to ensure peaceful protest is possible’. However, 61% were concerned that peaceful protestors did not respect the law and were ambivalent about the possibility of policing the peaceful protests by consent.

“I have no problem with them having their own ideal, their own cause, but to fight for that they have been doing something illegal and this is what I can’t accept”

“Before June we were only provoked or challenged by some gangsters or criminals. Since June, the so-called yellow camp, maybe they don’t break the laws, but even they will be radically preventing us from doing our job”

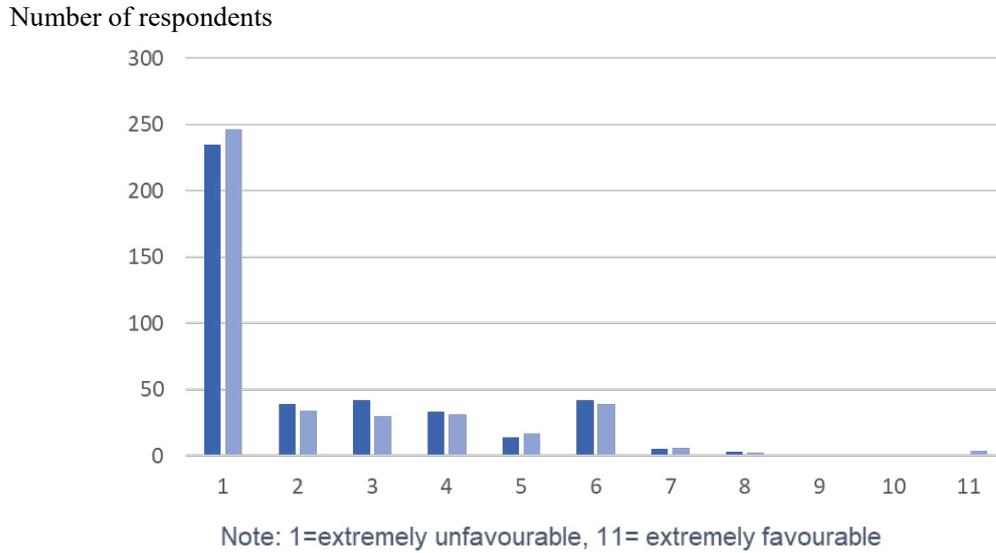
15.11 Officers felt a greater sense of distance from the peaceful protesters than from the general public. Most of the officers who had a generally unfavorable view of the peaceful protesters felt that the peaceful protesters also had an unfavourable view of the Police.

Police Officers’ Perception of Violent Protestors

15.12 Respondents’ assessments of the violent protests and the violent protesters were much more negative. 90% were of the view that the violent protesters demonstrated a lack of respect for the law and only 22% agreed that ‘*Police should work with these violent protesters to ensure peaceful protest is possible.*’ Most respondents felt a great sense of distance from the violent protesters, held an extremely unfavourable view of violent protesters, and thought the violent protesters held similar views of the Police.

“For some rioters, they are actually just using lots of excuses to justify their violent acts. And for those violent people, no matter how you talk to them, I don’t think you can get your expected outcome”

Overall Perceptions of Relations between the Police and Violent Protesters



- Police attitude towards violent protesters
- Violent protesters' attitudes toward police perceived by police

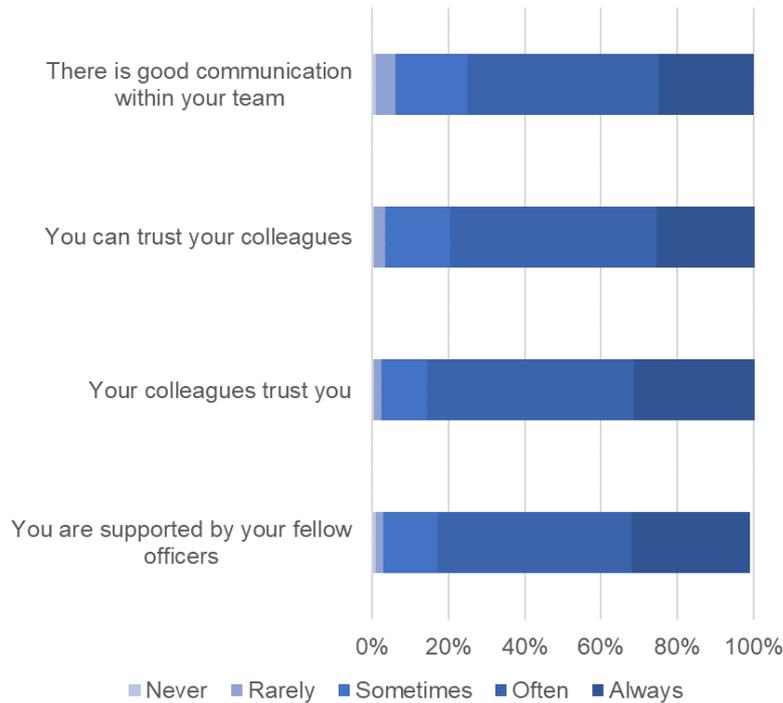
Police Officers' Experience of Policing Protests

15.13 Officers in the survey spent an average 47% of their time policing POEs since June 2019 (up to the time of the survey in October 2019), overall, they worked an average of 5.6 days a week and an average of 13.5 hours a day. In the interviews and focus groups discussions, all officers spoke about the longer working hours during the protests period.

15.14 50% of the respondents had experienced at least one encounter of verbal confrontation with protesters. Use of force and being attacked and injured were less prevalent experiences – 36% reported having been attacked, and 20% injured, during protests policing, and 32% reported having used force in the POEs.

15.15 Respondents tended to have very positive experience of peer support and felt that the recent events had made relationships within the Police Force stronger by creating more opportunities for bonding with peers and more opportunities to work closer with colleagues. A majority of the respondents often felt that they were trusted and supported by fellow officers, that they in turn were trusted by their colleagues, and that there was good communication within their team (see chart below).

CHAPTER 15 • PERCEPTIONS OF POLICE OFFICERS,
PROTESTERS AND GENERAL PUBLIC



15.16 Police identity was important to most officers. 82% of the respondents agreed that ‘Being a police officer is important to who I am’ while 84% felt strong ties with other officers.

Police Officers’ Perceptions of Their Supervisors and the Police Organisation

15.17 Respondents’ opinions of their immediate supervisors tended to be positive. 71% said their supervisors always treated them with respect. Nonetheless, between one third and one half of the respondents thought their supervisors treated them with procedural fairness only sometimes or less often. Officers’ perception of distributive justice (i.e. the fairness of rewards and work allocations) was less positive. Only 33% agreed they were rewarded fairly for the work they did and 33% agreed that the amount of work they were expected to do was fair.

Police Officers’ Perceptions of Work Related to Protests

15.18 Respondents had mixed views on their work in the protests. 51% were positive about how the Police Force had handled the POEs, but only 29% felt the Police Force had done its best to deal with the pressures the protest events had placed on the officers.

15.19 Officers thought that the use of force by the Police throughout the protests was reasonable, justified and proportionate to the situations.

“We have been very restrained in our enforcement over the past four months. We are not the kind of very violent or triad, gang-like police officers like some protesters or some people would call us. If we were really that aggressive and violent in our enforcement, this campaign wouldn’t have lasted four months”

“As a police officer, every act we take we should be held accountable to that act. So, I believe every act we have taken is based on careful deliberation and consideration”

Only 22% were of the view that they had been ordered to engage in policing activity that made them feel uncomfortable.

Police Officers’ Self-Image and Policing Ideals

15.20 Respondents had a relatively strong sense of their own legitimacy as guardian of the peace. 68% felt confident in the authority vested in them. However, many officers were less clear about their ability to assert their authority, with only 46% feeling that they had enough authority to do their job well.

15.21 Most respondents felt it was important to treat members of the public in a procedurally just way. 55% agreed ‘*We should treat everyone with the same level of respect regardless of how they behave*’.

Police Officers’ Job Satisfaction and Stress

15.22 Job satisfaction among the respondents was generally high. 64% felt satisfied with their job as a police officer and 63% said they would not consider taking another job.

15.23 Levels of stress were also high, but not overwhelming. 28% often felt tense or uptight, 43% often felt angry, and 43% often felt upset. Stress stemmed from a number of

different sources, including long working hours and exhaustion, having less time to spend with family and friends, on-the-job stress, and worry about their own and their family's safety.

Survey on Protesters and the Public by CCPOS of CUHK

15.24 The survey on protesters and members of the public conducted by the academics from CCPOS of CUHK is comprised of two parts, namely :

- i. onsite surveys interviewing 17 233 randomly selected protesters at 26 mass rallies and demonstrations held from June to December 2019; and
- ii. telephone surveys from 7 November to 13 December 2019 with 2 008 members of the public whose telephone numbers were randomly selected. Data from similar telephone surveys conducted by CCPOS between May and October 2019 were used for trend analysis, thus creating a database of 5 907 members of the public being talked to between May and December 2019.

15.25 The purpose of the survey is to (1) “*identify attitudes towards/amongst key stakeholders including views on the general protesters, protesters who took violent action, the Police, the local community etc.*” including public sentiment towards the Police and the protesters, and (2) “*to find out causes as well as aspirations for actions (violence) taken by the protesters during the study period*” and the public opinion towards the driving force for the protests.⁴ The results of the survey are summarised as follows :

Onsite Surveys Results

(I) Protesters' Protest Motivation

15.26 ‘Call for the withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill’ was the ‘very important’ motivation for the onsite survey respondents to take part in protests at an early stage, according to 85.1% to 94.8% of the respondents interviewed between June and August 2019. Despite the HKSAR government’s repeated reiteration that the bill was ‘suspended’ or ‘dead’, protesters’ demand that the bill be completely withdrawn remained strong until the HKSAR government announced the withdrawal of the bill on 4 September 2019.

15.27 Other ‘very important’ motivations for the respondents to participate in protests included (1) ‘Dissatisfaction with the Police handling of the protests’, (2) ‘Dissatisfaction with

⁴ The full report is on the IPCC website <https://www.ipcc.gov.hk> (to be updated)

Police charging arrested persons for rioting’ and (3) ‘Call for establishment of an independent commission of inquiry’, according to 80% to 90% of the respondents. The percentage of respondents rating ‘Dissatisfaction with the Police handling of the protests’ as a ‘very important’ motivation increased from 90.4% in mid-July to 98.3% at the end of July the highest.⁵ The notable increase in July happened after the Yuen Long incident on 21 July 2019. The percentage was still high at 92.9% in early December 2019.

(II) *Protesters’ Attitude towards Radicalisation of Protests*

15.28 As the protests continued, protesters increasingly believed in the efficacy of radical protest. At the early stage of the protests, 38.2% of the onsite survey respondents thought that ‘radical protests could make the government heed public opinion’. The figure rose to 60% at later stages. In June 2019, around 70% agreed that ‘when the government fails to listen, the use of radical tactics by protesters is understandable’. The percentage rose to over 90% from late July 2019 onward. The percentage of respondents who thought that ‘radical protests could alienate the general public’ correspondingly decreased from 50%-60% in the early stages (June) to 30% in the later stages (October 2019 to December 2019). The respondents were less concerned that radicalisation of the protests would distance them from the general public. Only 30% of the respondents disapproved the radical tactics of the radical protesters. A majority of 80%-90% of the respondents believed the synergy between the peaceful and radical camps.

Whether agree the statements	Early stages	Later stages
(1) ‘Radical protests could make the government heed public opinion’ 激進的示威手段可以令政府聆聽民意	~ 40%	> 60%
(2) ‘Radical protests could alienate the general public’ 激進的示威手段會令社會上其他人反感	~ 50% to 60%	~ 30%
(3) ‘The maximum impact could be achieved only when peaceful assembly and confrontational actions work together’ 和平集會和衝擊行動互相配合才可以達到最大效果	~ 70% to 80%	~ 80% to 90%
(4) ‘When the government fails to listen, the use of radical tactics by protesters is understandable’ 在政府一意孤行的情況下，抗爭者採取激烈行動是可以理解的	~ 70%	> 90%

⁵ Page 43 of the report

*Results of Telephone Surveys with Members of the Public**(I) Public's View of the Protests*

15.29 62.3% of the telephone survey respondents supported the protests for the following main reasons:

- (a) Dissatisfied with HKSAR government and the central government (33.5% of the respondents);
- (b) Oppose the Fugitive Offenders Bill (29%); and
- (c) Protect and strive for democracy, freedom, justice and rights (28%).

Dissatisfied with Hong Kong SAR government or the central government	33.5%
Oppose the amendments to FOO	29.0%
Protect and strive for democracy, freedom, justice and rights	28.0%
Identify with the movement/protesters' demands and ideas	11.5%
Dissatisfied with the police	10.5%
Protect 'one country, two systems'	4.2%
Dissatisfied with current social and political conditions	2.0%
Support young people and the protesters	0.9%
Others	0.4%
Don't know/refuse to answer	4.5%
(Sample size)	(1,251)

15.30 18% of the respondents were against the protests for the following main reasons:

- (a) Oppose protesters damaging society or harming citizens (46.2%); and
- (b) Oppose protesters' use of violence or illegal acts (25.7%).

Oppose protesters' damage to society or harming citizens	46.2%
Oppose protesters' use of violence or illegal acts	25.7%
Do not disapprove the amendments to FOO	16.7%
Do not identify with protesters' demands or their ways of protesting	14.6%
Others	2.8%
Don't know/refuse to answer	4.3%
(Sample size)	(362)

15.31 17.9% were in between supporting and not supporting the protests.

(II) *Public's Attitude towards Radicalization of Protests*

15.32 In spite of the protesters' positive views on radical actions, telephone survey respondents, however, largely disagreed with the radical actions taken by the radical protesters. The telephone survey respondents considered the following actions of the protestors most unacceptable:

- (a) Hurling petrol bombs at police officers or police stations (48.5% of respondents);
- (b) Use of force during conflicts against people with different views (48.4%);
- (c) Damaging MTR facilities and traffic lights, etc. (45.6%);
- (d) Use of weapons to attack police officers (45.2%); and
- (e) Vandalising specific stores (43%).

Hurling petrol bombs at police officers or police stations	48.5%
Use of force during conflicts against people with different views	48.4%
Damaging MTR facilities and traffic lights, etc.	45.6%
Use of weapons to attack police officers, such as steel pipes, slingshots, throwing bricks, etc.	45.2%
Vandalising specific stores	43.0%
Occupying the airport	39.0%
Besieging and attacking government buildings, such as police stations and central government offices, etc.	36.0%
Non-cooperation movement, such as obstructing the operation of MTR and government departments	31.3%
(Sample size)	(2008)

15.33 Most telephone survey respondents (66.8% to 82.8%) were of the view that 'when participating in protests in Hong Kong, it is a must to uphold the peaceful and nonviolent principle. However, 55.7% to 68.4 % of the respondents considered it understandable for protesters to carry out radical actions when peaceful protests failed to make the government respond to the demands. Whilst 37.7% believed that radical protests could be more effective than peaceful protests, 33.5% disagreed and 27.1% was neutral.

CHAPTER 15 • PERCEPTIONS OF POLICE OFFICERS,
PROTESTERS AND GENERAL PUBLIC

Whether agree the statements	Second wave (June 17 – June 20)	Third wave (August 7 – August 13)	Fourth wave (September 5 – September 11)	Fifth wave (October 8 – October 14)	Sixth wave (November 7 – December 13)
(1) 'When participating in protests in Hong Kong, it is a must to uphold the peaceful and non-violent principle' 在香港參與抗議活動，一定要堅持和平非暴力原則	82.8%	71.7%	69.4%	66.8%	68.1%
(2) 'When large-scale peaceful protests fail to make the government respond to demands, it is understandable for the protesters to carry out radical actions' 當大型和平示威都未能令政府回應時，示威者有激烈行動係可以理解	--	--	55.7%	59.2%	68.4%
(3) 'Radical protests are more effective than peaceful, rational and non-violent protests' 激進示威手段比起和平、理性、非暴力抗爭行動更有效用	--	--	--	--	37.7%

(III) *Public's Perception of Police Performance*

15.34 72.6% of the telephone survey respondents expressed dissatisfaction with the overall performance of the Police during the protests. 69.5% of the respondents attributed the main reason of their dissatisfaction to 'Police use of excessive force', 13.2% to 'abuse of power / violation of protocol' and 12.6% to 'arbitrary arrest'.

	Daily policing unrelated to POE	Overall performance during the movement	Handling fierce conflicts
Very satisfactory	8.9%	6.8%	6.7%
Somewhat satisfactory	14.3%	6.9%	6.9%
So-so	28.9%	13.0%	14.8%
Somewhat unsatisfactory	12.7%	13.0%	15.4%
Very unsatisfactory	33.0%	59.6%	55.2%
Don't know/refuse to answer	2.2%	0.7%	1.1%
Total (Sample size)	100% (2,008)	100% (2,008)	100% (2,008)

Use of excessive force/too violent	69.5%
Abuse of power/violation of protocol	13.2%
Arbitrary arrest	12.6%
Lying/poor response to public criticisms	12.5%
Unfair or selective law enforcement	7.8%
Excessive use of tear gas	6.2%
Bad attitude/emotionally out of control	4.6%
Hiding identity (i.e., non-disclosure of Police Warrant Card and police identification number/wearing masks)	2.7%
Poor or unreasonable handling of the protests	1.5%
Unable to control the protests or deal with the protesters	1.3%
Others	4.5%
Don't know/refuse to answer	1.8%
(Sample size)	(1,458)

15.35 Public perception on Police performance in daily policing work was moderately on the positive side when compared with that during the POEs, with 45.7% of the respondents expressing dissatisfaction. 33.1% of the respondents attributed the main reason of their satisfaction (on overall performance of the Police) to ‘*Police maintain public safety and order / protect people’s livelihoods*’ and 32.8% to ‘*Police have exercised restraint / Police performance meets the standards*’.

Maintain public safety and order/protect people’s livelihoods	33.1%
The police have exercised restraint/their performance meets the standards	32.8%
They perform their job according to the law/they have a duty to conduct law enforcement	23.8%
There is a need to deal with the protesters	9.2%
Others	3.8%
Don’t know/refuse to answer	2.8%
(Sample size)	(275)

(IV) Public’s Perception of Police Actions

15.36 The telephone survey respondents were largely displeased with many police actions in the protests. 78.9% and 77.3% of the respondents respectively considered “*Firing live rounds during confrontations*” and “*Non-disclosure of police identification numbers on uniforms*” as the most unacceptable police actions. On a scale of 0 to 10, the scores of the police actions that the public was discontented with are as follows:

- (a) Firing live rounds during confrontations (1.66 – most unacceptable);
- (b) Non-disclosure of police identification numbers on uniforms (1.78);
- (c) Handling conflicts between people with different political views (2.19);
- (d) Dealing with journalists in conflict situations (2.32);
- (e) Disguising as different identities at protest scenes (2.33); and
- (f) Dispersing protesters with tear gas, rubber bullets, pepper spray, etc. (2.54).

(V) Public’s Trust in the Police

15.37 On a scale of 0 to 10, the score of public trust in the Police dropped from 5.6 in May 2019 to 2.6 in October 2019. Between September and October, roughly 50% of the telephone survey respondents gave a zero to the trust score. Although the trust score climbed back to

CHAPTER 15 • PERCEPTIONS OF POLICE OFFICERS,
PROTESTERS AND GENERAL PUBLIC

2.85 in November and December, it was still low in comparison with that before the protests started.

(VI) *Public's Perception of Police's Image*

15.38 68.8% of the telephone survey respondents stated that their image of the Police had worsened as the protests evolved. According to the respondents, the following events impaired the image of the Police:

- (a) The Yuen Long incident on 21 July 2019 (according to 82.2% of respondents);
- (b) The Prince Edward MTR Station incident on 31 August 2019 (according to 49.8% of respondents); and
- (c) The firing of live round at a protester on 1 October 2019 (according to 38.3% of respondents).

White-shirted people attacking citizens in Yuen Long on July 21	82.2%
Arrest operations at Prince Edward MTR station on August 31	49.8%
Firing of a live round at a protester on October 1	38.3%
The handling of detained people at the San Uk Ling Holding Centre	29.0%
A female protester suffering a severe eye injury on August 11	22.3%
Firing of tear gas at Kwai Fong MTR station on August 11	18.6%
Dispersion of protesters surrounding the Legislative Council on June 12	13.5%
Dispersion of protesters occupying the Legislative Council on July 1-2	9.8%
Others	3.8%
Don't know/refuse to answer	1.4%
(Sample size)	(1,382)

15.39 Some respondents had a better impression of the Police as the protests evolved. Most of them said police officers performed their duties conscientiously and dutifully despite the difficulties faced by them. 40.3% of those respondents appreciated the Police because police officers had to endure insults from the protesters. 38.5% appreciated the Police because police officers and their families were subject to harassment and doxing.

Have performed the job conscientiously and dutifully despite difficulties	67.6%
Had to endure insults made by protesters	40.3%
Had to endure harassment and doxing of themselves and their families	38.5%
Have suffered injuries while on duty	23.8%
Others	0.0%
Don't know/refuse to answer	0.5%
(Sample size)	(146)

(VII) Public's Perception of Protesters' Image

15.40 33.9% of the respondents thought the image of the protesters were undermined by the following radical actions, in the order of the most to the least unfavorable :

- (a) Use of force against people with opposing views (52.7%);
- (b) Damaging MTR facilities and traffic lights (45.5%);
- (c) Arson (44.7%); and
- (d) Hurling petrol bombs (42.5%).

Use of force against people with different views during conflicts	52.7%
Damaging MTR facilities and traffic lights, etc.	45.5%
Arson	44.7%
Hurling petrol bombs	42.5%
Vandalising specific stores	30.4%
Occupying the airport	27.5%
Violent attacks on police officers	24.5%
Non-cooperation movement	18.5%
Other	1.1%
Don't know/refuse to answer	2.2%
(Sample size)	(681)

(VIII) Public's Views on Police Use of Force

15.41 More respondents perceived that the Police, rather than the protesters, had exercised excessive force. In the surveys from August to December, 67.7% to 71.7% of the telephone survey respondents opined that the Police had used excessive force against protester, whereas 17.4% to 22.7% disagreed. Respondents who were of the view that the Police had used excessive force were asked in the last survey whether they had experienced or witnessed any Police excessive use of force, 67.5% replied 'no' and 32.3% said 'yes'.

CHAPTER 15 • PERCEPTIONS OF POLICE OFFICERS,
PROTESTERS AND GENERAL PUBLIC

Police use of excessive force⁶

	(August 7 – August 13)	(September 5 – September 11)	(October 8 – October 14)	(November 7 – December 13)
Strongly agree	51.4%	57.1%	53.7%	58.1%
Somewhat agree	16.3%	14.6%	15.3%	13.0%
So-so	8.3%	7.3%	9.5%	10.5%
Somewhat disagree	7.7%	5.9%	5.7%	5.9%
Strongly disagree	15.1%	14.7%	14.9%	11.5%
Don't know/ Refuse to answer	1.2%	0.4%	0.9%	1.0%
Total (Sample size)	100% (842)	100% (623)	100% (751)	100% (2 008)

Question: Do you agree with the statement, ‘The police have used excessive force’? Do you strongly agree, somewhat agree, so-so, somewhat disagree or strongly disagree?

Whether the respondents had experienced or witnessed any Police excessive use of force

No	67.5%
Yes	32.3%
Don't know/refuse to answer	0.2%
Total (sample size)	100% (1,428)

(IX) Public Views on Protesters' Use of Force

15.42 In the surveys between August and December, 32.8% to 41.4% of the telephone survey respondents considered that the protesters had used excessive force, whereas 29.3% to 37.4% did not think so. In October, the figure was the highest at 41.4%, but it dropped to 32.8% in November and December.

⁶ Table 43 of the Report

CHAPTER 15 • PERCEPTIONS OF POLICE OFFICERS,
PROTESTERS AND GENERAL PUBLIC

Protesters' use of excessive force⁷

	(August 7 – August 13)	(September 5 – September 11)	(October 8 – October 14)	(November 7 – December 13)
Strongly agree	22.1% } 39.5%	21.2% } 39.4%	22.0% } 41.4%	17.1% } 32.8%
Somewhat agree	17.4%	18.2%	19.4%	15.7%
So-so	29.4%	26.6%	28.7%	28.3%
Somewhat disagree	14.7% } 29.8%	16.1% } 31.5%	13.8% } 29.3%	17.2% } 37.4%
Strongly disagree	15.0%	15.4%	15.5%	20.2%
Don't know/ Refuse to answer	1.4%	2.5%	0.6%	1.5%
Total (Sample size)	100% (842)	100% (623)	100% (751)	100% (2 008)

Question: Do you agree with the statement that *'the protesters have used excessive force'*? Do you strongly agree, somewhat agree, so-so, somewhat disagree or strongly disagree?

15.43 Most of the respondents, from 82.8% in June the highest to 66.8% in October the lowest, held that protestors should uphold peaceful and non-violent principles.⁸ Nonetheless, 55.7% to 68.4% expressed understanding and/or sympathy towards violent actions taken by the protesters.⁹

Views on upholding the peaceful and non-violent principle

	(June 17 – June 20)	(August 7 – August 13)	(September 8 – September 11)	(October 8 – October 14)	(November 7 – December 13)
Strongly agree	65.0% } 82.8%	52.3% } 71.7%	47.8% } 69.4%	45.7% } 66.8%	42.2% } 68.1%
Somewhat agree	17.9%	19.3%	21.6%	21.1%	25.9%
So-so	10.4%	17.7%	18.3%	19.2%	18.7%
Somewhat disagree	4.1% } 6.2%	6.5% } 9.6%	7.2% } 10.5%	9.0% } 13.5%	9.0% } 12.5%
Strongly disagree	2.1%	3.1%	3.4%	4.5%	3.5%
Don't know/ Refuse to answer	0.6%	1.0%	1.7%	0.5%	0.8%
Total (Sample size)	100% (635)	100% (842)	100% (623)	100% (751)	100% (2 008)

Question: Do you agree that *'when participating in protests in Hong Kong, it is a must to uphold the peaceful and non-violent principle'*? Do you strongly agree, somewhat agree, so-so, somewhat disagree or strongly disagree?

⁷ Table 45 of the Report

⁸ Table 38 of the Report

⁹ Table 39 of the Report

CHAPTER 15 • PERCEPTIONS OF POLICE OFFICERS,
PROTESTERS AND GENERAL PUBLIC

Whether agree the statements	Second wave (June 17 – June 20)	Third wave (August 7 – August 13)	Fourth wave (September 5 – September 11)	Fifth wave (October 8 – October 14)	Sixth wave (November 7 – December 13)
(1) 'When participating in protests in Hong Kong, it is a must to uphold the peaceful and non-violent principle' 在香港參與抗議活動，一定要堅持和平非暴力原則	82.8%	71.7%	69.4%	66.8%	68.1%
(2) 'When large-scale peaceful protests fail to make the government respond to demands, it is understandable for the protesters to carry out radical actions' 當大型和平示威都未能令政府回應時，示威者有激烈行動係可以理解	--	--	55.7%	59.2%	68.4%
(3) 'Radical protests are more effective than peaceful, rational and non-violent protests' 激進示威手段比起和平、理性、非暴力抗爭行動更有效用	--	--	--	--	37.7%

(X) Accountability for the Escalation of Violence

15.44 In terms of accountability for the escalation of violence in the POEs, 50.5% of the telephone survey respondents in September 2019 to 58.9% in November and December 2019 opined that the Government should bear the major responsibility. Only 18.1% to 22.5% thought it should be the Police and 9.6% to 12.7% said the protesters. 17.8% to 23.8% said the Central Government and 9.4% to 11.6% thought foreign forces should be responsible.

	First to third wave May 23 – Aug 13	Fourth wave (September 5 – September 11)	Fifth wave (October 8 – October 14)	Sixth wave (November 7 – December 13)
Central government	--	17.8%	19.3%	23.8%
SAR government	--	50.5%	52.5%	58.9%
Hong Kong police	--	18.5%	18.1%	22.5%
Pro-establishment legislators	--	4.9%	5.4%	7.0%
Pan-democratic legislators	--	9.8%	8.4%	6.8%
Protesters	--	12.7%	9.6%	11.0%
Foreign forces	--	11.6%	9.4%	9.9%
Others	--	0.0%	0.0%	0.0%
Don't know/refuse to answer	--	2.5%	5.7%	3.4%
(Sample size)	--	(623)	(751)	(2,008)

IPCC Observations

15.45 The results of the survey with the police officers by academics from UCL and the surveys on the protesters and the general public by CCPOS indicate a considerable gap on how they perceive one another and the POEs.

15.46 Police officers believe that they rightly take enforcement action in response to the violence and destruction caused by the protesters. They see their job as enabling peaceful protest, but when the protest turns violent, their duty is to take action to maintain law and order. The survey shows that police officers certainly felt that they were under stress but they feel that they have remained true to their professional calling as police officers.

15.47 The survey showed that protesters and a majority of the general public believed that the Police had exercised excessive force. A majority of the public does not agree with the use of force by the protesters but a significant percentage of those surveyed considered that the violent acts of the protesters was understandable.

15.48 It is not the purpose of the Study and the IPCC has no power to investigate into the reason for the great disparity between Police's self-perception and the public's perception on them. We believe the Government and the Police Force should consider how to mitigate this disparity of perception between officers and the general public. It is important for the Police Force to review on how to regain the public trust, by building on the professionalism of the Police Force.

CHAPTER 16

CONCLUSION

Introduction

16.1 Since June 2019, Hong Kong has faced its most challenging public order situation in a generation. This Study covers six incidents and two topics on grounds of complaints clustered or widespread public concern expressed. To give a perspective to these incidents and topics, the IPCC has provided an overview, a study of the police guidelines on the use of force, and two surveys, one covering the perceptions of police officers and another covering the perceptions of protesters and the general public, undertaken by independent academics. This Study provides the broad picture of the public order events (POEs) and perspective to the situation for the IPCC's effective performance of its statutory duties under section 8 of the IPCC Ordinance.

16.2 In Chapter 4: An Overview of the Public Order Events arising from the Fugitive Offenders Bill, an excerpt is cited from the Judgment of the Court of Appeal handed down on 9 April 2020 on the Judicial Review, brought by 26 current Members of the Legislative Council (LegCo) and one former Member, against the Emergency Regulations Ordinance and the enactment of the Prohibition on Face Covering Regulation. That was the Court's summation of the violence which had afflicted our community from June to October 2019, based on evidence before the Court, unchallenged by the Applicants for the Judicial Review. The following opening paragraph of the Judgment is well worth repetition here:

“1. Since June 2019, Hong Kong has experienced serious social unrests and public disorders marked by protests, escalating violence, vandalisms and arsons across the territory. It is a dire situation that has not been seen in the last 50 years”.

16.3 The “dire situation” described above is our recent history from June up to October 2019. Regrettably, the violence and vandalism did not abate after October 2019 but continued with increasing ferocity and frequency. In December 2019, it de-escalated somewhat, though the protests persisted until the COVID-19 epidemic began to afflict Hong Kong. These protests in smaller groups have surfaced regularly on a monthly basis in apparent commemoration of the incidents in Yuen Long, Prince Edward Station and Tseung Kwan O, regardless of the laws prescribing social distancing and the Government's advice on staying home.

16.4 The Police action in the Yuen Long Incident and other incidents resulted from the need for law enforcement action. While the Police handling of these incidents leaves room for improvement and in the case of the Yuen Long Incident, even much more, the hate messages on the internet after these events, coupled with the threats at Police quarters from time to time, were blatant propaganda with little or no factual basis, aimed at smearing the Police Force and impeding police officers from performing their duty to maintain law and order. The IPCC hopes that the public would base their opinions on the facts, including the facts set out in this Report.

The Broad Picture: the Public Order Events since 9 June 2019

Essential Features

16.5 The month-by-month overview of the public order events from June 2019 to March 2020 in Chapter 4 provides the broad picture of the protests. From this, the following significant features emerge:

- (a) Increase in frequency of processions which were invariably followed by protests with violence;
- (b) Escalation of the violence and the advent of incipient terrorism;
- (c) Widespread vandalism and damage to public and private property and long-term damage to the economy; and
- (d) Vigilantism resulting in the death of one man and assault of multiple victims for diversity of views.

Frequency and Tactics of Protests

16.6 The protests were characterised by the use of urban guerrilla tactics with the aphorism “Be Water” (said to originate from master of martial arts, the late Bruce Lee), in city-wide protests often covering multiple venues in MTR stations and in their vicinity. The MTR network, providing convenient commuting, has been the protesters’ favoured mode of conveyance. MTR stations were seen as excellent places to delay police action, allowing time to change into inconspicuous clothing to evade police attention and thus, arrest. MTR stations and police stations nearby were also prime targets for attack. Police resources were stretched to the limit. Key features of the protests included:

- (a) Continual metamorphosis of the protesters’ demands from asking for withdrawal of the Fugitive Offenders Bill, an independent commission of inquiry into police

brutality, release and amnesty for all persons arrested or involved in the protests to calls for universal suffrage, disbandment of the Police Force and liberation of Hong Kong;

- (b) Use of the internet for spreading hatred against the Police, with threats, intimidation and attack on individual police officers in or out of duty and their families; and
- (c) Escalation of violence with blocking of roads, vandalising of public and private property, disabling of major transport network and vigilantism against persons of different views.

Escalation of Violence and Incipient Terrorism

16.7 The protests were accompanied by a scale of lawlessness with a degree of violence and vandalism not seen in Hong Kong since the riots of 1967, varying from blocking roads, hurling bricks, attacking police cordons with umbrellas (some with sharpened tips), to igniting petrol bombs and setting fire on streets, defacing public and private property or vandalising banks, shops and MTR stations. From early August 2019 onwards, petrol bombs were used at almost every protest, for hurling at police officers, public and private property. The two universities occupied in November 2019 became the factories for manufacturing petrol bombs for use in the clashes with the Police outside the campus. Sling shots were in use from July 2019 onwards. Assorted potentially lethal weapons were seen being used in the streets against the Police, traffic network, public and private property.

16.8 In the past months there have been cases, where the Police have discovered bomb making materials and instruments enabling remote detonation. Guns and live ammunition were also found and the persons involved have been arrested. If these weapons had been deployed, the consequences would be unimaginable. The Commissioner of Police (Commissioner) has warned that Hong Kong may be heading into an era of terrorism.

Destruction of Property and Long-term Damage to Economy

16.9 The damage to public and private property had been significant. The full extent of the damage has not been estimated but to the extent the IPCC can gather, a list appears at Annex 1 to Chapter 4. Even this preliminary list shows a degree of destruction which no community can afford. It is not the IPCC function to estimate the direct and indirect costs, the visible and intangible damage, and the long-term detriment to the economy. An econometric study by experts would, the IPCC believes, help policy making in the future and public understanding of the long term damage that the violent protests over these months would bring to the community. The image of Hong Kong as a peaceful city for business or for pleasure has suffered a set-back that will take a long time to re-establish. The protests have left the

economy in a perilous state by the end of Lunar New Year. The COVID-19 epidemic has added to Hong Kong's economic woes with unemployment and the economic downturn deepening.

Use of the Internet

16.10 The internet, particularly the social media, was crucial in mobilising participation in the protests and providing a platform for the dissemination of propaganda, messages of hatred against the Police and unfounded claims or speculation to launch rallies, perpetrate acts of violence, and promote doxxing of police officers and their families. Annex 3 to Chapter 4 illustrates the rallying and propaganda power of the internet. Technology has not only facilitated the protests but, because of its reach, also enabled nefarious activities such as doxxing to be undertaken with impunity. The internet, as seen from the Overview (Chapter 4) and particularly the chapters on the Yuen Long Incident (Chapter 10) and the Prince Edward Station Incident (Chapter 12), has been a most effective tool to spread hate messages with little or no basis. The implications for law enforcement from such use of the internet has to be reviewed by the Police.

16.11 Propaganda on the internet about a number of tragic deaths attributed to the Police, with no more basis than mere allegation and speculation, has spread like wild fire. In June 2019, a protester fell from a scaffolding at Pacific Place, Admiralty. In the same month, two females committed suicide leaving notes urging for continuation of the protests. The Prince Edward Station Incident spawned accusations of killing by the Police. Another female whose dead body was found in the sea was alleged to have been "suicided" by the Police, based merely on speculation. In November 2019, a young university student falling to his death from height. Despite the CCTV footage released by LINK to the public showing that no police officers were present on the spot from which this unfortunate student most probably fell, the death was nonetheless used for hate messages on the internet against the Police.

Vigilantism

16.12 An elderly man was fatally hit on the head by a brick hurled at him in the course of confrontation between violent protesters and a group of local residents. Some of the perpetrators were arrested and subsequently charged with murder. Another man was set on fire for raising questions with a group of protesters. Assaults of multiple innocent individuals with opposing views were vicious and often bloody. On available information, the Study sets out, in a table in Annex 1 to and in the monthly reviews in Chapter 4, an account of these attacks.

The Role of the Police

The Public Perception

16.13 While labelling Police action as “brutality”, the protesters seem to disregard their own violence, vandalism and vigilantism. It is a matter for analysis outside this Study how some among our community and the media came to the belief that the acts of the protesters were understandable while the Police, in performing their duty to stop such violent acts, was using excessive force.

16.14 Paragraphs 15.41 - 43 of Chapter 15: Perceptions of Police Officers, Protesters and General Public recount the monthly findings on attitudes towards the use of force by the Police and by the protesters. Between 67.7 and 71.7% of those surveyed believed that the Police had used excessive force while between 32.8 and 41.4% believed that the protesters had used excessive force. Although between 66.8 and 82.8 % believed in upholding the principle of peaceful and non-violent protest, yet, only 29.3 and 37.4% disagreed that the protesters had used excessive force and between 55.7 and 68.4% expressed understanding or sympathy for the violent actions by protesters. The surveys were conducted from early August up to 13 December 2019.

16.15 Public opinion surveys invariably have time and methodological constraints. The surveys did not examine how these perceptions were formed and perceptions may change with the new information becoming available in the public domain since 13 December 2019. This Study suggests that public perception could have been based mostly on messages received through social and news media. Such information, understandably, is dependent on the choices made by the media in news reporting and in the messages on the internet, and also dependent on internalisation and interpretation of such information by the respondents to the surveys. Meanwhile, it is evident that the incidents over the past months have taken a heavy toll on the image of the Police, locally and globally, and on the public trust in the Force.

16.16 The facts and data assembled in this Study provide a basis for further analysis and assessment of these perceptions. The role of the Police in the maintenance of law and order needs to be better understood by the community. The IPCC has made recommendations on Police communications with the community in this Study.

Police Role Only for Law Enforcement

16.17 This Study reveals that the protests have been driven and continue to be driven by a consistent and continuing message of hatred against the Police, repeated particularly on the internet. The message suggests that the Police had used “excessive force” in dealing with

protesters, amounting to “police brutality”. The role of the Police, set out in the Police Force Ordinance (PFO), imposes on the Police Force the duty to maintain law and order. The role of the Police is prescribed by the laws of the HKSAR. They play no political role, and so their enforcement of the law in the protests is, and should be, divorced from the political ideas motivating the protests.

16.18 It cannot be over-emphasised that allegations of police brutality must not be made a weapon of political protest. Should any police officer exceed or may have exceeded the limits of the powers conferred on him by law, he is accountable under the law. That is a legal and not a political matter. In this connection, the Deputy Commissioner’s Statement to the United Nations Commission of Human Rights cited in Chapter 4 (paragraph 4.8) is a clear and succinct exposition of the role and responsibility of the Police. To underline its importance, his statement is repeated below:

“These violent criminals preached to their followers that the end justifies the means; that breaking the law to achieve their goals was a noble cause. Police officers are not there to judge whether their proclaimed cause is a just one, or if it even makes sense. We don't have to. We are police officers. Our one and only mission is to find out whether anyone has committed a crime. If someone breaks the law, it is our lawful duty to stop him and arrest him. Whether a cause is altruistic or in fact self-serving is completely irrelevant to us. The law demands that we arrest them. The basic premise of the rule of law is that. No one is above the law. This is why I and the other 30,000 members of the Hong Kong Police have all taken the solemn oath to serve as police officers, without fear of or favour to any person and with malice or ill-will towards none. This is the truth about Hong Kong.”

Public Order Policing for Peaceful Assembly

16.19 Public order policing aims to facilitate peaceful protest as a right to freedom of expression and assembly. This right is protected by law. Meanwhile, development or progress of civilised society is based not on use or threat of force, but on free and peaceful exchange of ideas with consensus derived from diversity of views. To strike a balance between the right of assembly and the right of other citizens to lead a normal life, public gatherings are regulated by the Public Order Ordinance (POO) by way of notification of public meeting or procession to the Police. The Commissioner may object to and prohibit a notified public meeting or procession “where he reasonably considers such prohibition to be necessary in the interests of national security or public safety, public order or the protection of the rights and freedoms of others” (section 9(1) of the POO). However, the Commissioner’s prohibition is subject to appeal to the Appeal Board on Public Meetings and Processions chaired by a retired High Court Judge. This system of regulation has been held by the Court of Final Appeal to be

consistent with the Basic Law (see: *Leung Kwok Hung and Others v. HKSAR* (2005) 8 HKCFAR 229).

16.20 From June 2019 to February 2020, the Police received notifications of 300 public meetings and processions, of which they prohibited 48 as set out in the following table taken from Chapter 4 (Table 4-1):

	Jun 2019	Jul 2019	Aug 2019	Sep 2019	Oct 2019	Nov 2019	Dec 2019	Jan 2020	Feb 2020	Total
Public Meeting with Letter of No Objection (LoNO)	17	33	52	18	7	20	31	14	0	192
Public Procession with LoNO	3	19	23	3	0	5	5	2	0	60
Prohibited Public Meeting	1	3	10	5	4	2	0	1	0	26
Objected Public Procession	0	3	9	3	3	2	0	2	0	22
Total number of notification	21	58	94	29	14	29	36	19	0	300

Use of Force as Allowed by Law

16.21 The use of force by anyone is unlawful, save in exceptional circumstances, as follows:

- (a) Law enforcement, where the law allows the use of force under legally defined circumstances by officers empowered to enforce the law, where the law has been broken or where there is reasonable belief that the laws are about to be broken; and
- (b) Self-defence of person or property or defence of the person or property of another, when faced with unlawful use of force.

16.22 From the facts collected in this Study, it can be seen that the use of force by the Police in the past months of protests has been in reaction to illegal action by protesters and for protection of themselves and others when attacked by violent protesters. The Police command structure and police guidelines are all designed to ensure that force is to be used only in the circumstances cited in the preceding paragraph.

16.23 In the past months of violent protests, roads were blocked, transport infrastructure seriously affected, public and private property defaced or damaged, and police officers and private citizens attacked. Protesters used sling shots and arrows, bricks and petrol bombs, and a variety of weapons, some potentially lethal. These are illegal acts, which could have fatal consequences.

16.24 In the face of these illegal and potentially lethal acts, the Police has had to enforce the law and to protect themselves and the community against harm. Over 590 police officers have been injured with 61 hospitalised. Confronted with danger, at times mortal danger, to life and limb, the Police has deployed less than lethal force except in 12 instances. In those 12 instances, the police officers resorted to using their service pistols with 19 live rounds fired. The three persons injured as a result have all been discharged from hospital.

16.25 As seen in Chapter 6: Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing, the Police has strict guidelines on the use of weapons and a procedure for review where live rounds are deployed. For the use of firearms at the sixth level, Police General Orders (PGO) 29-05 – “Police Open Fire – Reporting and Investigation” stipulates the submission of reports for review from different levels of command at different prescribed periods. Such reports are eventually submitted to the Director of Operations for consideration.

16.26 In compliance with the law, the Police has extensive guidelines on the use of force and a system of management review each time force is used. These cover policies, procedures and training for the use of force in law enforcement. While these are quite comprehensive, there is still room for improvement. Chapter 6 sets out recommendations for enhancing these guidelines. It is apparent from the facts gathered in this Study that the Police use of force in the past months has been in reaction to the violence directed against them and in execution of their duties under the PFO and the POO, for dispersal of crowds or for arrest of offenders. Up to the end of February 2020, the Police has arrested 7 613 persons.

16.27 All police officers are personally accountable for their use of force. The complaints system, which this Study explains, is intended to ensure that if any police officer exceeds the bounds of the law and the requirements of police regulations, he is held accountable.

IPCC’s Observations on Aspects Studied

Public Perception

16.28 The respondents of the public opinion surveys from August to December 2019 considered the three events which most attracted adverse opinion against the Police to be (paragraph 15.36):

- (a) The Yuen Long Incident on 21 July 2019 (82%);
- (b) The Prince Edward MTR Station Incident on 31 August 2019 (50%); and
- (c) The firing of a live round on a protester on 1 October 2019 (38%).

Facts Covered in This Study

General Observations

16.29 This Study aims to provide a broad picture of the protests over the past months and the Police action in response. This Study does not deal with specific complaints or the conduct of individual officers. Complaints would first be processed by CAPO. Cases involving individual officers are subject to the due process of law or internal procedures. More on this is at paragraphs 16.35-16.38 below.

Shooting Incidents

16.30 The shooting incident on 1 October 2019 together with other shooting incidents are addressed in Chapter 4 (paragraph 4.281) and Chapter 6 (paragraphs 6.25-6.33). In all 12 shooting incidents, the officers concerned were isolated and were at risk from potentially lethal force or their service pistols were in danger of being snatched. The police guidelines allow them to use firearms in such circumstances but a standard reporting and investigation procedure will follow each incident. According to the Police, all these cases have already been subject to Police management inquiry and the circumstances found to be within regulation. No Reportable Complaint (RC) has been received on use of firearms.

Specific Incidents

16.31 Each chapter of the Study dealing with individual incidents concludes with observations of the IPCC, based on the findings in each case. Each specific incident has been studied in detail and for a complete understanding of these incidents, the individual chapters on each specific incident should be read. Highlighted here are the more important observations made in relation to the incidents:

- (a) *9 June 2019: Clashes outside LegCo*

This incident marked the first major clashes between the protesters and the Police. The clashes, involving mainly pushing and pulling, were relatively mild compared to other incidents that followed. The Police was not proactive in the use of force. They were responding to the situation where they were in face of the violence of

some violent protesters.

CAPO received 23 RCs and five Notifiable Complaints (NCs).

(b) *12 June 2019: CITIC Tower Incident*

This incident has attracted considerable public concern because protesters appeared to have gone into CITIC Tower for refuge and dispersal. The IPCC will not make any judgement whether the Police action in this incident was proper or not due to ongoing judicial review proceedings concerning this Incident.

However, the IPCC findings in this Study show that while the Police had used tear gas, they did at the same time, form cordon lines to direct protesters to disperse into Harcourt Road through Tim Mei Avenue. Meanwhile, multiple announcements were heard from an amplified source near the entrance of CITIC Tower telling people to go to the stage for water, mask and saline, and to enter into the building for shelter (on the information available to the IPCC, the only public address system in the vicinity at the time was that used by Civil Human Rights Front for the public assembly).

27 RCs and 33 NCs were received in relation to the events on 12 June.

(c) *1 July 2019: Vandalisation of the LegCo Complex*

The police tactics of deploying officers to guard inside the LegCo Complex proved to be ineffective in ensuring the integrity of the building, resulting in serious damage to the interior and the facilities. Had the Police taken precautions to contain and protect the LegCo Complex, such as setting up stronger barriers, the protesters' breaking in and vandalising might well have been avoided. Moreover, the Police would not have been accused of having run a scam or dubbed "empty city strategy (空城計)" to allow the vandalism in order to reverse public opinion. For the accusation of a scam, one might ask what would the Police gain by deliberately failing in their prime objective of protecting the LegCo Complex as stated in the Operational Order of Operation TIDERIDER, in exchange for the uncertainty of changing public opinion.

It is noteworthy that no RC has been received referring to this accusation. Nor have those who made this accusation offered any evidence for it.

(d) *21 July 2019: Yuen Long Incident*

This incident has attracted the largest number of complaints, 53 RCs and 19 NCs.

This incident has also attracted the most public discussion, as well as the most insidious internet hate messages against the Police.

From information available for the Study, the IPCC did identify deficiencies in Police deployment and other Police action in response to the events. These deficiencies have given rise to allegations of Police collusion with triads. The accusations started on the internet and went viral. Insidious hate messages against the Police, calling them “black cops”, began riding the tide. However, none of the accusatory message on the internet or elsewhere of Police collusion with triads was accompanied by evidence. This is a serious accusation which requires serious evidence but none has been offered, despite our best efforts in searching publicly available sources. The Commissioner has publicly stated at press conferences that he has no evidence of his officers colluding with triads. The Police had arrested persons suspected of having assaulted people in black outfits on the night of 21 July. These actions are inconsistent with collusion. The hate messages on the internet, labelling the entire Police Force, “black cops” are clearly not justified.

This incident, arguably the incident which most affected public opinion, is detailed in Chapter 10.

(e) *11 August 2019: Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations Incident*

While the Police should review their policies on firing of tear gas into an MTR station or an area not entirely enclosed or open, findings in the Study indicate that the MTR had by then announced clearing of the station, that most protesters wore respirators and that the station was only partially enclosed. The use of tear gas did achieve the purpose of dispersing the violent protesters who had refused to leave the station, thus avoiding physical confrontation and possible casualties.

In the incident in Tai Koo Station, the pepper ball rounds should not have been aimed at or hit protesters above the shoulder. The IPCC has therefore made recommendations on this. It is noted that protesters used MTR lines to mobilise themselves to different places and even to evade arrest by adopting urban guerrilla tactics. The incident also calls for review by the Police for clearer instructions on enforcement action in different operational situations and indoor public spaces such as MTR stations.

Four RCs and five NCs have been received in relation to the events at Kwai Fong and Tai Koo Stations.

(f) *31 August 2019: Prince Edward Station Incident*

One RC and eight NCs have been received in relation to this Incident.

This incident was also among the most publicly discussed and spawned hate messages against the Police on a par with the Yuen Long Incident.

A scene familiar to the public (because widely broadcast by the media) is that of the Police using force against passengers in an MTR train compartment. This oft-repeated video, however, does not show the whole picture. Moreover, news footage showed many protesters changing their clothes to disguise themselves as passengers.

The Police had to close the station so that the protesters could not escape. That operation resulted in many arrests and a number of injuries. When ambulance officers arrived, they were allowed entry after some 14-16 minutes.

There is clearly a need for better communication between the Police and Fire Services Department (FSD) in a major incident like this. The subsequent reporting of injured persons gave rise to allegations of killing by the Police, although no evidence whatsoever has been put forward by the accusers.

Lessons Learnt

16.32 These incidents studied offer lessons for the Police to review their role in the maintenance of law and order and to improve their strategy for action amidst protests. In this connection, the IPCC has set out observations in relevant chapters of this Study. From these observations, the IPCC has made 52 recommendations, collated at Annex to this chapter for ready reference. The objective is to assist the Commissioner in his review of tactics and strategy.

16.33 The recommendations should be read and understood in the context of the chapter where they were made. They all focus on how public order policing might be improved and fall within the following themes:

(a) Assessment of Risk*The Three-pronged Doctrine of Public Order Policy*

The IPCC notes the Commissioner's three-pronged doctrine:

- (1) Prevent the preventable,
- (2) Manage what is not preventable; and
- (3) Engage the unacceptable in the management of major public order events.

For effective application of this doctrine, the Police Force must formulate new strategic directions and equip itself with physical and technological resources, adequate and ready to confront the challenge of multiple city-wide guerrilla-type attacks aided by advance technology and accompanied by violence and vandalism verging on terrorism.

An Assessment of Community Life Exposed to Risk of Violence

We understand that the Commissioner has already taken a risk-based approach in his law enforcement objectives. The Police Force (in conjunction with the Government) should make an in-depth analysis of the potential risk to community life which could be disrupted by the kind of protests experienced in the past months. Only then could the community be forewarned and protected. Only then would the public feel safe and secure to put their faith and their trust in the Police.

(b) Reviewing guidelines for use of force and training of officers*Review of Guidelines to Include Scenarios*

The extensive guidelines for the use of force are by and large on par with international guidelines but there are areas for improvement, particularly where the Police encounters violence and even risk of a potentially lethal nature. Examples of scenarios, validated by legal advice, would be helpful for front-line officers. These recommendations are elaborated upon in Chapter 6.

Use of Tear Gas

The Study highlights the extensive use of tear gas in the past months. In Chapter 6, a recommendation is to set up an expert committee comprising medical and scientific experts to advise the Police Force. The object is to ensure that the current and future

stocks of tear gas and OC Foam come within acceptable toxicological limits for use in Hong Kong streets. In Chapter 11, recommendations are made that the Police should enhance the provisions and guidelines on the use of tear gas in the densely populated urban setting of Hong Kong.

Need to Review Training in Public Order Policing and Accreditation

Public order policing must be reviewed for further clarification of levels of command, setting qualifications for training and periodic accreditation of officers at rank and file and command levels. This will require a review of current training practices.

Training to Include Better Use and Dissemination of Intelligence, Real-time Monitoring of Public Order Events, Timely Action to Prevent Escalation

Review of training should take reference from some of the negative publicity in relation to the events. In the Yuen Long Incident, for example, if early intelligence and real-time monitoring of the internet had been followed up for timely intervention in the afternoon of 21 July 2019 when persons in white congregated, the fights in the MTR station might well have been prevented.

Maintaining Professionalism of the Force

From the survey of police officers summarised in Chapter 15, the IPCC notes that despite the pressures from work and with the doxxing of them and their family members, members of the Police Force have maintained their own sense of worth and sense of professionalism. The IPCC believes that this survey would help the Commissioner to further hone his training policies and the support which the Police Force offers to its officers. It is heartening that almost all officers are conscious of the need to allow peaceful protest to take place and the need for restraint when due. This is a firm basis to improve the Police use of force guidelines and the training of police officers.

Need for Better Co-ordination with Operational Partners

Another key aspect of training is more effective co-ordination with other bodies, notably the FSD, to work closely with the Police during POEs.

(c) Need for Better Technological Capacity*Need to Recognise Power of the Internet*

Chapter 4 gives an account of the power of technology in convening and propelling the protests, as well as its influence on opinion formation and promotion. (Annex 3 to Chapter 4). There was also at least one App which informs protesters of police mobilisation on a real-time basis.

Need to Review Use of Internet for Intelligence and Real-time Operations

While protesters have been quick and slick with the use of technology, the Police is slow in monitoring their activities. Opportunities for preventing protests were lost. As an example, had the Police monitored the internet on a real-time basis, it would have known that the gathering of white-shirted persons in the streets of Yuen Long had been the subject of much criticism of Police inaction on the internet that afternoon. If action had been taken then to disperse the crowd dressed in white or if their movements were monitored, the subsequent fights might have been prevented.

(d) Need for Timely and Effective Communications*Power of Internet for Communications of Ideas*

From the incidents studied, it can be readily seen that the internet was used not only for convening protests and tracking police mobilisation but also for inciting violence and spreading of hatred against the Police.

The Police Force Needs a Communication Strategy Geared to a Highly Dynamic Situation and Tapping into Community Channels

The Police could have been more effective in initial communications in some incidents, particularly that in Yuen Long. It would have preempted or at least reduced the intensity and volume subsequent messages of hate for the Police.

The Police needs to fashion a communication platform which strongly taps into the internet in addition to the present methodologies employed by the Police Public Relations Branch (PPRB). The use of community channels should also be explored, including owners' corporations, mutual aid committees, property management agents, telecom service providers for quick and effective communications. If a large-scale protest were convened through the internet and tear gas might be used, then early

warning could be given to parties likely to be affected.

(e) Co-ordination with Electronic and Print Media

The IPCC notes that the largest group of complainants against the Police are reporters, some of whom were in harm's way while covering the events of the past months. When the reporters performed news coverage of Police action in response to violent protests, their presence and sometimes even right in front of police cordon lines might on occasions impede police officers in discharging their duties. There have also been cases, in which fake press cards were found by the Police when conducting operations. The IPCC has recommended that the Police in consultation with representative media groups work out a Code of Practice for cooperation during POEs. The media has to accept that public protests with violence are dangerous and acknowledge that the public is entitled to news with balance of facts. The Police has to appreciate that the media has a duty to report and the public a right to know the situation on the ground.

(f) Systems Fit for Purpose

The Study found the 999 systems to have been inundated on the night of 21 July 2019. This event could well be repeated in future. The study shows that San Uk Ling Holding Centre was not suitable for detention of mass arrests and that in future, such centres should be properly equipped. Both instances point to the need for ensuring systems and facilities be fit for their intended purposes.

(g) Legal Advisers Office

The IPCC believes that the Commissioner should have readily available legal advice and assistance in-house. This would help expedite review of guidelines and provide legal validation for policies, procedures and practices. Most police forces in other jurisdictions have such an office. Prosecutorial work remains with the Department of Justice.

(h) Maintaining Public Trust

Chapter 15 summarises the perceptions of protesters and the public towards the Police in the past months, by surveys conducted by independent academics. Such perceptions are invariably affected by the messages in the media and on the internet. They will also change with time. It will be important for the Police Force to restore and rebuild public trust. The IPCC's recommendations are designed to support the

Police in this.

Partnership with Private Bodies

16.34 Partnership between the private and public sectors has been popular in infrastructure projects. A similar approach should be explored for the security and protection of the community. Protocols could be worked out for Public-Private Participation for protection of community life and property.

The Complaints System

16.35 By law, police officers are personally accountable for any use of force outside the law and the guidelines of the Police Force. The complaints system is designed to enable the public to bring any infraction of law or discipline to the attention of the Commissioner through CAPO and it is the statutory function of the IPCC to monitor and review the investigation of all RCs. Any officer found to be guilty of an infraction will be subject to disciplinary or judicial processes.

16.36 This Study does not deal with matters of individual officer's accountability for overstepping the law or for insufficient supervision in specific cases. They are for the complaints system and the system of supervision within the Police Force.

16.37 Chapter 5 deals with the complaints received up to end of February. The information collected in this Study assists in viewing the cases in broader perspective when monitoring and reviewing CAPO investigations come to hand. CAPO has up to 29 February 2020, received 542 RCs and 1 099 NCs. The statutory function of the IPCC is to monitor and review the RCs. The NCs, though they are made by third parties (namely, persons not directly affected), are followed up by the CAPO to enhance service quality and supervision within the Police Force.

16.38 Of the 542 RCs, there were 96 allegations of "Assault", against police officers. Of these, 83 were made by arrested persons, four by reporters and the remaining nine by other persons. The complaints by arrested persons have been listed as "Sub-Judice" as the arrestees will in due course face trial and the facts surrounding their complaints would become part of the evidence at trial. The cases of these arrested persons continue to be part of the prosecution process to bring them to trial in the Courts. The IPCC will seek a report of the trial in each case to perform its monitoring duty. In any event, in each RC, the IPCC will follow up to ensure that the full facts of the complaints are accurately reported and interviews of complainants and police officers as well as the collection of evidence at the sites where the complaint occurred are observed by one of the IPCC's 120 Observers.

The Commissioner's Supervisory Powers

16.39 The events in the past months must be the most photographed and video-recorded in volume and in detail in the history of Hong Kong to date. Where no complaints have been made but there is evidence on reliable video footage or other reliable sources to show overstepping the mark in the use of force, the Commissioner would be expected to put his house in order.

16.40 The Police Force has a system of supervision which it has honed over its 175 years of history. The IPCC is confident that the Commissioner is aware of the challenges the Police Force continues to face. The IPCC hopes that the recommendations made in this Report will assist the Commissioner in meeting these challenges.

Scope and Limitations of this Report

16.41 While this Report does not deal with specific complaints or individual officers, the facts collated from multiple sources do facilitate a fairly clear view of the conduct and tactics of the key players in confrontation: notably the protesters, mostly in black, other participants in white and the Police.

16.42 In the course of this Study, the IPCC has had considerable support from all who have given information, in response to the public appeal or by specific request. There have been public comments that if the IPCC had the capability to call for evidence direct, that it could have achieved more. These are matters for the public discussion in the future. The IPCC meanwhile works within the limitations of the IPCC Ordinance.

16.43 Despite limitations, this Report offers a broad perspective the IPCC can use in reviewing the RCs that have been lodged, and in making recommendations to the Commissioner. It is also hoped that these findings may help show the way to the Administration going forward.

Acknowledgments

16.44 The IPCC thanks members of the International Expert Panel for their advice and guidance in the initial stages of this Study. They provided useful literature to the Special Task Force for reference in this Study. Sir Denis O'Connor was unstinting in sharing his experience as a former senior police officer and the author of seminal studies on Police Forces in the United Kingdom. The IPCC is grateful to them for their support and contribution. It must be stressed that their role had been purely advisory. The IPCC takes full responsibility for this Study.

16.45 The IPCC is grateful to the Commissioner and his staff for providing information and responses. Other bodies, such as the FSD, the Hospital Authority and the MTR Corporation Limited have provided information within the limitations imposed on them by law. The IPCC thanks them all for their assistance.

16.46 This Study has been one of the most difficult tasks which the Secretariat has encountered and performed in the history of the IPCC. That it has been completed within a relatively short time-frame and in such detail is a tribute to the dedication to all members of the Secretariat. The IPCC would like to record its appreciation for their contribution.

Concluding Observations

16.47 The protests of the last ten months have metamorphosed from initial peaceful processions and public meetings to extreme forms of violent protests in the streets, resulting in destruction of public and private property, disruption of our transport infrastructure, and serious injury (and in one case death) of many citizens holding different views to those of the protesters. From recent seizures of assault rifles, hand guns and ammunition, and materials for bomb making, it seems that our community is being dragged into an era of terrorism. It is the duty of the Police Force to keep the peace and maintain law and order, in protection of all. Under the violence they had to face in performance of their duty, the Police had found it necessary to resort on occasions to the use of force. It is hoped that this Study will enable better understanding of the role of the Police in the face of such violence and their accountability under the law.

16.48 Finally, it is plain for all to see, that the violence accompanying the protests of the last ten months had brought Hong Kong's economy to a precipitous state. The COVID-19 epidemic has deepened our economic woes. The image of the Police has lost its lustre and the city of Hong Kong has lost its hard-earned reputation as a peaceful city. Most disheartening, too, is the psychological trauma the violence has wrought, particularly on the minds of young people. Still, the people of Hong Kong have surmounted numerous difficulties of the past by their resilience and capacity for revival. With the outbreak of COVID-19, acts of kindness and community co-operation – conspicuously absent during the months of violence – have resurfaced. Hong Kong remains a community that cares and together we can create a brighter, better future for all.

The Independent Police Complaints Council

May 2020

IPCC'S RECOMMENDATIONS

Chapter	Recommendations
Chapter 6	<p><u>Police Use of Force in Public Order Policing</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>(1) Develop scenario-based guidelines with support by legal advice, similar in concept to those recommended by the Her Majesty's Inspectorate of Constabulary, to supplement the use of force guidelines now in existence in Police General Orders and Force Procedures Manual. <li>(2) Include in all training upon development of these supplemental guidelines. Consideration should be given to whether the operational command structure in public order events (POEs) needs to be further formalised, and whether there should be an accreditation system to ensure that officers are up to date on protest and policing techniques. <li>(3) Allied with the review of guidelines and operational command structure, ensure that clear guidelines are given to commanders at all levels of their accountability to ensure that those under their command do adhere to Force guidelines in the operational circumstances faced by them. <li>(4) Ensure that the public understands the law on the use of force and how it is applied by the Police Force. The results of this review should be published and that the Police Force policies and procedures on the use of force, be part of continuing public education on the role played by the Police in maintaining law and order. <li>(5) Consider to have own legal capability within the Police, either departmentally or by full-time secondment from the Civil Division of the Department of Justice. <li>(6) Appoint an expert committee comprising medical and scientific experts to advise the Police Force that current and future stocks of tear gas come within acceptable toxicological limits for use in Hong Kong streets. <li>(7) Review current practices and procedures for the use of tear gas in public order situations, specifying situations in which it should not be used, and if used, the conditions under which it may be used.

Chapter	Recommendations
Chapter 7	<p><u>Incident Day – Sunday 9 June 2019</u></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>(8) Review how best to ensure individual officers strictly follow the guidelines on the use of force, including revising the training regime for meeting situations similar to recent events. <li>(9) Review the need for engaging media representatives to draw up a Code of Practice for meeting both Police and media interests in their respective duties to the community and for ensuring safety of all concerned. <li>(10) Establish at the senior management level a procedure for monitoring and reviewing the progress of a procession in order to proactively decide whether, or not, to open further road(s) for a procession. In particular, the Police should review their counting methodology to facilitate making prompt decisions on which road(s) should be opened taking into sufficient account of the changes in the number of participants as the procession progresses and develops.
Chapter 8	<p><u>Incident Day – Wednesday 12 June 2019</u></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>(11) Review the use of tear gas during the CITIC Tower Incident, including assessment before and during its continuing use, the coordination among Headquarters Command and Control Centre and with frontline officers, the communication between the Police and the assembly organiser and participants, the accessibility of an escape route and the possibility of alternative tactics for future deployment. <li>(12) When there is an ongoing assembly with Letter of No Objection, liaise with the assembly organiser to curtail the assembly when necessary. The Police should give sufficient time and instructions to the assembly organiser and participants to curtail the assembly and leave the assembly location via a viable escape route. <li>(13) Deploy liaison officer(s) close to the assembly site to facilitate instant communication with the assembly organiser. <li>(14) To minimise the possible risk during dispersal action, review how to enhance coordination among different teams if the Police consider it

Chapter	Recommendations
	<p>necessary to use irritant agent devices and less-lethal weapons when and where an assembly is ongoing with a large number of participants.</p> <p>(15) Include in the internal guidelines what action frontline officers can take when a situation is declared as a “riot”, how to differentiate rioters from non-rioters and what level of force and weapons to be used in a riot situation.</p> <p>(16) Devise clear guidelines on riots and consider informing the public of the purpose, criteria and procedure of declaring a situation as a riot. When making a public announcement about a situation being a riot, the Police should clearly explain the purpose and reason for the declaration to minimise misunderstanding or speculation. This enhances transparency and prevents members of the public from participating in a riot unknowingly.</p> <p>(17) Review the ability to collect, assess and apply the intelligence received since 9 June on the early and large turnout of protesters as well as their violent approach, and draw reference to enhance the ability to collect, assess and apply intelligence in the future.</p> <p>(18) Review the events of 12 June and consider whether the preparation and subsequent action for defending Central Government Complex and Legislative Council (LegCo) Complex could have been adjusted to minimise confrontation with protesters and should review whether less confrontational strategies such as prior containment could be adopted in future operations for protecting public property such as LegCo Complex.</p> <p>(19) Review the ability to mobilise and allocate manpower to deal with multiple clashes at different spots in a large-scale POE.</p> <p>(20) Better utilise water-filled barriers (about 2 metres high) which are higher and stronger than mills barriers to reinforce police cordon lines and minimise clashes between frontline Police officers and violent protesters.</p>

Chapter	Recommendations
Chapter 9	<p><u>Incident Day – Monday 1 July 2019</u></p> <p>(21) Review the Police ability to mobilise and allocate manpower to deal with several major POEs simultaneously.</p> <p>(22) Review the Police ability for timely assessment (including ability to collect intelligence) and identification of potentially risky targets including those of symbolic or strategic importance to the HKSAR in the light of possible escalation of violent protests.</p> <p>(23) Review the Police ability to assess risk (including identification and evaluation of potential vulnerability) and identify risk mitigation of each major potential target.</p> <p>(24) Review risk mitigation measures identified for each target at risk and regularly review in the light of changing circumstances.</p> <p>(25) Review the strategic effectiveness of setting up cordon lines inside the LegCo Complex as opposed to outside the Complex.</p> <p>(26) Review the general tactics to lessen confrontation, where protection of targets at risk are concerned.</p>
Chapter 10	<p><u>Incident Day – Sunday 21 July 2019</u></p> <p>(27) Review Police procedures, strategy and manpower deployment when having to handle two or more major operations at the same time, particularly in the collection and collation of timely intelligence (including the monitoring of social and other media) for sharing and for better communications and coordination at all levels of the Police command structure for more effective allocation of resources on the ground in such situations.</p> <p>(28) Review the strategy and manpower deployment on the night of 21 July and in the early hours of 22 July for lessons to be learnt.</p> <p>(29) Review Force Media Relations Strategy to ensure timely and accurate information for the press on incidents and staff taking stand-up interviews</p>

Chapter	Recommendations
	<p>should be trained to project an image of care for public safety and impartiality in law enforcement, including reviewing and enhancing the training for senior officers in answering media questions at the scene, giving stand-up briefings, attending press interviews and press conferences.</p> <p>(30) Review Force Public and Community Relations Strategy in the light of the widespread use of the internet to turn Police action into allegations of misconduct in order to stir up resentment to drive further protest.</p> <p>(31) Review and rectify the deficiency in the Police 999 Console to cope with extreme stress such as that encountered on the night of 21 July to see what remedial measures are required.</p> <p>(32) Review localities likely to have continuing risks of confrontation such as those encountered in Yuen Long and prepare contingency plans for dealing with such confrontation, bearing in mind the issues encountered in Yuen Long on 21 July, the lessons learnt, and the recommendations above.</p>
Chapter 11	<p><u>Incident Day – Sunday 11 August 2019</u></p> <p>(33) Review the operational plans for occasion of POEs involving breach of peace and violent acts of protesters, in particular the strategies, gear and weapons for officers to quell disorder.</p> <p>(34) Enhance the provisions and guidelines on the use of tear gas in the urban populated setting of Hong Kong, in particular giving clear guidelines on the factors police officers should take into account when making assessment on the physical environment, degree of ventilation and the circumstances in considering the use of tear gas, making reference to international standards and manufacturers' rules.</p> <p>(35) Devise clear guidelines on the use of pepper ball launcher, including the suitable range and target area of the body, and take into consideration of manufacturers' safety guidelines and warnings on under what circumstances pepper ball launchers should or should not be used.</p>

Chapter	Recommendations
	<p>(36) Devise scenario-based practical training for officers on the use of tear gas, pepper ball launchers and other police weapons, including periodic accreditation of officers on the use of force in handling protests.</p> <p>(37) Devise scenario-based exercises in the training of officers on tactics to be used in handling POEs in different urban settings, in particular MTR stations and enclosed-areas with many people.</p> <p>(38) Delineate the role of command and frontline officers on their accountability in the use of force in different scenarios.</p> <p>(39) Devise means to enhance communications with the public on the intention to use force and related precautionary measures.</p> <p>(40) Strengthen and refine the relevant protocols, guidelines and training manuals for clearer advice to officers and the public.</p>
Chapter 12	<p><u>Incident Day – Saturday 31 August 2019</u></p> <p>(41) Review Police strategy on taking enforcement action that involve making a large number of individual arrests with the use of force.</p> <p>(42) Review Police strategy on taking enforcement action inside MTR stations or premises crowded with people.</p> <p>(43) Review the coordination among Police themselves and with other departments in major operations, especially where closure of entrances to a premises is involved, and devise procedures and clarify the chain of command to facilitate efficient communication and coordination work.</p> <p>(44) Devise means to enhance communications with the public about enforcement action that the Police has taken or is taking to increase transparency of Police work and to prevent unnecessary, unfounded or malicious speculations and rumours. In this regard, there should be more publicity and public education on Police procedures and practices for dealing with missing persons and death in Hong Kong.</p>

Chapter	Recommendations
	<p>(45) Given the increase in the use and popularity of social media, enhance the ability of the responsible teams in the Police to monitor the social media and devise procedures and protocols to deal with public concerns and untrue or malicious messages promptly and effectively by using the same media to propagate rebuttal.</p> <p>(46) Review how to facilitate the work of reporters in a major operation without causing undue hindrance to Police enforcement action.</p> <p>(47) Review the mechanism for the Police to disseminate information to the public to enhance transparency, for instance, Police Public Relations Branch to make timely announcement and update to the public on the situation inside Prince Edward Station to ease public concern and quash speculations or rumours.</p> <p>(48) Review the protocols for taking the lead to organise press conferences with other departments or institutions.</p>
Chapter 14	<p><u>Detention Arrangement at San Uk Ling Holding Centre</u></p> <p>(49) Review riot control manpower requirements with a view to strengthening the logistical and manpower deployments to deal with arrested persons (APs) during large-scale POEs. This review should consider whether current guidance be sufficiently clear to ensure the attainment of the dual objectives of maintaining law and order and bringing offenders to justice while respecting their rights. This review should also consider whether the Police Force need augmentation in training, manpower and technology.</p> <p>(50) As to manning a Temporary Holding Area (THA), allocate more manpower resources to ensure the effective and efficient discharge of the Police administrative work in handling a large number of APs at the same time.</p> <p>(51) Implement enhancements such as sufficient space and facilities with computerised audit trail functions soonest possible in all police stations. If a place outside a police station is used as a THA in future, then such THA should have equivalent facilities as those in police stations.</p>

Chapter	Recommendations
	(52) Consider identifying less remote sites as THAs in case such need arises in future. The location should also take into account the availability of hospitals and ambulance depots within reasonable distance.

GLOSSARY

Abbreviation	Term / Phrase in Full
Airport	Hong Kong International Airport
Anti-mask Law	Prohibition on Face Covering Regulation (<i>Cap. 241K, Laws of Hong Kong</i>)
AP	arrested person
APP	Authorised Professional Practice
App	application
ATM	automated teller machine
BBC	British Broadcasting Corporation
C&IIB	Complaints & Internal Investigations Branch
CA	Court of Appeal
Cable TV	Hong Kong Cable Television Limited
CAPO	Complaints Against Police Office
CBE	Commander of the Most Excellent Order of the British Empire
CCPOS	Centre for Communication and Public Opinion Survey
CCTV	closed circuit television
CGC	Central Government Complex
CGO	Central Government Offices
Chief Executive	Chief Executive of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region
CHP	Centre for Health Protection
CHRF	Civil Human Rights Front
CIP	Chief Inspector of Police
CityU	City University of Hong Kong
CNN	Cable News Network
Commissioner	Commissioner of Police

Abbreviation	Term / Phrase in Full
COT, COM, and COC	Committees on Toxicity, Mutagenicity and Carcinogenicity of Chemicals in Food, Consumer Products and the Environment
Council	<i>see IPCC below</i>
COVID-19	Coronavirus Disease 2019
CRM YL HQ Team	Crime Yuen Long Headquarters Team
CRT	Crime Response Team
CS	Chief Secretary for Administration
CUHK	The Chinese University of Hong Kong
DO	Duty Officer
DOR/YL	District Operations Room/Yuen Long
DVD	digital video disc
ECREE	Extraordinary Claims Require Extraordinary Evidence
EU	Emergency Unit
FCP	Forward Command Post
FMLC	Force Media Liaison Cadre
Force	<i>see HKPF below</i>
Force Continuum	Use of Force Continuum
FPM	Force Procedures Manual
FSD	Fire Services Department
Fugitive Offenders Bill ; Bill	Fugitive Offenders and Mutual Legal Assistance in Criminal Matters Legislation (Amendment) Bill
Government	The Government of the Hong Kong Special Administrative Region
HA	Hospital Authority
HICOM	High Command
HKBU	Hong Kong Baptist University
HKCEC	Hong Kong Convention and Exhibition Centre
HKCFA	Hong Kong Court of Final Appeal

Abbreviation	Term / Phrase in Full
HKDI	Hong Kong Design Institute
HKID Card	Hong Kong Identity Card
HKJA	Hong Kong Journalists Association
HKPF ; Force; Police ; Police Force	Hong Kong Police Force
HKSAR	The Hong Kong Special Administrative Region
HKU	The University of Hong Kong
HKUST	The Hong Kong University of Science and Technology
HMIC	Her Majesty's Inspectorate of Constabulary
HQCCC	Headquarters Command and Control Centre
HSBC	The Hongkong and Shanghai Banking Corporation Limited
ICCPR	International Covenant on Civil and Political Rights
ID	identity
IEP	International Expert Panel
IFC	International Finance Centre
IPCC ; Council	Independent Police Complaints Council
IPCC Ordinance	Independent Police Complaints Council Ordinance (<i>Cap. 604, Laws of Hong Kong</i>)
IR	Informal Resolution
Legal Committee ; LC	Legal Committee of the Independent Police Complaints Council
LCC	Legislative Council Commission
LCQ	Legislative Council Question
LegCo	Legislative Council
LegCo Complex	Legislative Council Complex
LOCPG	The Liaison Office of the Central People's Government
LoNO	Letter of No Objection
MTR	Mass Transit Railway

Abbreviation	Term / Phrase in Full
MTR OP	MTR Operation Post
MTRC	MTR Corporation Limited
NATO	North Atlantic Treaty Organization
NC	Notifiable Complaint
NT	New Territories
NTN	New Territories North
NYPD	New York Police Department
Operations Advisory Committee ; OAC	Operations Advisory Committee of the Independent Police Complaints Council
OC	oleoresin capsicum
OCM	Occupy Movement
OCS	operational call signs
PAO	Probationary Ambulance Officer
PAVA	pelargonic acid vanillylamide
PCO	Police Communication Officer
PCRO	Police Community Relations Office
PFO	Police Force Ordinance (<i>Cap. 232, Laws of Hong Kong</i>)
PGO	Police General Orders
PHQ	Police Headquarters
POE	public order event
Police	<i>see HKPF above</i>
Police Force	<i>see HKPF above</i>
PolyU	The Hong Kong Polytechnic University
POO	Public Order Ordinance (<i>Cap. 245, Laws of Hong Kong</i>)
POOW	Possession of Offensive Weapons
PPRB	Police Public Relations Branch

Abbreviation	Term / Phrase in Full
Publicity and Survey Committee ; PSC	Publicity and Survey Committee of the Independent Police Complaints Council
PSU	Patrol Sub-unit
PTU	Police Tactical Unit
QC	Queen's Counsel
QPM	Queen's Police Medal
QRT	Quick Response Team
RC	Reportable Complaint
RCCC NT	Regional Command and Control Centre of New Territories
Report	Report of the Thematic Study
RPSFS	Rikspolisstyrelsens författningssamling (Statute Book of the Swedish National Police Board)
RRC	Regional Response Contingents
RTHK	Radio Television Hong Kong
S for S	Secretary for Security
Serious Complaints Committee ; SCC	Serious Complaints Committee of the Independent Police Complaints Council
SCMP	South China Morning Post
SCMV	Specialised Crowd Management Vehicle
SPT	Spotter Team
STC	Special Tactical Contingent
Study	Thematic Study
SULHC	San Uk Ling Holding Centre
TFSG	Task Force Steering Group
THA	Temporary Holding Area
TVB	Television Broadcasts Limited
UCL	University College London
UI	unique identification

Abbreviation	Term / Phrase in Full
UK	United Kingdom
UN	United Nations
US	United States
VRI	video-recording interviews
VTC	Vocational Training Council
YTDIST	Yau Tsim District



獨立監察警方處理投訴委員會
Independent Police Complaints Council

Rooms 1006-10, 10/F, China Resources Building,
No. 26 Harbour Road, Wan Chai, Hong Kong

Tel : 2524 3841
Fax : 2524 1801 / 2525 8042
Email : enq@ipcc.gov.hk
Website : www.ipcc.gov.hk



IPCC Website



IPCC YouTube Channel